



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

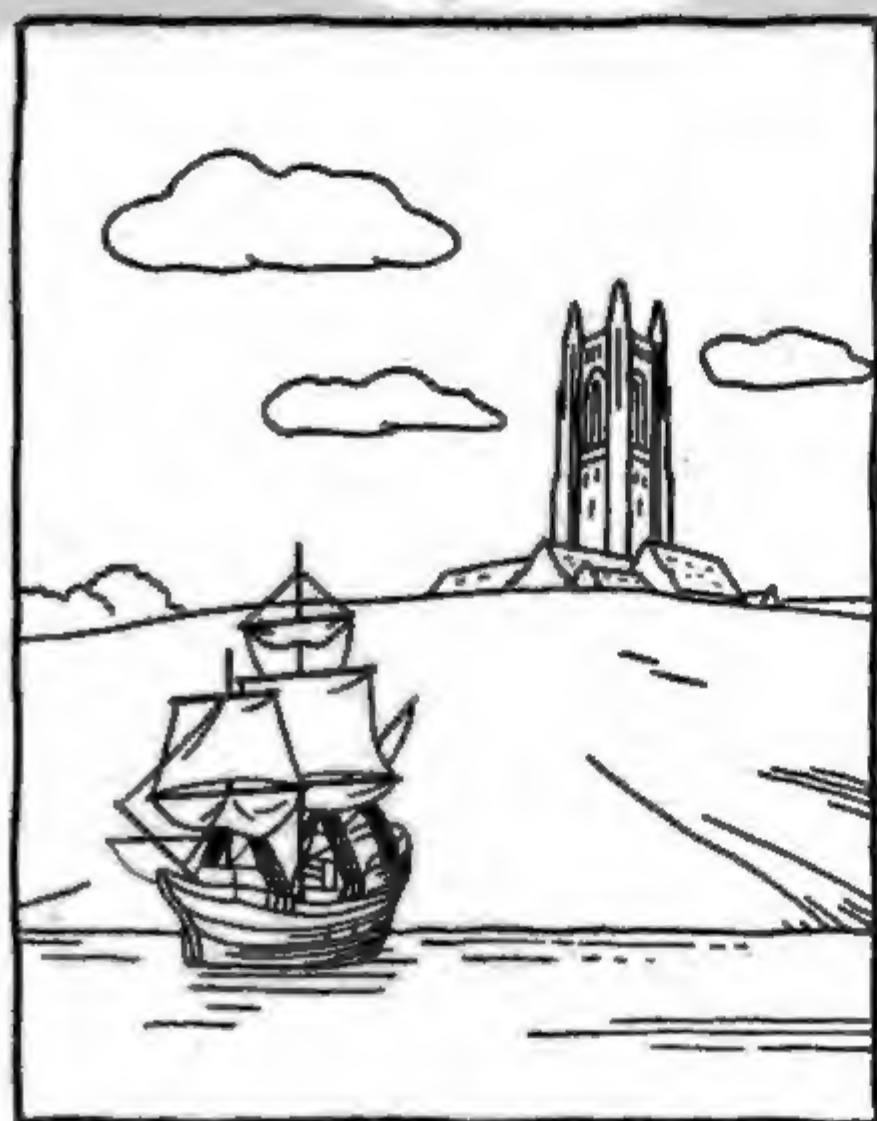
- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>







**EX LIBRIS  
DOUGLAS AND MILDRED HORTON**

**HARVARD DIVINITY  
SCHOOL**

ANDOVER-HARVARD THEOLOGICAL LIBRARY











**THE HISTORY**  
**OF THE**  
**PURITANS,**  
**OR**  
**PROTESTANT NON-CONFORMISTS,**  
**FROM THE**  
**REFORMATION**  
**TO THE**  
**DEATH OF QUEEN ELIZABETH:**

WITH AN ACCOUNT OF  
THEIR PRINCIPLES; THEIR ATTEMPTS FOR A FURTHER REFORMATION  
IN THE CHURCH; THEIR SUFFERINGS; AND THE LIVES AND  
CHARACTERS OF THEIR MOST CONSIDERABLE DIVINES.

IN FIVE VOLUMES.

**BY DANIEL NEAL, M. A.**

A NEW EDITION,

REVISED, CORRECTED, AND ENLARGED,

BY JOSHUA TOULMIN, D. D.

TO WHICH ARE PREFIXED,

SOME MEMOIRS OF THE LIFE AND WRITINGS OF THE AUTHOR.

**VOL. I.**

*Now all these things happened unto them for ensamples: and they  
are written for our admonition.....1 Cor. x. 11.*

PUBLISHED  
BY CHARLES FWER, PORTSMOUTH, N. H. AND WM. B. ALLEN & CO.  
NEWBURYPORT, MS.

1816.

Wm. B. Allen & Co. Printers.



BX  
9333  
VJ  
101  
V. I  
C. P. 2.

## PREFACE.

**T**HE design of the following work is to preserve the memory of those great and good men among the Reformers, who lost their preferments in the church, for attempting a further reformation of its discipline and ceremonies; and to account for the rise and progress of that separation from the national establishment which subsists to this day.

To set this in a proper light it was necessary to look back upon the sad state of religion before the Reformation, and to consider the motives that induced King *Henry VIII.* to break with the pope, and to declare the Church of *England* an independent body, of which himself, under Christ, was the *supreme head* upon earth. This was a bold attempt, at a time when all the powers of the earth were against him; and could not have succeeded without an over-ruling direction of Divine Providence. But as for any real amendment of the doctrines, or superstitions of popery, any further than was necessary to secure his own supremacy, and those vast revenues of the church which he had grasped into his hands, whatever his majesty might design, he had not the honor to accomplish.

The reformation made a quick progress in the short reign of King *Edward VI.* who had been educated under protestant tutors, and was himself a prodigious genius for his age; he settled the doctrines of the church, and intended a reformation of its government and laws; but his noble designs were obstructed by some temporizing bishops, who, having complied with the impositions of King *Henry VIII.* were willing to bring others under the same yoke; and to keep up an alliance with the church of *Rome*, lest they should lose the uninterrupted succession of their characters from the apostles. The controversy that gave rise to the SEPARATION began in this reign, on occasion of bishop *Hooper's* refusing to be consecrated in the popish habits: This may seem an unreasonable scruple in the opinion of some people, but was certainly an affair of great consequence to the reformation, when the *habits* were the known badges of popery; and when the *administrations* of the priests were thought to receive their validity from the *consecrated vestments*, as I am afraid many both of the clergy and common people are too inclinable to apprehend at this day. Had the reformers fixed upon other decent garments, as badges of the episcopal or priestly office, which had no relation to the superstitions of popery, this controversy had been prevented. But the same regard to the old religion was had in revising the liturgy, and translating it into the *English* language; the reformers, instead of framing a new one in the language of holy scripture, had recourse to the *offices* of the church of *Rome*, leaving out such prayers and passages as were offensive, and adding certain responses to en-



gage the attention of the common people, who till this time had no concern in the public devotions of the church, as being uttered in an unknown tongue. This was thought a very considerable advance, and as much as the times would bear, but was not designed for the last standard of the *English* reformation: however, the immature death of young King *Edward* put an end to all further progress.

Upon the accession of Queen *Mary*, popery revived by the supremacy's being lodged in a single hand: and within the compass of little more than a year, became a second time the established religion of the church of *England*: The statutes of King *Edward* were repealed, and the penal laws against heretics were put in execution against the reformers; many of whom, after a long imprisonment, and cruel trials of mockings and scourgings, made a noble confession of their faith before many witnesses, and sealed it with their blood. Great numbers fled into banishment, and were entertained by the reformed states of *Germany*, *Switzerland*, and *Geneva*, with great humanity: the magistrates enfranchising them, and appointing churches for their public worship. But here began the fatal division;† some of the exiles were for keeping to the liturgy of King *Edward*, as the religion of their country, while others, considering that those laws were repealed, apprehended themselves at full liberty; and having no prospect of returning home, they resolved to shake off the remains of antichrist, and to copy after the purer forms of those churches among whom they lived. Accordingly the congregation at *Frankfort*, by the desire of the magistrates, began upon the *Geneva* model, with an additional prayer for the afflicted state of the church of *England* at that time; but when Dr. *Cox*, afterwards bishop of *Ely*, came with a new detachment from *England*, he interrupted the public service by answering aloud after the minister, which occasioned such a disturbance and division as could never be healed. Mr. *Knox* and Mr. *Whittingham*, with one half of the congregation, being obliged to remove to *Geneva*, Dr. *Cox* and his friends kept possession of the church at *Frankfort*, till there arose such quarrels and contentions among themselves as made them a reproach to the strangers among whom they lived. Thus the separation began.

When the exiles, upon the accession of Queen *Elizabeth*, returned to *England*, each party were for advancing the reformation according to their own standard. The Queen, with those that had weathered the storm at home, were only for restoring King *Edward's* liturgy, but the majority of the exiles were for the worship and discipline of the foreign churches, and refused to comply with the old establishment, declaiming loudly against the popish habits and ceremonies. The new bishops, most of whom had been their companions abroad, endeavored to soften them for the present, declaring they would use all their interests at court to make them easy in a little time: The Queen also connived at their non-conformity, till her government was settled, but then declared

† *Fatal division*; i. e. on account of the animosities it created and the miseries in which it involved very many persons and families: but in another view, it was an *happy* division, for it hath been essentially serviceable to civil as well as religious liberty, and like other evils, been productive of many important good effects: as the author himself points out, p. viii. Ed.

roundly, that she had fixed her standard, and would have all her subjects conform to it; upon which the bishops stiffened in their behavior, explained away their promises, and became too severe against their dissenting brethren.

In the year 1564. their lordships began to shew their authority, by urging the clergy of their several dioceses to subscribe the *liturgy, ceremonies and discipline of the church*; when those that refused were first called *Puritans*, a name of reproach derived from the *Cathari*, or *Puritani*, of the third century after Christ, but proper enough to express their desires of a more pure form of worship and discipline in the church. When the doctrines of *Arminius* took place in the latter end of the reign of James I. those that adhered to *Calvin's* explication of the five disputed points were called *doctrinal puritans*; and at length (says Mr. Fuller†) the name was improved to stigmatize all those who endeavored in their devotions to accompany the minister with a pure heart, and who were remarkably holy in their conversations. A *puritan* therefore was a man of severe morals, a Calvinist in doctrine, and a non-conformist to the ceremonies and discipline of the church, though they did not totally separate from it.

The Queen having conceived a strong aversion to these people, pointed all her artillery against them; for besides the ordinary courts of the bishops, her majesty erected a new tribunal, called the court of *High Commission*, which suspended and deprived men of their livings, not by the verdict of twelve men upon oath, but by the sovereign determination of three commissioners of her majesty's own nomination, founded not upon the statute laws of the realm, but upon the bottomless deep of the canon law; and instead of producing witnesses in open court to prove the charge, they assumed a power of administering an oath *ex officio*, whereby the prisoner was obliged to answer all questions the court should put him, though never so prejudicial to his own defence: if he refused to swear, he was imprisoned for contempt: and if he took the oath, he was convicted upon his own confession.

The reader will meet with many examples of the high proceedings of this court, in the course of this history; of their sending their *pursuants* to bring ministers out of the country, and keeping them in town at excessive charges; of their interrogatories upon oath, which were almost equal to the *Spanish* inquisition: of their examinations and long imprisonments of ministers without bail, or bringing them to a trial; and all this not for insufficiency, or immorality, or neglect of their cures, but for not wearing a white surplice, for not baptizing with the sign of the cross, or not subscribing to certain articles that had no foundation in law. A fourth part of all the preachers in *England* were under suspension from one or other of these courts, at a time when not one beneficed clergyman in six was capable of composing a sermon. The edge of all those laws that were made against *popish recusants*, who were continually plotting against the Queen, was turned against protestant

† Church History, b. ix. p. 76, and b. x. p. 100.

*non-conformists*; nay, in many cases they had not the benefit of the law; for as lord *Clarendon*† rightly observes, Queen *Elizabeth* carried her prerogative as high as in the worst times of King *Charles I.* “They who look back upon the council books of those times (says his lordship) and upon the acts of the *Star-chamber* then, shall find as high instances of power and sovereignty upon the liberty and property of the subject, as can be since given. But the art, order, and gravity of those proceedings, (where short, severe, constant rules, were set, and smartly pursued, and the party felt only the weight of the judgment, not the passion of his judges) made them less taken notice of, and so less grievous to the public, though as intolerable to the person.”

These severities, instead of reconciling the *puritans* to the church, drove them further from it; for men don't care to be beat from their principles by the artillery of *canons, injunctions, and penal laws*; nor can they be in love with a church that uses such methods of conversion. A great deal of ill blood was bred in the nation by these proceedings; the *bishops* lost their esteem with the people, and the number of *puritans* was not really lessened, though they lay concealed, till in the next age they got the power into their hands, and shook off the yoke.

The reputation of the church of *England* has been very much advanced of late years, by the suspension of the penal laws, and the legal indulgence granted to protestant dissenters. Long experience has taught us, that uniformity in doctrine and worship, enforced by penal laws, is not the way to the church's peace; that there may be a *separation* from a true church without *schism*; and *schism* within a church without separation; that the indulgence granted by law to protestant non-conformists, which has now subsisted above forty years, has not been prejudicial to church or state, but rather advantageous to both; for the revenues of the established church have not been lessened; a number of poor have been maintained by the dissenters, which must otherwise have come to the parish; the *separation* has kept up an emulation among the clergy; quickened them to their pastoral duty, and been a check upon their moral behavior; and I will venture to say, whenever the separate assemblies of protestant non-conformists shall cease, and all men be obliged to worship at their parish churches, that ignorance and laziness will prevail among the clergy; and that the laity in many parts of the country will degenerate into superstition, profaneness, and downright atheism. With regard to the *State*; it ought to be remembered, that the protestant dissenters have always stood by the laws and constitution of their country; that they joined heartily in the glorious revolution of King *William* and Queen *Mary*, and suffered for their steady adherence to the protestant succession in the illustrious house of his PRESENT MAJESTY, when great numbers that called themselves *churchmen* were looking another way; for this, the *schism bill* and other hardships were put upon them, and not for their religious differences with the church; for if they would have joined the

† Vol. i. 8vo. p. 72.

*administration* at that time, it is well known they might have made much better terms for themselves : but as long as there is a *protestant dissenter* in *England*, there will be a friend of Liberty, and of our present happy Constitution. Instead therefore of crushing them, or comprehending them within the church, it must be the interest of all true lovers of their country, even upon political views, to ease their complaints, and to support and countenance their christian liberty.

For though the church of *England* is as free from persecuting principles as any establishment in *Europe*, yet still there are some grievances remaining, which wise and good men of all parties wish might be reviewed ; not to mention the *subscriptions* which affect the clergy ; there is the act of the 23th of King *Charles II.* for preventing dangers arising from *popish recusants*, commonly called the *Test Act*, “ which obliges, under very severe penalties, all persons, [of the *laity*] bearing any office, or place of trust or profit, (besides taking the oaths of allegiance and supremacy, and subscribing a declaration against transubstantiation) to receive the sacrament of the Lord’s Supper according to the usage of the church of *England*, in some parish church, on a Lord’s day, immediately after divine service and sermon, and to deliver a certificate of having so received it, under the hands of the respective ministers and church-wardens, proved by two credible witnesses, upon oath, to be recorded in court.” It appears by the title of this act, and by the disposition of the parliament at that time, that it was not designed against protestant non-conformists ; but the dissenters in the house generously came into it to save the nation from popery ; for when the court in order to throw out the bill, put them upon moving for a clause to except their friends, Mr. *Love*, who had already declared against the dispensing power, stood up, and desired that the nation might first be secured against popery, by passing the bill without any amendment, and that then, if the house pleased, some regard might be had to protestant dissenters ; in which (says Mr. *Eachard*) he was seconded by most of his party.\* The bill was voted accordingly, and another brought in for the ease of his majesty’s protestant dissenting subjects, which passed the *Commons*, but before it could get through the *Lords*, the King came to the house and prorogued the parliament.— Thus the protestant non-conformists, out of their abundant zeal for the protestant religion, shackled themselves, and were left upon a level with popish recusants.

It was necessary to secure the nation against popery at that time, when the presumptive heir of the crown was of that religion ; but whether it ought not to have been done by a civil rather than by a religious test, I leave with the reader. The obliging all persons in places of civil trust to receive the holy sacrament of the Lord’s Supper, seems to be a hardship upon those gentlemen, whose manner of life loudly declares their unfitness for so sacred a solemnity, and who would not run the hazard of eating and drinking unworthily, but that they satisfy

\* *Eachard’s Church Hist. Ad. Ann. 1672-3.*



themselves with throwing off the guilt upon the imposers. *Great Britain* must not expect an army of saints ; nor is the time yet come, when *all her officers shall be peace, and her exactors righteousness*. It is no less a hardship upon a great body of his majesty's most dutiful and loyal subjects, who are qualified to serve their King and country, in all offices of civil trust, and would perform their duty with all cheerfulness, did they not scruple to receive the sacrament after the usage of the church of *England*, or to prostitute a *sacred and religious institution*, as a qualification for a *civil employment*. I can see no inconvenience either to church or state, if HIS MAJESTY, as the common father of his people, should have the service of all his subjects, who are willing to swear allegiance to his royal person and government : to renounce all foreign jurisdiction, and to give all reasonable security not to disturb the church of *England*, or any of their fellow subjects, in the peaceable employment of their religious or civil rights and properties. Besides, the removing this grievance would do honor to the church of *England* itself, by obviating the charge of imposition, and by relieving the clergy from a part of their work, which has given some of them very great uneasiness : but I am chiefly concerned for the honor of religion and public virtue, which is wounded hereby in the house of its friends. If therefore (as some conceive) the *sacramental test* be a national blemish, I humbly conceive with all due submission, the removal of it would be a public blessing.

The protestant non-conformists observe with pleasure the right reverend fathers of the church owning the cause of religious liberty, "*That private judgment ought to be formed upon examination, and that religion is a free and unforced thing.*" And we sincerely join with the Lord Bishop of *Litchfield and Coventry*, in the preface to his excellent vindication of the miracles of our blessed Saviour,\* "in congratulating 'our country on the enjoyment of their civil and ecclesiastical liberties 'within their just and reasonable bounds, as the most valuable blessings ;' though we are not fully satisfied with the reasonableness of those bounds his lordship has fixed. God forbid ! that any among us should be patrons of open profaneness, irreligion, scurrility, or ill manners to the established religion of the nation ; much less that we should countenance any who blasphemously revile the founder of it, or who deride whatsoever is sacred. No : we have a fervent zeal for the honor of our Lord and Master, and are desirous to contend earnestly for the faith once delivered to the saints with all sorts of spiritual weapons ; but we do not yet see a necessity of stopping the mouths of the adversaries of our holy religion with fines and imprisonments, even though, to their own infamy and shame, they treat it with indecency : let scandal and ill manners be punished as it deserves, but let not men be terrified from speaking out their doubts, or proposing their objections against the gospel Revelation, which we are sure will bear a thorough examination ; and though the late ungenerous attacks upon the miracles of our blessed Savior, may have had an ill influence upon the

\* Vol. ii. p. 15.

giddy and unthinking youth of the age, they have given occasion to the publishing such a number of incomparable defences of Christianity, as have confirmed the faith of many, and must satisfy the minds of all reasonable enquirers after truth.

Nor do we think it right to fix the boundaries of religious liberty upon the degree of people's differing from the national establishment, because enthusiasts or Jews have an equal right with Christians to worship God in their own way; to defend their own peculiar doctrines, and to enjoy the public protection, as long as they keep the peace, and maintain no principles manifestly inconsistent with the safety of the government they live under.

But his lordship apprehends he has a chain of demonstrable propositions to maintain his boundaries: he observes, "1. That the true ends of government cannot subsist without religion, no reasonable man will dispute it. 2. That open impiety, or a public opposition made to, and an avowed contempt of the established religion, which is a considerable part of the constitution, do greatly promote the disturbance of the public peace, and naturally tend to the subversion of the whole constitution." It is here supposed that one particular religion must be incorporated into the constitution, which is not necessary to the ends of government; for religion and civil government are distinct things, and stand upon a separate basis. Religion in general is the support of civil government, and it is the office of the civil magistrate to protect all his dutiful and loyal subjects in the free exercise of their religion; but to incorporate one particular religion into the constitution, so as to make it part of the common law, and to conclude from thence, that the constitution, having a right to preserve itself, may make laws for the punishment of those that publicly oppose any one branch of it, is to put an effectual stop to the progress of the reformation throughout the whole christian world; for by this reasoning our first reformers must be condemned; and if a subject of France, or the ecclesiastical state, should at this time write against the usurped power of the pope; or expose the absurdities of transubstantiation, adoration of the host, worshipping of images, &c. it would be laudable for the legislative powers of those countries to send the writer to the galleys, or shut him up in a dungeon, as a disturber of the public peace, because popery is supported by law, and is a very considerable part of their constitution.

But to support the government's right to enact penal laws against those that opposed the established religion, his lordship is pleased to refer us to the edicts of the first christian emperors out of the *Codex Theodosianus*, composed in the 5th century, which acquaints us with the sentiments of that and the preceding age; but says nothing of the doctrine of scripture, or of the practice of the church for 300 years before the empire became christian. His lordship then subjoins sundry passages out of a sermon of archbishop Tillotson, whom he justly ranks

among the greatest of the moderns. But it ought to be remembered, that this sermon was preached at court in the year 1680, when the nation was in imminent danger from the popish plot. His lordship should also have acquainted his readers with the archbishop's cautious introduction, which is this: "I cannot think (*till I be better informed, which I am always ready to be*) that any pretence of conscience warrants any man, that cannot work miracles, to draw men off from the established religion of a nation, nor openly to make proselytes to his own religion, in contempt of the magistrate and the law, though he is never so sure he is in the right."\* This proposition, though pointed at the popish missionaries in *England* at that time, is not only inconsistent with the protestant reformation, (as I observed before) but must effectually prevent the propagating of christianity among the idolatrous nations of the eastern and western *Indians*, without a new power of working miracles, which we have no ground to expect; and I may venture to assure his lordship and the world, that the good archbishop lived to see his mistake; and could name the learned person to whom he frankly confessed it after some hours conversation upon the subject:† But human authorities are of little weight in points of reason and speculation.

It was from this mistaken principle that the government pressed so hard upon those puritans whose history is now before the reader: in which he will observe how the transferring the supremacy from the pope to the king, united the church and state into one body under one head, insomuch that writing against the church was construed by the judges in *Westminster-Hall*, a seditious libelling the Queen's government, and was punished with exorbitant fines, imprisonment and death. He will observe further, the rise and progress of the penal laws; the extent of the regal supremacy in those times; the deplorable ignorance of the clergy; with the opposite principles of our church reformers, and of the puritans, which I have set in a true light, and have pursued the controversy as an historian in its several branches, to the end of the long reign of Queen *Elizabeth*; to all which I have added some remarks of my own, which the reader will receive according to their evidence.— And because the principles of the *Scotch reformers* were much the same with those of the *English puritans*, and the imposing a liturgy and bishops upon them gave rise to a confusion in the next age, I have inserted a short account of their religious establishment; and have enlivened the whole with the lives and characters of the principal puritans of those times.

\* Abp. Tillotson's Works, vol. i. fol. p. 320, 321.

† The learned person, to whom Mr. Neal refers, I conceive, was Mr. Howe; the purport of the conversation he had with the bishop on the proposition contained in his sermon, was given to the public by Dr. Calamy in his memoirs of Mr. Howe, p. 75, 76. The fact was, the bishop was sent for, out of his turn, to preach before the King, on account of the sickness of another gentleman: and had prepared his discourse in great haste, and impressed with the general fears of popery: the sentiment above quoted from it, was the occasion of its being published from the press. For the King having slept most part of the time while the sermon was delivered, a certain nobleman, when it was over, said to him; "Tis pity your majesty slept, for we have had the rarest piece of Hobbism that ever you heard in your life." "Odsfish, he shall print it then," replied the King. When it came from the press the author sent a copy, as a present to Mr. Howe, who freely expostulated with Dr. Tillotson on this passage first in a long letter, and then in a conversation which the doctor desired on the subject, at the end of which he fell to weeping freely, and said "that this was the most unhappy thing that had of a long time befallen him."

A history of this kind was long expected from the late reverend and learned Dr. *John Evans*, who had for some years been collecting materials for this purpose, and had he lived to perfect his design, would have done it to much greater advantage; but I have seen none of his papers, and am informed, that there is but a very small matter capable of being put in order for the press. Upon his decease I found it necessary to undertake this province, to bring the history forward to those times when the *puritans* had the power in their own hands; in examining into which I have spent my leisure hours for some years; but the publishing those collections will depend under God, upon the continuance of my health, and the acceptance this meets with in the world.

I am not so vain as to expect to escape the censures of critics, nor the reproaches of angry men, who, while they do nothing themselves, take pleasure in exposing the labors of others in pamphlets and newspapers: but as I shall be always thankful to any that will convince me of my mistakes in a friendly manner, the others may be secure of enjoying the satisfaction of their satirical remarks without any disturbance from me.

I have endeavored to acquaint myself thoroughly with the times of which I write; and as I have no expectations from any party of christians, I am under no temptation to disguise their conduct. I have cited my authorities in the margin, and flatter myself that I have had the opportunity of bringing many things to light relating to the sufferings of the *puritans*, and the state of the reformation in those times, which have hitherto been unknown to the world, chiefly by the assistance of a large manuscript collection of papers, faithfully transcribed from their originals in the university of *Cambridge*, by a person of character employed for that purpose, and generously communicated to me by my ingenious and learned friend Dr. *Benjamin Grosvenor*; for which I take this opportunity of returning him my own, and the thanks of the public. Among the ecclesiastical historians of these times, Mr. *Fuller*, bishop *Burnet*, and Mr. *Strype*, are the chief; the last of whom has searched into the records of the *English* reformation more than any man of the age; Dr. *Heylin* and *Collyer* are of more suspected authority, not so much for their party principles, as because the former never gives us his vouchers, and yet the latter follows him blindly in all things.

Upon the whole, I have endeavored to keep in view the honesty and gravity of an historian, and have said nothing with a design to exasperate or widen the differences among christians; for as I am a sincere admirer of the doctrines of the New Testament, I would have an equal regard to its most excellent precepts, of which these are some of the capital, that "We love one another; that we forgive offences; that we 'bear one another's infirmities, and even bless them that curse us, and 'pray for them that despitefully use us and persecute us." If this spirit and temper were more prevalent, the lives of christians would throw a bright lustre upon the truth and excellency of their divine faith, and convince the atheists and infidels of the age, more than all their arguments can do without it.

I would earnestly recommend this temper to the *protestant non-conformists* of the present age, together with an holy emulation of each



other in undissembled piety and sanctity of life, that while they are reading the heavy and grievous sufferings of their ancestors from *ecclesiastical commissions, spiritual courts and penal laws*, for conscience sake, they may be excited to an humble adoration of divine providence, which has delivered them so far from the yoke of oppression; to a detestation of all persecuting principles; and to a loyal and dutiful behavior to the *best of Kings*, under whose mild and just government they are secure of their civil and religious liberties. And may protestants of all persuasions improve in the knowledge and love of the truth, and in sentiments of christian charity and forbearance towards each other, that being at peace among themselves, they may with greater success bend their united forces against the common enemy of christianity!

DANIEL NEAL.

*London,*  
*Feb. 1st. 1731-2.* }

# MEMOIRS

OF

*MR. DANIEL NEAL, M. A.\**

**MR. DANIEL NEAL** was born in the city of London, on the 14th of December 1678. When he was very young, his parents were removed by death, and left him their only surviving child, in the hands of a maternal uncle : whose care of his health and education was faithful and affectionate, and was often mentioned by his nephew with gratitude.

He received his classical education at Merchant Taylor's school ; to which he was sent when he was seven or eight years of age, and where he staid till he was head scholar. In this youthful period he gave a proof of the serious and conscientious principles by which he was governed. For an exhibition to St. John's college in Oxford being offered to him, out of a foundation belonging to that school, he declined it ; and chose an education for the ministry amongst the protestant dissenters.

About the year 1696, or 1697, he removed from this seminary to a dissenting academy, under the direction of the Rev. *Thomas Rowe* ; under whose tuition several eminent characters were, in part, formed.† To this gentleman Dr. *Watts* addressed his animated ode, called "Free Philosophy," which may in this view, be considered as an honorable testimonial to the candid and liberal spirit with which Mr. *Rowe* conducted the studies of his pupils.

Mr. *Neal's* thirst after knowledge was not to be satisfied by the limited advantages of one seminary : but prompted him to seek further improvement in foreign universities.— Having spent three years with Mr. *Rowe*, he removed to *Holland* ; where he prosecuted his studies, for two years,

\* This narrative is drawn up chiefly from the memoirs of Mr. *Neal's* life in the funeral sermon by Dr. *Jennings*, and a MS. account of him and his works by his son *Nathaniel Neal*, Esq. communicated by his grandson *Daniel Lister*, Esq. of Hackney.

† Among others Dr. *Watts*, Dr. *Hort*, afterwards archbishop of Tuam, Mr. *Hughes* the poet, Dr. *John Evans*, Mr. *Grove*, and Dr. *Jeremiah Hunt*.

under the celebrated professors *D'Uries*, *Grævius*, and *Burman*, at Utrecht; and then, one year at Leyden.

About the middle or latter end of 1703 he returned to *England*, in company with Mr. *Martin Tomkins*\* and Mr. (afterwards the eminent Dr.) *Lardner*, and soon after appeared in the pulpit.

\* This gentleman was settled with a dissenting congregation at Stoke-Newington. In the year 1718 Mr. *Asty*, the pastor of a congregation in Rope-Maker's Alley, Moorfields, on making an exchange with Mr. *Tomkins* for one Lord's day, thought fit to alarm his people with the danger of pernicious errors and damnable heresies creeping in amongst the dissenters; and particularly referred to errors concerning the doctrine of Christ's Deity. Mr. *Tomkins*, to counteract the ill tendency of this discourse and of the censures it conveyed, preached, the succeeding Lord's day, from John xx. 21, 22, 23. on the power of Christ to settle the terms of salvation. The inference which he deduced from the discussion of his subject was, "That no man on earth nor body of men; no, nor all the angels in heaven, have power to make any thing *necessary* to salvation, but what Christ hath made so." In the conclusion of his discourse, he applied this general principle as a test by which to decide on the importance of the orthodox doctrine of the Trinity, and of the deity of Christ. Here he entered into a particular survey of the various passages in the Historical and epistolary books of the New Testament connected with this point, and gave, at large, his reasons, why he did not apprehend the orthodox notion concerning the deity of Christ to be a *fundamental doctrine of christianity*. This sermon, though the preacher neither denied nor intimated any doubt of the truth of the orthodox doctrine, gave much disgust, and made a great noise. The minds of his people were irritated, and every attempt which Mr. *Tomkins* used to calm them and restore harmony proving unsuccessful, he resigned his pastoral connexion, after ten year's services among them. Prejudice rose so high against him, that he was, afterwards, denied the communion of the church, in which he had been many years before; when on being disengaged from stated ministerial functions, he desired to return to it.

Mr. *Tomkins* did not again settle as the pastor of a congregation; but did not wholly lay aside the character, or drop the studies, of the christian minister. For he, occasionally, preached, and published several valuable theological tracts. The first, about the year 1723, was "A sober appeal to a Turk or an Indian concerning the plain sense of scripture, relating to the *Trinity*: Being an answer to Dr. *J. Watts*' late book, intitled, *The Christian Doctrine of the Trinity, or Father, Son, and Spirit, Three Persons and one God, asserted and proved, by plain evidence of scripture, without the aid and incumbrance of human schemes*. This piece was drawn up in terms of decency and respect, and in the language of friendship towards that excellent and eminent person, to whose tract it was a reply: and the whole was written in an exemplary strain of moderation and candor. In the year 1746,

It was not long before his furniture and abilities attracted notice. And, in the next year, he was chosen assistant to *Dr. John Singleton*,\* in the service of an inde-

it came to a second edition: to which were added, 1. Remarks on *Dr. Watts*' three citations relating to the doctrine of the Trinity, published in 1724. 2. A sober appeal to all that have read the New Testament, whether the *reputed orthodox* are not more chargeable with preaching a new gospel, than *reputed Arians*? 3. A reply to *Dr. Waterland's* animadversions upon some passages in the *Sober Appeal*. To neither of the editions of this treatise was the author's name affixed. In 1732, *Mr. Tomkins* published also, without his name, a piece which gained him great reputation; entitled "JESUS CHRIST the mediator between 'God and Man; an advocate for us with the Father, and a propitiation 'for the sins of the world.'" A new edition of this work appeared in 1761. He published, in 1738, "A Calm Enquiry, whether we have 'any warrant from scripture for addressing ourselves in a way of prayer or praise, directly to the HOLY SPIRIT: humbly offered to the consideration of all CHRISTIANS, particularly of PROTESTANT DISSENTERS." This piece has seriously impressed the minds of many, and has, undoubtedly, contributed very much to the disuse of the Trinitarian Doxology amongst the dissenters. *Mr. Tomkins* himself, so far back as the time when he was minister to the congregation at Stoke-Newington, had forebore it, because he could find no instance of it in scripture. All *Mr. Tomkins*' pieces are proofs of the candor of his spirit, and of the clearness and strength of his judgment. Long since his death there has appeared, in the *Theological Repository*, vol. iii. p. 237, "A letter 'from him to *Dr. Lardner*, in reply to his letter on the Logos; in defence of the Arian hypothesis." In this enumeration of his publications it had almost escaped me to mention another, and that the first in order of time, viz. "The case of *Mr. Martin Tomkins*, being an account of the proceedings of the dissenting congregation at Stoke-Newington, upon occasion of a sermon preached by him, July 13, '1718." This piece bears on it all the marks of being a fair and impartial, as it is an instructive, narrative.—The character of candor and piety, which he supported, and with which his writings are impressed; the simplicity and integrity with which he bore his testimony to scriptural worship, christian moderation, and the divine unity; and the weight and influence of his publications in the Trinitarian controversy, have justly entitled *Mr. Tomkins* to this particular mention.

\* *Dr. John Singleton* was a student in the university of Oxford; from whence, after he had been there eight years, he was turned out by the commissioners in 1660. He then went to Holland, and studied physic; but never practised it any farther than to give his advice to particular friends. His settlements were various. Residing some time with *Lady Scott* in Hertfordshire, he preached then to some dissenters at Hertford. He was afterwards pastor to a congregation in London. When the meetings were generally suppressed, he went into Warwickshire, and lived with his wife's brother, *Dr. Timothy Gibbons*, a physician. Upon

pendent congregation, in Aldersgate-street ; and on the doctor's death, in 1706, he was elected their pastor. In this relation he continued, for thirty-six years, till about five months before his decease. When he accepted the pastoral office, the church, though some persons of considerable fortune and character belonged to it, was very small, as to numbers ; but such acceptance did his ministry meet with, that the place of worship became, in a few years, too strait to accommodate the numbers that desired to attend on Mr. *Neal's* preaching ; which obliged them to remove to a larger house in Jewen-street.

He fulfilled the duties of his character with attention and diligence : statedly preaching twice every Lord's day, till the three or four last years of his life ; and usually devoting two or three afternoons in a week, to visiting his people. He pursued his studies with so close an application, as to reserve little or no time for exercise ; though he was assiduous in his preparations for the pulpit, he gave himself some scope in his literary pursuits, and particularly indulged in the study of history, to which his natural genius strongly led him. "He still," observes Dr. *Jennings*, "kept his character and profession in view, 'as a christian divine and minister.'"\*

The first-fruits of his literary labors appeared in 1720, under the title of "The History of New-England ; being 'an impartial account of the civil and ecclesiastical affairs 'of the country, with a new accurate Map thereof: to which 'is added, an Appendix, containing their present charter, 'their ecclesiastical discipline, and their municipal laws.'" In two vols. 8vo. This work contains an entertaining and instructive narrative of the first planting the gospel in a foreign heathen land : and, besides exhibiting the rise of a new commonwealth, struggling in its infant state with a thousand difficulties, and triumphing over them all, it in-

King *James* giving liberty he preached first at Stretton, a small hamlet, eight miles from Coventry ; and then became pastor to the independent congregation in that city. From whence he was again called to London, to succeed Mr. *T. Cole*. Palmer's Non-conformist's Memorial, vol. i. p. 170. There is a sermon of Dr. *Singleton's* in the Morning Exercises.

\* Funeral Sermon, for Mr. *Neal*, p. 33.

cludes biographical memoirs of the principal persons in church and state. It was well received in New-England; and the next year their university honored the author with the degree of Master of Arts, the highest academical title they had power to confer.

In the same year there came from Mr. *Neal's* pen, "A letter to the Rev. Dr. *Francis Hare*, dean of Worcester, occasioned by his reflections on the dissenters, in his late visitation sermon and postscript." 8vo. †

In 1721, he published "The Christian's Duty and Interest in a time of public danger; from Ezek. ix. 4. A sermon preached at the Rev. Mr. *Jennings's* meeting-place in Wapping, on Friday, Oct. 27, being a time of solemn prayer on account of the plague." ‡ This discourse is preserved in the library of Queen's college, Cambridge. §

Mr. *Neal* gave to the public, in 1722, "A Narrative of the method and success of inoculating the small-pox in New-England, by Mr. *Benjamin Colman*; with a reply to the objections made against it from principles of conscience, in a letter from a minister at *Boston*. To which is now prefixed, an historical introduction." On the appearance of this piece, her royal highness *Caroline*, princess of *Wales*, sent for him to wait on her, that she might receive from him further satisfaction concerning the practice of inoculation. He was introduced by a physician of the royal family, and received by the princess in her closet; whom he found reading "*Fox's Martyrology*."—Her highness did him the honor of entering into a free conversation with him for near an hour, on the subject of inoculation: and afterwards on other subjects, particularly the state of the dissenting interest in England, and of religion in New-England. After some time the Prince of *Wales*, afterwards *George II.* came into the room, and condescended to take a part in the conversation for above a quarter of an

† The title of this Sermon was "Church Authority Vindicated." This discourse also attracted the notice of bishop *Hoadly*, who published an answer to it.

‡ It then raged at Marseilles in France, being brought thither from the Levant; and 48,000 died of it.

§ Cooke's Index to Sermons, vol. ii. p. 241. Article Neal.

hour. Mr. *Neal* had the honor of kissing the hands of both the royal personages. §

In 1722, he published, at request, a sermon preached to the societies for reformation of manners, at Salter's-Hall, on Monday June 25. This discourse, grounded on Psalm xciv. 16, is to be met with in the library mentioned before.

In the beginning of the next year the request of the managers of the charity-school, in Gravel-lane, Southwark, procured from him the publication of a sermon, preached January 1, for the benefit of that institution, on *Job* xxix. 12, 13, entitled, "The Method of Education in the charity-schools of protestant dissenters; with the advantages that arise to the public from them."

After this nothing of Mr. *Neal*'s appeared from the press for several years, till in 1726, the death of the Rev. *Matthew Clarke*, a minister of considerable eminence amongst the dissenters of that period, gave occasion for his publishing a funeral sermon for him, from *Matthew* xxv. 21. This discourse was, next year, reprinted, and annexed to a volume of sermons upon several occasions, by Mr. *Clarke*; of which Mr. *Neal* was the editor, and to which he prefixed some memoirs of the author.\*

#### § The MS. account of Mr. *Neal*.

\* Mr. *Matthew Clarke*, a gentleman of eminence amongst the dissenting ministers of that period, and the father to Dr. *Clarke*, a physician of extensive practice, who died not long since at Tottenham in Middlesex, was descended from a genteel family in the county of Salop. He was the son of the Rev. *Matthew Clarke*, who was ejected from Narborough in Leicestershire; and was born Feb. 2, 1663-4. His father, who had been an indefatigable student in Trinity College, Cambridge, led him through the learned languages. His academical studies were pursued under the learned Mr. *Woodhouse*, at Sherifhales in Shropshire, a tutor of eminence in those times. Mr. *Clarke*, when he had finished his academical course, spent two years in London, for the benefit of conversing with learned men, and forming himself on the model of the most celebrated preachers. He began his ministry in 1684, with great acceptance. So that great additions were made to the church, which his father had formed. at Market-Harborough; and he laid the foundation of several societies of protestant dissenters in those parts. Being engaged, when he was on a visit to London, in 1687, to supply the congregation at Sandwich in Kent for a few Lord's days, he was prevailed with to spend two years there: which he did with eminent success. In 1689, he was unanimously invited to become assistant to the aged Mr. *Ford*, the pastor of a congregation in Miles'-lane; which was then re-



At the beginning of this year he printed a sermon, entitled "*Of sorrowing for them who sleep in Jesus,*" occasioned by the death of Mrs. *Anne Phillebrowne*, who departed this life Feb. 1, 1726-7, in the 43d year of her age. This discourse is also to be found in Queen's college library, Cambridge.

In 1730, the united request of the ministers and the church prevailed with him to publish a sermon, entitled, "The duty of praying for ministers and the success of their 'ministry,' from 2 Thess. iii. 1 ; preached at the separation of the Rev. Mr. *Richard Rawlin*,\* to the pastoral office in the church at Fetter-lane, June 24. A passage in this discourse deserves to be quoted, to shew the catholic and generous sentiments of Mr. *Neal*. Having referred to the persecutions of the christians under the *Roman* emperors, and then to the prevalence of darkness and superstition for a thousand years, after *Rome* became papal; he proceeds, "The light of the gospel broke out again at the 'Reformation ; but, alas ! what obstructions has it met with 'ever since ! How much blood has been spilt, and how many families ruined, and sent into banishment for the profession of it ! There is at this time a bloody inquisition in 'Spain ; and the sword of the magistrate is drawn against 'the preaching of the gospel in Italy, France, Poland, in 'several parts of Germany, and in other popish countries. 'I wish I could say, that *all protestant* governments were 'willing the gospel should have its free course ; but our 'fathers in this nation have drunk of the bitter cup of per-

duced to a very low state : but the auditory, in a few years, became crowded ; and seven or eight in a month were added to the communion. In 1697, Mr. *Clarke* was chosen one of the lecturers at Pinner's-Hall. He married, in 1696, Mrs. *Anne Frith*, daughter of Mr. *Robert Frith*, of Windsor, who was repeatedly mayor of that corporation. His pulpit abilities were greatly admired, and his services much sought ; so that he usually preached twice or three times on a Lord's day, and several times in the week. He died March 27, 1726, aged 62 years, much beloved and much lamented, and leaving behind him the character of having been amongst the best and most useful divines of his age.

Mr. Neal's Memoirs of his life.

\* Mr. *Rawlin* was a minister of reputation amongst the independents, one of the six preachers of the Merchants' lecture at Pinner's-hall, and the author of a volume of sermons "on justification," which met with great acceptance, and passed through more than one edition.



‘secution; our teachers have been driven into corners, and  
 ‘the mouths of thousands stopped in one day: Blessed be  
 ‘God, that there is now a more open door! Let us pray,  
 ‘that ALL PENAL LAWS *for religion may be taken away, and*  
 ‘*that* NO CIVIL DISCOURAGEMENTS *may lie upon Christians*  
 ‘of ANY DENOMINATION, for the peaceable profession of their  
 ‘faith, but that the gospel may have free course.”

In the year 1732 came out the first volume of Mr. *Neal's* great work “The History of the Puritans.” The following circumstances gave birth to this publication. Dr. *Edmund Calamy*, many years before, had, in his “Abridgement of the life of Mr. *Richard Baxter*, and the continuation of it,” laid before the public a view of the state of non-conformity, and of the characters and sufferings of the principal adherents to it, during the period that immediately succeeded to the act of uniformity in 1662. Dr. *John Evans*,\* on this, formed a design of writing “A History

\* Dr. *John Evans*, the author of two volumes of judicious and admired sermons on the CHRISTIAN TEMPER, and of many single sermons, was the son of Mr. *John Evans*, of Baliol college, Oxford, and ejected by the act of uniformity from Oswestry. He was born at Wrexham in the year 1679. His mother was the daughter of the eminent Colonel *Gerard*, governor of Chester Castle. He received his education first under Mr. *Tho. Rowe*, of London; and afterwards under Mr. *Richard Frankland*, at Rathmill, in Yorkshire. He enjoyed great advantages under both, and made a singular proficiency in all the parts of rational and polite literature. His first settlement was in the family of Mrs. *Hunt*, of Boreatton in Shropshire, relict of *Roland Hunt*, Esq. and sister of Lord *Paget*, ambassador to the Ottoman Court. In this retirement he read over entire Mr. *Pole's* Latin Synopsis, in 5 vols. folio, which laid the foundation of his great skill in scripture criticism, and all the christian writers of the three first centuries, under the direction of the learned Mr. *James Owen*. His first settlement, as a minister, was in the place of his nativity: from whence he removed to London, to be assistant to Dr. *Daniel Williams*, pastor of a congregation in Hand-alley, Bishopsgate-street; which afterwards removed to New Bond-street, Petty-France. Dr. *Evans*, after several years, was by Dr. *Williams's* desire made co-pastor with him, and succeeded him at his death. On taking the whole charge of the congregation, he spent a week in solemn retirement and in extraordinary exercises of devotion. He was one of the six preachers of the Merchants' lecture at Salter's-Hall, and for several years concerned in the Lord's day evening lecture in that place. Besides the sermons mentioned above, he published a small volume addressed to young persons, which has been reprinted within these few years, and a tract or two on the “Importance of Scripture consequences,”

of Non-conformity, from the beginning of the reformation to 1640, when the civil wars began. Mr. *Neal* was requested, by several ministers and other persons of considerable figure amongst the dissenters, to take up the history from the year 1640, and to carry it on to the act of uniformity. Dr. *Erans* proceeded a great way in the execution of his design: by collecting for several years, with great industry and expence, proper materials from all quarters, and by filling several quires of paper with references, under each year, to the books he had read on the subject.— He had gone so far as to have written out fairly about a third part of the two folios he intended to fill. But his constant employment as a minister, the multiplicity of public affairs which passed through his hands, ill health, and various disappointments and troubles in his own concerns, greatly interrupted his close application to the work: and his death in the year 1730, put a final period to the design, which was left in an unfinished state. In the mean time Mr. *Neal* had prosecuted his work with so much application and spirit, that he had completed his collections, and put them in order for the press, some length of time before the doctor's decease. This event obstructed his immediate progress, and opened to him a new field of study and investigation: for he now found it necessary to take up himself the long period of history from the reformation to the commencement of the civil wars: that his own collections might be published with more acceptance, and appear with greater advantage, than he apprehended they could have

drawn up in a masterly way with great clearness and judgment, sobriety and decency. Both the universities of Edinburgh and Aberdeen, without his knowledge and in a most honorable manner, conferred on him their highest academical honor. A complication of distempers broke down his constitution, and deprived the world of his abilities and labors, at so early a period as the 51st year of his age, May 23, 1730. He excelled in the several virtues of integrity, greatness and generosity of mind; in compassion and tenderness, in a catholic temper and a public spirit, and in a steady, regular piety. His solidity of judgment united with vivacity, his industry and prudence were distinguishing and superior to most others. Amongst the pertinent, devout, and excellent sentiments he dropt in the course of his illness, when he looked upon his body swollen with distemper, he would often say with pleasure, "This corruptible shall put on incorruption, O "glorious hope!" Dr. *Harris*'s Funeral Sermon for Dr. *Erans*, in his Funeral Discourses, p. 285—296.

done, if the doctor's province had been entirely neglected.\*

The approbation which followed the publication of the first volume of "*The History of the Puritans*," encouraged him to prosecute his design; and the next year, 1733, produced a second volume of that work.

Between the appearance of this and the subsequent parts of his history, we find Mr. *Neal* engaged with some of his respectable brethren and carrying on two courses of lectures; one at Berry-street; the other at Salter's-Hall.

The former was preached at the request and by the encouragement of *Win. Coward*, Esq. of Walthamstow. It consisted of fifty-four sermons on the principal heads of the christian religion, entitled "*Faith and Practice*." Mr. *Neal's* associates in this service were, Dr. *Watts*, Dr. *J. Guise*, Mr. *Samuel Price*, Mr. *John Hubbard*, and Dr. *David Jennings*.† The terms on which Mr. *Neal* complied with Mr. *Coward's* request, made through a common friend, to take part in this service, are proofs of the inde-

\* Dr. *Harris's* Funeral Sermon for Dr. *Evans*, in his volume of *Funeral Discourses*, p. 289, 90, and the MS. account of Mr. *Neal*.

† It is needless to say any thing here of the first name on this list, Dr. *Watts*, whose fame by his various writings has been so universally diffused.

Mr. *Samuel Price*, the uncle of the late Dr. *Richard Price*, served forty-five years in the ministry of the gospel, with Dr. *Watts*, as assistant or co-pastor. He was a man of exemplary probity and virtue, of sound and solid sense, a judicious and useful preacher, eminent for his gift in prayer, and for wisdom and prudence in the management of affairs. He was a native of Wales, received his academical learning under Mr. *Timothy Jollie*, at Attercliffe, and died in 1756.

Dr. *John Guise* was well known as a popular preacher, and as the author of a paraphrase on the New Testament, in three vols. quarto.

Mr. *Hubbard* was minister of a congregation at Stepney, and about three years before his death was chosen tutor of a seminary for educating young men for the ministry. He filled both capacities with considerable reputation, and is said to have had so extensive and familiar an acquaintance with the scriptures, as to supersede the use of a concordance, which had no place in his library.

Dr. *David Jennings* has left behind him, "An introduction to the use of the globes and orrery," "An introduction to the knowledge of medals," and "Jewish Antiquities," as monuments of his genius and learning. For many years he was at the head of the seminary endowed by Mr. *Coward's* munificence: and for forty-four years pastor of a congregation in Old Gravel-lane, Wapping. He was a pleasing and pathetic preacher, an early riser, very methodical and punctual in the

pendence and integrity of mind which he possessed, and was determined to maintain. His requisitions were, that he would draw up the dedication, write the preface, and choose his own subjects: in which Mr. *Coward*, though they were not very pleasing to a gentleman of his known humor, and fondness for adulation and control, acquiesced; rather than the lecture should lose the advantage and reputation that it would derive from Mr. *Neal's* abilities and name.\* The subjects handled by him were, "The divine authority and perfection of the holy scriptures," from 2 Tim. iii. 16. "Of God, as the governor and judge of the moral world, angels and men," on Daniel iv. 35. "The Incarnation of Christ as the promised Messiah:" the text Gal. iv. 4, 5. "Effectual Calling, with its fruits, viz. regeneration and sanctification by the holy spirit:" from 2 Tim. i. 9. "Confession of sin, repentance, and conversion to holiness;" on Acts iii. 19. "Of fearing God, and trusting in him:" Psalm xxxi. 19. "The Sacrament of the Lord's supper;" on 1 Cor. xi. 23, 26. "The Love of our Neighbor;" the text John xiii. 34, 35. And "The pleasure and advantage of vital religion;" from Rom. vii. 22. These, with the discourses of the other preachers, were, after the course was finished, published in two vols. 8vo. in 1735; and have passed through several editions. Dr. *Doddridge*, when speaking of them, says, "I cannot recollect where I have seen a set of important thoughts on such various and weighty subjects more judiciously selected, more accurately digested, more closely compacted, more naturally expressed, or in a few words more powerfully enforced, than I have generally found in those sermons."† Without determining whether this encomium be exaggerated or not, it may certainly be pronounced, that the practical strain in which the discourses are drawn up, and the good temper with which the subjects of greatest controversy are here handled, without a-

arrangements of his studies and business, and, notwithstanding that he lived much in his study, his conversation was lively and instructive, and his address easy and affable. He published several sermons, and was the author of several other pieces besides the above. He died Sept. 26, 1762, in his 71st year.

\*From private information. †*Doddridge's 10 Sermons*, 12mo. Pref. p. ix.

ny censure or even illiberal insinuation against others mingling with the representation of their own views on the points discussed, do great honor to the heart and spirit of the authors.

The other course of lectures, in which Mr. *Neal* was engaged, arose from an alarm concerning the increase of popery, which prevailed about the end of the year 1734.—Some eminent dissenting ministers of the day, of the presbyterian denomination, in conjunction with one of each of the other persuasions, agreed to preach a set of sermons on the main principles and errors, doctrines and practices, of the church of *Rome*, to guard protestants against the efforts of its emissaries. The gentlemen who engaged in this design were, Mr. *John Barker*, Dr. *Samuel Chandler*, Mr. *George Smith*, Dr. *Samuel Wright*, Dr. *William Harris*, Dr. *Obadiah Hughes*, Dr. *Jeremiah Hunt*, Mr. *Joshua Bayes*, Mr. *John Newman*, Dr. *Jabez Earle*, Mr. *Moses Lowman*, Dr. *Benjamin Grosvenor*, Mr. *Thomas Leavesly*, Mr. *Joseph Burrough*, a minister of the antipædo-baptist persuasion,† and Mr. *Neal*, who was an independent. The subject which fell to his lot to discuss was, “The supremacy

† Mr. *John Barker* was, for a number of years, a preacher of popular talents and great eminence, first at Hackney, and then at Salter’s-Hall. Many single sermons came from his pen, and he published a volume of discourses in his life-time, which was succeeded by a second volume after his death, in 1763.

Dr. *Samuel Chandler* is well known as rising superior to most, either within the pale of the establishment or out of it, in learning and abilities.

Mr. *George Smith* officiated to the society of the Gravel-Pit meeting, Hackney, for thirty years, as a preacher excelled by none and equalled by few. He died May 8, 1746, aged 57, looked upon by his own brethren as holding the first rank in merit amongst them; and not less honored and valued by those of the establishment who knew him.

Dr. *Samuel Wright*, the author of many single sermons and several valuable practical works, was distinguished by pulpit talents. He was 38 years pastor of the congregation, which originally met for religious worship in Black Friars, and then greatly increasing under his preaching, which was serious and judicious, solemn and striking, removed to Carter-Lane. He died in his 64th year, 1746.

Dr. *William Harris*, who was upwards of 40 years pastor of a congregation in Crutched-Friars, was a very acceptable preacher, and the author, besides many single sermons, of a volume of discourses on “The principal representations of the Messiah throughout the Old Testament,” and of another called “Funeral Discourses, in two parts: con-

'of *St. Peter*, and the bishops of *Rome* his successors."

'taining 1. Consolation on the death of our friends, and 2. Preparation 'for our own death.'" His compositions were labored and finished. It was amongst the excellencies of his character, that he was scarce ever seen to be angry; was a very great patron and friend of young ministers, and had a concern in many great and useful designs of a public nature. He died high in reputation and usefulness, May 25, 1740, aged 63.

Dr. *Obadiah Hughes* "was many years minister of a congregation in Southwark, from which he removed to Westminster. He was an acceptable preacher, and printed some occasional sermons."\*

Dr. *Jeremiah Hunt*, of Pinners-Hall, was a most respectable character, a man of extensive learning and profound knowledge of the scriptures; he published many occasional sermons, and "An essay towards 'explaining the History and Revelations of Scripture.'" He died 5th of September, 1744, aged 67.

Mr. *Joshua Bayes* was pastor of the congregation in Hatton-Garden.

Mr. *John Newman* was, for many years, one of the most celebrated preachers in the city of London; who delivered to crowded audiences, long and labored sermons without any assistance of notes. He was first assistant to Mr. *Nathaniel Taylor*, and then co-pastor with Mr. *William Tong*, at *Salters'-Hall*; appearing in the same place for five and forty years, with great credit and comfort, and died while he was esteemed and beloved, in full reputation and usefulness, much missed and lamented, in his 63th year, July 25, 1741.

Dr. *Jabez Earle*, a classical scholar, remarkable for a vivacity and cheerfulness of temper, which never forsook him to the last, was for near 70 years a noted minister in London. He preached to the last Sunday in his life, and died in his chair without a groan or sigh, aged ninety-two. He was pastor of a congregation at *Long-Acre*, and one of the *Tuesday* lecturers at *Salters'-Hall*. He printed, besides several sermons, a little tract, called *Sacramental Exercises*; and in the second edition of the "*Biographia Britannica*," under the article *Amory*, there is a small copy of verses which he sent to his friend Dr. *Harris*, on their both receiving diplomas from a Scotch university.

Mr. *Moses Lowman*, more than forty years minister of a congregation at *Clapham, Surry*, to a great character for general literature added a thorough acquaintance with Jewish learning and antiquities. His treatise on the civil government of the Hebrews, another on the ritual of that people, and a commentary on the Revelations, have been held in high estimation. A small piece drawn up by him, in the mathematical form, to prove the unity and perfections of God *a priori*, was called, by Dr. *Chandler*, a truly golden treatise, and asserted to be a strict demonstration. After his decease there appeared from the press three tracts on the *Shechinah* and *Logos*, published from his MSS. by Dr. *Chandler*, Dr. *Lardner*, and Mr. *Sandercock*. He reached the age of 72, and died May 3, 1752.

*Benjamin Grosvenor* was a minister in London, of distinguished

\* Dr. Kippis' Life of Dr. Lardner, p. 7.



These discourses were separately printed immediately af-

reputation, upwards of fifty years. A singular acumen, lively imagination, and warm devotion of heart, characterized his discourses, which were delivered with a graceful utterance. He was born in London, 1st January, 1675; was chosen minister to the congregation in Crosby-square in 1704, which he soon raised into a flourishing church and crowded auditory: and in 1716 he was elected one of the six preachers at the Merchants' lecture, at Salters'-Hall. In 1749 he retired from all public services; and died August 27th, 1758, in the 83d year of his age. He published many single sermons; the most distinguishing of which was one on "The Temper of Jesus towards his enemies," which was reprinted at Cambridge so lately as the year 1785: it was a transcript of his own heart and life. "An Essay on Health;" and an excellent treatise entitled, "The Mourner;" both of which have passed through several editions, and will continue to be memorials of his genius, learning, and spirit. Of the latter the following passage in his diary is an amiable specimen: "I thank God," says he, "for that temper of mind and genius, which has made it natural for me to have an aversion to bigotry. This has improved constantly with my knowledge. And the enlarging my mind towards those who differ from me, has kept pace with my illumination and intellectual improvements. *Agree to differ* is a good motto. The reason and loveliness of such a friendly disposition would recommend it, and I am persuaded people would almost take it of themselves, if it were not for the several arts used to prevent it."

Mr. *Thomas Leavesly* was, for some years, minister of the Old Jewry in London.

Mr. *Joseph Burroughs* was a learned and judicious divine; of which, not only the sermon in the above collection, but a volume of sermons published in 1741; and "a view of Popery;" taken from the creed of pope *Pius IV.* afford ample proof. He was also the author of several single sermons and of "Two Discourses relating to positive institutions:" which brought on a controversy between him and the worthy Dr. *Caleb Fleming*, on the mode and subject of baptism. He was fifty-two years connected with the general baptist congregation in Barbican, London, first as an assistant to the Rev. *Richard Allen*, and from the year 1717, as pastor, to November 23, 1761, when he died in the 77th year of his age: having supported, through so long a life, the character of the steady friend to liberty and free-enquiry, of a zealous advocate for the importance of the christian revelation, and of the strenuous promoter of every scheme that tended to advance the common interests of religion, as well as those which were particularly calculated for the benefit of baptist societies: while through the greatest part of this period he had as a minister served the church, with which he was united, with the greatest fidelity, affection, and zeal.

The length of this note might appear to require an apology, were not the names, to whose memory it is devoted, too eminent in their day to be passed over without some respectful notice. Several of the preceding gentlemen, viz. the Drs. *Grosvenor*, *Wright*, and *Evans*, and Mr. *Lowman*, were engaged in the years 1716, 1717, 1718, with Dr. *Avery*,

ter each was preached and when the lecture was closed, were collected together and formed two volumes, 8vo.\*

and Mr. *Simon Brown*, in a valuable publication, entitled “*The Occasional Paper* :” a work sacred to the cause of religious liberty, free-enquiry and charity.

\* It is proper to add, that this defence of protestantism did not terminate with the delivery of the sermons from the pulpit at *Salters'-Hall*. Dr. *Chandler* pursued his subject in “*A second treatise on the Notes of the Church* ;” as a supplement to his sermon, at that place, on the same subject. And Dr. *Harris* followed up his sermon on transubstantiation with “*A second Discourse*, in which the sixth chapter of St. *John's* gospel is particularly considered : preached at the Merchants' lecture at *Salters'-Hall*, April 22, 1735,” which was reckoned to possess peculiar merit. Mr. *Burroughs* further shewed himself an able writer, in the cause for which the sermons were preached, by his “*Review of Popery*.” The course of lectures had not gone on a month, when a gentleman or two being in company with a Romish priest at the *Pope's-Head Tavern* in *Cornhill*, they became the subject of conversation : and the latter objected in particular, against some passages in Mr. *Barker's* sermon, as what could not be supported by proper vouchers. This brought on, by appointment, “*Two conferences on the 7th and 13th of February, 1734-5, at the Bell-Tavern in Nicholas-lane, on the blasphemy of many popish writers in giving, and of popes in receiving, the title of OUR LORD GOD THE POPE ; on the doctrines of substantiation ; praying to saints and angels, and of denying the use of the scriptures to the laity.*” At the first of these conferences twenty were present, and the dispute was supported by the Romish priest, Dr. *Hunt*, and a divine of the church of England : at the second the debate laid between the former catholic gentleman Mr. *Morgan*, accompanied by Mr. *Vaughan*, supposed to be a priest, and Dr. *Hunt*, Dr. *Chandler*, and Mr. *John Eames*, well known to the world for his integrity, and learning : Dr. *Talbot Smith* was chosen chairman, and the whole company consisted of thirty. A state of these disputations was soon published by an anonymous author, entitled, “*Two Conferences held,*” &c. The catholic party also gave a representation of them to the public in a pamphlet entitled, “*The two Conferences, &c. truly stated.*” This brought out from the pen of Dr. *Chandler* “*An account of the conference held in Nicholas-lane, February 13, 1734-5, between two Romish priests and some protestant divines, with some remarks on the pamphlet, &c.*” The doctors' account is confined to the second conference, because he was not present at the first.

Soon after these *Salters'-Hall* sermons were published, there appeared a pamphlet, in 1735, which in 1736 ran to a third edition, entitled, “*A supplement to the sermons lately preached at Salters'-Hall against popery : containing just and useful remarks on another great corruption therein omitted.*” The author of this tract was Mr. *George Killingworth*, a respectable lay-gentlemen of *Norwich*. The design of it was to shew, that the reasoning of the gentlemen, who preached those



In the year 1736 came out the third volume of the *History of the Puritans* : and Mr. *Neal's* design was completed, by the publication of the fourth, in the year 1738, which brought down the history of non-conformity to the act of toleration by King *William* and Queen *Mary*, in the year 1689. This and Mr. *Neal's* other historical works spread his name through the learned world, and justly secured to him great and permanent reputation. Dr. *Jennings* speaking of them says, “ I am satisfied that there  
 ‘ is no judicious and unprejudiced person, that has con-  
 ‘ versed with the volumes he wrote, but will acknowledge  
 ‘ he had an excellent talent at writing history. His style  
 ‘ is most easy and perspicuous ; and the judicious remarks,  
 ‘ which he leads his readers to make upon facts as they  
 ‘ go along, make his histories to be not only more enter-  
 ‘ taining, but to be more instructive and useful than most  
 ‘ books of that kind.”\*

While this work was preparing for and going through the press, part of his time was occupied in drawing up and publishing an answer to Dr. *Maddox*, bishop of St. Asaph ; who wrote a pretty long “ Vindication of the doctrine, discipline, and worship, of the church of England, established in the reign of Queen *Elizabeth*, from the injurious reflections (as he was pleased to stile them) of Mr. *Neal's* first volume of the *History of the Puritans*.” This answer was entitled, “ A review of the principal facts object-

sermons, affected not only the papists, but themselves, in rejecting the baptism of adult persons, and substituting in the room thereof the sprinkling of infants. The author, with this view, besides stating from the New Testament the evidence in favor of his own sentiments, shrewdly applied a great number of passages from the sermons, somewhat in the way of a parody, to establish his own conclusion ; and to prove, that if those gentlemen practised or believed *any thing* as a part of the religion of the holy Jesus, which could not be plainly and clearly proved from the New Testament, (as he conceived that they did in the matter of sprinkling of infants) they must look upon themselves as self-condemned, their own arguments being a full confutation of them. Mr. *Killingworth* shewed himself an able writer by other pieces in favor of the sentiments for which he was a strenuous advocate : and published also “ An answer” to the late very respectable Mr. *Micajah Tougood's* tract, entitled, “ Infant Baptism a Reasonable Service ;” by way of appendix to an examination of Dr. *Foster's* “ Sermon on Catholic Communion.” In one of his pieces, he likewise replied to the arguments of Mr. *Emlyn's* *Previous Question*.

\* *Funeral Sermon*, p. 32.

‘ed to the first volume of the *History of the Puritans*.” It was reckoned to be written with great judgment, and to establish our historian’s character for an impartial regard to truth. And it was reasonably concluded, from this specimen of his powers of defence, that, if his declining state of health had permitted him, he would have as thoroughly vindicated the other volumes from the animadversions afterwards published against them by Dr. *Zachary Grey*.

The pleasure Mr. *Neal* had in serving the cause of religious liberty had carried him through his undertaking with amazing alacrity. But he engaged in it at an advanced age, and when his health had begun to decline: this, joined with the close application he gave to the prosecution of it, brought on a lingering illness, from which he never recovered. He had been all his life subject, in some degree, to a lowness of spirits, and to complaints of an indisposition in his head. His love of study, and an unremitting attention to the duties of his office, rendered him averse to the frequent use of any exercise that took him off from his books. In the end, repeated strokes of the palsy, first gentle and then more severe, which greatly enfeebled all his powers both of body and mind, and baffled the best advice, the aids of medicine, and repeated use of the Bath waters, brought him to his grave, perfectly worn out, in the 65th year of his age. He died April 4th, 1743.

During the declining state of his health, Mr. *Neal* applied to the excellent Dr. *Doddridge* to recommend some young minister, as an assistant to him. A gentleman was pointed out, and appeared in his pulpit with this view; and a letter, which on this occasion he wrote to Dr. *Doddridge*, and which the doctor endorsed with this memorandum, “Some wise Hints,” affords such an agreeable specimen of Mr. *Neal*’s good sense, candor, and prudence, as cannot fail, we think, to render it acceptable to our readers.

“DEAR SIR,

“Your letter which I received yesterday gave me a great deal of agreeable entertainment, and made me almost in love with a person that I never saw. His character is the very picture of what I should wish and pray for. There is no manner of exception that I can hear of, but that of

‘ his delivery, which many, with you, hope may be con-  
 ‘ quered or very much amended. All express a very great  
 ‘ respect and value for Mr. — and his ministry, and are  
 ‘ highly pleased with his serious and affectionate manner.  
 ‘ And I am apt to think, when we have heard him again,  
 ‘ even the thickness of the pronunciation of some of his  
 ‘ words will in a great measure vanish ; it being owing, in  
 ‘ a great measure, (according to my son) to not making his  
 ‘ under and upper lip meet together : but be that as it will,  
 ‘ this is all, and the very worst that I know of, to use your  
 ‘ own expression.

“ I wish, as much as you, that the affair might be speedily  
 ‘ issued ; but you know that things of this nature, in which  
 ‘ many, and those of a different temper, are concerned, must  
 ‘ proceed with all tenderness and voluntary freedom, with-  
 ‘ out the least shadow of violence or imaginary hurry. Men  
 ‘ love to act for themselves, and with spontaneity ; and, as  
 ‘ I have sometimes observed, have come at length cheerful-  
 ‘ ly, and voluntarily into measures, which they would have  
 ‘ opposed, if they had imagined they were to be driven in-  
 ‘ to them.

“ I don’t mention this, as if it was the present case, for  
 ‘ I can assure you it is not : but to put you in mind, that  
 ‘ it may possibly not always be for the best to do things too  
 ‘ hastily ; and therefore I hope you will excuse the digres-  
 ‘ sion. I am exceedingly tender of Mr. —’s character  
 ‘ and usefulness ; and therefore shall leave it to your pru-  
 ‘ dence to fix the day of his coming up ; and you may de-  
 ‘ pend upon my taking all the prudential steps in favor of  
 ‘ this affair, that I am master of. I hope the satisfaction  
 ‘ will be general, but who can answer for it beforehand ?  
 ‘ It has a promising appearance ; but if it comes out other-  
 ‘ wise, you shall have a faithful account.

“ I am pleased to hear that Mr. — is under so good  
 ‘ an adviser as yourself, who cannot but be apprised of the  
 ‘ great importance of this affair both to your academy, to  
 ‘ myself, and to the public interest of the dissenters in this  
 ‘ city : and I frankly declare I don’t know any one place  
 ‘ among us in London where he can sit more easy, and en-  
 ‘ joy the universal love and affection of a good-natured peo-  
 ‘ ple, which will give him all fitting encouragement. We

‘are very thankful to you, Sir, for the concern you express  
 ‘for us, and the care you have taken for our supply. I  
 ‘hope you will have a return, from above, of far greater  
 ‘blessings than this world can bestow, and you may ex-  
 ‘pect from me all suitable acknowledgments.

“Pray advise Mr. —, when you see him, to lay aside  
 ‘all undue concern from his mind, and to speak with free-  
 ‘dom and ease. \* Let him endeavor, by an articulate pro-  
 ‘nunciation, to make the elder persons hear and those that  
 ‘sit at a greater distance, and all will be well. He has  
 ‘already got a place in the affections of many of the peo-  
 ‘ple; and I believe will quickly captivate them all. As-  
 ‘sure him that he has a candid audience, who will not make  
 ‘a man an offender for a word. Let him speak to the  
 ‘heart, and touch the conscience, and shew himself in earn-  
 ‘est in his work: and he will certainly approve himself a  
 ‘workman that needs not be ashamed. I beg pardon for  
 ‘these hints. Let not Mr. — impress his mind too  
 ‘much with them. My best respects attend your lady and  
 ‘whole family, not forgetting good Mr. —, &c. I am,  
 ‘Sir, in haste,

‘Your affectionate brother

‘and very humble servant,

‘DANIEL NEAL.”\*

*London, Saturday evening, May 12, 1739.*

“Brethren pray for us!”

Disease had, for many months before his death, rendered him almost entirely incapable of public service. This induced him to resign the pastoral office in the November preceding. The considerate as well as generous manner in which he did it, will appear from the following letter he sent to the church on that occasion:—

“*To the church of Christ, meeting in Jewen-street, London.*

“My dear brethren, and beloved in the Lord,

“God, in his all-wise providence, having seen meet for  
 ‘some time to disable me in a great measure from serving  
 ‘you in the gospel of his Son, and therein to deprive me  
 ‘of one of the greatest satisfactions of my life; I have been

\* The above letter was very obligingly communicated by the Rev. Thomas Stedman, vicar of St. Chad's Shrewsbury.

‘ waiting upon him in the use of means for a considerable  
 ‘ time, as I thought it my duty to do. But not having  
 ‘ found such a restoration as might enable me to stated ser-  
 ‘ vice, it is my duty to acquiesce in his will. And having  
 ‘ looked up to him for direction, I think it best for your  
 ‘ sakes to surrender my office of a pastor amongst you.

“ Upon this occasion it becomes me to make my hum-  
 ‘ blest acknowledgements to the blessed God, for that mea-  
 ‘ sure of usefulness he has honored me with in the course  
 ‘ of my labors amongst you ; and I render you all my un-  
 ‘ feigned thanks for the many affectionate instances of your  
 ‘ regard towards me.

“ May the spirit of God direct you in the choice of a wise  
 ‘ and able pastor, who may have your spiritual and ever-  
 ‘ lasting welfare at heart. And for that end beware of a  
 ‘ spirit of division : Be ready to condescend to each other’s  
 ‘ infirmities : Keep together in the way of your duty, and  
 ‘ in waiting upon God for his direction and blessing : Re-  
 ‘ member this is the distinguishing mark of the disciples  
 ‘ of Christ “that they love one another.” Finally, my  
 ‘ brethren, farewell ; be of good comfort and of one mind ;  
 ‘ live in peace ; and the God of love and peace shall be  
 ‘ with you.

‘ I am, your affectionate well-wisher,

‘ and obedient humble servant,

‘ DANIEL NEAL.”\*

From the first attack of his long illness, it appears he had serious apprehensions how it would terminate ; and a letter written from Bath, in April 1739, to a worthy friend,† shews the excellent state of his mind under those views.

\* From the MSS. account.

† This friend was Dr. *Henry Miles*, an eminent dissenting minister, at Tooting in Surry, and a respectable member of the Royal Society : who died Feb. 10, 1763, in the 65th year of his age. He was a native of Stroud in Gloucestershire. His knowledge in natural history, botany, and experimental philosophy, for which he had a remarkable taste, occasioned his being elected a member of the Royal Society, in 1743, in the transactions of which appear several papers from his pen ; and Dr. *Birch*, in the preface to his fine edition of Mr. *Boyle’s Works*, handsomely says, that the conduct and improvement of that edition were chiefly to be ascribed to the great labor, judgment, and sagacity of the learned Mr. *Miles*, and that to him the public owed considerable additions

“My greatest concern,” he says, “is to have rational and solid expectations of a future happiness. I would not be mistaken, nor build on the sand; but would impress my mind with a firm belief of the certainty of the future world, and live in a practical preparation for it. I rely very much on the rational notions we have of the moral perfections of God, not only as a just but a benevolent and merciful Being, who knows our frame, and will make all reasonable allowances for our imperfections and follies in life; and not only so, but, upon repentance and faith in Christ, will pardon our past sins, though never so many or great.

“In aid of the imperfection of our rational notions, I am very thankful for the glorious truths of gospel revelation, which are an additional superstructure on the other: for though we can believe nothing contrary to our reason, we have a great many excellent and comfortable discoveries built upon and superadded to it. Upon this double foundation would I build all my expectations, with an humble and awful reverence of the majesty of the Great Judge of all the earth, and a fiducial reliance on the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ to eternal life. In this frame of mind, I desire to fear God, and keep his commandments.”

In all his sensible intervals, during his last illness, he enjoyed an uncommon serenity of mind; and behaved becoming a christian and a minister.†

This peaceful state of mind and comfortable hope he pos-

never before published. Besides this, he could never be prevailed upon to publish more than a single sermon, preached at the Old-Jewry, on occasion of a public charity in 1738. He was a hard student. His preparations for the pulpit cost him incessant labor; and for a course of 30 years he constantly rose, two days in the week, at 2 or 3 o'clock in the morning, to compose his sermons. He lived like an excellent christian and minister: his behavior was on all occasions that of a gentleman; the simplicity of his spirit and manners was very remarkable; his conversation instructive and entertaining; his countenance was always open, mild and amiable; and his carriage so condescending and courteous, even to his inferiors, as plainly discovered a most humane and benevolent heart. He was the friend of Dr. Lardner and Dr. Doddridge; and in the correspondence of the latter, published by the Rev. Mr. Stedman, there are several of his letters. See also “Dr. Furneaux’s Funeral Sermon for Dr. Miles.”

† Letters to and from Dr. Doddridge, 1790, p. 358.

essed to the last.† About a month before his death, he appeared to his fellow-worshippers, at the Lord's supper, with an air so extraordinary serious and heavenly, as made some present say, "*he looked as if he were not long for this world.*"

The preceding particulars and his writings will, in part, enable the reader to form for himself a just opinion of Mr. *Neal's* character : and will certainly give credibility to what is reported concerning it.

He filled the relations of domestic life with integrity and honor ; and left a deep and fond regret in the hearts of his family.§ In his public connexions, he was the prudent counsellor, and faithful, steady friend. His labors in the pulpit, and his visits in families, while his health continued firm, were edifying and entertaining. He had an easy, agreeable manner, both in the style and in the delivery of his sermons, free from affectation. In conversation, he knew how to mix grave and prudent instruction or advice with a becoming cheerfulness, which made his company to be pleasing and profitable.

He was honored with the friendship of some in very high stations ; and, in early life, contracted an acquaintance with several, who afterwards made a considerable figure in the learned world, both in the established church and amongst the dissenters.

The repeated and frequent invitations he received to appear in the pulpit, on singular and public occasions, especially the share he had in the lectures at *Salters'-Hall*, against popery, are honorable proofs of the respect and estimation in which his abilities and character were in general held, even by those who differed from him in their sentiments on many questions of doctrine and church government.

His own doctrinal sentiments were supposed to come nearest to those of *Calvin* ; which he looked upon as most

† *Dr. Jennings' Funeral Sermon, and the MSS. account.*

§ Of this we have a proof in the expressive and affecting manner in which his son wrote, concerning his death, to *Dr. Doddridge*. "The report which you had heard of my honored father's death was too well founded, if it is becoming the filial gratitude I owe to his memory to



agreeable to the sacred scriptures, and most adapted to the great ends of religion. But neither were his charity nor his friendships confined to men of his own opinion. The bible alone was his standard for religious truth: and he was willing and desirous, that all others should be at perfect liberty to take and follow it, as their own rule.—The unchristian heats and unhappy differences, which had arisen amongst christians by the restraints that had been laid, more or less, by all parties, when in power, on the faith or worship of their fellow christians, had fixed in him an utter aversion to imposition upon conscience in *any shape*, and to all such party distinctions as would naturally lead to it.

Mr. *Neal* married *Elizabeth*, the only daughter of the Rev. *Richard Lardner*, many years pastor of a congregation at *Deal*,\* and sister of the great and excellent Dr. *Lardner*. She survived Mr. *Neal* about five years, dying in 1744. They left a son and two daughters: one of these ladies married Mr. *Joseph Jennings*, of Fenchurch-street, the eldest son of the Rev. Dr. *David Jennings*; the other the Rev. Mr. *Lister*, minister of the dissenting congregation at Ware. His son, Mr. *Nathaniel Neal*, was an eminent attorney, and secretary to the Million Bank. He wrote a pamphlet, entitled, “A Free and serious Remonstrance to Protestant Dissenting ministers, on occasion of the decay of religion;” which was republished by the late

‘seem to repine at my own loss, which I am satisfied is greatly his gain; especially when his nobler powers were so much obscured, even to the sight of his friends, as they have been for some time past by the bodily decays he labored under. But notwithstanding all the admirable reliefs which reason and faith afford under the uneasiness which nature feels on the loss of so near and (who had been) so desirable a relation, and the many circumstances of weakness which seemed to make dissolution less formidable, yet the parting season will be gloomy, the breathless corpse of a once dear and valuable friend will affect us, and the carrying out of our house, and leaving behind us in a solitary tomb, all that was visible (when at the same time it was so venerable) of a father, strikes a damp on the spirits, which is not easily overcome or forgotten.”

Letters to and from Dr. *Doddridge*, p. 355, &c.

\* The character of Mr. *Lardner*, drawn by his son-in-law Mr. *Neal*, forms the 6th No. of the Appendix to Dr. *Lardner*’s life, prefixed to the new edition of his works in 8vo.



Rev. *Job Orton*, in 1775. Many admirable letters of this gentleman to Dr. *Doddridge*, are given to the public in that instructive and entertaining collection of letters to and from the Doctor, which we owe to the Rev. *Thomas Stedman*, vicar of St. Chad's, Shrewsbury: and who, to the mention of Mr. *Nathaniel Neal*, adds from a correspondent; 'whose character I never think of without the highest veneration and esteem, as few ever possessed more eminently the virtues of the heart, united with a very superior understanding and judgment.'†

† Letters, and p. 333. Note.

TO

**DANIEL LISTER, Esq.**

**OF HACKNEY,**

**GRANDSON OF THE REV. DANIEL NEAL,**

**IN GRATEFUL TESTIMONY OF THE**

***ASSISTANCE AND ENCOURAGEMENT***

**WITH WHICH,**

**INDUCED BY STRONG ATTACHMENT TO THE CAUSE, OF**

**GENERAL LIBERTY AND PIOUS VENERATION FOR**

**THE NAME OF HIS WORTHY ANCESTOR,**

**HE HAS POLITELY AND GENEROUSLY FAVORED THE UNDERTAKING,**

**THIS NEW EDITION**

**OF**

**THE HISTORY OF THE PURITANS**

**IS RESPECTFULLY INSCRIBED,**

**BY HIS OBLIGED**

**HUMBLE SERVANT,**

**THE EDITOR.**

## THE EDITOR'S ADVERTISEMENT.

**M**ORE than half a century has elapsed, since the work, now again offered to the public, made its first appearance. The author gave it a second edition in 4to. In 1755 it was printed at Dublin, on the plan of the first impression, in four volumes octavo. The English editions have, for a number of years, been scarce: and copies of the work, as it has been, justly, held in high estimation by Dissenters, have borne a high price. Foreigners also have referred to it as a book of authority, affording the most ample information on that part of the English History, which it comprehends.\*

A republication of it will, on these accounts, it is supposed, be acceptable to the friends of religious liberty. Several circumstances concur to render it, at this time, peculiarly seasonable. The Protestant Dissenters, by their repeated applications to Parliaments, have attracted notice and excited an enquiry into their principles and history. The odium and obloquy, of which they have recently become the objects, are a call upon them to appeal to both in their own justification. Their History, while it brings up to painful review scenes of spiritual tyranny and oppression, connects itself with the rise and progress of religious liberty; and necessarily brings forward many important and interesting transactions, which are not to be met with in the general Histories of our Country, because not falling within the province of the authors to detail.

The Editor has been induced, by these considerations, to comply with a proposal to revise Mr. Neal's work. In doing this, he has taken no other liberty with the original text, than to cast into notes some papers and lists of names, which appeared to him too much to interrupt the narrative. This alteration in the form of it promises to render it more pleasing to the eye, and more agreeable to the perusal. He has, where he could procure the works quoted, which he has been able to do in most instances, examined and corrected the references, and so ascertained the fairness and accuracy of the authorities. He has reviewed the animadversions of Bishops *Maddox* and *Warburton*, and Dr. *Grey*; and given the result of his scrutiny in notes; by which the credit of the author is eventually established. He has not suppressed strictures of his own, where he conceived there was occasion for them. It has been his aim, in conducting this work, through the press, to support the character of the diligent, accurate, and impartial Editor. How far he has done this, he must leave to the candid to determine.

Whatever inaccuracies, or mistakes, the eye of criticism may discover, he is confident, that they cannot essentially affect the execution of the design, any more than the veracity of the author. The remark, which Mr. Neal advanced as a plea, in his own defence, against the censure of Bishop *Maddox*, will apply with force, the Editor conceives, to his own case; as in the first instance it had great weight. "The commission of errors in writing any history of times past, (says the ingenious Mr. *Wharton*, in his letter to Mr. *Strype*) being altogether unavoidable, ought not to detract from the credit of the History, or the merits of the Historian, unless it be accompanied with immoderate contention, or unhandsome reflections on the errors of others."†

The Editor has only further to solicit any communications, which may tend to improve this impression of Neal's History; or to furnish materials for the continuation of the History of the Protestant Dissenters from the Revolution, with which period Mr. Neal's design closes, to the present times: as he has it in contemplation, if Providence favor him with life and health, to prepare such a work for the press.

Taunton, 13th June, 1793.

\* *Mosheim, Dictionnaire de Heresies, and Wendeborn.*

† Mr. Wharton discovered as many errors in Mr. Strype's single volume of Memorials of Archbishop Cranmer, as filled three sheets: yet Mr. Strype's collections were justly entitled to the commendations of posterity, as a work of great utility and authority. See Neal's Review, p. 6. 8vo.

# CONTENTS OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

## CHAPTER I.

### *The reign of HENRY VIII.*

**S**TATE of religion before the reformation. Statute of provisors. Statute of præmunire. Life and writings of *John Wickliffe*. Rise of penal laws against heretics.\* King *Henry VIII*'s birth and character. Cardinal *Wolsey*'s legantine power. King moves for a divorce from his Queen. King breaks with the pope. Act of supremacy. Against appeals. King's divorce. Pope's authority over the church of England taken away. Laws against heretics repealed. Clergy's submission. Act for revising the canons. Oath of succession and supremacy. Reformation of doctrine. Books printed. Supplication of the beggars; answered with severities. Monasteries visited. Monasteries suppressed. Their revenues. Bible translated into English. Death of Queen *Anne Bullen*. Articles of religion devised by the King. Pope excommunicates the King: occasions insurrections. King's injunctions. Abstract of the institution of a christian man. Bible set up in churches. Hindrances of a further reformation. Persecution of the protestants. *Lambert* burned. Statute of the six articles. Sad effects of it. Acts in favor of the prerogative. Lord *Cromwell*'s death.\* Mixed executions of the protestants and papists. Abstract of the erudition of a christian man. Remarks. Rigor of the six articles abated. State of the reformation at the King's death. 1324 1215 1540

## CHAPTER II.

### *The reign of King EDWARD VI.*

**T**HE justice of the English reformation argued. Regally debated. King *Edward*'s council. Heads of the two parties. Royal visitation. First book of homilies. Injunctions. Original of bidding prayers. Parliament repeals several popish laws, and makes new ones. Act for appointing bishops. Chauntries given to the crown. Foreign protestant divines take sanctuary in England. Images taken down out of the churches, and old rites abolished. All preaching forbid. First reformation of the communion and of other offices. Antiquity of liturgies. Of retaining the popish rites. Of the habits. Parliament confirms the new liturgy. Bishop *Gardiner* hardly used. Rebellions on behalf of the old religion. Heretics burnt. *Joan* of Kent. *George Van Paris* burnt. *Bonner* deprived: succeeded by *Ridley*. Reformation of the ecclesiastical laws; does not take place. Act for consecration of bishops, and ordaining priests and deacons. Mass books called in. Altars changed into communion tables. Reasons for it. Rise of the controversy about the habits. Bishop *Hooper*'s character: he refuses the habits; his reasons. Judgment of foreign divines. *Hooper* hardly used. The

difference compromised. Sentiments of the reforming clergy about the habits. *Ridley* and *Cranmer* relax their opinions of the habits. German church established. *Gardiner* deprived. Doctrines of the church reformed. Remarks. Common prayer book revised a second time: established by parliament. Marriages of the clergy legitimated. Blemishes of the reformation. Alienation of church lands. Reformation left imperfect. Further progress intended. *Bucer's* sentiments: and *Cranmer's*. Original of the English convocation. King's death and character. Remarks.

## CHAPTER III.

*The reign of Queen MARY.*

**KING** *Edward's* last will. Queen *Jane* proclaimed. Queen *Mary* enters London. Her declaration about religion. Suffolk men punished. Reformers imprisoned. Foreigners commanded to leave the kingdom. Popery restored by parliament. Proceedings of convocation. *Wyat's* rebellion. A visitation. Numbers of the clergy ejected. Queen's second parliament and marriage. Disputation at Oxford. Reformers' declaration of faith. Cardinal *Poole* arrives from the pope. The kingdom reconciled to Rome. Laws against the pope repealed. Queen restores the church lands. Laws against heretics revived. Protestants burnt. *Bonner's* cruelty. Petition from beyond sea in behalf of the martyrs. Mr. *Bradford* burnt. Bishops *Ridley* and *Latimer*. Bishop *Gardiner's* death. Archbishop *Cranmer* burnt. Further cruelties. The numbers that were burnt in this reign. Rise of the controversy about predestination. Arians. Some recant. Private congregation of protestants. Their sufferings. Many go into a voluntary exile. Rise of the puritans. Their manner of worship. The troubles at Frankfort. Disputes about ceremonies and the service book. They appeal to *Calvin*. Dr. *Cox* restores the use of the service book. Mr. *Knox* banished. Congregation divides: part go to Geneva. Remarks. Congregation at Frankfort divided a second time. The magistrates' advice to them. Their new book of discipline. Death of bishop *Poynet*. A visitation of the universities. Princess *Elizabeth*, her sufferings. Calamities of the nation. Queen *Mary's* death and character.

## CHAPTER IV.

*From the beginning of Queen ELIZABETH'S reign to the Separation of the Protestant Non-Conformists.*

**STATE** of the nation. Preaching forbid. Return of the exiles. Advice of foreign divines about the reformation. Resolution of the exiles. Proceedings of the parliament. The act of supremacy. Original of the court of high commission. Remarks. Power vested in the crown by the act of supremacy; with regard to the doctrine, discipline, ceremonies, nomination of bishops and convocations. Sentiments of the puritans. Admonition to parliament. Remarks. Dispute between papists and protestants. King *Edward's* liturgy revived. Act of uniformity. Remarks. Proceedings of convocation. Popish bishops de-

prived. Consecration of archbishop *Parker*. Principles of the reformers, with the opposite sentiments of the puritans. Queen's injunctions. Proceedings of the visitors: disliked by the Queen. Numbers of popish clergy deprived. No reformation of doctrine as yet. Terms of conformity not approved by many. Geneva Bible. Dutch and French churches restored. Scots reformation. Treaty of Edinburgh. Their kirk discipline. Behavior of the papists. Archbishop visits his diocese. Appointment of lessons for Sundays and holidays. Sad state of the clergy and of the universities. Queen averse to the married clergy. Act of assurance. Convocation review the article of the church. Controverted clause of the 20th article. They are subscribed. Debate about ceremonies. Proposals for reformation. Other proposals; rejected by a single proxy. *Miles Coverdale* dispensed with as to habits; and *Mr. Fox* the martyrologist. Variety of forms and habits complained of. Letters of puritans to courtiers against pressing the habits. Proceedings of the bishops. Advertisements. The Queen urged to enforce them. Sentiments of the first reformers about the habits. State of the Question about the habits. *Sampson* and *Humphrey's* letter against the habits. Sentiments of foreign divines: of the Switzers; of the French; of the Scots; of the English laity. Advertisements, or injunctions for uniformity. New subscriptions. Dr. *Humphreys* and *Sampson* before the commissioners. The archbishop's questions, and their answers. Other arguments against the habits.—Proceedings of the commissioners. *Sampson* deprived. *Humphreys's* letter to the Queen; obtains a toleration. Proceedings with the London clergy. Numbers deprived. Their reasons for refusing the habits. New injunctions of the ecclesiastical commissioners. Further severities against the puritans. Licences taken away. University of Cambridge's privilege of licencing preachers debated. Queen visits the university of Cambridge. They scruple the habits. *Whitgift* writes for dispensing with the habits. The archbishop's rigor, and his complaints. Sad condition of the city of London. Abstract of the suspended ministers' reasons for non-conformity. Restraint of the press.—Hardships of the puritans. Some continue in the church: others separate: sad consequences of it. Remarks. Affairs of Scotland. Birth of King *James I.* Kirk discipline established.

## CHAPTER V.

*From the Separation of the Protestant Non-Conformists to the death of archbishop PARKER.*

OBJECTIONS of the puritans against the hierarchy of the church.—Heads of the separation. They are apprehended at Plumbers'-Hall. Their examination. Their sufferings. Refugees increase. Dangerous state of the reformation. Bishops' Bible. Popish confederacy.—Their numbers. Rebellion in the north. The Queen and kingdom excommunicated. Effects of it. Penal laws against the papists. Death of *Mr. Kingsmill*. Proceedings of the spiritual courts. *Mr. Arton's* examination. *Mr. Cartwright* opposes the hierarchy of the church.—His positions. His punishment. *Cartwright* goes beyond sea. Pro.

ceedings in the parliament for reformation. Act for subscribing articles of faith. Address of the commons. Convocation. Rules for discipline. Rise of the prophesyings. Their orders. Their confession of faith. Bishop *Jewel's* death and character. The Rev. Mr. *Whitehead's* death. Archbishop *Parker's* zeal for uniformity. Puritans suspended. *Beza's* letter for reformation. Attempts in parliament for reformation; stopt by the Queen. Subscriptions urged on the clergy. Puritans apply to parliament. Their first admonition. Ministers that presented it imprisoned. Second admonition. Apology of the prisoners. Their supplication, and confession of faith. Heads of the admonition to the parliament: answered by *Whitgift*. *Cartwright* replies. Remarks. The temper and behavior of the disputants. *Whitgift's* severe usage of his adversary: the Queen's, and the Bishops. Remarks. Conclusion of the controversy. Remarks. First presbytery at Wandsworth. Growth of popery. Sad state of religion. Parisian massacre. Death of Mr. *Knox*. A severe persecution. *Birchet's* death and madness. Visitation of the diocese of Norwich. Puritans offer a public disputation. Proclamation against *Cartwright*. Dr. *Deering* deprived: he is restored. Other ministers deprived. Mr. *Johnson's* sufferings. Form of a subscription for the clergy. Form of subscription for the laity. Mr. *White's* examination. Puritan ministers caressed by the people. Protestation of the members. Dutch and French churches forbidden to receive puritans to their communion. Prophesyings of the clergy increase: suppressed in the diocese of Norwich.—Council's letter to continue them. The archbishop prevails. Death of *Parkhurst* bishop of Norwich. Religious assemblies broke up.—*Sampson* resigns his lecture: writes to *Grindal* in favor of puritanism. A sham plot fathered on the puritans. *Parker* defends his conduct in the plot. He visits the isle of Wight. Reformation of Guernsey and Jersey. State of popery. Foreign seminaries erected. Family of love. Anabaptists burnt. Death of archbishop *Parker*.

## CHAPTER VI.

*From the death of Archbishop PARKER, to the death of Archbishop GRINDAL.*

PROCEEDINGS of parliament and convocation. All licences made void. Diligence of the puritan preachers: Rise of the controversy about discipline. Associations for this purpose. Conclusions of the puritans in their synods. Remarks. Ministers deprived: Mr. *Harvey*, Mr. *Rockrey*, Mr. *Greenham*. Mr. *Stroud's* troubles. Death of Mr. *Deering*. Prophesyings regulated. Queen's reasons for putting them down. Her letter for that purpose. Bishop of Litchfield and Coventry's letter. *Grindal* refuses to comply: he is sequestered and confined. Death of Mr. *Lever*. Puritans ordained at Antwerp. *Travers's* testimonials. Dean *Whittingham's* troubles: the validity of his ordination disputed: his death. Mr. *Lawrence* deprived. Scarcity of preachers in divers parts of England; in London: in Cornwall: reasons of it. Mr. *Stubb's* right hand cut off. Commons vote a fast. Queen forbids it. Private fastings of the clergy put down. Queen requires a

conformity. Seditious libellers to suffer. Statute against seducing Queen's subjects to popery: and to oblige all persons to come to church. Visitation in London. Rise of the Brownists. History of *Robert Brown*. Principles of the Brownists. Reasons of their separation. Remarks. Severities against them. Puritans received into gentlemen's families. Execution of *Campion* the jesuit and others. *Allen* assists foreign protestants. Commission of concealments. Mr. *Wright's* sufferings. His ordination denied. Presbyterian ordination admitted by archbishop *Grindal*. Complaints of bishop *Aylmer's* severities. Justices of the peace supplication. Effects of it. Mr. *Copping* and *Wacker*, ministers, executed. Low state of practical religion. Death and character of the Rev. Mr. *Gilpin*. Death of archbishop *Grindal*.

## CHAPTER VII.

*From the death of Archbishop GRINDAL, to the Spanish invasion in 1588.*

*Whitgift* archbishop: his articles. Examination into his power of imposing them. Archbishop's primary visitation. Numbers suspended. Their hardships. Motives for amendments in the service book. Archbishop's reasons for subscription. Compassionate case of the non-subscribers. Their supplication to the council. Petition of the London ministers to convocation. Mr. *Barber*, *Field*, and *Egerton*, suspended. Petitions of gentlemen and parishioners for their ministers: *sex* petition; *Norwich* petition. Archbishop's remonstrance against them. He petitions the Queen for a new ecclesiastical commission. Queen grants it. Copy of the commission. Remarks. Power of the commission debated. Of the oath *ex-officio*. Their power of imprisonment. Of their fines. Of their power to frame articles for the clergy. *Order* of the court's proceedings. Form of citation. *Whitgift's* twenty-four articles. The treasurer's remarks upon them. The archbishop justifies his articles. His reasons for proceeding by the oath *ex-officio*. Lords of the council dissatisfied. Mr. *Beale* writes against the archbishop. The archbishop's complaint of him in the Star-chamber. Conference at Lambeth. Heads of the conference. The issue of it. Archbishop *Aylmer's* severities against the puritans. Ministers suspended. The bishop of *London*. Mr. *Carew's* sufferings. Mr. *Knight* and *Negus's* sufferings. Mr. *Gifford's* sufferings. Mr. *Dyke* suspended. His parishioners petition for him, and the lord treasurer; but in vain. Mr. *Benison's* sufferings. The council's letter in his favor. The archbishop's answer. Mr. *Merbury's* examination and imprisonment. Remarks. Hardships of the country clergy. Mr. *Paget's* sufferings. Articles against him: and his answer. Causes of his deprivation argued. His further sufferings. Mr. *Travers's* case. Book of discipline. The abstract. Puritans apply to the parliament. Bill brought in. Their proposals for reformation: attended with a supplication. Answer of the bishops. Bill against pluralities. The convocation presents a petition to the Queen. Bishops' proposals. The bill rejected by the lords. Four bills for reformation brought in: The archbishop's letter to the Queen: Her majesty puts a stop to them. Remarks. *Whitgift's* arguments against marrying at all times of the year. Puritans ap-



## CONTENTS OF THE NOTES.

---

**P**AGE 51, *Wickliffe's* sentiments. p. 55, Statutes against the *Lollards*. p. 56, Sufferings of *Keyler* and *Warner*. Id. Praises bestowed on *Henry VIII.* p. 75, Sufferings of the baptists. Id. *Cranmer's* opposition to the six articles. p. 77, Sufferings of the baptists. p. 78, The cause of *Cromwell's* fall discussed. p. 79—82, Abstract of the *King's book*. p. 83, Dr. *Warner's* remarks on this piece.

### CHAPTER II.

PAGE 90, The subjects of the book of Homilies. p. 90, 91, The *King's* injunctions. 99, King *Edward's* refusal of the Emperor's suit. p. 101, Mr. *Neal* censured. p. 103, Account of *Joan Bocker* and Mr. *Neal* animadverted on. p. 107, An injunction of *Ridley*. p. 110, A mistake of Mr. *Fuller*. p. 112, Bishop *Hooper's* compliance. p. 113, A distinction made by bishop *Maddox*. p. 114, Anabaptists excepted from a general pardon. The spread of Arianism. p. 116, Bishop *Maddox* answered. A remarkable clause in the 28th of the articles. p. 121, Proofs that a further reformation was intended. p. 122, Mr. *Neal's* Review quoted. p. 123, The same.

### CHAPTER III.

PAGE 131, Mr. *Neal* vindicated against bishop *Warburton*. p. 133, Parliaments corrupted. *Phillip's* desire to be appointed regent. p. 138, Mr. *Neal's* Review quoted. p. 142, Mr. *Fox* corrected. *Philpot's* (the martyr) intolerent spirit. p. 144, The number who suffered in the reign of Queen *Mary*. p. 147, Mr. *Neal* corrected. 156, Mr. *Neal* corrected and vindicated. p. 161, Anecdote of Cardinal *Pole*.

### CHAPTER IV.

PAGE 163, A proclamation against preaching. p. 166, Reflections on the repeal of a severe act against heresy. p. 167, The same on the act of supremacy. p. 168, The same. p. 169, The term *primitive times* explained. p. 172, Further remarks on the act of supremacy. p. 175, Mr. *Neal* corrected. p. 178, Archbishop *Heath's* speech against the act of uniformity. p. 181, *Voltaire* censured. p. 190, A remark of Dr. *Warner*. p. 191, Two anecdotes expressive of the spirit of the times. p. 202, A remark of Dr. *Warner*. p. 206, Queen *Elizabeth's* aversion to an extensive reformation. p. 207, The ground on which the reformers placed infant baptism. p. 208, History of the controversy concerning the clause in the 20th article, on the power of the church. p. 214, *Fox's* instalment in the prebend of Durham. p. 222, Mr. *Neal* defended against bishop *Warburton*. p. 228, 229, The commissioners' advertisements for due order in preaching. p. 231, 32, Bishop *Parker's* questions put to the puritan clergy. p. 233, Mr. *Sampson's* preferments, and bishop *Parker's* partiality to him. p. 234, Impediments to Dr. *Humphrey's* preferment. p. 237—240, The London clergy's reasons for refusing the apparel. p. 241, A remark of Dr. *Warner*. p. 243, Mr. *Neal* defended against bishop *Maddox*. p. 251, Restraints on the freedom of the press condemned.

### CHAPTER V.

PAGE 261, The reasons why the difference between the puritans and conformists did not, in general, extend to points of doctrine. p.

name : stopt by the Queen. Act for punishing refusers to come to church. Progress of Brownism. Their church settlement and administration of the sacraments. They are discovered and imprisoned. Their petition to the council. Sufferings of Mr. *Smith* and others. *Barrowe's* supplication to parliament. Inscription upon *Rippon's* coffin a Brownist. Petition of the Brownists in the prisons of London. *Barrowe's* supplication for a conference : Reasons for refusing it. Mr. *Barrowe's* first examination : his second examination. Trial of Mr. *Barrowe*, *Greenwood*, and others. *Bellet*, *Boule*, and *Studley*, deprived. *Barrowe* and *Greenwood* executed. *Barrowe's* letter against the archbishop. Mr. *Penry's* history. Proclamation to apprehend him. He is taken. His petition to the Queen unfinished. His trial and sentence. His complaints to the treasurer. His protestation : his death. Sufferings of the papists. A summary of the kirk affairs of Scotland. Presbytery established by law. Power of the general assemblies, presbyteries, &c. Account of *Hooker's* Ecclesiastical Polity. General maxims contained in it. Remarks. Death of *Aylmer*, bishop of London. He is succeeded by bishop *Fletcher* ; who persecutes the puritans, and drives them into Holland. Controversy about the sabbath. Dr. *Bound's* book suppressed by the archbishop : but prevails. Predestinarian controversy. Mr. *Barret's* case. Lambeth articles : disliked by the court : Dr. *Barro's* sufferings. Sentiments of the church on this head. Controversy of Christ's descent into hell. Mr. *Darrel's* sufferings for pretending to cast out unclean spirits. His solemn protestation. Puritans turned over to the assizes. Judge *Anderson's* fury. Mr. *Allen's* case. Proceedings of parliament and convocation. Prohibitions granted. The archbishop complains of them. A cessation of controversy between the church and the puritans. Proceedings of parliament against the spiritual courts. Queen protects them. Bill to punish voluntary absence from the church. Proceedings of the convocation. Death of Dr. *Perkins*. Summary of the controversy with the puritans in this reign. Principles of the puritans. Their character. Queen's conduct towards them. Remarks. Of practical religion. The Queen's death and character.

# ADDITIONAL REFERENCES TO AUTHORS, TAKEN FROM MR. NEAL'S REVIEW.

Page

83. To the second paragraph subjoin, Burnet's Hist. Ref. vol. iii. p. 164.
90. To the word *homilies*, Burnet's Hist. Ref. vol. ii. p. 27.
93. To the second paragraph, Burnet's Hist. Ref. vol. ii. p. 42.
94. To the reference in the bottom of the page, after 61, add 64.
106. To the reference in the bottom of the page add, after p. 144, Collyer's Eccles. Hist. vol. ii. p. 290.
108. To *tables* subjoin, Burnet's Hist. Ref. vol. ii. p. 150. Strype's Ann. vol. i. p. 160.
- Id. To the reference at the bottom after p. 168, add Strype's Ann. vol. i. p. 162.
123. To the note add, Bennet's Mem. p. 62.
145. Line 15, to the word *predestination*, subjoin Cranmer's Mem. p. 351, 2, 3. Appendix, p. 83.
162. To the beginning of the paragraph subjoin, Strype's Ann. vol. i. p. 2, 51, 175. And to the end of it, Burnet's Hist. Ref. vol. ii. p. 376.
163. To the beginning of the second paragraph subjoin, Strype's Ann. vol. i. p. 103, 105.
191. In the references at the bottom, after *Parker*, add p. 46.
193. To the top subjoin, Strype's Annals, vol. i. p. 72, 73.
218. Add to the reference at the bottom, Strype's Ann. vol. ii. p. 555.
224. To the second reference at the bottom add, after 30, Strype's Ann. vol. i. p. 173.
232. To the last paragraph of note subjoin, Strype's Ann. vol. i. p. 459.
270. To the beginning of the second paragraph subjoin, Strype's Ann. vol. i. p. 623.
279. To the reference at the bottom add, Life of Parker, p. 312.
294. To the reference at the bottom add, Pierce's Vindic. p. 45, 46.
309. To the second reference at the bottom add, Life of Parker, p. 428.
318. To the reference at the bottom add, Strype's Ann. vol. ii. p. 288.
320. In the last references after 263 add, 343. MS. Life of Parker, p. 479.
336. To the second reference at the bottom add, Strype's Ann. vol. ii. p. 323.
344. To the second reference add, Life of Parker, p. 352, 3, 4. Appendix, p. 47. Strype's Ann. vol. i. p. 623.
407. To the beginning of the page subjoin, Strype's Life of Whitgift, p. 4.
486. To *puritanical principles* subjoin, Strype's Ann. vol. i. p. 472. vol. ii. p. 451.—To a *severe persecutor*, subjoin, Life of Parker, p. 428, 438. Pierce's Vindic. p. 89.
553. To the beginning of the second paragraph subjoin, Lord Chancellor King's speech at Sacheverell's trial, fol. 81, 290. "If these be wholesome severities, let human nature determine; but I believe," says his lordship, "that there is not one person here," (among the lords and commons of Great-Britain) "but if these severities were to be inflicted on himself, would be far from thinking them wholesome, and desire to be excused from them."

THE  
HISTORY  
OF THE  
PURITANS.

CHAP. I.

THE REIGN OF HENRY VIII.

**KING** *William* the Conqueror having got possession of the crown of *England*, by the assistance of the see of *Rome*; and King *John* having afterwards sold it, in his wars with the Barons; the rights and privileges of the *English* clergy were delivered up into the hands of the Pope, who taxed them at his pleasure, and in process of time drained the kingdom of immense treasures; for besides all his other dues, arising from *annates*, *first-fruits*, *peter-pence*, &c. he extorted large sums of money from the clergy for their preferments in the Church. He advanced foreigners to the richest bishopricks, who never resided in their dioceses, nor so much as set foot upon *English* ground, but sent for all their profits to a foreign country; nay, so covetous was his *Holiness*, that before livings became void, he sold them *provisionally* among his *Italians*, insomuch, that neither the King nor the clergy had any thing to dispose of, but every thing was bargained for before-hand at *Rome*. This awakened the resentments of the legislature, who in the 25th year of King *Edward III.* passed an act, called the *Statute of Provisors*, to establish, “That the King, and other Lords, shall present unto benefices of their own, or their ancestor’s foundation, and not the Bishop of *Rome*.” This act enacted, “That all forestalling of benefices to foreigners shall cease: and that the free elections, presentments, and collations of benefices, shall stand in right of the crown, or

“ of any of his Majesty’s subjects, as they had formerly enjoyed them, notwithstanding any *provisions* from *Rome*.”

But still the power of the court of *Rome* ran very high, for they brought all the trials of titles to advowsons into their own courts beyond sea ; and though by the 7th of *Richard II.* the power of nomination to benefices, without the King’s license, was taken from them, they still claimed the benefit of confirmations, of translations of Bishops, and of excommunications ; the Archbishops of *Canterbury* and *York* might still, by virtue of bulls from *Rome*, assemble the clergy of their several provinces, at what time and place they thought fit, without leave obtained from the crown : and all the canons and constitutions concluded upon in those synods were binding, without any farther ratification from the King : so that the power of the Church was independent of the civil government. This being represented to the parliament of the 16th of *Richard II.* they passed the statute commonly called *PRÆMUNIRE*, by which it was enacted, “ That if any did purchase translations to benefices, processes, sentences of excommunications, bulls, or any other instruments from the court of *Rome*, against the king or his crown ; or whoever brought them into *England*, or did receive or execute them, they were declared to be out of the King’s protection, and should forfeit their goods and chattels to the King, and should be attached by their bodies if they may be found, and brought before the King and Council, to answer to the cases aforesaid ; or that process should be made against them, by *præmunire facias*, in manner as it is contained in other statutes of *provisors* ; and other which do sue in any other court in derogation of the regality of the King.” From this time the Archbishops called no more convocations by their sole authority, but by license from the king ; their synods being formed by a writ or precept from the crown, directed to the Archbishops, to assemble their clergy, in order to consult upon such affairs as his Majesty should lay before them. But still their canons were binding, though confirmed by no authority but their own, till the act of submission of the clergy took place.

\* Fuller’s Church History, book iv. p. 145—148.

About this time flourished the famous *John Wickliffe*, the morning-star of the Reformation. He was born at *Wickliffe*, near *Richmond* in *Yorkshire*,\* about the year 1324, and was educated in *Queen's College, Oxford*, where he was Divinity Professor, and afterwards parson of *Lutterworth*, in *Leicestershire*. He flourished in the latter end of the reign of King *Edward III.* and the beginning of *Richard II.* about one hundred and thirty years before the reformation of *Luther*. The University gave this testimonial of him after his death, "That from his youth to the time of his death, his conversation was so praiseworthy, that there was never any spot, or suspicion noised of him; that in his reading and preaching he behaved like a stout and valiant cham-

\* See the very valuable life of Wickliffe, published by the Rev. Mr. Lewis, of Margate, which begins thus: "John de Wickliffe was born, very probably, about the year 1324, in the parish of Wickliffe, near Richmond, in Yorkshire, and was first admitted Commoner of Queen's College, Oxford, then newly founded by Robert Eggesfield, S. T. B. but was soon after removed to Merton College, where he was first probationer, and afterwards fellow. He was advanced to the professor's chair 1372. It appears by this ingenious writer, as well as by the *Catalogus Testium*, that Wickliffe was for rejecting all human rites, and new shadows or traditions in religion:—and with regard to the identity of the order of Bishops and Priests in the apostolic age, he is very positive. *Unum audacter assero*,—one thing I boldly assert, that in the primitive Church, or in the time of the apostle Paul, two orders of clergy were thought sufficient, viz. *Priest and Deacon*; and I do also say, that in the time of Paul, *fuit idem presbyter atque episcopus*, a priest, and a bishop were one and the same; for in those times the distinct orders of Pope, Cardinals, Patriarchs, Archbishops, Bishops, Archdeacons, Officials, and Deans, were not invented."

Mr. Neal's review of the 1st vol. of the History of the Puritans, subjoined to the quarto edition of this history, vol. 1. p. 890. Ed.

To Mr. Neal's account of Wickliffe's sentiments, it may be added, that he advanced some tenets which not only symbolize with, but directly led to, the peculiar opinions of those who, called Baptists, have in subsequent ages formed a large body of Dissenters, viz. "That wise men leave that as impertinent, which is not plainly expressed in scripture: that those are fools and presumptuous which affirm such infants not to be saved, which die without baptism; that baptism doth not confer, but only signify grace, which was given before. He also denied, that all sins are abolished in baptism; and asserted, that children may be saved without baptism: and that the baptism of water profiteth not, without the baptism of the spirit." Fuller's Church History, B. iv. p. 130. Trialogus, lib. iv. cap. 1. Ed.

“ pion of the faith ; and that he had written in logic, philosophy, divinity, morality, and the speculative arts, without an equal.” While he was Divinity Professor at *Oxford*, he published certain conclusions *against transubstantiation, and against the infallibility of the Pope ; that the Church of Rome was not the head of all other Churches ; nor had St. Peter the power of the keys, any more than the rest of the Apostles ; that the New Testament, or Gospel, is a perfect rule of life and manners, and ought to be read by the people.\** He maintained, further, most of those points by which the PURITANS were afterwards distinguished ; as, that in the sacrament of *orders* there ought to be but two degrees, *Presbyters*, or *Bishops*, and *Deacons* ; that all human traditions are superfluous and sinful ; that we must practise, and teach only the laws of Christ ; that mystical and significant ceremonies in religious worship are unlawful ; and that to restrain men to a prescribed form of prayer is contrary to the liberty granted them by God. These, with some other of *Wickliffe’s* doctrines, against the temporal grandeur of the prelates and their usurped authority, were sent to *Rome*, and condemned by Pope *Gregory XI.* in a consistory of twenty-three Cardinals, in the year 1378. But the Pope dying soon after put a stop to the process. *Urban*, his successor, writ to young King *Richard II.* and to the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and the University of *Oxford*, to put a stop to the progress of *Wickliffism* ; accordingly, *Wickliffe* was cited before the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and his brethren the Prelates, several times, but was always dismissed, either by the interest of the citizens of *London*, or the powerful interposition of some great Lords at court, or some other uncommon providence, which terrified the Bishops from passing a peremptory sentence against him for a considerable time ; but at length his new doctrines (as they were called) were condemned in a convocation of Bishops, Doctors, and Batchelors, held at *London* by the commandment of the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, 1382, and he was deprived of his professorship, his books and writings were ordered to be burned, and himself to be imprisoned ; but

\* Fox’s Martyrol. Pierce’s Vindicat. p. 1. 5.



he kept out of the way, and in the time of his retirement writ a confession of his faith to the Pope, in which he declares himself willing to maintain his opinions at *Rome*, if God had not otherwise visited him with sickness, and other infirmities : But it was well for this good man that there were two *Anti-Popes* at this time at war with each other, one at *Rome*, and the other at *Avignon*. In *England* also there was a minority, which was favorable to *Wickliffe*, in-somuch that he ventured out of his retirement, and returned to his parish at *Lutterworth*, where he quietly departed this life in the year 1384. This *Wickliffe* was a wonderful man for the times in which he lived, which were overspread with the thickest darkness of Antichristian idolatry ; he was the first that translated the New Testament into *English* ; but the art of printing not being then found out, it hardly escaped the inquisition of the Prelates, at least it was very scarce when *Tyndal* translated it a second time in 1527. He preached and published the very same doctrines for substance that afterwards obtained at the Reformation ; he writ near two hundred volumes, all which were called in, condemned, and ordered to be burned, together with his bones, by the council of *Constance*, in the year 1425, forty-one years after his death ; but his doctrine remained, and the number of his disciples who were distinguished by the name of *Lollards* increased after his decease, which gave occasion to the making sundry other severe laws against heretics.

The clergy made their advantage of the contentions between the houses of *York* and *Lancaster* ; both parties courting their assistance, which they did not fail to make use of for the support of the Catholic faith (as they called it) and the advancement of their spiritual tyranny over the consciences of men. In the primitive times there were no capital proceedings against heretics, the weapons of the Church being only spiritual ; but when it was found that ecclesiastical censures were not sufficient to keep men in a blind subjection to the Pope, a decree was obtained in the fourth council of *Lateran*, *A.D.* 1215, “ *That all heretics should be delivered over to the civil magistrate to be burned.*” Here was the spring of that Antichristian tyranny and oppression of the consciences of men, which has since been attended

with a sea of Christian blood : The Papists learned it from the Heathen Emperors ; and the most zealous Protestants of all nations have taken it up from them. Conscience cannot be convinced by fines and imprisonments, or by fire and faggot ; all attempts of this kind serve only to make men hypocrites, and are deservedly branded with the name of *persecution*. There was no occasion for putting these sanguinary laws in execution among us till the latter end of the fourteenth century ; but when the *Lollards*, or followers of *Wickliffe*, threatened the Papal power, the clergy brought this *Italian* drug from *Rome*, and planted it in the Church of *England*.

In the 5th year of *Richard II.* it was enacted, “ That all  
“ that preached without licence against the Catholic faith,  
“ or against the laws of the land, should be arrested, and  
“ kept in prison, till they justified themselves *according to*  
“ *the law and reason of Holy Church*. Their commitment  
“ was to be by writ from the Chancellor, who was to issue  
“ forth commissions to the Sheriffs, and other the King’s  
“ ministers, after the Bishops had returned the names of the  
“ delinquents into the court of *Chancery*.”

When *Richard II.* was deposed, and the crown usurped by *Henry IV.* in order to gain the good will of the Clergy, it was further enacted, in the second year of his reign, “ That  
“ if any persons were suspected of heresy, the ordinary might  
“ detain them in prison till they were canonically purged, or  
“ did abjure their errors ; provided always, That the pro-  
“ ceedings against them were publicly and judicially ended  
“ within three months. If they were convicted, the diocesan,  
“ or his commissary, might imprison and fine them at discre-  
“ tion. Those that refused to abjure their errors, or after  
“ abjuration relapsed, were to be delivered over to the secu-  
“ lar power, and the mayors, sheriffs, or bailiffs, were to be  
“ present, (if required) when the bishop, or his commissary  
“ passed sentence, and after sentence they were to receive  
“ them, and in some high place *burn them to death* before the  
“ people.” By this law the King’s subjects were put from under his protection, and left to the mercy of the bishops in their spiritual courts, and might, upon suspicion of heresy, be imprisoned and put to death, without presentment, or

trial by a jury, as is the practice in all other criminal cases.

In the beginning of the reign of *Henry V.* who was a martial prince, a new law passed against the *Lollards* or *Wickliffites*,\* “That they should forfeit all the lands they had in fee-simple, and all their goods and chattels to the King. All state officers, at their entrance into office, were sworn to use their best endeavors to discover them; and to assist the ordinaries in prosecuting and convicting them.” I find no mention in any of these acts, of a writ or warrant from the King, *de hæretico comburendo*; the sheriff might proceed to the burning of heretics without it; but it seems the King’s learned council advised him to issue out a writ of this kind to the sheriff, by which his Majesty took them, in some sort, under his protection again; but it was not as yet necessary by law, nor are there any of them to be found in the rolls, before the reign of King *Henry VIII.*

By virtue of these statutes the clergy, according to the genius of the Popish religion, exercised numberless cruelties upon the people. If any man denied them any degree of respect, or any of those profits they pretended was their due, he was immediately suspected of heresy, imprisoned, and it may be put to death; of which some hundreds of examples are upon record.†

\* It marks the profaneness, as well as cruelty of the act, here quoted by Mr. Neal, that it was not directed merely against the avowed followers of *Wickliffe* as such, but against the *perusal of the Scriptures in English*: For it enacted, “That whatsoever they were that should read the Scriptures in the mother tongue, (which was then called *WIOLEUR’s Learning*) they should forfeit land, catel, lif, and godes from theyr heyres for ever, and so be condempned for heretykes to God, enemies to the crowne, and most errant traitors to the lande.” Emlyn’s, *Complete Collection of State Trials*, p. 48, as quoted in Dr. Fleming’s *Palladium*, p. 80, note.

So great an alarm did the doctrine of *Wickliffe* raise, and so high did the fear of its spread rise, that by the statute of 5 Rich. II. and 2 Hen. IV. c. 15, it was enacted as part of the sheriff’s oath, “That he should seek to repress all errors and heresies, commonly called *Lollards*.” And it is a striking instance of the permanent footing, which error and absurdity, and even iniquity, gain, when once established by law, that this clause was preserved in the oath long after the Reformation, even to the 1st of Charles I. when *Sir Edward Coke*, on being appointed sheriff of the county of Buckingham, objected to it; and ever since it has been left out. *The Compleat Sheriff*, p. 17. EDITOR.

Thus stood the laws with respect to religion, when King *Henry VIII.* second son of King *Henry VII.* came to the crown; he was born in the year 1491, and bred a scholar: He understood the purity of the *Latin* tongue, and was well acquainted with school divinity. No sort of flattery pleased him better than to have his wisdom and learning commended. In the beginning of his reign he was a most obedient son of the Papacy, and employed his talents in writing against *Luther* in defence of the seven sacraments of the Church. This book was magnified by the clergy as the most learned performance of the age; and upon presenting it to the Pope, his Holiness conferred upon the King of *England*, and his successors, the glorious title of DEFENDER OF THE FAITH: It was voted in full consistory, and signed by twenty-seven cardinals, in the year 1521.\*

At the same time Cardinal *Woolsey*, the King's favourite, exercised a sovereign power over the whole clergy and people of *England* in spiritual matters; he was made legate in the year 1519, and accepted of a bull from the Pope, contrary to the statute of *Præmunire*, empowering him to superintend and correct what he thought amiss in both the provinces of *Canterbury* and *York*; and to appoint all officers in the spiritual courts.† The King also granted him a full power of disposing of all ecclesiastical

† Thus, in the reign of Edward IV. John Keyser was committed to gaol, by Thomas, archbishop of Canterbury, on the suspicion of heresy, because, having been excommunicated, he said, "That notwithstanding the Archbishop or his commissary had excommunicated him, yet, before God, he was not excommunicated, for his corn yielded as well as his neighbors." Thus also, in the reign of Henry VII. Hilary Warner was arrested on the charge of heresy: because he said, "That he was not bound to pay tithes to the curate of the parish where he lived."

Coke's Institutes, 3 inst. p. 42, quoted in a treatise on heresy as cognizable in the spiritual courts. p. 22, 23. EDITOR.

\* "The extravagant praises which he received for this performance," observes Dr. Warner, "meeting with so much pride and conceitedness in his nature, made him from this time impatient of all contradiction on religious subjects, and to set up himself for the standard of truth, by which his people were to regulate their belief." Ecclesiastical History, vol. ii. p. 228. We are surprised, in the event, to see this Prince, who was now "the pride of Popery, become its scourge." Such are the fluctuations in human characters and affairs, and so unsearchable are the ways of Providence! EDITOR.

† Burnet's Hist. Ref. vol. i. p. 8.

benefices in the gift of the crown; with a visitatorial power over monasteries, colleges, and all his clergy, exempt or not exempt. By virtue of these vast powers a new court of justice was erected, called the *Legate's Court*, the jurisdiction whereof extended to all actions relating to conscience, and numberless rapines and extortions were committed by it under colour of reforming men's manners; all which his Majesty connived at out of zeal to the Church.

But at length the King being weary of his Queen *Katharine*, after he had lived with her almost twenty years, or being troubled in conscience because he had married his brother's wife, and the legitimacy of his daughter had been called in question by some foreign princes, he first separated from her bed, and then moved the Pope for a divorce; but the court of *Rome* having held his Majesty in suspense for two or three years for fear of offending the Emperor the Queen's nephew, the impatient King by the advice of Dr. *Cranmer* appealed to the principal universities of *Europe*, and desired their opinions upon these two questions.

1. "Whether it was agreeable to the law of God for a man to marry his brother's wife?"

2. "Whether the Pope could dispense with the law of God?"

All the universities, and most of the learned men of *Europe*, both *Lutherans* and *Papists*, except those at *Rome*, declared for the negative of the two questions. The King laid their determinations before the Parliament and convocation, who agreed with the foreign universities. In the convocation of *English* clergy, 253 were for the divorce, and but 19 against it. Sundry learned books were written for and against the lawfulness of the marriage; one party being encouraged by the King, and the other by the Pope and Emperor. The Pope cited the King to *Rome*, but his Majesty ordered the Earl of *Wiltshire* to protest against the citation as contrary to the prerogative of his crown; and sent a letter signed by the cardinal, the archbishop of *Canterbury*, 4 bishops, 2 dukes, 2 marquisses, 13 earls, 2 viscounts, 23 barons, 22 abbots, and 11 commoners, exhorting his Holiness to confirm the judgment of the learned men, and of the universities of *Europe*, by annulling his

marriage, or else he should be obliged to take other measures. The Pope in his answer, after having acknowledged his Majesty's favors, told him that the Queen's appeal and avocation of the cause to *Rome* must be granted. The King seeing himself abused, and that the affair of his marriage which had been already determined by the most learned men in *Europe*, and had been argued before the legates *Campegio* and *Woolsey* must commence again, began to suspect *Woolsey's* sincerity; upon which his Majesty sent for the seals from him, and soon after commanded his attorney-general to put in an information against him in the *King's Bench*, because that notwithstanding the statute of *Richard II.* against procuring bulls from *Rome* under the pains of a *præmunire*, he had received bulls for his legantine power, which for many years he had executed. The cardinal pleaded ignorance of the statute, and submitted to the King's mercy; upon which he was declared to be out of the King's protection, to have forfeited his goods and chattels, and that his person might be seized. The haughty cardinal, not knowing how to bear his disgrace, soon after fell sick and died, declaring that *if he had served God as well as he had done his Prince, he would not have given him over in his grey hairs.*

But the King, not satisfied with his resentments against the cardinal, resolved to be revenged on the Pope himself, and accordingly, Sept. 19th, a week before the cardinal's death, he published a proclamation forbidding all persons to purchase any thing from *Rome* under the severest penalties; and resolved to annex the *ecclesiastical supremacy* to his own crown for the future. It was easy to foresee that the clergy would startle at the King's assuming to himself the Pope's supremacy; but his Majesty had them at his mercy, for they having acknowledged cardinal *Woolsey's* legantine power, and submitted to his jurisdiction, his Majesty caused an indictment to be preferred against them in *Westminster-Hall*, and obtained judgment upon the statute of *præmunire*, whereby the whole body of the clergy were declared to be out of the king's protection, and to have forfeited all their goods and chattels.

In this condition they were glad to submit upon the best terms they could get, but the King would not pardon them



but upon these two conditions, (1.) That the two provinces of *Canterbury* and *York* should pay into the exchequer 118,840l. a vast sum of money in those times. (2.) That they should yield his Majesty the title of *sole and supreme head of the Church of England*, next and immediately under Christ. The former they readily complied with, and promised for the future never to assemble in convocation but by the king's writ; nor to make or execute any canons or constitutions without his Majesty's licence: But to acknowledge a layman to be supreme head of an ecclesiastical body, was such an absurdity, in their opinion, and so inconsistent with their allegiance to the Pope, that they could not yield to it without an additional clause, *as far as is agreeable to the laws of Christ*. The King accepted it with the clause for the present, but a year or two after obtained the confirmation of it in parliament and convocation without the clause.

The substance of the act of supremacy\* is as follows, "Albeit the King's Majesty justly and rightfully is, and ought to be, supreme head of the church of *England*, and is so recognized by the clergy of this realm in their convocations; yet nevertheless, for confirmation and corroboration thereof, and for increase of vertue in Christ's religion, within this realm of *England*, &c. Be it enacted by the authority of this present parliament, that the King, our sovereign lord, his heirs and successors, Kings of this realm, shall be taken, accepted, and reputed the only supreme head on earth of the Church of *England*; and shall have and enjoy, annexed and united to the Imperial crown of this realm, as well the title and stile thereof, as all honors, dignities, immunities, profits and commodities, to the said dignity of *supreme head of the said Church* belonging and appertaining; and that our sovereign lord, his heirs and successors Kings of this realm, shall have full power and authority to visit, repress, redress, reform, order, correct, restrain, and amend all such errors, heresies, abuses, contempts, and enormities, whatsoever they be, which by any manner of spiritual authority or jurisdiction, ought or may be lawfully

\* 26 Henry VIII. cap. 1.



“reformed, repressed, ordered, redressed, corrected, restrained, or amended, most to the pleasure of Almighty God, and increase of vertue in Christ’s religion, and for the conservation of peace, unity and tranquillity of this realm, any usage, custom, foreign law, foreign authority, prescription, or any thing or things to the contrary notwithstanding.”

Here was the rise of the Reformation. The whole power of reforming heresies and errors in doctrine and worship was transferred from the Pope to the King, without any regard to the rights of synods or councils of the clergy; and without a reserve of liberty to such consciences as could not comply with the public standard. This was undoubtedly a change for the better, but is far from being consonant to scripture or reason.

The parliament had already forbid all appeals to the Court of *Rome*, in causes testamentary, matrimonial, and in all disputes concerning divorces, tithes, oblations, &c. under penalty of a *præmunire*;\* and were now voting away annates and first-fruits; and providing, “That in case the Pope denied his bulls for electing or consecrating bishops, it should be done without them by the archbishop of the province; that an archbishop might be consecrated by any two bishops whom the King should appoint; and being so consecrated should enjoy all the rights of his see, any law or custom to the contrary notwithstanding.” All which acts passed both houses without any considerable opposition.—Thus, while the Pope stood trifling about a contested marriage, the King and parliament took away all his profits, revenues, and authority, in the Church of *England*.

His Majesty having now waited six years for a determination of his marriage from the court of *Rome*, and being now *himself* head of the Church of *England*, commanded *Dr. Cranmer*, lately consecrated archbishop of *Canterbury*, to call a court of canonists and divines, and proceed to judgment. Accordingly his Grace summoned Queen *Katharine* to appear at *Dunstable*, near the place where she resided, in person or by proxy on the 20th of May, 1533, but her Majesty refused to appear, adhering to her appeal

\* 24 Hen. VIII. cap. 12.

to the court of *Rome* ; upon which the archbishop, by advice to the court, declared her *contumax*, and on the 23d of the same month pronounced the King's marriage with her null and void, as being contrary to the laws of God. Soon after which his Majesty married *Anne Bullen*, and procured an act of parliament, for settling the crown upon the heirs of her body, which all his subjects were obliged to swear to.

There was a remarkable appearance of Divine Providence in this affair ; for the *French* King had prevailed with the King of *England*, to refer his cause once more to the court of *Rome*, upon assurances given, that the Pope should decide it in his Majesty's favor within a limited time ; the Pope consented, and fixed a time for the return of the King's answer, but the courier not arriving upon the very day, the Imperialists, who dreaded an alliance between the Pope and the King of *England*, persuaded his Holiness to give sentence against him, and accordingly March 23d, the marriage was declared good, and the King was required to take his wife again, otherwise the censures of the Church were to be denounced against him.\* Two days after this the courier arrived from *England* with the King's submission under his hand in due form, but it was then too late, it being hardly decent for the *infallible chair* to revoke its decrees in so short a time. Such was the crisis of the Reformation !

The Pope having determined against the King, his Majesty determined to take away all his profits and authority over the Church of England at once ; accordingly a bill was brought into the parliament then sitting, and passed without any protestation, by which it is enacted, “ That all payments made to the apostolic chamber, and all provisions, “ bulls, or dispensations, should from thenceforth cease ; and “ that all dispensations or licences, for things not contrary to “ the law of God, should be granted within the kingdom, “ under the seals of the two archbishops in their several “ provinces. The Pope was to have no further concern in “ the nomination or confirmation of bishops, which were appointed to be chosen by *conge de elire* from the crown, as “ at present. *Peter-pence*, and all *procurations* from *Rome*, “ were abolished. Moreover, all religious houses, exempt

\* Burnet's Hist. Ref. vol. 1. p. 135.

“ or not exempt, were to be subject to the archbishops’ visitation, except some monasteries and abbies, which were to be subject to the King.”\* Most of the bishops voted against this bill, but all but one set their hands to it after it was passed, according to the custom of those times. Thus the Church of *England* became independent of the Pope, and all foreign jurisdiction.

Complaints being daily made of the severe proceedings of the ecclesiastical courts against heretics, the parliament took this matter into consideration, and repealed the act of the 2d of *Henry IV.* above-mentioned, but left the statutes of *Richard II.* and *Henry V.* in full force, with this qualification, that heretics should be proceeded against upon presentments by two witnesses at least; that they should be brought to answer in open court; and if they were found guilty, and would not abjure, or were relapsed, they should be adjudged to death, the King’s writ *de hæretico comburendo* being first obtained.† By this act the ecclesiastical courts were limited; heretics being now to be tried according to the forms of law, as in other cases.

Towards the latter end of this session the clergy, assembled in convocation, sent up their submission to the King to be passed in parliament, which was done accordingly: The contents were, “ That the clergy acknowledged all convocations ought to be assembled by the King’s writ; and promised, *in verbo sacerdotii*, that they would never make nor execute any new canons or constitutions without the royal assent; and since many canons had been received that were found prejudicial to the King’s prerogative, contrary to the laws of the land, and heavy to the subjects, that therefore there should be a committee of 32 persons, 16 of the two houses of parliament, and as many of the clergy, to be named by the King, who should have full power to revise the old canons, and to abrogate, confirm, or alter them as they found expedient, the King’s assent being obtained.”

This submission was confirmed by parliament; and by the same act all appeals to *Rome* were again condemned. If

\* 25 Henry VIII. cap. 20, 21.

† Ibid. cap. 14.

any parties found themselves aggrieved in the archbishop's courts, an appeal might be made to the King in the court of *Chancery*, and the lord chancellor was to grant a commission under the great seal for a hearing before delegates, whose determination should be final. All exempted abbots were also to appeal to the King; and the act concluded with a proviso, *That till such correction of the canons was made, all those which were then received should remain in force, except such as were contrary to the laws and customs of the realm, or were to the damage or hurt of the King's prerogative.* Upon the proviso of this act all the proceedings of the commons and other spiritual courts are founded; for the canons not being corrected to this day, the old ones are in force with the exceptions above-mentioned; and this proviso is probably the reason why the canons were not corrected in the following reigns, for now it lies in the breast of the judges to declare what canons are contrary to the laws, or rights of the crown, which is more for the King's prerogative, than to make a collection of ecclesiastical laws which should be fixed and immoveable.

Before the parliament broke up they gave the annates or first-fruits of benefices, and the yearly revenue of the tenth part of all livings which had been taken from the Pope last year, to the King. This displeased the clergy, who were in hopes of being freed from that burthen; but they were mistaken, for by the 32d of *Henry VIII.* cap. 45, a court of record is ordered to be erected, called the court of the first-fruits and tenths, for the levying and government of the said first-fruits for ever.

The session being ended, commissioners were sent over the kingdom, to administer the oath of succession to all his Majesty's subjects, according to a late act of parliament, by which it appears that, besides renewing their allegiance to the King, and acknowledging him to be the head of the church, they declared upon oath *the lawfulness of his marriage with Queen Anne, and that they would be true to the issue begotten in it. That the Bishop of Rome had no more power than any other bishop in his own diocese; that they would submit to all the King's laws, notwithstanding the Pope's censures; that in their prayers they would pray first*

for the King as supreme head of the church of *England*; then for the Queen [Anne,] then for the archbishop of *Canterbury*, and the other ranks of the clergy. Only *Fisher* bishop of *Rochester*, and Sir *Thomas More* lord chancellor, refused to take the oath, for which they afterwards lost their lives.

The separation of the Church of *England* from *Rome* contributed something towards the reformation of its doctrines, though the body of the inferior clergy were as stiff for their old opinions as ever, being countenanced and supported by the Duke of *Norfolk*, by the lord chancellor *More*, by *Gardiner* bishop of *Winchester*, and *Fisher* of *Rochester*; but some of the nobility and bishops were for a further reformation: Among these were the new Queen, Lord *Cromwel* afterwards Earl of *Essex*, Dr. *Cranmer* archbishop of *Canterbury*, *Shaxton* bishop of *Salisbury*, and *Latimer* of *Worcester*. As these were more or less in favor with the King, the reformation of religion went forwards or backwards, throughout the whole course of his reign.

The progress of the reformation in *Germany*, by the preaching of *Luther*, *Melancton*, and others, with the number of books that were published in those parts, some of which were translated into *English*, revived learning, and raised people's curiosities to look into the state of religion here at home. One of the first books that was published, was the translation of the New Testament by *Tyndal*, printed at *Antwerp* 1527. The next was the Supplication of the Beggars, by *Simon Frith* of *Gray's Inn*, 1529. It was levelled against the *begging friars*, and complains that the common poor were ready to starve, because the alms of the people were intercepted by great companies of lusty idle friars who were able to work, and were a burden to the commonwealth. *More* and *Fisher* answered the book, endeavoring to move the people's passions, by representing the supplications of the souls in purgatory which were relieved by the masses of these friars. But the strength of their arguments lay in the sword of the magistrate, which was now in their hands; for while these gentlemen were in power the clergy made sad havoc among those people who were seeking after Christian knowledge: Some were cited into the bishops' courts for teaching their children the Lord's Pray-

*English* ; some for reading forbidden books ; some for  
ing against the vices of the clergy ; some for not com-  
confession and the sacrament ; and some for not ob-  
g the church fasts ; most of whom, through fear of  
, did penance and were dismissed ; but several of the  
y refusing to abjure, or after abjuration falling into a  
se, suffered death. Among these were the Rev. Mr.  
m, curate of *Maidstone*, burnt in *Smithfield* 1530 ; the  
Mr. *Bilney*, burnt at *Norwich* 1531. Mr. *Byfield*, a  
r of *St. Edmondsbury*, *James Bainham*, knt. of the  
ple, besides two men and a woman at *York*. In the  
1533, Mr. *John Frith*,\* an excellent scholar of the  
rsity of *Cambridge*, was burnt in *Smithfield*, with one  
t a poor apprentice, for denying the corporal presence  
rist in the sacrament ; but upon the rupture between  
King and the Pope, and the repeal of the act of King  
y IV. against heretics, the wings of the clergy were  
ed, and a stop put to their cruelties for a time.

ne were more averse to the reformation than the Monks  
friars : These spoke openly against the King's pro-  
ngs, exciting the people to rebellion, and endeavoring  
broil his affairs with foreign princes ; the King there-  
esolved to humble them, and for this purpose appoint-  
general visitation of the monasteries, the management  
ich was committed to the Lord *Cromwel*, with the title  
itor-general, who appointed other commissioners un-  
im, and gave them injunctions and articles of enquiry.  
this several Abbots and Priors, to prevent a scrutiny  
their conduct, voluntarily surrendered their houses into  
King's hands ; others, upon examination, appeared guil-  
the greatest frauds and impositions on the simplicity of  
people : Many of their pretended relicks were exposed  
estroyed, as the *Virgin Mary's Milk*, shewed in eight  
; the *Coals that roasted St. Lawrence* ; an *Angel*  
me wing that brought over the head of the spear that

[r. Frith wrote a tract, published with his other works, London,  
entitled " A Declaration of Baptism."

*James Bainham* seems, from his examination before the Bishop of  
n, Dec. 15, 1531, to have been an opposer of infant baptism.

Crosby's Hist. of the English Baptists, vol. 1, p. 21.

pierced our Savior's side ; *the rood of Grace*, which was so contrived, that the eyes and lips might move upon occasion ; with many others. The images of a great many pretended saints were taken down and burnt, and all the rich offerings made at their shrines were seized for the crown, which brought an immense treasure into the Exchequer.

Upon the report of the visitors the parliament consented to the suppressing of the lesser monasteries under 200l. a year value, and gave them to the King to the number of 876. Their rents amounted to about 32,000l. per annum ; their plate, jewels, and furniture, to about 100,000l.\* The churches and cloisters were for the most part pulled down, and the lead and bells, and other materials, sold. A new court, called the *Court of Augmentations of the King's Revenue*,† was erected, to receive the rents, and to dispose of the lands, and bring the profits into the Exchequer. Every religious person that was turned out of his cell had 45s. given him in money, of which number there were about 10,000 ; and every governor had a pension. But to ease the government of this charge, the Monks and Friars were put into benefices as fast as they became vacant ; by which means it came to pass that the body of the inferior clergy were disguised papists, and enemies to the reformation.

The lesser religious houses being dissolved, the rest followed in a few years : for in the years 1537 and 1539 the greater abbies and monasteries were broken up, or surrendered to the crown, to prevent an enquiry into their lives and manners. This raised a great clamor among the people, the Monks and Friars going up and down the country like beggars, clamoring at the injustice of the suppression. The King to quiet them gave back 15 abbies and 16 nunneries for perpetual alms ; but several of the Abbots being convicted of plots and conspiracies against his government, his Majesty resumed his grants after two years ; and obtained an act of parliament, whereby he was empowered to erect sundry new cathedral churches and bishoprics, and to endow them out of the profits of the religious houses. The King intended (says Bishop *Burnet*) to convert 18,000l. a year in-

\* Burnet's Hist. Ref. i. 223.

† 27 Hen. VIII. cap. 27, 28.



to a revenue for 18 bishoprics and cathedrals ; but of them he only erected six, viz. the bishoprics of *Westminster*, *Chester*, *Peterborough*, *Oxford*, *Gloucester* and *Bristol*. This was the chief of what his Majesty did for religion ; which was but a small return of the immense sums that fell into his hands : for the clear rents of all the suppressed houses were cast up at *one hundred thirty-one thousand, six hundred and seven pounds, six shillings and four-pence per annum*, as they were then rated ; but were at least *ten times as much in value*. Most of the abbey lands were given away among the courtiers, or sold at easy rates to the gentry, to engage them by interest against the resumption of them to the church. In the year 1545, the parliament gave the king the chauntries, colleges, free chapels, hospitals, fraternities and guilds, with their manors and estates. Seventy manors and parks were alienated from the archbishopric of *York*, and twelve from *Canterbury*, and confirmed to the crown. How easily might this King, with his immense revenues, have put an end to the being of parliaments !

The translation of the New Testament by *Tyndal*, already mentioned, had a wonderful spread among the people ; though the bishops condemned it, and proceeded with the utmost severity against those that read it. They complained of it to the King ; upon which his Majesty called it in by proclamation in the month of June 1530, and promised that a more correct translation should be published : But it was impossible to stop the curiosity of the people so long ; for though the bishops bought up, and burnt all they could meet with, the *Testament* was reprinted abroad, and sent over to merchants at *London*, who dispersed the copies privately among their acquaintance and friends.

At length it was moved in convocation, that the whole Bible should be translated into *English*, and set up in churches ; but most of the old clergy were against it. They said this would lay the foundation of innumerable heresies, as it had done in *Germany* ; and that the people were not proper judges of the sense of Scripture : To which it was replied, that the Scriptures were written at first in the vulgar tongue ; that our Savior commanded his hearers *to search the Scriptures* ; and that it was necessary people should do so

now, that they might be satisfied that the alterations the King had made in religion were not contrary to the word of God.—These arguments prevailed with the majority to consent that the petition should be presented to the King, that his majesty would please to give order about it.

But the old bishops were too much disinclined to move in it. The reformers therefore were forced to have recourse to Mr. *Tyndal's* Bible, which had been printed at *Hamburgh* 1532. and reprinted three or four years after by *Grafton* and *Whitchurch*. The translators were *Tyndal*, assisted by *Miles Coverdale*, and Mr. *John Rogers* the protomartyr: The Apocrypha was done by *Rogers*, and some marginal notes were inserted to the whole, which gave offence, and occasioned that Bible to be prohibited. But Archbishop *Cranmer*, having now reviewed and corrected it, left out the prologue and notes, and added a preface of his own; and because *Tyndal* was now put to death for an heretic, his name was laid aside, and it was called *Thomas Matthew's* Bible, and by some *Cranmer's* Bible; though it was no more than *Tyndal's* translation corrected.\* This Bible was allowed by authority, and eagerly read by all sorts of people.

The fall of Queen *Anne Bullen* mother of Queen *Elizabeth*, was a great prejudice to the reformation. She was a virtuous and pious lady, but airy and indiscreet in her behavior: The Popish party hated her for her religion, and having awakened the King's jealousy, put him upon a nice observance of her carriage, by which she quickly fell under his Majesty's displeasure, who ordered her to be sent to the Tower May 1. On the 15th of the same month she was tried by her peers for *incontinence, for a precontract of marriage, and for conspiring the King's death*; and though there was little or no evidence, the lords found her guilty for fear of offending the King; and four days after she was beheaded within the Tower, protesting her innocence to the last.—Soon after her execution the King called a parliament, to set aside the succession of the lady *Elizabeth* her daughter, which was done, and the King was empowered to nominate his successor by his last will and testament; so that both his Majesty's daughters were now declared illegitimate:

\* *Strype's Life of Cranmer*, p. 59, 82.

But the King having power to settle the succession as he pleased, in case of failure of male heirs, they were still in hopes, and quietly submitted to their father's pleasure.

Complaint being sent to court of the diversity of doctrines delivered in pulpits, the King sent a circular letter to all the bishops, *July 12th*, [1536] forbidding all preaching till Michaelmas ; by which time certain articles of religion, *most Catholic*, should be set forth. The King himself framed the articles and sent them into convocation, where they were agreed to by both houses. An abstract of them will shew the state of the reformation at this time.

1. "All preachers were to instruct the people to believe  
"the whole bible, and the three creeds, viz. the Apostles,  
"the *Nicene*, and *Athanasian*, and to interpret all things  
"according to them.

2. "That baptism was a sacrament instituted by Christ ;  
"that it was necessary to salvation ; that infants were to be  
"baptised for the pardon of original sin ; and that the o-  
"pinions of the Anabaptists and Pelagians were detestable  
"heresies : [And that those of ripe age, who desired bap-  
"tism, must join with it repentance and contrition for their  
"sins, with a firm belief of the articles of the faith.]

3. "That penance, that is, contrition, confession, and  
"amendment of life, with works of charity, was necessary  
"to salvation ; to which must be added faith in the mercy  
"of God, that he will justify and pardon us, not for the  
"worthiness of any merit or work done by us, but for the  
"only merits of the blood and passion of Jesus Christ ;  
"nevertheless, that confession to a priest was necessary if it  
"might be had ; and that the absolution of a priest was the  
"same as if it were spoken by God himself, according to  
"our Savior's words. That auricular confession was of  
"use for the comfort of men's consciences. And though we  
"are justified only by the satisfaction of Christ, yet the peo-  
"ple were to be instructed in the necessity of good works.

4. "That in the *sacrament of the altar*, under the form  
"of bread and wine, there was, truly and substantially, the  
"same body of Christ that was born of the Virgin.

5. "That *justification* signified the remission of sins,  
"and a perfect renovation of nature in Christ.

6. “ Concerning *images*—that the use of them was warranted in Scripture ; that they served to stir up devotion ; and that it was meet they should stand in churches : but the people were to be taught, that in kneeling or worshipping before them they were not to do it to the image but to God.

7. “ Concerning *honoring of saints*, they were to be instructed not to expect those favors from them which are to be obtained only from God, but they were to honor them, to praise God for them, and to imitate their virtues.

8. “ — For *praying to saints*—That it was good to pray to them to pray for us and with us.

9. “ Of *ceremonies*. The people were to be taught that they were good and lawful, having mystical significations in them : such were the *vestments* in the worship of God, *sprinkling holy water* to put us in mind of our baptism and the blood of Christ ; *giving holy bread*, in sign of our union to Christ ; *bearing candles on Candlemas-day*, in remembrance of Christ the spiritual light ; *giving ashes on Ash-wednesday*, to put us in mind of penance and our mortality ; *bearing palms on Palm-Sunday*, to shew our desire to receive Christ into our hearts as he entered in to *Jerusalem* ; *creeping to the cross on Good-friday*, and *kissing it*, in memory of his death ; with the setting up of the sepulchre on that day, the *hallowing the font*, and other exorcisms and benedictions.

*Lastly*, “ As to *purgatory*, they were to declare it good and charitable to pray for souls departed ; but since the place they were in, and the pains they suffered, were uncertain by scripture, they ought to remit them to God’s mercy. Therefore all abuses of this doctrine were to be put away, and the people disengaged from believing that the Pope’s pardons or masses said in certain places, or before certain images, could deliver souls out of purgatory.”

These articles were signed by the archbishop of *Canterbury*, 17 bishops, 40 abbots and priors, and 50 archdeacons and proctors of the lower house of convocation: They were published by the King’s authority, with a preface in his

requiring all his subjects to accept them, which would urge him to take farther pains for the honor of God and the welfare of his people. One sees here the dawn of reformation; the scriptures and the ancient creeds are the standards of faith without the tradition of the Church or decrees of the Pope; the doctrine of the justifying faith is well stated; four of the seven sacraments are laid over, and purgatory is left doubtful. But transubstantiation, auricular confession, the worshipping of images and saints, still remained.

The Court of Rome were not idle spectators of these proceedings; they threatened the King, and spirited up the people to rebellion; and when all hopes of accommodation were at an end, the Pope pronounced sentence of excommunication against the whole kingdom, depriving his Majesty of crown and dignity, forbidding his subjects to obey him, and all foreign princes to correspond with him; all his treaties with them were dissolved, and his own clergy were ordered to depart the kingdom, and his nobility to rise up against them. The King laying hold of this opportunity, called a parliament, and obtained an act, requiring all subjects, under the pains of treason, to swear that the King was *supreme head of the Church of England*; and to put terror into the Popish party, three priors and a monk of the *Carthusian* order, and three monks of the *Charterhouse*, were executed as traitors, for *refusing the oath, and denying that the King was not supreme head under Christ of the Church of England*; but the two greatest sacrifices were *John Fisher*, bishop of Rochester, and *Sir Thomas More*, lord chancellor of *England*, who were both beheaded near within a fortnight of each other. This quieted the people for a time, but soon after there was an insurrection in *Lincolnshire* of 20,000 men, headed by a churchwarden and directed by a monk; but upon a proclamation of pardon they dispersed themselves: The same year there was another more formidable in the north, but after some time the rebels were defeated by the Duke of *Norfolk*, and hundreds of them executed, among whom were divers abbots and priests. These commotions incensed the King against the religious houses, as nurseries of sedition, and he resolved to suppress them all.

In the mean time his Majesty went on boldly against the church of *Rome*, and published certain injunctions by his own authority, to regulate the behavior of the clergy.— This was the first act of pure supremacy done by the King; for in all that went before he had the concurrence of the convocation. The injunctions were to this purpose;

1. “That the clergy should twice every quarter publish to the people, that the bishop of *Rome*’s usurped power had no foundation in scripture, but that the King’s supremacy was according to the laws of God.

2, 3. “They were to publish the late articles of faith set forth by the King; and likewise the King’s proclamation for the abrogation of certain holidays in harvest-time.

4. “They were to dissuade the people from making pilgrimages to saints, and to exhort them to stay at home and mind their families, and keep God’s commandments.

5. “They were to exhort them to teach their children the Lord’s prayer, the creed, and ten commandments, in *English*.\*

6. “They were to take care that the Sacraments were reverently administered in their parishes.

7. “That the clergy do not frequent taverns and ale-houses, nor sit long at games, but give themselves to the study of the scriptures and a good life.

8. “Every beneficed person of 20l. a year that did not reside, was to pay the 40th part of his benefice to the poor.

9. “Every incumbent of 100l. a year to maintain one scholar at the university; and so many hundreds a year so many scholars.

10. “The fifth part of the profits of livings to be given to the repair of the vicarage-house if it be in decay.”

Thus the very same opinions, for which the followers of *Wickliffe* and *Luther* had been burnt a few years before, were enjoined by the King’s authority.

This year a very remarkable book was printed by *Batchelor*, the King’s printer, *cum privilegio*, called the *Institution of a Christian Man*. It was called the Bishops’ Book, because it was composed by sundry bishops, as *Cranmer*

\* “And every incumbent was to explain these, one article a day, until the people were instructed in them.” *Maddox’s Vindic.* p. 299. Ed.

archbishop of *Canterbury*, *Stokesly* of *London*, *Gardiner* of *Winchester*, *Sampson* of *Chichester*, *Repps* of *Norwich*, *Goodrick* of *Ely*, *Latimer* of *Worcester*, *Shaxton* of *Salisbury*, *Fox* of *Hereford*, *Barlow* of *St. Davids*, and some other divines. It is divided into several chapters, and contains an explanation of *the Lord's Prayer*, *the Creed*, *the seven Sacraments*, *the ten Commandments*, *the Ave Maria*, *Justification* and *Purgatory*. "The book maintains the local descent of Christ into Hell, and that all articles of faith are to be interpreted according to scripture and the four first general councils. It defends the seven sacraments, and under the sacrament of the altar affirms that the body of Christ that suffered on the cross is *substantially* present under the form of bread and wine. It maintains but two orders of the clergy, and avers that no one bishop has authority over another according to the word of God. The invocation of saints is restrained to intercession, for as much as they have it not in their own power to bestow any blessings upon us. It maintains, that no church should be consecrated to any being but God. It gives liberty to work on saints days, especially in harvest-time. It maintains the doctrine of passive obedience. In the article of justification it says, we are justified only by the merits and satisfaction of Christ, and that no good works on our part can procure the divine favor, or prevail for our justification."\*

This book was recommended and subscribed by the two archbishops, nineteen bishops, and by the lower House of Convocation, among whom were *Gardiner*, *Bonner*, and others, who put their brethren to death for these doctrines in the reign of Queen *Mary*; but the reason of their present compliance might be, because all their hopes from the succession of the princess *Mary* were now defeated, Queen *Jane* being brought to bed of a son October 12th 1538, who was baptized *Edward*, and succeeded his father.

The translation of the Bible already mentioned, was this year printed and published. *Cromwel* procured the king's warrant for all his Majesty's subjects to read it without control; and by his injunctions commanded one to be set up

\* *Strype's Mem. of Cranmer*, p. 51.



publicly in all the churches in *England*, that the people might read it. His Majesty farther enjoined the clergy, to preach the necessity of faith and repentance, and against trusting in pilgrimages and other men's works ; to order such images as *had been abused to superstition* to be taken down ; and to tell the people, that praying to them was no less than idolatry : But still transubstantiation, the seven sacraments, the communion in one kind only, purgatory, auricular confession, praying for the dead, the celibacy of the clergy, sprinkling of holy water, invocation of saints, some images in churches, with most of the superstitious rites and ceremonies of the popish church, were retained.

Here his Majesty made a stand ; for after this the Reformation fluctuated, and upon the whole went rather backwards than forwards ; which was owing to several causes, as, (1) To the unhappy death of the Queen in childbed, who had possession of the King's heart, and was a promoter of the Reformation. (2) To the King's disagreement with the Protestant Princes of *Germany*, who would not put him at the head of their league, because he would not abandon the doctrine of transubstantiation, and permit the communion in both kinds. (3) To the King's displeasure against the archbishop, and the other bishops of *the new learning*, because he could not prevail with them to give consent in parliament, that the King should appropriate all the suppressed monasteries to his own use. (4) To his majesty's unhappy marriage with the lady *Anne of Cleves*, a protestant ; which was promoted by the reformers, and proved the ruin of the lord *Cromwel*, who was at that time the bulwark of the Reformation. (5) To the artifice and abject submission of *Gardiner*, *Bonner*, and other popish bishops, who by flattering the King's imperious temper, and complying with his dictates, prejudiced him against the reformed. And, (*lastly*) To his majesty's growing infirmities, which made him so peevish and positive, that it was dangerous to advise to any thing that was not known to be agreeable to his sovereign will and pleasure.

The King began to discover his zeal against the *Sacramentaries*, [and *Anabaptists*\*] (as those were called who

\* In the Articles of Religion set forth in 1536, the sect of Anabaptists is

denied the corporal presence of Christ in the eucharist) by prohibiting the importing of all foreign books, or printing any portions of scripture till they had been examined by himself and council, or by the bishop of the diocese; by punishing all that denied the old rites, and by forbidding all to argue against the real presence of Christ in the sacrament, on pain of death. For breaking this last order he condemned to the flames this very year that faithful witness to the truth, *John Lambert*, who had been minister of the *English congregation at Antwerp*, and afterwards taught school in *London*; but hearing Dr. *Taylor* preach concerning the real presence, he offered him a paper of reasons against it: *Taylor* carried the paper to *Cranmer*, who was then a *Lutheran*, and endeavored to make him retract; but *Lambert* unhappily appealed to the King, who after a kind of mock trial in *Westminster-Hall*, in presence of the bishops, nobility, and judges, passed sentence of death upon him, condemning him to be burnt as an incorrigible heretic. *Cranmer* was appointed to dispute against him, and *Cromwel* to read the sentence. He was soon after executed in *Smithfield* in a most barbarous manner; his last words in the flames were, *None but Christ, none but Christ!*

The parliament that met next spring disserved the reformation, and brought religion back to the standard in which it continued to the king's death, by the act [31 *Hen. VIII.* cap. 14.] commonly known by the name of the *bloody statute*, or the *statute of the six articles*; it was intituled an *act for abolishing diversity of opinions in certain articles concerning Christian religion*. The six articles were these:†

1. "That in the sacrament of the altar, after the consecration, there remains no substance of bread and wine,

mentioned and condemned. Fourteen Hollanders, accused of holding their opinions were put to death in 1535, and ten saved themselves by recantation. In 1428 there were in the diocese of *Norwich* 120, who held that infants were sufficiently baptised, if their parents were baptised before them; that Christian people be sufficiently baptised in the blood of Christ, and need no water; and that the sacrament of baptism used in the Church by water is but a light matter, and of small effect. Three of these persons were burnt alive. Long before this it was a charge laid against the *Lollards*, that they held these opinions, and would not baptize their new-born children. See *Fox*, as quoted by *Crosby*, vol. i. p. 24, 30, 41.

†*Cranmer* alone had the courage to oppose the passing these articles. W.

“but under these forms the natural body and blood of  
“Christ is present.

2. “That communion in both kinds is not necessary to  
“salvation to all persons by the law of God, but that both  
“the flesh and blood of Christ are together in each of the  
“kinds.

3. “That priests may not marry by the law of God.

4. “That vows of charity ought to be observed by the  
“law of God.

5. “That private masses ought to be continued, which  
“as it is agreeable to God’s law, so men receive great  
“benefit by them.

6. “That auricular confession is expedient and neccs-  
“sary, and ought to be retained in the Church.”

It was further enacted, that if any did speak, preach, or write, against the *first article*, they should be judged heretics, and be burnt without any abjuration, and forfeit their real and personal estate to the King. Those who preached or obstinately disputed against the other articles were to suffer death as felons without benefit of clergy; and those who either in word or writing declared against them were to be prisoners during the King’s pleasure, and to forfeit their goods and chattels for the first offence, and for the second to suffer death. All ecclesiastical incumbents were to read this act in their churches once a quarter.

As soon as the six articles took place, *Shaxton* bishop of *Salisbury*, and *Latimer* of *Worcester*, resigned their bishoprics, and being presented for speaking against the act they were imprisoned, *Latimer* continued a prisoner to the King’s death, but *Shaxton* being threatened with the fire turned apostate, and proved a cruel persecutor of the protestants in Queen *Mary’s* reign. Commissions were issued out to the archbishops, bishops, and their commissaries, to hold a sessions quarterly, or oftner and proceed upon presentments by a jury according to law; which they did most severely, insomuch that in a very little time 500 persons were put in prison and involved in the guilt of the statute; but *Cranmer* and *Cromwel* obtained their pardon, which mortified the Popish clergy to such a degree that they proceeded no farther till *Cromwel* fell.

Another very remarkable act of parliament passed this session, was concerning *obedience to the King's proclamations*. It enacts that the King, with advice of his council, may set forth proclamations with pains and penalties, which shall be obeyed as fully as an act of parliament, provided they be not contrary to the laws and customs in being, and do not extend so far as that the subject should suffer in estate, liberty or person. An act of attainder was also passed against sixteen persons, some for denying the supremacy, and others without any particular crime mentioned; none of them were brought to a trial, nor is there any mention in the records of any witnesses examined.\* There never had been an example of such arbitrary proceedings before in *England*; yet this precedent was followed by several others in the course of this reign. By another statute it was enacted, that the counsellors of the King's successor, if he were under age, might set forth proclamations in his name, which were to be obeyed in the same manner with those set forth by the King himself. I mention this, because upon this act was founded the validity of all the changes of religion in the minority of *Edward VI.*†

Next year [1540] happened the fall of lord *Cromwel*, one of the great pillars of the reformation. He had been lately constituted the King's vicegerent in ecclesiastical affairs, and made a speech in parliament *April* 12th, under that character. On the 14th of *April* the King created him Earl of *Essex*, and knight of the garter; but within two months he was arrested at the council table for high treason, and sent to the Tower, and on the 28th of *July* was beheaded by virtue of a bill of attainder, without being brought to a trial, or once allowed to speak for himself. He was accused of executing certain orders and directions, for which he had very probably the King's warrant, and therefore was

\* Burnet's Hist. Ref. vol. i. p. 263.

† In this year 16 men and 15 women were banished for opposing infant baptism: They went to Delf in Holland, and were there prosecuted and put to death, as Anabaptists; the men being beheaded, and the women drowned. Among other injunctions issued out in 1539, was one against those who embraced the opinions, or possessed books containing the opinions of Sacramentarians and Anabaptists. Crosby, h. i. p. 42. [Edit.]

not admitted to make answer. But the true cause of his fall\* was the share he had in the King's marriage with the lady *Anne of Cleves*, whom his Majesty took an aversion to as soon as he saw her, and therefore determined to shew his resentments against the promoters of it ; but his Majesty soon after lamented the loss of his honest and faithful servant when it was too late.

Two days after the death of *Cromwel* there was a very odd execution of Protestants and Papists at the same time and place. The Protestants were *Dr. Barnes*, *Mr. Gerrard*, and *Mr. Jerome*, all clergymen and Lutherans ; they were sent to the Tower for offensive sermons preached at the Spittle in the Easter week, and were attainted of heresy by the parliament without being brought to a hearing. Four papists (viz.) *Gregory Buttolph*, *Adam Damplin*, *Edmund Brindholm*, and *Clement Philpot*, were by the same act attainted for denying the King's supremacy, and adhering to

\*Dr. Maddox remarks on this statement of the cause of Cromwel's fall, that it is expressly contradicted by Bishop Burnet, who, speaking of the King's creating him Earl of Essex, upon his marriage with Anne of Cleves, adds, "this shews that the true causes of Cromwel's fall must be founded in some other thing than his making up the King's marriage, who had never thus raised his title if he had intended so soon to pull him down. Hist. Ref. vol. 4. p. 275..

In reply to this, Mr. Neal says, "Let the reader judge ; his (i. e. Bishop Burnet's) words are these ; 'an unfortunate marriage, to which he had advised the King, not proving acceptable, and he being unwilling to destroy what himself had brought about, was the occasion of his disgrace and destruction.' Vol. iii. p. 172. If his Lordship has contradicted this in any other place, (which I apprehend he has not) he must answer for it himself."

It may be observed, that these two passages stand in a very voluminous work, at a great distance from one another, so that the apparent inconsistency might escape the Bishop's notice ; while his remark in the first can have little force, when applied to the conduct of a prince so capricious and fluctuating in his attachments as was Henry VIII. and who soon grew disgusted with his Queen. It is with no propriety that Mr. Neal's accuracy and fidelity are, in this instance, impeached : it justifies his representation, that nearly the same is given by Fuller in his Church History, b. v. p. 231—"Match-makers, says he, betwixt private persons seldom find great love for their pains ; betwixt princes, often fall into danger, as here it proved in the lord Cromwel, the grand contriver of the King's marriage with Anne of Cleves."

The cause of Cromwel's disgrace is more fully and judiciously investigated by Dr. Warner, in his Ecclesiastical Hist. v. ii. p. 197, 8. Ea.

the bishop of *Rome*. The Protestants were burnt; and the Papists hanged: The former cleared themselves of heresy by rehearsing the articles of their faith at the stake, and died with great devotion and piety; and the latter, though grieved to be drawn in the same hurdle with them they accounted heretics, declared their hearty forgiveness of all their enemies.

About this time [1543] was published a very remarkable treatise, called *a necessary Erudition for a Christian Man*. It was drawn up by a committee of bishops and divines, and was afterwards read and approved by the lords spiritual and temporal, and the lower house of parliament. A great part of it was corrected by the King's own hand, and the whole was published by his order, with a preface in the name of King *Henry VIII.* dedicated to all his faithful subjects. It was called the *King's Book*, and was designed for a standard of Christian belief.† The reader therefore will judge by the abstract below, of the sentiments of our first reformers in sundry points of doctrine and discipline:\* which

† Burnet's Hist. Ref. vol. i. p. 286.

\* It begins with a description of FAITH, “ of which (says the book) “ there are two acceptations. (1) It is sometimes taken for a *belief or persuasion wrought by God in men's hearts, whereby they assent and take for true all the words and sayings of God revealed in Scripture.* “ This faith, if it proceeds no further, is but a dead faith. (2) Faith “ is sometimes considered in conjunction with hope and charity, and so “ it signifies a *sure confidence and hope to obtain whatsoever God has promised for Christ's sake, and is accompanied with a hearty love to God, and obedience to his commands.* This is a lively and effectual “ faith, and is the perfect faith of a Christian. It is by this faith that we “ are justified, as it is joined with hope and charity, and includes an obedience to the whole doctrine and religion of Christ. But whether there “ be any special particular knowledge, whereby men may be certain and “ assured that they are among the *prædestinate*, which shall to the end “ persevere in their calling, we cannot find either in the scriptures or doctors; the promises of God being conditional, so that though his promise “ stands, we may fail of the blessing for want of fulfilling our obligation.

After the chapter of faith follows an excellent paraphrase on the 12 articles of the creed, the Lord's prayer, the Ave Maria, or the salutation of the angel to the blessed virgin, and the ten commandments; and here the second commandment is shortened, the words *for I the Lord thy God, &c* being left out, and only those that go before set down. Images are said to be profitable to stir up the mind to emulation, though we may not give them godly honor; nevertheless censing and kneeling before them is allowed. Invocation of saints as intercessors is declared



then constituted the established doctrine of the Church of England; For by the statute of 32d of Hen. VIII. cap. 26.

lawful; and the fourth commandment only ceremonial and obliging the Jews.

Then follows an article of FREE-WILL, which is described, "*A certain power of the will joined with reason, whereby a reasonable creature, without constraint in things of reason, discerneth and willeth good and evil; but it willeth not that that is acceptable to God unless it be holpen with grace, but that which is ill it willeth of itself.* Our wills were perfect in the state of innocence, but are much impaired by the fall of Adam; the high powers of reason and freedom of will being wounded and corrupted, and all men thereby brought into such blindness and infirmity that they cannot avoid sin except they are made free by special grace, that is, by the supernatural working of the Holy Ghost. The light of reason is unable to conceive the things that appertain to eternal life, though there remains a sufficient freedom of will in things pertaining to the present life. *Without me (says the scripture) you can do nothing*; therefore when men feel, that notwithstanding their diligence they are not able to do that which they desire, they ought with a steadfast faith and devotion to ask of him, who gave the beginning, that he would vouchsafe to perform it. But preachers are to take care so to moderate themselves, that they neither so preach the grace of God as to take away free-will, and make God the author of sin; nor so extol free-will as to injure the Grace of God."

In the article of JUSTIFICATION it asserts, "That all the posterity of Adam are born in original sin, and are hereby guilty of everlasting death and damnation, but that God sent his own son, being naturally God, to take our nature and redeem us; which he could not have done but by virtue of the union of his two natures." It then speaks of a two-fold justification: "The first is upon our believing, and is obtained by repentance, and a lively faith in the passion and merits of our blessed Saviour, and joining therewith a full purpose to amend our lives for the future. The second, or final justification at death, or the last judgment, implies further, the exercise of all Christian graces, and a following the motions of the spirit of God in doing good works, which will be considered and recompensed in the day of judgment. When the scripture speaks of justification by faith, without mentioning any other grace, it must not be understood of a naked faith, but of a lively, operative faith, as before described, and refers to our *first* justification; thus we are justified by free grace: And whatever share good works may have in our *final* justification, they cannot derogate from the grace of God, because all our good works come of the free mercy and grace of God, and are done by his assistance; so that all boasting is excluded.

This leads to the article of GOOD WORKS, "which are said to be absolutely necessary to salvation; but they are not outward corporal works, but inward spiritual works; as the love and fear of God, patience, humility, &c. Nor are they superstitious works of men's in-



nacted, "That all decrees and ordinances which shall made and ordained by the archbishops, bishops, and tors, and shall be published with the King's advice

on; nor only moral works done by the power of reason, and the al will of man, without faith in Christ; which, though they are in kind, do not merit everlasting life; but such outward and in- l good works as are done by faith in Christ, out of love to God, in obedience to his commands; and which cannot be performed an's power without divine assistance. Now these are of two sorts, Such as are done by persons already justified; and these, though perfect, are accepted for Christ's sake, and are meritorious towards attaining everlasting life. (2.) Other works are of an inferior sort, fasting, alms deeds, and other fruits of penance, which are of no l without faith. But after all, justification and remission of sins ie free gift of the grace of God; and it does not derogate from grace to ascribe the dignity to good works abovementioned, be- : all our good works come of the grace of God.

chapter of PRAYER for SOULS DEPARTED, leaves the matter in ee; "It is good and charitable to do it; but because it is not vn what condition departed souls are in, we ought only to re- mend them to the mercy of God.

he chapter of the SACRAMENTS; "All the seven sacraments are stained, and in particular the corporal presence of Christ in the harist.

he sacrament of ORDERS the book maintains no real distinction n bishops and priests; it says, that "St. Paul consecrated and ed bishops by imposition of hands; but that there is no certain prescribed in scripture for the nomination, election, or presenta- of them; this is left to the positive laws of every country. That office of the said ministers is to preach the word, to minister the ments, to bind and loose, to excommunicate those that will not sformed, and to pray for the universal church; but that they may xecute their office without licence from the civil magistrate. The ments do not receive efficacy or strength from the ministration of priest or bishop, but from God; the said ministers being only offi- , to administer with their hands those corporal things by which God p grace, agreeable to St. Ambrose, who writes thus: *The priest lays hands upon us, but it is God that gives grace; the priest lays on is beseeching hands, but God blesseth us with his mighty hand.*

cerning the order of DEACONS, the book says, "Their office in primitive church was partly to minister meat and drink, and other quries to the poor, and partly to minister to the bishops and pts.—Then follows this remarkable passage, *Of these two orders, that is to say, priests and deacons, scripture maketh express men- , and how they were conferred of the apostles by prayer and im- tion of hands; but the primitive church afterwards appointed in- r degrees, as sub-deacons, acolytes, exorcists, &c. but lest peradven- it might be thought by some, that such authorities, powers, and*

“and confirmation, by his letters patent, in and upon the matters of Christian faith, and lawful rites and ceremonies, shall be in every point thereof believed, obeyed, and performed, to all intents and purposes, upon the pains therein comprized; provided nothing be ordained contrary to the laws of the realm.” How near the book above-mentioned comes to the qualifications of this statute, is obvious to the reader. It is no less evident, that by the same act the King was in a manner invested with the infallibility of the Pope, and had the consciences and faith of his people at his absolute disposal.

*“jurisdictions, as patriarchs, primates, archbishops, and metropolitans, now have, or heretofore at any time have had justly and lawfully over other bishops, were given them by God in holy scripture, we think it expedient and necessary, that all men should be advertised and taught, that all such lawful power and authority of any one bishop over another, were and be given them by the consent, ordinances, and positive laws of men only, and not by any ordinance of God in holy scripture; and all such power and authority which any bishop has used over another, which has not been given him by such consent and ordinance of men, is in very deed no lawful power, but plain usurpation and tyranny.”*

To the view which Mr. Neal has given of the doctrinal sentiments, contained in this piece, which was also called the Bishop's Book, it is proper to add the idea it gave of the duty of subjects to their prince. Its commentary on the fifth commandment runs thus: “Subjects be bound not to withdraw their fealty, truth, love, and obedience, towards their prince, for any cause whatsoever it be.” In the exposition of the sixth commandment, the same principles of passive obedience and non-resistance are inculcated, and it is asserted, “That God hath assigned no judges over princes in this world, but will have the judgment of them reserved to himself.” ED.

Though the ‘Institution of a Christian Man’ is a book now disused, the same sentiments, connected with the idea of the *jure divino* of Kings, still run through the homilies, the articles, the canon, and the rubrick, of the Church of England, and have been again and again sanctioned by the resolutions and orders of our convocations. Bishop Blake, on his death-bed, solemnly professed that the religion of the Church of England had taught him the doctrine of non-resistance and passive obedience, and that he took it to be the distinguishing character of that church — High-Church Politicks, p. 75, 89, and the note in the last page. ED.

It is not easy to say, what sincere or complete alliance there can be between the Church and State, when the dogmas of the former are in such glaring repugnancy to the constitution of the latter; when the former educates slaves, the latter freemen; when the former sanctions the tyranny of kings, the latter is founded in the rights of the people. In this respect, surely, the Church needs a reform. ED.

By this abstract of the *Erudition of a Christian Man*,\* it appears further, that our reformers built pretty much upon the plan of *St. Austin*, with relation to the doctrines of justification and grace. The sacraments and ceremonies are so contrived, as to be consistent with the six articles established by parliament. But with regard to discipline *Cranmer* and his brethren were for being directed wholly by the civil magistrate; which has since been distinguished by the name of *Erastianism*. Accordingly they took out commissions to hold their bishoprics during the King's pleasure, and to exercise their jurisdiction by his authority only.

But notwithstanding this reformation of doctrine, the old popish forms of worship were continued till this year, [1544] when a faint attempt was made to reform them. A form of procession was published in English, by the King's authority, entitled *An exhortation to Prayer, thought meet by his Majesty and his clergy, to be read to the people; also a litany, with suffrages to be said or sung in time of the processions*. In the litany they invoke the blessed virgin, the angels, archangels, and all holy orders of blessed spirits; all holy patriarchs, prophets, apostles, martyrs, confessors, virgins, and all the blessed company of heaven, to pray for them. The rest of the litany is in a manner the very same as now in use, only a few more collects were placed at the end, with some psalms, and a paraphrase on the Lord's prayer. The preface is an exhortation to the duty of prayer, and says, that it is convenient, and very acceptable to God, to use private prayer in our mother tongue, that by understanding what we ask,† we may more earnestly and fervently desire the same. The hand of *Cranmer* was no doubt in this performance, but it was little regarded, though a mandate was sent to *Bonner* bishop of *London* to publish it.

But *Cranmer's* power was now very much weakened; he strove against the stream, and could accomplish nothing

\* Dr. Warner observes, on this performance, that there were so many absurdities of the old religion still retained, so much metaphysical jargon about the merit of good works, about the essential parts and consequences of faith, about free-will and grace; that this book, instead of promoting the reformation, visibly put it back. *Eccles. History*, vol. ii. p. 205. Ed.

† Burnet's *Hist. Ref.* vol. i. p. 331, and the *Records*, b. iii. No. 28.

further, except a small mitigation of the rigorous prosecution of the six articles ; for by the 35th of *Henry VIII.* cap. 5, it is enacted, “ That persons shall not be convicted upon this statute, but by the oaths of twelve men ; that the prosecution shall be within a year ; and that if any one preaches against the six articles he shall be informed against within forty days.” This rendered the prosecution more difficult ; and yet after all several were burnt at this time, for denying the doctrine of transubstantiation, as *Mrs. Anne Askeu*, *Mr. Belenian*, *Adams*, *Lascel*, and others. The books of *Tyndal*, *Frith*, *Joy*, *Barnes*, and other protestants, were ordered to be burnt ; and the importation of all foreign books relating to religion was forbid, without special licence from the King.

Upon the whole, the reformation went very much backward, the three or four last years of the King’s life ; as appears by the statute of 35 *Henry VIII.* cap. 1, which leads the people back into the darkest parts of Popery : It says, “ that recourse must be had to the Catholic and Apostolic Church for the decision of controversies ; and therefore all books of the Old and New Testament in *English* being of *Tyndal’s* false translation, or comprising any matter of Christian religion, articles of faith, or holy scripture, contrary to the doctrine set forth by the King [in the six articles] 1540, or to be set forth by the King, shall be abolished. No person shall sing or rhyme contrary to the said doctrine. No person shall retain any *English* books or writings against the holy and blessed sacrament of the altar, or other books abolished by the King’s proclamation. There shall be no annotations or preambles in bibles or new testaments in *English*. *The bible shall not be read in English in any church. No women, or artificers, apprentices, journeymen, serving-men, husbandmen, or laborers, shall read the New Testament in English.* Nothing shall be taught or maintained contrary to the King’s instructions. If any spiritual person shall be convicted of preaching or maintaining any thing contrary to the King’s instructions already made, or hereafter to be made, he shall for the first offence recant, for the second bear a fagot, and for the third be burnt.”

Here is popery and spiritual slavery in its full extent. Indeed the Pope is discharged of his jurisdiction and authority; but a like authority is vested in the King. His Majesty's instructions are as binding as the Pope's canons, and upon as severe penalties. He is absolute lord of the consciences of his subjects. No bishop or spiritual person may preach any doctrine but what he approves; nor do any act of government in the church but by his special commission. This seems to have been given his Majesty by the act of supremacy, and is further confirmed by one of the last statutes of his reign, [37 Hen. viii. cap. 17.] which declares, that "Arch-  
"bishops, bishops, archdeacons, and other ecclesiastical  
"persons, have no manner of jurisdiction ecclesiastical, but  
"by, under, and from his royal Majesty; and that his Ma-  
"jesty is the only supreme head of the church of *England*  
"and *Ireland*; to whom, by *holy scripture*, all authority  
"and power is wholly given to hear and determine all man-  
"ner of causes ecclesiastical, and to correct all manner of  
"heresies, errors, vices, and sins whatsoever; and to all  
"such persons as his Majesty shall appoint thereunto."

This was carrying the regal power to the utmost length. Here is no reserve of privilege for convocations, councils, or colleges of bishops: The King may ask their advice, or call them into his aid and assistance, but his Majesty has not only a negative voice upon their proceedings, but may himself, by his letters patent, publish injunctions in matters of religion, for correcting all errors in doctrine and worship. His proclamations have the force of a law, and all his subjects are obliged to believe, obey and profess according to them, under the highest penalties.

Thus matters stood when this great and absolute monarch died of an ulcer in his leg, being so corpulent, that he was forced to be let up and down stairs with an engine. The humor in his leg made him so peevish, that scarce any body durst speak to him of the affairs of his kingdom or of another life. He signed his will Dec. 30, 1546, and died Jan. 28th following, in the 38th year of his reign, and the 56th of his age. He ought to be ranked (says Bishop Burnet) among the ill princes, but not among the worst.

## CHAP. II.

## THE REIGN OF KING EDWARD VI.

**T**HE sole right and authority of reforming the church of *England* was now vested in the crown; and by the act of succession, in the King's council, if he were under age. This was preferable to a foreign jurisdiction; but it can hardly be proved, that either the King or his council have a right to judge for the whole nation, and impose upon the people what religion they think best, without their consent. The reformation of the church of *England* was begun and carried on by the King, assisted by archbishop *Cranmer* and a few select divines. The clergy in convocation did not move in it, but as they were directed and overawed by their superiors; nor did they consent till they were modelled to the designs of the court.

Our learned historian bishop *Burnet*\* endeavors to justify this conduct, by putting the following question, 'What must be done when the major part of a Church is, according to the conscience of the supreme civil magistrate, in an error, and the lesser part is in the right?' In answer to this question, his lordship observes, that 'there is no promise in scripture that the majority of pastors shall be in the right; on the contrary it is certain, that truth, separate from interest, has few votaries. Now, as it is not reasonable that the smaller part should depart from their sentiments, because opposed by the majority whose interest led them to oppose the reformation, therefore they might take sanctuary in the authority of the prince and the law.' But is there any promise in scripture that the King or prince shall be always in the right? or, is it reasonable that the majority should depart from their sentiments in religion, because the prince with the minority are of another mind? If we ask, what authority Christian princes have to bind the

\* His. Ref. vol. ii. in preface.

consciences of their subjects, by penal laws, to worship God after their manner? his lordship answers, this was practised in the *Jewish* state. But it ought to be remembered, that the *Jewish* state was a theocracy; that God himself was their King, and their chief magistrates only his vicegerents or deputies; that the laws of *Moses* were the laws of God; and the penalties annexed to them as much of divine appointment as the laws themselves. It is therefore absurd to make the special commission of the *Jewish* magistrates a model for the rights of Christian princes. But his lordship adds, ‘It is the first law in *Justinian’s* code, made by the emperor *Theodosius*, that all should every where, under severe pains, follow that faith that was received by *Damasus* bishop of *Rome*, and *Peter* of *Alexandria*. And why might not the King and laws of *England* give the like authority to the archbishops of *Canterbury* and *York*?’ I answer, because *Theodosius’s* law was an unreasonable usurpation upon the right of conscience. If the apostle *Paul*, who was an inspired person, had not dominion over the faith of the churches, how came the *Roman* emperor, or other Christian princes, by such a jurisdiction, which has no foundation in the law of nature or in the New Testament?

His lordship goes on, ‘It is not to be imagined how any changes in religion can be made by sovereign princes, unless an authority be lodged with them of giving the sanction of a law to the founder, though the lesser part of a church; for as princes and lawgivers are not tied to an implicit obedience to clergymen, but are left to the freedom of their own discerning, so they must have a power to choose what side to be of, where things are much enquired into.’ And why have not the clergy and the common people the same power? Why must they be tied to an implicit faith in their princes and lawgivers? Is there any promise in the word of God, that princes and lawgivers shall be infallible, and always judge right which is the founder, though the lesser part of a church? ‘If (as his lordship adds) the major part of synods cannot be supposed to be in matters of faith so assisted from heaven, that the lesser part must necessarily acquiesce in their decrees; or that the civil powers must always make laws according to their votes, especial-



‘ly when interest does visibly turn the scale;’ how can the prince or civil magistrate depend upon such assistance? Can we be sure that interest or prejudice will never turn the scale with him; or that he has a better acquaintance with the truths of the gospel than his clergy or people? It is highly reasonable that the prince should choose for himself what side he will be of, when things are much enquired into; but then let the clergy and people have the same liberty, and neither the major nor minor part impose upon the other, as long as they entertain no principles inconsistent with the safety of the government.—‘When the Christian belief had not the support of law, every bishop taught his own flock the best he could, and gave his neighbors such an account of his faith, at, or soon after his consecration, as satisfied them; and so’ (says his lordship) ‘they maintained the unity of the church.’—And why might it not be so still? Is not this better upon all accounts, than to force people to profess what they cannot believe, or to propagate religion with the sword, as was too much the case with our reformers? If the penal laws had been taken away, and the points in controversy between Protestants and Papists had been left to a free and open debate, while the civil magistrate had stood by, and only kept the peace, the reformation would certainly have taken place in due time, and proceeded in a much more unexceptionable manner than it did.

To return to the history. King *Edward VI.* came to the crown at the age of nine years and four months; a prince, for learning and piety, for acquaintance with the world, and application to business, the very wonder of his age. His father, by his last will and testament, named sixteen persons executors of his will, and regents of the kingdom, till his son should be eighteen years of age: Out of these the earl of *Hertford*, the King’s uncle, was chosen protector of the King’s realms, and governor of his person. Besides these, twelve were added as a privy council, to be assisting to them. Among the regents some were for the old religion, and others for the new; but it soon appeared that the reformers had the ascendant, the young King having been educated in their principles by his tutor *Dr. Cox*, and the new protector his uncle being on the same side. The majority of the bishops

and inferior clergy were on the side of popery, but the government was in the hands of the reformers, who began immediately to relax the rigors of the late reign.\* The persecution upon the six articles was stopt; the prison doors were set open; and several who had been forced to quit the kingdom for their religion returned home, as *Miles Coverdale*, afterwards bishop of *Exeter*; *John Hooper*, afterwards bishop of *Gloucester*; *John Rogers*, the proto-martyr, and many others, who were preferred to considerable benefices in the church. The reforming divines, being delivered from their too awful subjection to the late King, began to open against the abuses of popery. Dr. *Ridley* and others preached vehemently against *images in churches*, and inflamed the people, so that in many places they outran the law, and pulled them down without authority. Some preached against the lawfulness of soul masses and obits; though the late King, by his last will and testament, had left a large sum of money to have them continued at *Windsor* where he was buried, and for a frequent distribution of alms for the repose of his soul, and its deliverance out of purgatory; but this charity was soon after converted to other uses. The Popish clergy were alarmed at these things, and insisted strongly, that till the King their supreme head was of age, religion should continue in the state in which King *Henry* left it. But the reformers averred, that the King's authority was the same while he was a minor, as when he was of age; and that they had heard the late King declare his resolution to turn the mass into a communion if he had lived a little longer, upon which they thought it their duty to proceed.

\* The heads of the two parties were these,

*For the REFORMATION.*

King *Edward*,  
Duke of *Somerset*, protector,  
Dr. *Cranmer*, abp. of *Canterbury*,  
Dr. *Holgate*, archbishop of *York*,  
Sir *W. Paget*, secretary of state,  
Lord Viscount *Lisle*, lord admiral,  
Dr. *Holbeach*, bishop of *Lincoln*,  
Dr. *Goodrick*, bishop of *Ely*,  
Dr. *Latimer*, bishop of *Worcester*,  
Dr. *Ridley*, elect of *Rochester*,

*For the Old RELIGION.*

Princess *Mary*,  
*Wriothesley* Earl of *Southampton*,  
Lord Chancellor,  
Dr. *Tonstal*, bishop of *Durham*,  
Dr. *Gardiner*, bishop of *Winchester*,  
Dr. *Bonner*, bishop of *London*.

After the solemnity of the King's coronation, the regents appointed a royal visitation, and commanded the clergy to preach no where but in their parish churches without licence, till the visitation was over. The kingdom was divided into six circuits ; two gentlemen, a civilian, a divine, and a register, being appointed for each. The divines were by their preaching to instruct the people in the doctrines of the reformation, and to bring them off from their old superstitions. The visitation began in the month of *August* ; six of the gravest divines, and most popular preachers, attended it ; their names were *Dr. Ridley, Dr. Madew, Mr. Briggs, Cottisford, Joseph, and Farrar*. A book of homilies or sermons, upon the chief points of the Christian faith,\* drawn up chiefly by archbishop *Cranmer*, was printed, and ordered to be left with every parish priest, to supply the defect of preaching, which few of the clergy of that time were capable of performing. *Cranmer* communicated it to *Gardiner*, and would fain have gained his approbation of it ; but he was so inflamed at being left out of the King's will, that he constantly opposed all innovation till the King should be of age.

With these homilies the visitors were to deliver sundry injunctions from the King, to the number of thirty-six.†

The bishops were enjoined to see the articles put in ex-

\* The book consisted of twelve discourses, on the following arguments :

1. Concerning the use of the Scriptures.
2. Of the misery of mankind by sin.
3. Of their salvation by Christ.
4. Of a true and lively faith.
5. Of good works.
6. Of Christian love and charity.
7. Against swearing and perjury.
8. Against apostasy.
9. Against the fear of death.
10. An exhortation to obedience.
11. Against whoredom and adultery.
12. Against strife and contention about matters of religion.

These titles of the homilies are taken *verbatim* from Bishop Burnet.

Neal's Review.

† The chief were,

1. "That all ecclesiastical persons observe the laws relating to the King's supremacy."
2. "That they preach once a quarter against pilgrimages, and praying to images, and exhort to works of faith and charity."

cution, and to preach themselves four times a year, unless they had a reasonable excuse. They were to give orders to none but such as were able to preach, and to recal their licences from others. The injunctions were to be observed under the pains of excommunication, sequestration, or deprivation.

In *bidding* of their prayers they were to remember the King their supreme head, the Queen dowager, the King's two sisters, the lord protector and the council; the nobility

3. "That *images abused with pilgrimages and offerings* be taken down; that no wax candles or tapers be burnt before them; but only two lights upon the high altar before the sacrament shall remain still, to signify that Christ is the light of the world."

The limitation in this article giving occasion to great heats among the people, some affirming their images had been so abused, and others not, the council sent orders to see them all taken down.

4. "That when there is no sermon, the *Pater-noster*, the *Creed*, and *Ten Commandments*, shall be recited out of the pulpit to the parish-ioners.

5. "That within three months every church be provided with a bible; and within twelve months with *Erasmus's Paraphrase* on the *New Testament*.

9. "That they examine such who come to confession, whether they can recite the *Pater-noster*, *Creed*, and *Ten Commandments* in *English*, before they receive the sacrament of the altar, else they ought not to come to God's board.

21. "That in time of high mass the epistle and gospel shall be read in *English*; and that one chapter in the *New Testament* be read at mattins, and one in the *Old* at even-song.

23. "No processions shall be used about churches or church-yards; but immediately before high mass the litany shall be said or sung in *English*; and all ringing of bells (save one) utterly forborn.

24. "That the holy day, at the first beginning godly instituted and ordained, be wholly given to God, in hearing the word of God read and taught; in private and public prayers; in acknowledging their offences to God, and promising amendments; in reconciling themselves to their neighbors, receiving the communion, visiting the sick, &c. Only it shall be lawful in time of harvest to labour upon holy and festival days, in order to save that thing which God hath sent; and that scrupulosity to abstain from working on those days does grievously offend God.

28. "That they take away all shrines, coverings of shrines, tables, candlesticks, trindills, or rolls of wax, pictures, paintings, and other monuments of feigned miracles, so that no memory of them remain in walls or windows; exhorting the people to do the like in their several houses."

The rest of the articles related to the advancement of learning, to the encouragement of preaching, and correcting some very gross abuses.

the clergy, and the commons of this realm. The custom of *bidding* prayer, which is still in use in the church, is a relic of popery. Bishop *Burnet*\* has preserved the form, as it was in use before the reformation, which was this: After the preacher had named and opened his text he called on the people to go to their prayers, telling them what they were to pray for. *Ye shall pray* (says he) *for the King, for the Pope, for the holy Catholic church, &c.* After which all the people said their beads in a general silence, and the minister kneeled down likewise and said his: they were to say a *Pater-noster*, *Ave Maria*, *Deus misereatur nostri*, *Domine saluum fac regem*, *Gloria Patri*, &c. and then the sermon proceeded. How sadly this *bidding of prayer* has been abused of late, by some divines, to the entire omission of the duty itself, is too well known to need a remark!

Most of the bishops complied with the injunctions, except *Bonner* of *London*, and *Gardiner* of *Winchester*. *Bonner* offered a reserve, but that not being accepted, he made an absolute submission; nevertheless, he was sent for some time to the Fleet for contempt. *Gardiner* having protested against the injunctions and homilies as contrary to the law of God, was sent also to the Fleet, where he continued till after the parliament was over, and was then released by a general act of grace.

The parliament that met *November 9th*, made several alterations in favor of the reformation. They repealed all laws that made any thing treason but what was specified in the act of *25 Edward III*; and two of the statutes against *Lollardies*. They repealed the statute of the six articles, with the acts that followed in explanation of it; all laws in the late reign, declaring any thing felony that was not so declared before; together with the act that made the King's proclamation of equal authority with an act of parliament. Besides the repeal of these laws, sundry new ones were enacted;† as, *That the sacrament of the Lord's Supper should be administered in both kinds*, agreeably to Christ's first institution, and the practice of the church for 500 years;

\* Hist. Ref. vol. ii. p. 30, and Collection of Records, b. i. No. 8.

† 1 Edw. VI. cap. i.

and that all private masses should be put down: An act concerning the admission of bishops into their sees; which sets forth, that the manner of choosing bishops by a *conge d' elire*, being but the shadow of an election, all bishops hereafter shall be appointed by the King's letters patent only, and shall continue the exercise of their jurisdiction, during their natural life, if they behave well.|| One of the first patents with this clause is that of Dr. *Barlow*, bishop of *Bath* and *Wells*,§ bearing date *Feb. 3*, in the second year of the King's reign; but all the rest of the bishops afterwards took out letters patent for their bishoprics with the same clause. In this the archbishop had a principal hand; for it was his judgment, that the exercise of all episcopal jurisdiction depended upon the prince; and that as he gave it he might restrain or take it away at his pleasure.† *Cranmer* thought the exercise of his own episcopal authority ended with the late King's life, and therefore would not act as archbishop till he had a new commission from King *Edward*.

In the same statute it is declared, “That since all jurisdiction both spiritual and temporal was derived from the King, therefore all processes in the spiritual court should from henceforward be carried on in the King's name, and be sealed with the King's seal, as in the other courts of common law, except the archbishop of *Canterbury's* courts only in all faculties and dispensations; but all collations, presentations, or letters of orders, were to pass under the bishops' proper seals as formerly.” By this law, causes concerning wills and marriages were to be tried in the King's name; but this was repealed in the next reign.

*Lastly*; The parliament gave the King all the lands for maintenance of chauntries not possessed by his father; all legacies given for obits, anniversaries, lamps in churches; together with all guild lands which any fraternity enjoyed on the same account:\* the money was to be converted to the maintenance of grammar-schools; but the hungry courtiers shared it among themselves. After this the houses were prorogued from the 24th of *December* to the 20th of *April* following.

|| 1 Ewd. VI. cap. 2.

§ Burnet's His. Ref. vol. ii. p. 218.

† Strype's Mem. Cran. p. 141, App. p. 53.

\* Ewd. VI. cap. 14.

The convocation that sat with the parliament did little; the majority being on the side of popery, the archbishop was afraid of venturing any thing of importance with them; nor are any of their proceedings upon record; but Mr. *Strype* has collected from the notes of a private member, that the lower house agreed to the communion in both kinds; and that upon a division, about the lawfulness of priests' marriages, fifty-three were for the affirmative, and twenty-two for the negative.\*

The reformation in *Germany* lying under great discouragements by the victorious arms of *Charles V.* who had this year taken the Duke of *Saxony* prisoner, and dispossessed him of his electorate; several of the foreign reformers, who had taken sanctuary in those parts, were forced to seek it elsewhere. Among these *Peter Martyr*, a *Florentine*, was invited by the archbishop, in the King's name into *England*, and had the divinity chair given him at *Oxford*; *Bucer* had the same at *Cambridge*; *Ochinus* and *Fagius*, two other learned foreigners, had either pensions or canonries with a dispensation of residence, and did good service in the universities; but *Fagius* soon after died.

The common people were very much divided in their opinions about religion; some being zealous for preserving the Popish rites, and others no less averse to them. The country people were very tenacious of their old shews, as *processions, wakes, carrying of candles on Candlemas-day, and Palms on Palm-Sundays*, &c. while others looked upon them as heathenish rites, absolutely inconsistent with the simplicity of the gospel. This was so effectually represented to the council by *Cranmer*, that a proclamation was published *Feb. 6, 1548*, forbidding the continuance of them. And for putting an end to all contests about images that had been abused to superstition, an order was published *Feb. 11th*, that *all images whatsoever* should be taken out of churches; and the bishops were commanded to execute it in their several dioceses.† Thus the churches were emptied of all those pictures and statues, which had for divers ages been the objects of the people's adoration.

\* *Strype's Life of Cran.* p. 156.    † *Burnet's Hist. Ref.* vol. ii. p. 64.



The clergy were no less divided than the laity ; the pulpits clashing one against the other, and tending to stir up sedition and rebellion : the King therefore, after the example of his father, and by advice of his council, issued out a proclamation, Sept. 3, in the 2d year of his reign, to prohibit all preaching throughout all his dominions : the words are these, “ The King’s highness, minding shortly to have  
“ one uniform order throughout this realm, and to put an  
“ end to all controversies in religion, so far as God shall  
“ give grace ; doth at this present, and till such time as  
“ the said order shall be set forth, inhibit all manner of  
“ persons whatsoever, to preach in open audience in the  
“ pulpit or otherwise ; to the intent that the whole clergy,  
“ in the mean space, may apply themselves in prayer to  
“ Almighty God, for the better achieving the same most  
“ godly intent and purpose.”

At the same time a committee of divines was appointed to examine and reform the offices of the church :\* these were the archbishops of *Canterbury* and *York* ; the bishops of *London*, *Durham*, *Worcester*, *Norwich*, *St. Asaph*, *Salisbury*, *Coventry* and *Litchfield*, *Carlisle*, *Bristol*, *St. Davids*, *Ely*, *Lincoln*, *Chichester*, *Hereford*, *Westminster*, and *Rochester* ; with the doctors *Cox*, *May*, *Taylor*, *Heins*, *Robertson*, and *Redmayn*. They began with the sacrament of the Eucharist, in which they made but little alteration, leaving the office of the mass as it stood, only adding to it so much as changed it into a communion in both kinds. Auricular Confession was left indifferent. The priest having received the sacrament himself, was to turn to the people and read the exhortation ; then followed a denunciation, requiring such as had not repented to withdraw, lest the devil should enter into them as he did into *Judas*. After a little pause, to see if any would withdraw, followed a confession of sins and absolution, the same is now in use ; after which the sacrament was administered in both kinds without elevation. This office was published with a proclamation, *declaring his Majesty’s intentions to proceed to a further reformation* ; and willing his subjects not to run before his direction, assuring them of his earnest zeal in this affair, and hoping they would quietly tarry for it.

\* Burnet’s Hist. Ref. vol. ii. p. 61, 64.

In reforming the other offices they examined and compared the Romish missals of *Sarum, York, Hereford, Bangor, and Lincoln*; and out of them composed the morning and evening service, almost in the same form as it stands at present; only there was no confession, nor absolution. It would have obviated many objections if the committee had thrown aside the mass-book, and composed an uniform service in the language of Scripture, without any regard to the church of *Rome*; but this they were not aware of, or the times would not bear it. From the same materials, they compiled a litany, consisting of many short petitions interrupted by suffrages; it is the same with that which is now used, except the petition to be delivered *from the tyranny of the bishop of Rome and all his detestable enormities*; which, in the review of the Liturgy in Queen *Elizabeth's* time was struck out.

In the administration of *Baptism* a cross was to be made on the child's forehead and breast, and the devil was exorcised to go out, and enter no more into him. The child was to be dipped three times in the font, on the right and left side, and on the breast if not weak. A white vestment was to be put upon it in token of innocence; and it was to be anointed on the head, with a short prayer for the unction of the Holy Ghost.

In order to *Confirmation*, those that came were to be catechised; then the bishop was to sign them with the cross, and lay his hands upon them, in the name of the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost.

If sick persons desired to be *anointed* the priest might do it upon the forehead and breast, only making the sign of the cross; with a short prayer for his recovery.

In the office of *Burial*, the soul of the departed person is recommended to the mercy of God; and the minister is to pray, that the sins which he committed in this world may be forgiven him, and that he may be admitted into heaven, and his body raised at the last day.

This was the first service book or liturgy of King *Edward VI.* We have no certain account of the use of any liturgies in the first ages of the church; those of *St. Mark, St. James*, and that of *Alexandria*, being manifestly spurious.—

It is not till the latter end of the fourth century that they are first mentioned ; and then it was left to the care of every bishop to draw up a form of prayer for his own church.—In St. *Austin's* time they began to consult about an agreement of prayers, that none should be used without common advice ; but still there was no *uniformity*. Nay, in the darkest times of popery, there was a vast variety of forms in different sees, witness the offices *secundum usum Sarum, Bangor, York, &c.* But our reformers split upon this rock, sacrificing the peace of the church to a mistaken necessity of an exact uniformity of doctrine and worship, in which it was impossible for all men to agree. Had they drawn up divers forms, or left a discretionary latitude for tender consciences, as to some particular phrases, all men would have been easy, and the church more firmly united than ever.

The like is to be observed as to rites and ceremonies of an indifferent nature. Nothing is more certain, than that the church of *Rome* indulged a variety. Every religious order (says bishop *Burnet*)\* had their peculiar rites, with the saint's days that belonged to their order, and services for them : but our reformers thought proper to insist upon an exact uniformity of habits and ceremonies for all the clergy ; though they knew many of them were exceptionable, having been abused to idolatry ; and were a yoke which some of the most resolved protestants could not bear. Nay, so great a stress was laid upon the square cap and surplice, that rather than dispense with the use of them to some tender minds, the bishops were content to part with their best friends, and hazard the reformation into the hands of the papists. If there must be habits and ceremonies for decency and order, why did they not appoint new ones, rather than retain the old, which had been idolized by the papists to such a degree, as to be thought to have a magical virtue or a sacramental efficacy ? Or if they meant this, why did they not speak out, and go on with the consecration of them ?

The council had it some time under consideration, whether those vestments in which the priests used to officiate should be continued ? It was objected against them, by those

\* Hist. Ref. vol. ii. p. 72.

who had been confessors for the protestant religion, and others, that ‘the habits were parts of the train of the mass; that the people had such a superstitious opinion of them, as to think they gave an efficacy to their prayers, and that divine service said without this apparel was insignificant; whereas at best they were but inventions of popery, and ought to be destroyed with that idolatrous religion.’§ But it was said on the other hand, by those divines that had staid in *England*, and weathered the storm of King *Henry’s* tyranny by a politic compliance, and concealment of their opinions, that ‘church habits and ceremonies were indifferent, and might be appointed by the magistrates; that *white* was the colour of the priests garments in the Mosaical dispensation; and that it was a natural expression of the purity and decency that became priests. That they ought to depart no further from the church of Rome than she had departed from the practice of the primitive church.’

Besides, ‘the clergy were then so poor, that they could scarce afford to buy themselves decent clothes.’ But did the priests buy their own garments? Could not the parish provide a gown, or some other decent apparel for the priest to minister in sacred things, as well as a square cap, a surplice, a cope, or a tippet? Were these the habits of the primitive clergy before the rise of the papacy? But upon these slender reasons the garments were continued, which soon after divided the reformers among themselves, and gave rise to the two parties of conformists and nonconformists; archbishop *Cranmer* and *Ridley* being at the head of the former; and bishop *Hooper*, *Rogers*, with the foreign divines, being patrons of the latter.

The parliament, after several prorogations, met the 24th of *November* 1548, and on the 15th of *January* following, the act confirming the new liturgy passed both houses; the bishops of *London*, *Durham*, *Norwich*, *Carlisle*, *Hereford*, *Worcester*, *Westminster* and *Chichester*, protesting. The preamble sets forth, “That the archbishop of *Canterbury*, with other learned bishops and divines, having by the aid of the *Holy Ghost*, with one uniform agreement, concluded upon an order of divine worship, agreeable to Scripture

§ Fuller’s Church History, b. 7. p. 402.

the primitive church, the parliament having considered the book, gave the King their most humble thanks, enacted, that from the feast of *Whitsunday* 1549, all the offices should be performed according to it; and such of the clergy as refused to do it, or officiated in other manner, should upon the first conviction suffer months imprisonment, and forfeit a year's profits of benefice; for the second offence forfeit all his church ferments, and suffer a year's imprisonment; and for a third offence imprisonment for life. Such as writ or printed against the book were to be fined 10*l.* for the first offence; 20*l.* for the second; and to forfeit all their lands, and be imprisoned for life for the third." It ought to be observed, that this service book was not laid before the convocation, nor any representative body of the clergy: whereas it is said to be done *by one uniform agreement*, certain that four of the bishops employed in drawing it, protested against it, viz. the bishops of *Norwich, London, Chichester*, and *Westminster*. But if the liturgy had been more perfect than it was, the penalties by which it was imposed were severe and unchristian, contrary to Scripture and primitive antiquity.†

As soon as the act took place, the council appointed visitors to see that the new liturgy was received all over *Eng.*

*Bonner*, who resolved to comply in every thing, was the dean and residentiary of *St. Paul's* to use it; and the clergy were so pliable, that the visitors returned no complaints; only that the Lady *Mary* continued to have mass in her house, which upon the intercession of the Emperor was indulged her for a time.† *Gardiner* bishop of *Chichester* continued still a prisoner in the Tower, without being brought to a trial, for refusing to submit to the King's supremacy while the King was under age; and some other complaints against him. His imprisonment

† Burnet's Hist. Ref. vol. ii. p. 93, 94.

The intercession of the Emperor, *Carolus*, was supported by the resolution of the council, and urged by the importance of preserving peace with him. But the King, amiable as his temper appears to have been, with tears opposed the advice of his council, and finally denied the Emperor's suit.

Fox, as quoted by Crosby, b. i. p. 44. Ed.

was certainly illegal ; it was unjustifiable to keep a man in prison two years upon a bare complaint ; and then, without producing any evidence in support of the charge, to sift him by articles and interrogatories : this looked too much like an inquisition ; but the King being in the Pope's room (says bishop *Burnet*)§ there were some things gathered from the canon law, and from the proceedings *ex officio*, that rather excused than justified the hard measures he met with. When the council sent secretary *Petre* to the bishop, to know whether he would subscribe to the use of the service book, he consented with some exceptions, which not being admitted, he was threatened with deprivation.

But the new liturgy did not sit well upon the minds of the country people, who were for going on in their old way, of wakes, processions, church ales, holidays, censing of images, and other theatrical rites, which strike the minds of the vulgar: these, being encouraged by the old monks and friars, rose up in arms in several counties, but were soon dispersed. The most formidable insurrections were those of *Devonshire* and *Norfolk*. In *Devonshire* they were 10,000 strong, and sent the following articles or demands to the King :

1. " That the six articles should be restored.
2. " That mass should be said in *Latin*.
3. " That the host should be elevated and adored.
4. " That the sacrament should be given but in one kind.
5. " That images should be set up in churches.
6. " That the souls in purgatory should be prayed for.
7. " That the bible should be called in, and prohibited.
8. " That the new service book should be laid aside, " and the old religion restored."

An answer was sent from court to these demands ; but nothing prevailed on the enraged multitude, whom the priests had inflamed with all the artifice they could devise, carrying the host about the camp in a cart, that all might see and adore it. They besieged the city of *Exeter*, and reduced it to the last extremity ; but the inhabitants defended it with uncommon bravery, till they were relieved by the Lord *Russell*, who with a very small force entered the town and dispersed the rebels. The insurrection in *Norfolk*

§ Hist. Ref. vol. ii. p. 152.

aded by one *Ket* a tanner, who assumed to himself the  
of judicature under an old oak, called from thence  
*of reformation*. He did not pretend much of religion,  
place new counsellors about the King, in order to sup-  
he greatness of the gentry, and advance the privi-  
of the commons. The rebels were 20,000 strong;  
e Earl of *Warwick*, with 6000 foot and 1500 horse,  
y dispersed them. Several of the leaders of both re-  
ns were executed, and *Ket* was hanged in chains.

e hardships the reformers underwent in the late reign  
the *six articles*, should have made them tender of the  
of those who differed from the present standard. *Cran-*  
himself had been a *Papist* a *Lutheran*, and was now a  
*mentary*; and in every change guilty of inexcusable  
ities: while he was a *Lutheran* he consented to the  
g of *John Lambert* and *Anne Askeu*, for those very  
nes for which himself afterward suffered. He bore  
upon the papists, stretching the law to keep their most  
leaders in prison; and this year he imbrued his hands  
blood of a poor frantic woman, *Joan Bocher*, more  
*Bedlam* than a stake; which was owing not to any  
r in the archbishop's temper, but by those miserable  
uting principles by which he was governed.

ong others that fled out of *Germany* into *England*,  
he *Rustic war*, there were some that went by the  
of *Anabaptists* [disseminating their errors, and making  
ytes] who, besides the principle of adult baptism, held  
A wild opinions about the Trinity, the virgin *Mary*,  
ie person of Christ.† Complaint being made of them

s to be wished that Mr. Neal had not characterised, in this style,  
timents of these persons; but had contented himself, without  
ting his own judgment of their tenets, with giving his readers  
ds of bishop Burnet. For calling their opinions *wild notions*,  
re a tendency with many to soften their resentment against the  
ting measures, which Mr. Neal justly condemns; and he consid-  
furnishing an apology for them. Bishop Burnet says, 'upon  
Pi first preaching in Germany, there arose many, who, building  
ne of his principles, carried things much further than he did.  
chief foundation he laid down was, that the *Scripture was to be*  
*ly rule of Christians.*' Upon this, many urged that the myste-  
the Trinity, and Christ's incarnation and sufferings, of the fall  
y, and the aids of grace, were indeed philosophical subtilties, and



to the council *April 12th*, a commission was ordered to the archbishop of *Canterbury*, the bishops of *Ely*, *Worcester*, [*Westminster*] *Chichester*, *Lincoln*, *Rochester*, [Sir *Wm. Petre*, Sir *Thomas Smith*, Dr. *Cox*, Dr. *May*,] and some others, any three being a quorum, to examine and search after all anabaptists, heretics, or contemners of the common prayer, whom they were to endeavor to reclaim, and after penance to give them absolution; but if they continued obstinate they were to excommunicate, imprison, and deliver them over to the secular arm. This was little better than a protestant inquisition. People had generally thought that all the statutes for burning heretics had been repealed; but it was now said, that heretics were to be burnt by the *common law* of *England*; and that the statutes were only for directing the manner of conviction; so that the repealing them did not take away that which was grounded upon a writ at *common law*. Several tradesmen that were brought before the commissioners abjured; but *Joan Bocher*, or *Joan of Kent*, obstinately maintained, that ‘Christ was not truly incarnate of the virgin, whose flesh being sinful he could not partake of it; but the word, by the consent of the inward man in the virgin, took flesh of her.’ These were her words: a scholastic nicety, not capable of doing much mischief, and far from deserving so severe a punishment.—The poor woman could not reconcile the spotless purity of Christ’s human nature, with his receiving flesh from a sinful creature; and for this she is declared an obstinate heretic, and delivered over to the secular power to be burnt. When the compassionate young King could not prevail with himself to sign the warrant for her execution, *Cranmer* with his superior learning was employed to persuade him; he argued from the practice of the *Jewish* church in stoning blasphemers, which rather silenced his Highness than satisfied him: for when at last he yielded to the archbishop’s importunity,

only pretended to be deduced from Scripture, as almost all opinions of religion were, and therefore they rejected them. Amongst these the baptism of infants was one. They held that to be no baptism, and so were re-baptised. But from this, which was most taken notice of, as being a visible thing, they carried all the general name of *Anabaptists*.

Hist. Ref. vol. ii. p. 410, &c.

him with tears in his eyes, that if he did wrong, it was in submission to his authority, he should answer it to God.† This struck the archbishop with surprise, but yet he suffered the sentence to be executed.§

He did his Grace renounce his burning principles as long as he was in power; for about two years after, he went on in the same bloody work again. One *George Van Dusen*, a Dutchman, being convicted of saying, that *God the Father was only God, and that Christ was not very God*, was refused to abjure, but refusing, he was condemned in the same manner with *Joan of Kent*, and on the 25th of *April*, was burnt in *Smithfield*: he was a man of a strict virtuous life, and very devout; he suffered with great firmness of mind, kissing the stake and faggots that were to consume him. No part of archbishop *Cranmer's* life exposed

† Burnet's Hist. Ref. vol. ii. p. 112.

Mr. Neal, representing *Joan Bocher* as a poor frantic woman, more heedless than the stake, and as *obstinately* maintaining her opinion, is not spoken so respectfully of her as her character and the truth of the case required. The charge of *obstinacy* wants propriety and candour, though an opinion in the account of others may be a great useful error, it cannot, without insincerity and the violation of conscience, be renounced by the person who has embraced it, until he is convinced of its falshood. Arguments which produce conviction in one mind, do not carry the same degree of clearness and force to other minds; and men are very incompetent judges of the mind force of evidence necessary to leave on others the impression they themselves feel. The extraordinary efforts used to bring *Bocher* to retract her opinion, shew her to have been a person of whose opinions carried more weight and respect than it can be ascribed to the chimeras of a frantic woman. The account which Mr. Neal gives of her is truly honorable. "She was (he says) a disperser of *Tindall's* New Testament, translated by him into English, and printed at *Colen*, and was a great reader of Scripture. Which book also she dispersed in the court, and so became known to certain women of quality, and was more particularly acquainted with Mrs. *Anne Ascue*. She used, for the more secrecy, to carry books with strings under her apparel, and so pass with them into the court."§ By this it appears, that she hazarded her life, in those times, to bring others to the knowledge of God's word: and, Mr. Neal's own account, her sentiments, were they ever so erroneously taken up out of respect to *Christ*; for "she could not reconcile the spotless purity of *Christ's* human nature, with his receiving from a sinful creature." ED.

Mr. Neal's Ecclesiastical Memorials, vol. ii. p. 214, as quoted in Lindley's Apology, 4th Ed. p. 43, and in his Historical View of the Unitarian Doctrine and Worship, p. 87.

him more than this : it was now said by the papists, that they saw men of harmless lives might be put to death for heresy by the confession of the reformers themselves. In all the books published in Queen *Mary's* days, justifying her severities against protestants, these instances were always produced ; and when *Cranmer* himself was brought to the stake they called it a just retaliation. But neither this, nor any other arguments, could convince the divines of this age, of the absurdity and wickedness of putting men to death for conscience sake.

*Bonner*, bishop of *London*, being accused of remissness in not settling the new service book throughout his diocese, and being suspected of disaffection to the government, was enjoined to declare publicly in a sermon at *Paul's* cross, his belief of the King's authority while under age, and his approbation of the new service book, with some other articles; which he not performing to the council's satisfaction, was cited before the court of delegates, and after several hearings, in which he behaved with great arrogance, sentence of deprivation was pronounced against him *Sept. 23d*, by the archbishop of *Canterbury*, *Ridley* bishop of *Rocheſter*, secretary *Smith*, and the dean of *St. Paul's*. It was thought hard to proceed to such extremities with a man for a mere omission ; for *Bonner* pleaded, that he forgot the article of the King's authority in his sermon ; and it was yet harder to add imprisonment to his deprivation : but he lived to take a severe revenge upon his judges in the next reign. The vacant see was filled up with Dr. *Ridley*, who, on the *24th of Feb. 1549-50*, was declared bishop of *London* and *Westminster*, the two bishoprics being united in him ; but his consecration was deferred to the next year.

The parliament that met the *14th Nov.* revived the act of the late King, empowering his Majesty to reform the canon law, by naming thirty-two persons, viz. sixteen of the spirituality, of whom four to be bishops ; and sixteen of the temporality, of whom four to be common lawyers, who within three years should compile a body of ecclesiastical laws, which, not being contrary to the statute law, should be published by the King's warrant under the great seal, and have the force of laws in the ecclesiastical courts. This

n was formed, and very far advanced in King *Henry*'s time, but the troubles that attended the last part of his reign prevented the finishing it. It was now resumed, and in pursuance of this act a commission was first given to eight persons, viz. two bishops, two divines, two doctors of law and two common lawyers, who were to prepare materials for the review of the thirty-two; but the preface to the printed book says, that *Cranmer* did almost the whole himself.\* It was not finished till the month of *Feb.* 1552-53, when another commission was granted to thirty-two persons to revise it, of whom the former eight were a part, viz. two bishops, eight divines, eight civilians, and eight common lawyers; they divided themselves into four classes, and amendments of each class were communicated to the king. Thus the work was finished, being digested into one title. It was translated into *Latin* by Dr. *Haddon* and Sir *John Cheek*; but before it received the royal confirmation the King died; nor was it ever revived in the succeeding reigns. Archbishop *Parker* first published it in the year 1566, under the title of *Reformatio Legum Anglicarum, &c.* It was reprinted 1640. By this book *Cranmer* seems to have softened his burning principles; for though, under the third title of judgments for heresy, he lays a very heavy burden upon the back of an obstinate heretic, as that 'he shall be declared infamous, incapable of public trust, or of being witness in any court; or of having power to make a will; or of having the benefit of the law;' yet there is no mention of capital proceedings!

Another remarkable act, passed this session,† was for ordering ministers; it appoints, "that such forms of ordering ministers as should be set forth by the advice of six laymen and six divines, to be named by the King, and authorized under the great seal, should be used after *April* 1st, and no other." Here is no mention again of a convention or synod of divines; nor do the parliament reserve to themselves a right of judgment, but intrust every thing entirely with the crown. The committee soon finished

\* *Strype's Life of Cranmer*, p. 271.

† 3d and 4th of Edward VIth, cap. 12.

their Ordinal, which is almost the same with that now use. They take no notice in their book of the lower order in the church of *Rome*, as subdeacons, readers, acolytes, but confine themselves to bishops, priests and deacons; here it is observable, that the form of ordaining a priest and a bishop is the same we yet use, there being no express mention in the words of ordination whether it be for the one or other office :\* this has been altered of late years, since a distinction of the two orders has been so generally admitted; that was not the received doctrine of these times.† The committee struck out most of the modern rites of the church of *Rome*, and contented themselves (says bishop Burnet) with those mentioned in scripture, viz. *imposition of hands and prayer*. The gloves, the sandals, the mitre, the ring and crosier, which had been used in consecrating bishops, were laid aside. The anointing, the giving consecrated vestments, the delivering into the hands vessels for consecrating the eucharist, with a power to offer sacrifice for the dead and living, which had been the custom in the ordination of a priest, were also omitted. But when the bishop was ordained, he was to lay one hand on the priest's head, and with his other hand to give him a bible with a chalice and bread in it. The chalice and bread are now omitted; the pastoral staff is the consecration of a bishop. By the rule of this ordinal a deacon was not to be ordained before twenty-one, a priest before twenty-four, nor a bishop before he was thirty years of age.

The council went on with pressing the new liturgy upon the people, who were still inclined in many places to the old service; but to put it out of their power to continue it, it was ordered that all clergymen should deliver up to such persons whom the King should appoint, all their old *antiphonals, missals, grayls, processionals, legends, pies, portables, &c.* and to see to the observing one uniform order in the church; which the parliament confirmed, requiring further that all that had any images in their houses, that had belonged

\* Burnet's Hist. Ref. vol. ii. p. 144.

† For a full vindication of the above assertions, see Mr. Neal's review p. 860—64, of the 1st vol. of the quarto edition of his History.

to any church, to deface them ; and to dash out of their primers all prayers to the saints.

1550. *Ridley* being now bishop of *London*, resolved upon a visitation of his diocese. His injunctions were, as usual, to enquire into the doctrines and manners of the clergy ;\* but the council sent him a letter in his Majesty's name, to see that all *altars* were taken down, and to require the church-wardens of every parish to provide a table decently covered, and to place it in such part of the choir or chancel as should be most meet, so that the ministers and communicants should be separated from the rest of the people. The same injunctions were given to the rest of the bishops, as appears by the collection of bishop *Sparrow*.—*Ridley* began with his own cathedral at *St. Paul's*, where he ordered the wall on the back side of the altar to be broken down, and a decent table to be placed in its room ; and this was done in most churches throughout the province of *Canterbury*. The reasons for this alteration were these :—

1. “ Because our Saviour instituted the sacrament at a table, and not at an altar.

2. “ Because Christ is not to be sacrificed over again, but his body and blood to be spiritually eaten and drunk at the holy supper ; for which a table is more proper than an altar.

3. “ Because the Holy Ghost, speaking of the Lord's supper, calls it *the Lord's table*, 1. Cor. x. xxi, but no where an altar.

4. “ The canons of the council of Nice, as well as the fathers *St. Chrysostom* and *St. Augustine*, call it the Lord's table ; and though they sometimes call it an altar, it is to be understood figuratively.

5. “ An altar has relation to a sacrifice ; so that if we retain the one we must admit the other ; which would give great countenance to mass-priests.

6. “ There are many passages in ancient writers, that show that communion tables were of wood, that they

\* Among the other articles which he put to the inferior clergy, this was one : “ Whether any anabaptists or others, used private conventicles, with different opinions and forms from those established, and with other questions about baptism and marriages.” Crosby, vol. i. p. 51. [EDIT.]

“ were made like tables ; and that those who fled into  
“ churches for sanctuary did hide themselves under them.

7. “ The most learned foreign divines have declared  
“ against altars ; as *Bucer, Colampadius, Zuinglius, Bul-*  
“ *linger, Calvin, P. Martyr, Joannes, Alasco, Hedio, Cap-*  
“ *ito, &c.* and have removed them out of their several church-  
“ es : only the *Lutheran* churches retain them.”\*

*Ridley, Cranmer, Latimer*, and the rest of the *English* reformers, were unanimously of opinion, that the retaining altars would serve only to nourish in people’s minds the superstitious opinion of a *propitiatory mass*, and would minister an occasion of offence and division among the godly ; and the next age will shew they were not mistaken in their conjectures. But some of the bishops refused to comply with the council’s order ; as *Day* bishop of *Chichester*, and *Heath* of *Worcester*, insisting on the Apostle’s words to the *Hebrews*, *We have an altar* ; and rather than comply they suffered themselves to be deprived of their bishoprics for contumacy, *October 1551*. Preachers were sent into the countries to rectify the people’s prejudices, which had a very good effect ; and if they had taken the same methods with respect to the *habits, and other relics of popery*, these would hardly have kept their ground, and the reformers would have acted a more consistent and prudent part.

The sad consequences of retaining the popish garments in the service of the church, began to appear this year : a debate one would think, of small consequence ; but at this time apprehended of great importance to the reformation. The people having been bred up in a superstitious veneration for the priest’s garments, were taught that they were sacred ; that without them no administrations were valid ; that there was a sort of virtue conveyed into them by consecration ; and in a word, that they were of the same importance to a christian clergyman, as the priest’s garments of old were in their ministrations ; it was time therefore to disabuse them. The debate began upon occasion of *Dr. Hooper’s* nomination to the bishopric of *Gloucester*, in the room of *Dr. Wakeman*, who died in *December 1549*.

\* *Strype’s Annals*, vol. i. p. 162. *Hist. Ref.* vol. iii. p. 158.



Dr. *Hooper* was a zealous, pious, and learned man : he went out of *England* in the latter end of King *Henry's* reign, and lived at *Zurich* at a time when all *Germany* was in a flame on account of the *Interim* ; which was a form of worship contrived to keep up the exterior face of popery, with the softenings of some other senses put upon things. Upon this arose a great and important question among the *Germans*, concerning the use of things indifferent.† It was said, ‘ if things were indifferent in themselves they were lawful ; and that it was the subject’s duty to obey when commanded.’ So the old popish rites were kept up, on purpose to draw the people more easily back to popery. Out of this another question arose, ‘ whether it was lawful to obey in things indifferent, when it was certain they were enjoined with an ill design ?’ To which it was replied, that the designs of legislators were not to be enquired into. This created a vast distraction in the country : some conformed to the *Interim* ; but the major part were firm to their principles, and were turned out of their livings for disobedience. Those who complied were for the most part *Lutherans*, and carried the name of *Adiaphorists*, from the *Greek* word, that signifies, things indifferent. But the rest of the reformed were for shaking off all the relics of popery, with the hazard of all that was dear to them in the world ; particularly at *Zurich*, where *Hooper* was, they were zealous against any compliance with the *Interim*, or the use of the old rites prescribed by it.

With these principles *Hooper* came over to *England*, and applied himself to preaching and explaining the Scriptures to the people ; he was in the pulpit almost every day in the week, and his sermons were so popular, that all the churches were crowded where he preached. His fame soon reached the court, where Dr. *Poynet* and he were appointed to preach all the *Lent* sermons. He was also sent to preach throughout the counties of *Kent* and *Essex* in order to reconcile the people to the reformation. At length, in the month of *July* 1550, he was appointed bishop of *Gloucester* by letters patent from the King, but declined it for two reasons,

†Hist. Ref. vol. iii. p. 199.

1. Because of the form of the oath, which he calls foul and impious. And,

2. By reason of the *Aaronical* habits.

By the oath is meant the oath of supremacy, § which was in this form, ‘By God, by the saints, and by the Holy ‘Ghost;’ which *Hooper* thought impious, because God only ought to be appealed to in an oath, for as much as he only knows the thoughts of men. The young King being convinced of this, struck out the words with his own pen. †

But the scruple about the habits was not so easily got over. ‘The King and council were inclined to dispense with them; but *Ridley* and the rest of the bishops that had worn the habits were of another mind, saying, ‘the thing was in-‘different, and therefore the law ought to be obeyed.’—This had such an influence upon the council, that all *Hooper’s* objections were afterwards heard with great prejudice. It discovered but an ill spirit in the reformers, not to suffer *Hooper* to decline his bishopric, nor yet to dispense with those habits which he thought unlawful. *Hooper* was as much for the clergy’s wearing a decent and distinct habit from the laity, as *Ridley*, but prayed to be excused from the old symbolizing popish garments.

1. Because they had no countenance in Scripture or primitive antiquity.

2. Because they were the inventions of antichrist, and were introduced into the church in the corruptest ages of Christianity.

3. Because they had been abused to superstition and idolatry, particularly in the pompous celebration of the mass; and therefore were not indifferent.

4. To continue the use of these garments, was, in his opinion, to symbolize with antichrist, to mislead the people, and was inconsistent with the simplicity of the Christian religion.

*Cranmer* was inclined to yield to these reasons; but *Ridley* and *Goodrick* insisted strongly on obedience to the laws,

§ Mr. Fuller, when he wrote his Church History, conceived that the oath bishop Hooper refused, was that of canonical obedience, but when he published his Worthies, he was convinced of his mistake, and corrected it. Neal’s Review. Ed. † Hist. Ref. vol. iii. p. 208.

affirming, that ‘in matters of rites and ceremonies, custom ‘was a good argument for the continuance of those that ‘had been long used.’ But this argument seemed to go too far, because it might be used for the retaining all those other rites and ceremonies of popery which had been long used in the church, but were now abolished by these reformers themselves.

*Hooper*, not willing to rely upon his own judgment, wrote to *Bucer* at *Cambridge*, and to *Peter Martyr* at *Oxford*, who gave their opinions against the habits, as inventions of anti-christ, and wished them removed; as will appear more fully in the reign of Queen *Elizabeth* ;\* but were of opinion, since the bishops were so resolute, that he might acquiesce in the use of them *for a time till they were taken away by law* : and the rather, because the reformation was in its infancy, and it would give occasion of triumph to the common enemy to see the reformers at variance among themselves. The divines of *Switzerland* and *Geneva* were of the same mind, being unwilling that a clergyman of so much learning and piety, and so zealous for the reformation, as *Hooper* was, should be silenced; they therefore advised him to comply for the present, that he might be the more capable by his authority and influence in the church, to get them laid aside. But these reasons not satisfying *Hooper’s* conscience, he continued to refuse for above nine months.

The governing prelates being provoked with his stiffness, resolved not to suffer such a precedent of disobedience to the ecclesiastical laws to go unpunished. *Hooper* must be a bishop, and must be consecrated in the manner others had been, and wear the habits the law appointed; and to force him to comply he was served with an order of council, first to silence him, and then to confine him to his house. The doctor thought this usage very severe: to miss his promotion was no disappointment, but to be persecuted about clothes, by men of the same faith with himself, and to lose his liberty because he would not be a bishop, and in the fashion, this (says *Mr. Collier*) was possibly more than he well understood. After some time *Hooper* was committed to the custody of

\* Collyer’s Eccles. Hist. vol. ii. p. 297.

*Cranmer*, who, not being able to bring him to conformity, complained to the council, who thereupon ordered him into the Fleet, where he continued some months, to the reproach of the reformers. At length he laid his case before the earl of *Warwick*, who by the King's own motion wrote to the archbishop to dispense with the habits at his consecration: but *Cranmer* alledged the danger of a *præmunire*; upon which a letter was sent from the King and council to the archbishop, and other bishops to be concerned in the consecration, warranting them to dispense with the garments, and discharging them of all manner of dangers, penalties and forfeitures they might incur any manner of way by omitting the same: but though this letter was dated *August* the 5th, yet such was the reluctance of *Cranmer* and *Ridley*, that *Hooper* was not consecrated till *March* following; in which time says bishop *Burnet*,† the matter was in some sort compromised; *Hooper* consenting to be robed in his habits at his consecration, when he preached before the King, or in his cathedral, or in any public place, but to be dispensed with at other times. Accordingly,§ being appointed to preach before the King, he came forth (says Mr. *Fox*) like a new player on the stage: his upper garment was a long scarlet chymere down to the foot, and under that a white linen rochet that covered all his shoulders, and a four square cap upon his head; but he took it patiently for the public profit of the church.‡ After this, *Hooper* retired to his diocese, and preached sometimes two or three times a day, to crowds of people that hungered for the word of life: he was impartial and zealous in the faithful discharge of every branch of his episcopal character, even beyond his strength, and was himself a pattern of what he taught to others.

In the King's letter to the archbishop, *Hooper* is said to be a divine of great knowledge, deep judgment, and long study

† Hist. Ref. vol. ii. p. 166.

§ Mr. Neal, in his review, adds from Mr. Fox, that "Bishop Hooper was constrained to appear once in public attired after the manner of other bishops, which unless he had done, some think there was a contrivance to take away his life; for his servant told me, (says Mr. Fox) that the duke of Suffolk sent such word to Hooper, who was not himself ignorant of what was doing." Ed.

‡ Fuller's *Abel Redivivus*, p. 173.

both in the scriptures and prophane learning; as also, a person of good discretion, ready utterance, and of an honest life: but all these qualifications must be buried in silence and a prison, at a time when there was a famine of the word, rather than the above-mentioned uniformity in dress be dispensed with.

Most of the reforming clergy were with *Hooper* in this controversy; several that had submitted to the habits in the late reign laid them aside in this, as the bishops *Latimer* and *Coverdale*, Dr. *Taylor*, *Philpot*, *Bradford*, and others, who laid down their lives for the protestant faith.\* In some ordinations *Cranmer* and *Ridley* dispensed with the habits; for Mr. *Thomas Sampson*, parson of Bread-street, *London*, afterwards one of the heads of the Puritans, and successively dean of *Chichester* and *Christchurch*, in a letter to secretary *Cecil*, writes, ‘that at his ordination by *Cranmer* and *Ridley*, he excepted against the apparel, and was nevertheless permitted and admitted.’† If they had not done so on some occasions, there would not have been clergymen to support the reformation. Bishop *Burnet* says, they saw their error, and designed to procure an act to abolish the popish garments; but whether this were so or not, it is certain that in the next reign they repented their conduct; for when *Ridley* was in prison he wrote a letter to *Hooper*, in which he calls him ‘his dear brother and fellow elder in Christ;’ and desires a mutual forgiveness and reconciliation. And when he and *Cranmer* came to be degraded, they smiled at the ridiculous attire with which they were clothed, and declared they had long since laid aside all regard to that pageantry.§

This behavior of the bishops towards the King’s natural-born subjects was the more extraordinary, because a latitude was allowed to foreign protestants to worship God after the manner of their country, without any regard to popish vestments: for this year a church of *German* refugees was established at St. *Austin’s* in *London*, and erect-

\* *Pierce’s Vind.* p. 31, 32, 33. † *Strype’s Life of Cranmer.* p. 192.

§ Bishop *Maddox* maintained, that the habits put on those reformers were the popish habits, which was the ground of their dislike. Mr. *Neal* in his *Review*, controverts the truth, and exposes the futility of this distinction. Ed.

ed into a corporation under the direction of *John a Lasco*, superintendant of all the foreign churches in *London*, with whom were joined four other ministers; and as a mark of favor 380 of the congregation were made denizens of *England*. The preamble to the patent sets forth, that the *German* church made profession of pure and uncorrupted religion, and was instructed in truly Christian and apostolical opinions and rites.\* In the patent which incorporates them there is the following clause: “*Item, We command,*  
 “and peremptorily enjoin our lord-mayor, alderman, and  
 “magistrates of the city of *London*, and their successors,  
 “with all archbishops, bishops, justices of the peace, and  
 “all officers and ministers whatsoever, that they permit  
 “the said superintendant and ministers to enjoy and exercise their own proper rites and ceremonies, and their  
 “own proper and peculiar ecclesiastical discipline, though  
 “differing from the rites and ceremonies used in our kingdom, without impediment, let, or disturbance; any law,  
 “proclamation or injunction heretofore published to the  
 “contrary notwithstanding.”

*John a Lasco* was a *Polander* of noble birth; and according to the words of the patent, a man very famous for learning, and for integrity of life and manners. He was in high esteem with the great *Erasmus*, who says, that he, though an old man, had profited much by his conversation. And *Peter Martyr* calls him his most learned patron.† But he did not please the ruling prelates, because he took part with *Hooper*, and wrote against the popish garments, and for the posture of sitting rather than kneeling at the Lord’s Supper.§

\* Burnet’s Hist. Ref. in Records, vol. ii. No. 51.

† Strype’s Life of Cranmer, p. 239.

§ About the end of Dec. 1550, after many cavils in the state, Bishop Burnet informs us, that an act passed for the King’s general pardon, wherein the anabaptists were excepted. Crosby, vol. i. p. 50.

Mr. Neal, in his review of the transactions of this year, has also omitted to inform his readers, that the doctrines established by the reformers by no means met with any implicit reception from all. The doctrine of the Trinity was denied by many, and Unitarian sentiments were so plainly avowed, and spread so fast, that the leading churchmen were alarmed at it, and feared their generally prevailing. Mr. Strype’s words are, “Arianism now shewed itself so openly, and was in such danger of spreading farther, that it was thought necessary to suppress it. by using more rugged methods than seemed agreeable to the merciful prin-

1551. Upon the translation of *Ridley* to the see of *London* Dr. *Poynet* was declared bishop of *Rochester*, and *Coverdale*, coadjutor to *Veysey*, bishop of *Exeter*. The see of *Winchester* had been two years as good as vacant by the long imprisonment of *Gardiner*, who had been confined all this time without being brought to a trial: the bishop complained of this to the council, who thereupon issued out a commission to the archbishop of *Canterbury*, the bishops of *London*, *Ely*, and *Lincoln*, with secretary *Petre*, judge *Hales*, two civilians, and two masters in chancery, to proceed against him for contempt. It was objected to him, that he refused to preach concerning the King's power while under age; that he had been negligent in obeying the King's injunctions, and was so obstinate that he would not ask the King mercy. It was the declared opinion of the popish clergy at this time, that the King's laws were to be obeyed, but not the orders of his council; and therefore that all things should remain as the late King left them, till the present King, now a child, came of age. This the rebels in *Devon* pleaded, as well as the Lady *Mary* and others. For the same opinion *Gardiner* was deprived of his bishopric April 18th,\* upon which he appealed to the King when at age; and so his process ended, and he was sent back to the Tower, where he lay till Queen *Mary* discharged him.—Nothing can be said in vindication of this severity but this, that both he and *Bonner* had taken out commissions, with the rest of the bishops, to hold their bishoprics only during the King's pleasure; which gave the regents a right to displace them whensoever they pleased. Dr. *Poynet* was translated from *Rochester* to *Winchester*; Dr. *Story* was made bishop of *Rochester*; and *Veysey* resigning, *Coverdale* was made bishop of *Exeter* in his room; so that now the bench of bishops had a majority for the reformation.

It was therefore resolved in council to reform the doctrine of the church. Archbishop *Cranmer* and bishop *Ridley* were appointed to this work, who framed forty-two articles upon the chief points of the Christian faith; copies of which were sent to the other bishops and learned divines, for their

“ciples of the profession of the gospel.” Lindsey's Historical View of the State of the Unitarian Doctrine and Worship, p. 84. Ed.

\* Strype's Life of Cranmer, p. 191.



corrections and amendments ; after which the archbishop reviewed them a second time, and having given them his last hand presented them to the council, where they received the royal sanction\* This was another high act of the supremacy ; for the articles were not brought into parliament, nor agreed upon in convocation ;† as they ought to have been, and as the title seems to express : when this was afterwards objected to *Cranmer* as a fraud in the next reign, he owned the charge, but said he was ignorant of the title, and complained of it to the council, who told him, the book was so entitled, because it was published in the time of the convocation ; which was no better than a collusion. It is entitled, ‘ Articles agreed upon by the bishops ‘ and other learned men in the convocation held at *London* ‘ in the year 1552, for the avoiding diversity of opinions, ‘ and establishing consent touching true religion. Published ‘ by the King’s authority.’ These articles are for substance the same with those now in use, being reduced to the number of thirty-nine in the beginning of the reign of Queen *Elizabeth*, where the reader will meet with the corrections‡ and

\* Hist. Ref. vol. iii. p. 240.

† Bishop *Maddox* objected to this representation, and said it was confuted by archbishop *Wake*, who had examined the matter fully. Mr. *Neal* rests the vindication of his state of it on the authority of bishop *Burnet*, supported by the remark of Mr. *Collyer* ; who says, “ ’Tis pretty plain they were passed by some members of convocation only, delegated by both houses, as appears by the very title, *Articles &c. agreed upon in the synod of London*, by the bishops and certain other learned men.” Eccles. Hist. vol. ii. p. 325. *Neal’s Review*. [EDIT.]

‡ An alteration in the 28th article is not noticed by Mr. *Neal*. in the place to which he refers. The last clause of the article was laid down in these words ; “ The custom of the church for baptizing young children is both to be commended, and by all means to be retained in the church.” This clause was left out of Queen *Elizabeth’s* articles. It seems by this, however, observes *Crosby*, “ that the first reformers did not found the practice of infant baptism upon Scripture ; but took it only as a commendable custom, that had been used in the Christian church, and therefore ought to be retained.”\* But what shall we think of, rather how should we lament the bigotry and illiberality of those times, when men were harrassed and put to death for declining a religious practice, which they who enjoined it did not pretend to enforce on the authority of Scripture, but only as a custom of the churches : a plea which would have equally justified all those other religious ceremonies which they themselves, notwithstanding this sanction, rejected. EDIT.

\* Crosby’s Hist. English Baptism, vol. i. p. 54, 55.

alterations. The controverted clause of the twentieth article, that *the church has power to decree rites and ceremonies, and authority in controversies of faith*, is not in King *Edward's* articles; nor does it appear how it came into Queen *Elizabeth's*. It is evident by the title of the articles, that they were designed as articles of truth, and not of peace, as some have since imagined, who subscribed them rather as a compromise, not to teach any doctrine contrary to them, than as a declaration that they believed according to them. This was a notion the imposers never thought of, nor does there appear any reason for this conceit. So that (says bishop *Burnet*)\* those who subscribed, did either believe them to be true, or else they did grossly prevaricate.

With the book of articles was printed a short catechism,† with a preface prefixed in the King's name. It is supposed to be drawn up by bishop *Poynet*, but revised by the rest of the bishops and other learned men. It is dated *May 7th*, about seven weeks before the King's death; [and in the first impression of the articles it was printed before them.]‡

1552. The next work the reformers were employed in, was a second correction of the common prayer-book. Some things they added, and others that had been retained through the necessity of the times were struck out. The most considerable amendments were these. The daily service opened with a short confession of sins, and of absolution to such as should repent. The communion began with a rehearsal of the ten commandments, the congregation being on their knees; and a pause was made between the rehearsal of every commandment, for the people's devotions. A rubric was also added, concerning the posture of kneeling, which declares that there was no adoration intended thereby to the bread and wine, which was gross idolatry; nor did they think the very flesh and blood of Christ there present. This clause was struck out by Queen *Elizabeth*, to give a latitude to *papists* and *Lutherans*; but was inserted again at the restoration of King *Charles II.* at the request of the *Puritans*. Besides these amendments, sundry old rites and ceremonies, which had been retained in the former book,

\* Hist. Ref. vol. ii. p. 169.

† Ibid. vol. iii. p. 211, 214.

‡ Neal's Review.

were discontinued ; as the use of oil in confirmation and extreme unction ; prayer for the dead in the office of burial ; and in the communion service, auricular confession ; the use of the cross in the eucharist, and in confirmation. In short, the whole liturgy was in a manner reduced to the form in which it appears at present, excepting some small variations that have since been made for the clearing some ambiguities. By this book of common prayer, says Mr. *Strype*\* all copes and vestments were forbidden throughout *England* ; the prebendaries of *St. Paul's* left off their hoods ; and the bishops their crosses, &c. as by act of parliament is more at length set forth.

When the parliament met *Jan. 23d*, the new Common Prayer-Book was brought into the house, with an ordinal or form of ordaining bishops, priests, and deacons ; both which passed the houses without any considerable opposition. The act requires “all persons after the feast of *Allhallows* “next, to come to common prayer every Sunday and holy “day, under pain of the censures of the church. All arch- “bishops and bishops are required to endeavor the due execution of this act ; and whereas divers doubts had been “raised about the service book, it is said, the King and parliament had now caused it to be perused, explained, and “made more perfect.” The new service book was to take place in all churches after the feast of *All Saints*, under the same penalties that had been enacted to the former book three years before.†

By another act of this session the marriages of the clergy, if performed according to the service book, were declared good and valid, and their children inheritable according to law ; and by another the bishopric of *Westminster* was suppressed, and reunited to the see of *London*. Dr. *Heath*, bishop of *Worcester*, and *Day* of *Chichester*, were both deprived this year, [1553] with *Tonstal* bishop of *Durham*, whose bishopric was designed to be divided into two ; but the act never took effect.

One of the last things the King set his hand to was a royal visitation, in order to examine what plate, jewels, and

\* Life of Cranmer, p. 290. † Burnet's Hist. Ref. vol. ii. p. 190.

other furniture, were in the churches. The visitors were to leave in every church one or two chalices of silver, with linen for the communion table and for surplices, but to bring in the best of the church furniture into the King's treasury ; and to sell the linen copes, altar cloths, &c. and give the money to the poor. The pretence was, the calling in the superfluous plate that lay in churches more for pomp than use. Some have called this by no better a name than sacrilege, or church theft ; and it was really no better. But it ought to be remembered, the young King was now languishing under a consumption, and near his end.

It must however be confessed, that in the course of this, as well as the last reign, there was a very great alienation of church lands : the chauntry lands were sold among the laity, some of whom held five or six prebendaries or canonries, while the clergy themselves were in want. Bishop *Latimer* complains in one of his sermons, "That the revenues of the church were seized by the rich laity, and that the incumbent was only a proprietor in title. That many benefices were let out to farm by secular men, or given to their servants, as a consideration for keeping their hounds, hawks and horses ; and that the poor clergy were reduced to such short allowance that they were forced to go to service ; to turn clerks of the kitchen, surveyors, receivers, &c." And *Cambden* complains, "that avarice and sacrilege had strangely the ascendant at this time : that estates formerly settled for the support of religion and the poor, were ridiculed as superstitious endowments ; first miscalled and then plundered." The bishops were too easy in parting with the lands and manors belonging to their bishoprics, and the courtiers were too eager in grasping at every thing they could lay their hands upon.\* If the revenues of the church had been abused to superstition, they might have been converted to other religious uses ; or if too great a proportion of the riches of the kingdom was in the hands of the church, they should have made an ample provision for the maintenance of the clergy, and the endowment of smaller livings, before they had enriched their friends and families.

Nor were the lives of many who were zealous for the

\* Hist. Ref. vol. iii. p. 218.

reformation free from scandal: the courtiers and great men indulged themselves in a dissolute and licentious life; and the clergy were not without their blemishes. Some that embraced the reformation were far from adorning their profession, but rather disposed the people to return to their old superstitions: nevertheless there were many great and shining lights among them, who preached and prayed fervently against the corruptions of the times, and were an example to their flocks, by the strictness and severity of their lives and manners; but their numbers were small in comparison to the many that were otherwise, turning the doctrines of grace into lasciviousness.†

We have now seen the length of King *Edward's* reformation. It was an adventurous undertaking for a few bishops and privy counsellors, to change the religion of a nation only by the advantage of the supremacy of a minor, without the consent of the people in parliament or convocation, and under the eye of the presumptive heir, who was a declared enemy of all their proceedings; as was the case in the former part of this reign. We have taken notice of the mistaken principles of the reformers, in making use of the civil power to force men to conformity; and of their stretching the laws to reach at those whom they could not fairly come at any other way. But notwithstanding these and some other blemishes, they were great and good men, and valiant in the cause of truth; as appears by their sealing it with their blood. They made as quick advances perhaps in restoring religion towards its primitive simplicity, as the circumstances of the time would admit; and it is evident they designed to go further, and not make this the last standard of the reformation. Indeed Queen *Elizabeth* thought her brother had gone too far, by stripping religion of too many ornaments; and therefore when she came to the crown, she was hardly persuaded to restore it to the condition in which he left it.—King *James I.* King *Charles I.* archbishop *Laud*, and all their admirers, instead of removing further from the superstitious pomps of the church of *Rome*, have been for returning back to them, and have appealed to the settlement of Queen *Elizabeth* as the purest standard.

† Strype's *Life of Cranmer*, p. 290.

at the reformers themselves were of another mind, as appears by the sermons of *Latimer*, *Hooper*, *Bradford*, and others; by the letters of *Peter Martyr*, *Martin Bucer*, and *John a Lasco*,\* who in his book *de Ordinatione Ecclesiarum peregrinarum in Anglia*, dedicated to *Sigismund King of Poland*, 1555, says, "That King *Edward* desired that the rites and ceremonies used under popery should be purged out by degrees; that it was his pleasure that strangers should have churches to perform all things according to apostolical observation only, that by this means the *English* churches might be excited to embrace apostolical purity with the unanimous consent of the states of the kingdom." He adds, "that the King was at the head of this project, and that *Cranmer* promoted it, but that some great persons stood in the way." As a further evidence of this, a passage was left in the preface of one of their service books to this purpose;† 'that they had gone as far as they could in reforming the church, considering the times they lived in, and hoped they that came after them would, as they might, do more.' King *Edward* in his very lamentations, that he could not restore the primitive discipline according to his heart's desire, because several of the bishops, some for age, some for ignorance, some for their infirmities, and some out of love to popery, were unwilling to do so. And the church herself, in one of her public offices, confesses the want of a godly discipline to this day.

*Martin Bucer*, a German divine, and professor of divinity in *Cambridge*, a person in high esteem with the young king, drew up a plan, and presented it to his majesty, in which he writes largely of ecclesiastical discipline.§ The king having read it, set himself to write a general discourse

\* Voet. Eccl. Pol. lib. ii. cap. 6, part i. p. 421.

The following quotation, Mr. *Neal*, in answer to Bishop *Maddox*, gives is transcribed from Mr. *Pierce's* vindication, p. 11, where it is found verbatim, with his authority; and in *Bennet's* Memorial of Reformation, p. 50. Mr. *Strype* intimates, that a farther reformation was intended; (*Life of Cran.* p. 299) and Bishop *Burnet* adds, in many of the letters to foreign divines, it is asserted, that both *Cranmer* and *Ridley* intended to procure an act for abolishing the habits.

† King *Edward's* Remains, number 2.

[Ed.

§ Burnet's Hist. Ref. vol. ii. p. 156.

about reformation, but did not live to finish it. *Bucer* proposed,† that there might be a strict discipline, to exclude scandalous livers from the sacrament; that the old popish habits might be laid aside. He did not like the half office of communion, or second service, to be said at the altar when there was no sacrament. He approved not of godfathers answering in the child's name so well as in their own. He presses much the sanctification of the Lord's day; and that there might be many fastings, but was against the observation of *Lent*. He would have the pastoral function restored to what it ought to be; that bishops, throwing off all secular cares, should give themselves to their spiritual employments. He advises that coadjutors might be given to some, and a council of presbyters appointed for them all. He would have *rural bishops* set over twenty or thirty parishes, who should gather their clergy often together, and inspect them closely; and that a provincial synod should meet twice a year, when a secular man, in the King's name, should be appointed to observe their proceedings.

*Cranmer* was of the same mind. He disliked the present way of governing the church by convocations as they are now formed; in which deans, archdeacons, and cathedrals, have an interest far superior in number to those elected to represent the clergy. 'These (says Bishop *Burnet*‡) can in no sort pretend to be more than a part of our civil constitution. They have no foundation in scripture, nor any warrant from the first ages of the church; but did arise from the model set forth by *Charles* the great, and formed according to the feudal law, by which a right of giving subsidies was vested in all who were possessed of such tenures as qualified them to contribute towards the support of the state. Nor was

† *Bucer* died in 1551, and was consulted on the review of the Common Prayer, 1550. But Mr. *Neal* has introduced his sentiments in this place, because he was here giving a summary of the changes in King *Edward's* reign. And in reply to Bishop *Maddox*, who, after Bishop *Burnet*, says, that the most material things to which *Bucer* excepted, were corrected afterwards. Mr. *Neal* observes, that they who will be at the pains to read over the abstract of his book, entitled, 'Of the Kingdom of Christ,' in Collyer's Eccles. Hist. vol. ii. p. 296, &c. must be of another mind. Review. En.

‡ Hist. Ref. vol. iii. p. 214.



*Cranmer* satisfied with the liturgy, though it had been twice reformed, if we may give credit to the learned *Bullinger*,\* who told the exiles at *Frankfort*, “that the archbishop had drawn up a book of prayers an hundred times more perfect than that which was then in being; but the same could not take place, for that he was matched with such a wicked clergy and convocation, and other enemies.”†

The King was of the same sentiments; but his untimely death, which happened in the 16th year of his age, and 7th of his reign, put an end to all his noble designs for perfecting the reformation. He was indeed an incomparable Prince, of most promising expectations; and in the judgment of the most impartial persons, the very phœnix of his age. It was more than whispered that he was poisoned. But it is very surprising that a protestant divine [*Heylin*] in his history of the reformation§ should say, “That he was ill principled; that his reign was unfortunate; and that his death was not an infelicity to the church,” only because he was apprehensive he would have reduced the hierarchy to a more primitive standard. With good King *Edward* died all further advances of the reformation; for the alterations that were made afterwards by Queen *Elizabeth* hardly came up to his standard.

We may observe from the history of this reign,

1st. That in matters of faith the first reformers followed the doctrine of St. *Austin*, in the controverted points of original sin, prædestination, justification by faith alone, effectual grace, and good works.

2dly. That they were not satisfied with the present discipline of the church, though they thought they might submit to it, till it should be amended by the authority of the legislature.

3dly. That they believed but two orders of *churchmen*

\* *Strype's Life of Cranmer*, p. 266.

† The troubles at *Frankfort* in the *Phoenix*, vol. ii. p. 82, and *Pierce's Vindie.* p. 12, 13. Mr. *Pierce* remarks, that this is reported, as is plain to him who looks into the book itself, not on the testimony of *Bullinger*, as *Strype* represents it; but by one of Dr. *Cox's* party on his own knowledge. Review. ED.

§ *Pref.* p. 4, *Part vii.* p. 141.

in holy scripture, viz. bishops and deacons; and consequently, that bishops and priests were but different ranks or degrees of the same order.

4thly. That they gave the right-hand of fellowship to foreign churches, and ministers that had not been ordained by bishops; there being no dispute about re-ordination in order to any church preferment, till the latter end of Queen *Elizabeth's* reign.

In all which points most of our modern churchmen have departed from them.

[To Mr. NEAL's remarks on the reign of Edward VI. it may be added, That the reformation was all along conducted in a manner inconsistent with the principles on which it was founded. The principles, on which the justification of it rested, were the right of private judgment and the sufficiency of the scriptures as a rule of faith. Yet the reformation was limited to the conceptions and ideas of those who were in power. No liberty was granted to the consciences of dissidents: no discussion of points, on which they themselves had not doubts, was permitted: such as held sentiments different from their model, and pursued their enquires further, without consideration of their numbers or their characters, so far from being allowed to propose their opinions or to hold separate assemblies for religious worship agreeably to their own views of things, were stigmatised as heretics, and pursued unto death. Besides the instances Mr. *Neal* mentions, the anabaptists were excepted out of the King's general pardon, that came out in 1550§: they were also burnt in divers towns in the kingdom; and met death with singular intrepidity and chearfulness.\* Thus enquiry was stifled: and the reformation was really not the result of a comprehensive view and calm investigation of all the doctrines and practices which had been long established, but the triumph of power in discarding a few articles and practices which more particularly struck the minds of those who were in government. These persons gained, and have exclusively possessed, the honorable title of *The Reformers*;

§ Burnet's Hist. Ref. vol. ii. p. 143.

\* Crosby's History of the English Baptists, vol. i. p. 62.

without any respect to, nay with a contemptuous disregard of, those who saw further, and, in point of numbers, carried weight. Bishop *Latimer*, in a sermon before the King, reported, on the authority of a credible person, that there were, in one town, 500 anabaptists.\* The reformers, in thus proscribing enquiry and reformation beyond their own standard, were not consistent with themselves. For they acknowledged that corruptions had been a thousand years introducing, which could not be all discovered and thrown out at once.† By this concession, they justified the principle, while they punished the conduct of those, who, acting upon it, endeavored to discover, and wished to reject more corruptions.] ED.

\* Crosby's Hist. vol. i. p. 68. † Burnet's Hist. Ref. vol. ii. p. 190.

---

### CHAP. III.

#### THE REIGN OF QUEEN MARY.

**IT** will appear in the course of this reign, that an absolute supremacy over the consciences of men, lodged with a single person, may as well be prejudicial as servicable to true religion : for if King *Henry VIII.* and his son King *Edward VI.* reformed some abuses by their *supremacy*, against the inclinations of the majority of the people, we shall find Queen *Mary* making use of the same power to turn things back into their old channel, till she had restored the grossest and most idolatrous part of popery. This was begun by proclamations and orders of council, till her Majesty could procure a parliament that would repeal King *Edward's* laws for religion, which she quickly found means to accomplish. It is strange indeed, that when there was but seven or eight peers that opposed the laws made in favour of the reformation under King *Edward*, the same house of lords should almost all turn papists in the reign of Queen *Mary* ; but as to the Commons, it is less wonderful, because they are changeable, and the court took care to new model the magistrates in the cities and corporations before the elections

came on, so that not one almost was left that was not a Roman Catholic. Bribery and menaces were made use of in all places ; and where they could not carry elections by reason of the superiority of the *reformed*, the sheriffs made double returns.\* It is sad when the religion of a nation is under such a direction ! But so it will be when the management of religion falls into the hands of a bigoted prince and ministry.

Queen *Mary* was a sad example of the truth of this observation, whose reign was no better than one continued scene of calamity. It is the genuine picture of popery, and should be remembered by all true protestants with abhorrence ; the principles of that religion being such as no man can receive, till he has abjured his senses, renounced his understanding and reason, and put off all the tender compassions of human nature.

King *Edward VI.* being far gone in a consumption, from a concern for preserving the reformation, was persuaded to set aside the succession of his sisters *Mary* and *Elizabeth* and of the Queen of *Scots*, the first and last being papists, and *Elizabeth's* blood being tainted by act of parliament ; and to settle the crown by will upon Lady *Jane Grey*, eldest daughter of the duke of *Suffolk*, a lady of extraordinary qualities, zealous for the reformation, and next in blood after the princesses abovementioned. One may guess the sad apprehensions the council were under for the protestant religion, when they put the King, who was a minor, and not capable of making a will, upon this expedient, and set their hands to the validity of it. The King being dead, Queen *Jane* was proclaimed with the usual solemnities, and an army raised to support her title ; but the princess *Mary*, then at *Norfolk*, being informed of her brother's death, sent a letter to the council, in which she claims the crown, and charges them upon their allegiance to proclaim her in the city of *London* and elsewhere. The council in return insisted upon her laying aside her claim, and submitting as a good subject to her new sovereign. But *Mary*, by the encouragement of her friends in the North, resolved to maintain her right ; and to make her way more easy, she promised the *Suffolk* men to

\* Burnet's Hist. Ref. vol. ii. p. 252.

*make no alteration in religion.* This gained her an army, with which she marched towards *London* ; but before she came thither, both the council and the citizens of *London* declared for her : And on the third of *August* she made her public entry without the loss of a drop of blood, four weeks after the death of her brother.

Upon Queen *Mary's* entrance into the *Tower* she released *Bonner*, *Gardiner*, and others whom she called her prisoners. *August* 12, her majesty declared in council, “ That though her conscience was settled in matters of religion, yet she was resolved not to compel others, but by the preaching of the word. This was different from her promise to the *Suffolk* men : she assured them that religion should be left upon the same foot she found it at the death of King *Edward*, but now she insinuates, that the old religion is to be restored, but without compulsion. Next day there was a tumult at *St. Paul's*, occasioned by *Dr. Bourne*, one of the canons of that church, preaching against the late reformation : he spoke in commendation of *Bonner*, and was going on with severe reflections upon the late King *Edward*, when the whole audience was in an uproar ; some called to pull down the preacher, others throwing stones, and one a dagger, which stuck in the timber of the pulpit. *Mr. Rogers* and *Bradford*, two popular preachers for the reformation, hazarded their lives to save the doctor, and conveyed him in safety to a neighboring house ; for which act of charity they were soon after imprisoned, and then burnt for heresy.

To prevent the like tumults for the future the Queen published an inhibition, *Aug.* 18th, forbidding all preaching without special licence ; declaring further, that she would not compel her subjects to be of her religion, till public order should be taken in it by common assent. Here was another intimation of an approaching storm : ‘ the subjects were not to be compelled till public order should be taken for it.’ And to prevent further tumults a proclamation was published, for masters of families to oblige their apprentices and servants to frequent their own parish churches on Sundays and holidays, and to keep them at home at other times.

The shutting up all the protestant pulpits at once awak-

ened the *Suffolk* men, who, presuming upon their merits and the Queen's promise, sent a deputation to court to represent their grievances ; but the Queen checked them for their insolence : And one of their number, happening to mention her promise, was put in the pillory three days together, and had his ears cut off for defamation. On the 22d of *Aug.* *Bonner* of *London*, *Gardiner* of *Winchester*, *Tonstal* of *Durham*, *Heath* of *Worcester*, and *Day* of *Chichester*, were restored to their bishoprics. Some of the reformers, continuing to preach after the inhibition were sent for into custody, among whom were *Hooper* bishop of *Gloucester*, *Coverdale* of *Exeter*, *Dr. Taylor* of *Hadley*, *Rogers* the proto-martyr, and several others. *Hooper* was committed to the Fleet, Sept. 1, no regard being had to his active zeal in asserting the Queen's right in his sermon against the title of the *Lady Jane* ; but so sincerely did this good man follow the light of his conscience, when he could not but see what sad consequences it was like to have. *Coverdale* of *Exeter*, being a foreigner, was ordered to keep his house till further order. *Burnet*\* says he was a *Dane*, and had afterwards leave to retire. But according to *Fuller*† he was born in *Yorkshire*. Archbishop *Cranmer* was so silent at *Lambeth*, that it was thought he would have returned to the old religion ; but he was preparing a protestation against it, which taking air, he was examined, and confessing the fact, he was sent to the *Tower*, with bishop *Latimer*, about the 13th of September. The beginning of next month *Holgate* archbishop of *York* was committed to the *Tower*, and *Horn* dean of *Durham* was summoned before the council, but he fled beyond sea.

The storm gathering so thick upon the reformers, above eight hundred of them retired into foreign parts ; among whom were five bishops, viz. *Poynet* of *Winchester*, who died in exile ; *Barlow* of *Bath* and *Wells*, who was superintendant of the congregation at *Embsen* ; *Scory* of *Chichester* ; *Coverdale* of *Exon* ; and *Bale* of *Ossory* ; five deans, viz. *Dr. Cox*, *Haddon*, *Horn*, *Turner* and *Sampson* ; four archdeacons, and above fifty doctors of divinity and eminent preachers, among whom were *Grindal*, *Jewel*, *Sandys*, *Reynolds*,

\* *Burnet's Hist. Ref.* vol. iii. p. 221. 239.

† *Fuller's Worthies*, b. iii. p. 198.

gton, Whitehead, Lever, Nowel, Knox, Rough, Witten, Fox, Parkhurst, and others, famous in the reign of *Elizabeth*: besides of noblemen, merchants, trades-tificers, and phebeians, many hundreds. Some fled into exile, or went over as the servants of foreign protestants, who having come hither for shelter in King *Edward's* reign were now required to leave the kingdom;\* among these were *Peter Martyr*, and *John a Lasco* with his congregation of *Germans*. But to prevent too many of the *English* embarking with them, an order of council was sent to the ports, that none should be suffered to leave the kingdom without proper passports. The Roman catholic party, with their abundant zeal for their religion, out-run the king and celebrated mass in divers churches before it was prohibited by authority;† while the people that favored the reformation continued their public devotion with great seriousness and fervency, as foreseeing what was coming upon them; but the rude multitude came into the churches, insulted their ministers, and ridiculed their worship. The king not only winked at these things, but fined Judge *Hales* because he refused to sign the act which transferred the crown to *Jane Grey* a thousand pound sterling, because in default he ordered the justices of *Kent* to conform themselves to the laws of King *Edward*, not yet repealed; upon which that gentleman grew melancholy and drowned himself. Queen *Mary* was crowned Oct. 1, 1553, by *Gardiner* assisted by ten other bishops, all in their mitres, copes and surplices; and a parliament was summoned to meet the 10th. The methods were used in the elections has been related. On the 31st of Oct. a bill was sent down to the commons repealing King *Edward's* laws about religion, which was debated six days, and at length carried. It repeals in full all the late statutes relating to religion, and enacts, "after the 20th of December next, there should be no form of divine service but what had been used in the year of King *Henry VIII.*" Severe punishments were decreed against such as should interrupt the public service; as should abuse the holy sacrament, or break down

*Life of Cran.* p. 314.    † *Burnet's Hist. Ref.* vol. iii. p. 223.



altars, crucifixes, or crosses. It was made felony for any number of persons above twelve, to assemble together with an intention to alter the religion established by law. Nov. 3d, archbishop *Cranmer*, the Lord *Guilford*, Lady *Jane*, and two other sons of the duke of *Northumberland*, were brought to their trials for high treason, in levying war against the Queen, and conspiring to set up another in her room. They all confessed their indictments, but *Cranmer* appealed to his judges, how unwillingly he had set his hand to the exclusion of the Queen: These judgments were confirmed by parliament, after which the Queen's intended marriage with *Philip* of *Spain* being discovered, the commons sent their speaker, and twenty of their members, humbly to intreat her majesty not to marry a stranger; with which she was so displeased, that upon the 6th December she dissolved the parliament.

The convocation that sat with the parliament was equally devoted to the court. Care had been taken about their elections. In the collection of public acts there are found about 150 presentations to livings before the choice of representatives; so that the lower house of convocation was of a piece with the upper, from whence almost all the protestant bishops were excluded by imprisonment, deprivation, or otherwise. *Bonner* presided as the first bishop of the province of *Canterbury*. *Harpsfield* his chaplain preached the sermon on *Acts* xx. 28, *Feed the flock*; and *Weston* dean of *Westminster* was chosen prolocutor. On the 20th October it was proposed to the members to subscribe to the doctrine of transubstantiation; which all complied with but the following six divines, who by their places had a right to sit in convocation; *Philpot* archdeacon of *Winchester*; *Philips* dean of *Rochester*; *Haddon* dean of *Exeter*; *Cheyney* archdeacon of *Hereford*; *Aylmer* archdeacon of *Stow*; and *Young* chaunter of *St. David's*: These disputed upon the argument for three days, but the disputation was managed according to the fashion of the times, with reproaches and menaces on the stronger side; and the prolocutor ended it with saying, '*You have the Word, but we have the sword,*'\*

\* Burnet's Hist. Ref. vol. ii. p. 267.

Bishop *Warburton*, in his notes on Mr. *Neal's* History (see a supple-

This year[1554] began with *Wyat's* rebellion, occasioned by a general dislike of the Queen's marriage with *Philip of Spain*: It was a raw, unadvised attempt, and occasioned greater mischiefs to the protestants, though religion had no share in the conspiracy, *Wyat* himself being a papist: this gentleman got together 4000 men, with whom he marched directly to *London*; but coming into *Southwark*, Feb. 2, he found the bridge so well fortified that he could not force it without cannon; so he marched about, and having crossed the *Thames* at *Kingston*, he came by *Charing-cross* to *Ludgate* next morning, in hopes the citizens would have opened their gates; but being disappointed, he yielded himself a prisoner at *Temple-Bar*, and was afterwards executed; as were the Lady *Jane Grey*, Lord *Guilford* her husband, and others; the Lady *Elizabeth* herself hardly escaping. *Wyat* upon his trial accused her, in hopes of saving his life; upon which she was ordered into custody: but when *Wyat* saw he must die, he acquitted her on the scaffold; and upon the Queen's marriage this summer she obtained her pardon.

As soon as the nation was a little settled, her majesty, by virtue of the supremacy, gave instructions to her bishops to visit the clergy. The injunctions were drawn up by *Gardiner*, and contain an angry recital of all the innovations introduced into the church in the reign of King *Edward*;

mental volume of his works, 8vo. 1788, p. 455) with great anger impeaches the truth of this passage. "This is to lye (says his Lordship) under the cover of truth. Can any body in his senses believe that when the only contention between the two parties was, who had the word; that the more powerful would yield it up to their adversaries. Without all doubt, some protestant member, in the heat of dispute, said, we have the word; upon which the prolocutor insultingly answers—but we have the sword; without thinking any one would be so foolish as to join the two propositions into one, and then give it to the prolocutor." In reply to these unhandsome reflections, it is sufficient to say, that Mr. Neal spoke on the authority of Bishop *Burnet*, whom he truly quotes: and whom it would have been more consistent with candor and the love of truth for Bishop *Warburton* to have consulted the authority, before he insinuated his conjectures against the statement of a fact, and without authority painted his charge of folly and falsehood: of which Mr. Neal, by quoting his author, stands perfectly clear; and which if well founded must fall, not on him but Bishop *Burnet*—whose remarks on the prolocutor's speech is, that "by it he truly pointed out wherein the strength of both causes lay." Ep.

and a charge to the bishops, “ To execute all the ecclesiastical laws that had been in force in King *Henry* the VIIIth’s reign ; but not to proceed in their courts in the Queen’s name. She enjoins them not to exact the oath of *supremacy* any more, but to punish heretics and heresies, and to remove all married clergymen from their wives ; but for those that would renounce their wives they might put them into some other cures. All the ceremonies, holidays and fasts, used in King *Henry*’s time were to be revived. Those clergymen who had been ordained by the late service-book were to be re-ordained, or have the defects of their ordination supplied; that is, the anointing, the giving the priestly vestments, with other rights of the *Roman* pontifical. And lastly, it was declared, that all people should be compelled to come to church.”\*—The archbishop of *York*, the bishops of *St. David’s*, *Ches-ter*, and *Bristol*, were deprived for being married ; and the bishops of *Lincoln*, *Glocester*, and *Hereford*, were deprived by the *royal pleasure*, as holding their bishoprics by such a patent. It was very arbitrary to turn out the married bishops, while there was a law subsisting to legitimate their marriages ; and to deprive the other bishops without any manner of process, merely for the royal pleasure. This was acting up to the height of the supremacy, which though the Queen believed to be an unlawful power, yet she claimed and used it for the service of the Romish church. The vacant bishoprics were filled up the latter end of March, with men after the Queen’s heart, to the number of sixteen, in the room of so many deprived or dead.

The new bishops in their visitation, and particularly bishop *Bonner*, executed the Queen’s injunctions with rigor. The mass was set up in all places, and the old popish rites and ceremonies revived. The carvers and makers of statues had a quick trade for *roods*, and other images, that were to be set up again in churches. The most eminent preachers in *London* were under confinement ; and all the married clergy throughout the kingdom were deprived. Dr. *Parker* reckons, that of sixteen thousand clergymen twelve

\* Burnet’s History of the Reformation, vol. ii. p. 291 & 274. Collection of Records, num. 15.

thousand were turned out ; which is not probable, for if we compute by the diocese of *Norwich*, which is almost an eighth part of *England*, and in which there were but 333 deprived, the whole number will fall short of 3000.\* Some were turned out without conviction, upon common fame : Some were never cited, and yet turned out for not appearing. Those that quitted their wives, and did penance, were nevertheless deprived ; which was grounded on the vow that (as was pretended) they had made. Such was the deplorable condition of the reformed this summer, and such the cruelty of their adversaries.

The Queen's second parliament met April 2d. The court had taken care of the elections by large promises of money from *Spain*. Their design was to persuade the parliament to approve of the *Spanish* match ;§ which they accomplished, with this proviso, *That the Queen alone should have the Government of the kingdom* ; after which the houses were presently dissolved. King *Philip*, arrived in *England*,† July 20th, and was married to the Queen on the 27th, at *Winchester*, he being then in the 27th year of his age, and the Queen in her 38th. He brought with him a vast mass of wealth ; 27 chests of bullion, every chest being above a yard long ; and ninety-nine horse-loads, and two cart-loads of coined silver and gold.

The reformers complaining of their usage in the late dispute held in convocation, the court resolved to give them a

\* Burnet's Hist. Ref. vol. iii. p. 226.

§ " This," observes Dr. *Warner*, " is the first instance to be met with in the *English* history of corrupting parliaments : but the precedent has been so well followed ever since, that if ever this nation should lose its liberties and be enslaved and ruined, it will be by means of parliament corrupted with bribes and places." *Ecclesiastical Hist.* v. ii. p. 341.

† The view of *Philip*, in this match, was undoubtedly to make himself master of the kingdom. When afterwards *Mary* was supposed to be pregnant, he applied to parliament to be appointed regent during the minority of the child, and offered security to resign the government on its coming of age. The motion was warmly debated in the House of Peers, and nearly carried ; when the Lord *Paget* stood up and said ; " Pray who shall sue the King's bond ?" This laconic speech had its intended effect, and the debate was soon concluded in the negative. *Granger's Biogr. History of England*, vol. i. p. 161, note, 8vo. edition.

fresh mortification, by appointing another at *Oxford* in presence of the whole University; and because archbishop *Cranmer*, bishops *Ridley* and *Latimer*, were the most celebrated divines of the reformation, they were by warrant from the Queen removed from the *Tower* to *Oxford*, to manage the dispute. The convocation sent their prolocutor and several of their members, who arriving on the 13th of April, being *Friday*, sent for the bishops on *Saturday*, and appointed them *Monday*, *Tuesday* and *Wednesday*, every one his day, to defend their doctrine. The questions were upon *transubstantiation*, and the *propitiatory sacrifice of the mass*. The particulars of the dispute are in Mr. *Fox's* book of martyrs. The bishops behaved with great modesty and presence of mind; but their adversaries insulted and triumphed in the most barbarous manner. Bishop *Ridley* writes, "That there were perpetual shoutings, tauntings, reproaches, noise and confusion." *Cranmer* and old *Latimer* were hiss'd and laugh'd at;\* and *Ridley* was borne down with noise and clamor; "In all my life (says he) I never saw any thing carried more vainly and tumultuously; I could not have thought that there could have been found any *English* man honored with degrees in learning, that could allow of such thrasonical ostentations, more fit for the stage than the schools." On the 28th of April they were summoned again to St. *Mary's* and required by *Weston* the prolocutor to subscribe, as having been vanquished in disputation; but they all refusing, were declared obstinate heretics, and no longer members of the catholic church.

It was designed to expose the reformers by another disputation at *Cambridge*; but the prisoners in *London* hearing of it published a paper, declaring "That they would not dispute but in writing, except it were before the Queen and council, or before either house of parliament, because of the misreports and unfair usage they had every where met with." At the same time they printed a summary of their faith, for which they were ready to offer up their lives to the halter or the fire, as God should appoint.†

\* *Strype's Life of Cranmer*, p. 338. † *Hist. Ref.* vol. ii. p. 285.

And here they declared, “That they believed the scriptures to be the true word of God, and the judge of all controversies in matters of religion; and that the Church is to be obeyed as long as she followed this word.

“That they adhered to the Apostles’ creed; and those creeds set out by the councils of *Nice*, *Constantinople*, *Ephesus* and *Calcedon*; and by the first and fourth councils of *Toledo*; and the symbols of *Athanasius*, *Irenæus*, *Tertullian*, and *Damasus*.

“They believed justification by faith alone; which faith was not only an opinion, but a certain persuasion wrought by the Holy Ghost, which did illuminate the mind, and supple the heart to submit itself unfeignedly to God.

“They acknowledged the necessity of an inherent righteousness; but that justification and pardon of sins came only by Christ’s righteousness imputed to them.

“They affirmed, that the worship of God ought to be performed in a tongue understood by the people.

“That Christ only, and not the saints, were to be prayed to.

“That immediately after death departed souls pass either into the state of the blessed, or of the damned, without any purgatory between.

“That Baptism and the Lord’s Supper are the Sacraments of Christ, which ought to be administered according to his institutions; and therefore they condemned the denying the cup to the people, transubstantiation, the adoration or sacrifice of the mass: and asserted the lawfulness of marriage to all ranks and orders of men.”

These truths they declare themselves ready to defend, as before; and in conclusion they charged all people to enter into no rebellion against the Queen, but to obey her in all points, except where her commands are contrary to the law of God. This put an end to all farther triumphs of the popish party for the present, and was a noble testimony to the chief and distinguishing doctrines of the protestant faith. But since the reformers were not to be run down by noise and clamor, therefore their steadfastness must undergo the fiery trial.

The Queen's third parliament met Nov. 11, 1554. In the writs of summons the *title of supreme head of the church* was omitted, though it was still by law vested in the crown. The money brought from *Spain* had procured a house of commons devoted to the court. The first bill passed in the house was the repeal of cardinal *Pole's* attainder. It had the royal assent Nov. 22d, and the Cardinal himself arrived in *England* two days after in quality of the pope's legate; with a commission to receive the kingdom of *England* into the bosom of the catholic church under the pope as their supreme pastor. On the 27th he made a speech in parliament, inviting them to a reconciliation with the apostolic see: Two days after a committee of lords and commons was appointed to draw up a supplication to the King and Queen, to intercede with the legate for a reconciliation; with a promise to repeal all acts made against the pope's authority. This being presented by both houses on their knees to the King and Queen, they made intercession with the cardinal, who thereupon made a long speech in the house, at the close of which he enjoined them for penance to repeal the laws above-mentioned, and so in the pope's name he granted them a full absolution, which they received on their knees; and then absolved the realm from all censures.

The act of repeal was not ready till the beginning of Jan. when it passed both houses, and received the royal assent. It enumerates and reverses all acts since the 20th of *Henry VIII.* against the holy see; but then it contains the following restrictions, which they pray, through the cardinal's intercession, may be established by the pope's authority:

1. "That all bishoprics, cathedrals or colleges, now established, may be confirmed for ever.
2. That marriages within such degrees as are not contrary to the law of God, may be confirmed, and their issue legitimated.
3. That institutions into benefices may be confirmed.
4. That all judicial processes may be confirmed.
5. That all the settlements of the lands of any bishoprics, monasteries, or other religious houses, may continue as they were, without any trouble from the ecclesiastical courts."

The cardinal admitted of these requests, but ended with a heavy denunciation of the judgments of God upon those



who had the goods of the church in their hands, and did not restore them. And to make the clergy more easy, the statutes of Mortmain were repealed for twenty years to come. But after all the pope refused to confirm the restrictions, alledging, that the legate had exceeded his powers ; so that the possessors of church lands had but a precarious title to their estates under this reign ; for even before the reconciliation was fully concluded, the pope published a bull, by which he excommunicates all those persons who were in possession of the goods of the church or monasteries, and did not restore them.\* This alarmed the superstitious Queen, who apprehending herself near her time of childbirth, sent for her ministers of state, and surrendered up all the lands of the church that remained in the crown, to be disposed of as the pope or his legate should think fit. But when a proposal of this kind was made to the commons in parliament, some of them boldly laid their hands upon their swords, and said, *They well knew how to defend their own properties.* But the Queen went on with acts of devotion to the church ; she repaired several old monasteries, and erected new ones ; she ordered a strict enquiry to be made after those who had pillaged the churches and monasteries, and had been employed in the visitations of *Henry VIII.* and *Edward VI.* She commanded bishop *Bonner* to raze out of the public records all that had been done against the monks ; and particularly the accounts of the visitations of monasteries ; which has rendered the ecclesiastical history of this time defective.

The next act brought into the house, was for reviving the statutes of *Richard II.* and *Henry IV.* and *V.* for burning heretics ; which passed both houses in six days, to the unspeakable joy of the popish clergy. The houses having been informed of some heretical preachers, who had prayed in their conventicles, that God would turn the Queen's heart from idolatry to the true faith, or else shorten her days ; they passed an act, "That all that prayed after this manner should be adjudged traitors." After which on the 16th January 1555, the parliament was dissolved.

\* Burnet's Hist. Ref. vol. ii. p. 309.

The kingdom being now reconciled to the church of *Rome*, and the penal laws against heretics revived, a council was held about the manner of dealing with the *reformed*. It is said, that cardinal *Pole* was for the gentler methods of instruction and persuasion, which is somewhat doubtful;\* but *Gardiner* was certainly for rigor, in imagining that a few examples of severity upon the heads of the party, would terrify the rest into a compliance. The Queen was of his mind, and commanded *Gardiner*, by a commission to himself and some other bishops, to make the experiment. He began with Mr. *Rogers*, Mr. *Cardmaker*, and bishop *Hooper*, who had been kept in prison 18 months without law. These upon examination were asked, whether they would abjure their heretical opinions about the sacrament, and submit to

\* *Strype's Memoirs of Cranmer*, p. 347, and *Life of Whitgift*, p. 6. Mr. *Strype's* words in the former place are as follows: "In these instructions (given to the clergy) there are several strictures that make it appear *Pole* was not so gentle towards the heretics as was reported, but rather the contrary, and that he went hand in hand with the bloody bishops of these days; for it is plain, that he put the bishops upon proceeding with them (the protestants) according to the sanguinary laws lately revived, and put in full force and virtue. What an invention was that of his, a kind of inquisition by him set up, wherein the names of all such were to be written, that in every place and parish in England were reconciled; and so whosoever were not found in those books, might be known to be no friends to the pope; and so to be proceeded against. And indeed after *Pole's* crafty and zealous management of this reconciliation (with Rome,) all that good opinion that men had before of him vanished, and they found themselves much mistaken in him, inasmuch that people spoke of him as bad as of the pope himself, or the worst of his cardinals.—Indeed he had frequent conferences with the protestants about *justification by faith alone*, &c. and would often wish the true doctrine might prevail; but now the mask was taken off, and he shewed himself what he was."

In the place answering to the latter reference, *Strype* says, "He wholly italianized, and returned into England endued with a nature foreign and fierce, and was the VERY BUTCHER and SCOURGE OF THE ENGLISH CHURCH."

Author's Review, p. 896.

Dr. *Warner*, whose character of cardinal *Pole* is a panegyric, yet says, "That he was very inconsistent in one particular; which was, that at the same time he was exclaiming against the persecution of the reformed, and would not himself take any part in that slaughter, he was giving commissions to others to proceed in it, and returned a certificate into the court of chancery, of several who had been convicted of heresy before the commissaries of his appointing." *Eccles. Hist.* v. ii. p. 402. Ed.

the church as then established? which they refusing, were declared obstinate heretics, and delivered over to the secular power. Mr. *Rogers* was burnt in *Smithfield*, Feb. 4, a pardon being offered him at the stake, which he refused, though he had a wife and ten small children unprovided for. Bishop *Hooper* was burnt at *Glocester*, Feb. 9. He was not suffered to speak to the people; and was used so barbarously in the fire, that his legs and thighs were roasted, and one of his hands dropt off, before he expired: his last words were, *Lord Jesus, receive my spirit*. While he was in prison he wrote several excellent letters, full of devotion and piety, to the foreign divines.\* In one to *Bullinger*, dated Dec. 11, 1554, about two months before his martyrdom, are these expressions,—“With us the wound which Antichrist had received is healed, and he is declared head of the church, who is not a member of it. We are still in the utmost peril, as we have been for a year and half. We are kept asunder in prison, and treated with all kinds of inhumanity and scorn. They threaten us every day with death, which we do not value. We resolutely despise fire and sword for the cause of Christ. We know in whom we have believed, and are sure we have committed our souls to him by well-doing. In the mean time, help us with your prayers, that he that has begun the good work in us would perform it to the end. We are the Lord’s, let him do with us as seemeth good in his sight.”

About the same time Mr. *Saunders*, another minister, was burnt at *Coventry*. When he came to the stake, he said, *Welcome the cross of Christ; welcome everlasting life*. Dr. *Taylor*, parson of *Hadley*, suffered next: *Gardiner* used him very roughly, and after condemning and degrading him sent him to his own parsonage to be burnt; which he underwent with great courage Feb. 9, though he had barbarous usage in the fire, his brains being beat out with one of the halberts.

*Gardiner* seeing himself disappointed, meddled no further, but committed the prosecution of the bloody work to *Bonner* bishop of *London*. This clergyman behaved more

\* Hist. Ref. vol. iii. in Records, numb. 38.

like a cannibal than a christian; he condemned without mercy all that came before him; ordering them to be kept in the most cruel durance till they were delivered over to the civil magistrate. He tore off the beard of *Tomkins* a weaver in *Shoreditch*, and held his hand in the flame of a candle till the sinews and veins shrunk and burst, and the blood spurted out in *Harpesfield's* face, who was standing by. He put others in dungeons, and in the stocks, and fed them with bread and water; and when they were brought before him insulted over their misery in a most brutish manner.

In the month of March were burnt, bishop *Ferrars*, at *St. David's*; Mr. *Lawrence* a priest, at *Colchester*; Mr. *Tomkins* a weaver, in *Smithfield*; Mr. *Hunter* an apprentice of 19 years of age, at *Brentwood*; Mr. *Causton* and Mr. *Higden*, gentlemen of good estates, in *Essex*; Mr. *William Pigot*, at *Braintree*; Mr. *Stephen Knight*, at *Malden*; Mr. *Rawlins White*, a poor fisherman, at *Cardiffe*. In the next month, Mr. *March* a priest, at *Chester*; and one *Flower*, a young man in *St. Margaret's* church-yard, *Westminster*.

These burnings were disliked by the nation, which began to be astonished at the courage and constancy of the martyrs; and to be startled at the unrelenting severity of the bishops, who, being reproached with their cruelties, threw the odium upon the King and Queen. At the same time a petition was printed by the exiles beyond sea, and addressed to the Queen, putting her in mind, "That the  
"Turks tolerated Christians, and Christians in the most  
"places tolerated Jews. That no papist had been put to  
"death for religion in King *Edward's* time. And then  
"they beseech the nobility and common people, to inter-  
"cede with her majesty, to put a stop to this issue of blood,  
"and at least to grant her subjects the same liberty she  
"allowed strangers, of transporting themselves into for-  
"eign parts." But it had no effect.—King *Philip*, being informed of the artifices of the bishops, caused his confessor *Alphonsus* to preach against these severities, which he did in the face of the whole court; *Bonner* himself pretended to be sick of them; but after some little recess he went on. And though *Philip* pretended to be for milder measures, yet on the 24th of May he and the Queen sign-

ed a letter to *Bonner*, to quicken him to his pastoral duty;\* whereupon he redoubled his fury, and in the month of June condemned nine protestants at once to the stake in *Essex*; and the council wrote to the sheriffs, to gather the gentry together to countenance the burnings with their presence.

In the month of July Mr. *John Bradford*, late prebendary of *St. Paul's*, and a most celebrated preacher in King *Edward's* days, suffered martyrdom. He was a most pious christian, and is said to have done as much service to the reformation by his letters from prison, as by his preaching in the pulpit. Endeavors were used to turn him, but to no purpose. He was brought to the stake with one *John Lease*, an apprentice of 19 years old; he kissed the stake and the faggots; but being forbid to speak to the people, he only prayed with his fellow-sufferer, and quietly submitted to the fire. His last words were, *Strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, that leadeth unto eternal life, and few there be that find it.* From *Smithfield* the persecution spread all over the country; in the months of June and July eight men and one woman were burnt in several parts of *Kent*; and in the months of August and September, twenty-five more in *Suffolk*, *Essex*, and *Surry*.

But the greatest sacrifice to popish cruelty was yet to come; For on the 16th of October the Bishops *Ridley* and *Latimer* were burnt at one stake in *Oxford*. *Latimer* died presently; but *Ridley* was a long time in exquisite torments, his lower parts being burnt before the fire reached his body. His last words to his fellow-sufferer were, *Be of good heart, brother, for God will either assuage the fury of the flame, or enable us to abide it.* *Latimer* replied, *Be of good comfort, for we shall this daylight such a candle in England, as I trust by God's grace shall never be put out.* The very same day *Gardiner*, their great persecutor, was struck with the illness of which he died; it was a suppression of urine, which held him in great agonies till the 12th of November, when he expired. He would not sit down to dinner till he had received the news from *Oxford* of the burning of the two bishops, which was not till four of the clock in the afternoon; and

\* Rapin, p. 184, 188.

while he was at dinner he was seized with the distemper that put an end to his life.\* When Bishop *Day* spoke to him of justification through the blood of Christ, he said, *If you open that gap to the people, then farewell all again.* He confessed he had sinned with *Peter*, but had not repented with him.

On the 18th of December Mr. Archdeacon *Philpott* was burnt, and behaved at the stake with the courage and resolution of the primitive martyrs.

On the 21st of March following Archbishop *Cranmer* suffered. He had been degraded by the Bishops *Thirlby* and *Bonner* on Feb. 14th. *Bonner* insulted him in an indecent manner, but *Thirlby* melted into tears. After this, by much persuasion, and in hopes of life, he set his hand to a paper, in which he renounced the errors of *Luther* and *Zuinglius*, and acknowledged his belief of the corporal presence, the pope's supremacy, purgatory, and invocation

\* This is said on the authority of *Fox*, after whom most historians repeat it. Dr. *Warner*, however, gives no credit to the story. He observes, "That the bishops were burnt on the 16th of Oct. on the 21st the parliament was opened by a speech from the Lord Chancellor, and on the 23d he appeared again in the house of lords: and had he been seized with a retention of urine on the 16th, he would scarcely have been able to come abroad on those days, neither would he probably have held out till the 12th of Nov. following, which was the day he died. And Bishop *Godwin*, who takes no notice of this report, says he died of a dropsy."

Warner's Ecclesiastical History, v. ii. p. 382. Ed.

† It is not pleasing to dwell on the failings of good men, especially of those to whose zeal and integrity the cause of religion and truth is, in a great degree, indebted: yet the impartiality of an Historian, and the instruction and warning of future times, require some notice of them. Mr. *Neal*, in this view, would not have done amiss, had he informed his readers, that this eminent protestant divine and martyr incurred the blame of his friends, and discovered a very illiberal, and intolerant spirit, by an highly insulting and passionate behavior towards some of his fellow-prisoners, who denied the doctrine of the Trinity and of the Deity of Christ. It gave, even in those times, so much offence, that he judged it proper to attempt a vindication of himself in a little tract, entitled, "An apology of JOHN PHILPOT, written for spitting upon an Arian; with an invective against the Arians, the very natural children of Antichrist: with an admonition to all that be faithful in Christ, to beware of them, and of other late sprung heresies, as of the most enemies of the Gospel." The title of this piece plainly indicates, that no calm investigation of the truth, or candid retracting of intemperate language and spirit, is to be expected in it. Mr. *Lindsey* has given it at length, in his "History of Unitarian Worship," with pertinent, judicious and valuable remarks. To which with pleasure we refer the reader, p. 84 to 194. Ed.



of saints, &c. This was quickly published to the world with great triumph among the papists, and grief to the reformers. But the unmerciful Queen was still resolved to have his life, and accordingly sent down a writ for his execution: She could never forgive the share he had in her mother's divorce, and in driving the pope's authority out of *England*. *Cranmer*, suspecting the design, prepared a true confession of his faith, and carried it in his bosom to St. *Mary's* church on the day of his martyrdom, where he was raised on an eminence, that he might be seen by the people, and hear his own funeral-sermon. Never was a more awful and melancholy spectacle; an archbishop, once the second man in the kingdom, now clothed in rags, and a gazing-stock to the world! *Cole* the preacher magnified his conversion as the immediate hand of God, and assured him of a great many masses to be said for his soul. After sermon he desired *Cranmer* to declare his own faith, which he did with tears, declaring his belief in the holy scriptures, and the Apostles' creed; and then came to that, which he said troubled his conscience more than any thing he had done in his life, and that was his subscribing the above-mentioned paper, out of fear of death and love of life; and therefore, when he came to the fire, he was resolved that hand that signed it should burn first. The assembly was all in confusion at this disappointment; and the broken-hearted archbishop, shedding abundance of tears, was led immediately to the stake; and being tied to it, he stretched out his right hand to the flame, never moving it but once to wipe his face, till it dropt off. He often cried out, *That unworthy hand!* which was consumed before the fire reached his body. His last words were, *Lord Jesus, receive my spirit.* He died in the 67th year of his age, and 23d of his archbishopric, and was succeeded by cardinal *Pole*.

It is not within the compass of my design to write a martyrology of these times; nor to follow bishop *Bonner* and his brethren through the rivers of protestant blood which they spilt. The whole year 1556 was one continued persecution, in which popery triumphed in all its false and bloody colors. *Bonner*, not content to burn heretics singly, sent them by companies to the flames. Such as were



suspected of heresy were examined upon the articles of the *corporal presence* of Christ in the sacrament, *auricular confession*, and the *mass*; and if they did not make satisfactory answers, they were without any farther proofs condemned to the fire. Women were not spared, nor infants in the womb. In the Isle of *Guernsey* a woman with child being ordered to the fire, was delivered in the flames, and the infant being taken from her, was ordered by the magistrates to be thrown back into the fire. At length the butcherly work growing too much for the hands that were employed in it, the Queen erected an extraordinary tribunal for trying of heresy, like the *Spanish* inquisition, consisting of 31 commissioners, most of them laymen; and in the month of June 1555, she issued out a proclamation, that such as received heretical books should be immediately put to death by *martial law*. She forbid prayers to be made for the *sufferers*, or even to say *God bless them*.—So far did her fiery zeal transport her.\* Upon the whole, the number of them that suffered death for the reformed religion in this reign, were no less than 277 persons,† of whom were 5 bishops, 21 clergymen, 8 gentlemen, 84 tradesmen, 100 husbandmen, laborers and servants, 55 women, and 4 children. Besides these, there were 54 more under prosecution, 7 of whom were whipt, and 16 perished in prison; the rest, who were making themselves ready for the fire, were delivered by the merciful interposure of divine providence in the Queen's death.

In a book corrected, if not written by Lord *Burleigh* in Queen *Elizabeth's* time, entitled *The Executions for Treason*, it is said 400 persons suffered publicly in Queen *Mary's* reign, besides those who were secretly murdered in prison; of these, 20 were bishops and dignified clergymen; 60 were

\* Clark's Martyr, p. 506.

† Bishop *Maddox* observes, that Bishop *Burnet* reckons the number of sufferers to be 284. But Mr. *Strype* has preserved (*Memorials*, vol. iii. 291, Appendix) an exact catalogue of the numbers, the places and the times of execution. The general sums are as follows:

Anno	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} 1555-71 \\ 1556-89 \\ 1557-88 \\ 1558-40 \end{array} \right\}$	Total 288, besides those that dyed of famyne in sondry prisons. Vindication, p. 813. Ed.
------	--	--

women, of whom some were big with child; and one was delivered of a child in the fire, which was burnt; and above 40 men-children.\* I might add, these merciless papists carried their fury against the reformed beyond the grave; for they caused the bones of *Fagius* and *Bucer* to be dug out of their graves, and having ridiculously cited them by their commissioners to appear, and give an account of their faith, they caused them to be burnt for non-appearance. Is it possible, after such a relation of things, for any protestant to be in love with *high commissions*, with *oaths ex officio*, and *laws to deprive men of their lives, liberties, and estates, for matters of mere conscience*? And yet these very reformers, when the power returned into their hands, were too much inclined to these engines of cruelty.

The controversy about *predestination* and *free-will* appeared first among the reformers at this time. Some that were in the *King's-Bench* prison for the profession of the gospel, denied the doctrines of absolute predestination and original sin. They were men of strict and holy lives, but warm for their opinions, and unquiet in their behavior. Mr. *Bradford* had frequent conferences with them, and gained over some to his own persuasion. The names of their teachers were *Harry Hart*, *Trew*, and *Abingdon*; they ran their notions as high as the modern *Arminians*, or as *Pelagius* himself, despising learning, and utterly rejecting the authorities of the fathers. *Bradford* was apprehensive that they would do a great deal of mischief in the church, and therefore, in concert with bishop *Ferrar*, *Taylor*, and *Philpot*, he wrote to *Cranmer*, *Ridley*, and *Latimer*, at *Oxford*, to take some cognizance of the matter, and consult together about remedying it. Upon this occasion *Ridley* wrote back a letter of *God's election and predestination*, and *Bradford* wrote another upon the same subject. But the *free-willers* treated him rudely; "They told him, he was a great slander to the word of God in respect of his doctrine, because he believed and affirmed the salvation of God's people to be so certain, that they should assuredly enjoy the same.— They said, it hanged partly upon our perseverance to the

\* Hist. Ref. vol. iii. p. 264.

“end; but *Bradford* said it hanged upon God’s grace in Christ, and not upon our perseverance in any point, otherwise grace was no grace.” When this holy martyr saw he could not convince them, he desired they might pray one for another. *I love you* (says he) *my dear hearts, though you have taken it otherwise without cause: I am going before you to my God and your God; to my Father and your Father; to my Christ and your Christ; to my home and your home.*

Mr. *Careless*, another eminent martyr, had much conference with these men in the *King’s-Bench* prison, of whose contentiousness he explained in a letter to *Philpot*. In answer to which *Philpot* writes, *That he was sorry to hear of the contentions that these scismatics raised, but that he should not cease to do his endeavors in defence of the truth, against these arrogant, self-willed, and blinded scatterers: That these sects were necessary for the trial of our faith.* He advised Mr. *Careless* to be modest and humble, that others seeing his grave conversation among those contentious babblers might glorify God in the truth. He then beseeches the brethren in the bowels of Christ, to keep the bond of peace, and not to let any root of bitterness spring up among them.

But this contention could not be laid asleep for some time, notwithstanding their common sufferings for the cause of religion. They wrote one against another in prison, and dispersed their writings abroad in the world. Mr. *Careless* wrote a confession of his faith; one article of which was for predestination, and against free-will. This confession he sent to the protestant prisoners in *Newgate*, whereunto they generally subscribed, and particularly twelve that were under sentence of condemnation to be burnt. *Hart*, having got a copy of *Careless’s* confession, wrote his own in opposition to it on the back-side; and would have persuaded the prisoners in *Newgate* to subscribe it, but could not prevail. I do not find any of these *free-willers* at the stake, (says my author) or if any of them suffered, they made no mention of their distinguishing opinions when they came to die. But these unhappy divisions among men that were under the cross, gave great advantage to the papists, who took occasion from hence to scoff at the professors of the gospel, as disagreeing among themselves. They blazed abroad their

infirmities, and said, *They were suffering for they knew not what.* Dr. *Martin*, a great papist, exposed their weaknesses ; but when *Martin* came to visit the prisoners, *Careless* took the opportunity to protest openly against *Hart's* doctrines, saying, *He had deceived many simple souls with his Pelagian opinions.*

Besides these *free-willers*, it seems there were some few in prison for the gospel that were *Arians*, and disbelieved the divinity of Jesus Christ. Two of them lay in the *King's-Bench*, and raised such unseemly and quarrelsome disputes, that the Marshal was forced to separate the prisoners from one another ; and in the year 1556, the noise of their contentions reached the ears of the council, who sent Dr. *Martin* to the *King's-Bench* to examine into the affair.\*

I mention these disputes, to shew the frailty and corruption of human nature,† even under the cross, and to point the reader to the first beginnings of those debates which afterwards occasioned unspeakable mischiefs to the church ; for though the *Pelagian* doctrine was espoused but by a very few of the *English* reformers, and was buried in that prison where it began for almost 50 years, it revived in the latter end of Queen *Elizabeth*, under the name of *Arminianism*, and within the compass of a few years supplanted the received doctrine of the reformation.

Many of the clergy that were zealous professors of the gospel under King *Edward VI*, through fear of death recanted and subscribed ; some out of weakness, who, as soon as they were out of danger, revoked their subscriptions, and openly confessed their fall : of this sort were *Scory* and *Barlow* bishops, the famous Mr. *Jewel*, and oth-

\* *Strype's Life of Cranmer*, p. 352.

† Mr. *Neal's* language and sentiments are not here the most correct. Disputes, arising from difference of opinion on points of speculation, may be proofs of the frailty of our nature ; as they shew, that all cannot attain to precise ideas, a clear discernment, and comprehensive views, on subjects that are attended with many difficulties. But how do they indicate the corruption of human nature ? That betrays itself in the intemperate spirit and language with which they are managed, and should be imputed not to human nature, but to the want of self-government in those individuals who thus offend. It is not proper, indiscriminately, to condemn disputes, because such censures operate as discouragements and bars to the investigation of the truth. ED.

ers. Among the common people some went to mass to preserve their lives, and yet frequented the assemblies of the *gospellers*, holding it not unlawful to be present with their bodies at the service of the mass, as long as their spirits did not consent.\* *Bradford* and others wrote with great warmth against these temporizers, and advised their brethren not to trust, or consort with them. They also published a treatise upon this argument, entitled, *The Mischief and Hurt of the Mass*; and recommended the reading it to all that had defiled themselves with that idolatrous service.

But though many complied with the times, and some concealed themselves in friends' houses, shifting from one place to another, others resolved with the hazard of their lives to join together and worship God, according to the service book of King *Edward*. There were several of these congregations up and down the country, which met together in the night, and in secret places, to cover themselves from the notice of their persecutors. Great numbers in *Suffolk* and *Essex* constantly frequented the private assemblies of the *gospellers*, and came not at all to the public service; but the most considerable congregation was in and about *London*. It was formed soon after Queen *Mary's* accession, and consisted of above 200 members. They had divers preachers, as Mr. *Scambler* afterwards bishop of *Peterborough*, Mr. *Fowler*, Mr. *Rough* a Scotsman, who was burnt; Mr. *Bernher*, and Mr. *Bentham*, who survived the persecution, and in the beginning of Queen *Elizabeth's* reign, was made bishop of *Lichfield* and *Coventry*: Mr. *Cuthbert Simpson* was deacon of the church, and kept a book with the names of all that belonged to it: They met sometimes about *Aldgate*, sometimes in *Blackfriars*, sometimes in *Thames-street*, and sometimes on board of ships, when they had a master, for their purpose: Sometimes they assembled in the villages about *London*, to cover themselves from the bishop's officers and spies; and especially at *Islington*; but here, by the treachery of a false brother, the congregation was at length discovered and broke up: Mr. *Rough* their minister, and Mr. *Simpson* their deacon, were apprehended and burnt, with many others.

\* *Strype's Life of Cranmer*. p. 362, 3.

Indeed the whole church was in the utmost danger ; for whereas *Simpson* the deacon used to carry the book wherein the names of the congregation were contained, to their private assemblies, he happened that day, through the good providence of God, to leave it with Mrs. *Rough* the minister's wife. When he was in the *Tower* the recorder of *London* examined him strictly, and because he would neither discover the book or the names, he was put upon the rack three times in one day.\* He was then sent to *Bonner*, who said to the spectators, " You see what a personable man this is ; and for his patience, if he was not an heretic, I should much commend him, for he has been thrice racked in one day, and in my house has endured some sorrow, and yet I never saw his patience moved." But notwithstanding this, *Bonner* condemned him, and ordered him first into the stocks in his coal house, and from thence to *Smithfield*, where with Mr. *Fox* and *Darenish*, two others of the church taken at *Islington*, he ended his life in the flames.

Many escaped the fury of the persecution, by withdrawing from the storm, and flying into foreign countries. Some went into *France* and *Flanders*, some to *Geneva*, and others into those parts of *Germany*, and *Switzerland* where the reformation had taken place ; as *Basil*, *Frankfort*, *Emden*, *Strasburgh*, *Doesburgh*, *Arrou*, and *Zurich*, where the magistrates received them with great humanity, and allowed them places for public worship. But the uncharitableness of the *Lutherans* on this occasion was very remarkable ; they hated the exiles because they were *Sacramentarians*, and when any *English* came among them for shelter, they expelled them their cities ; so that they found little hospitality in *Saxony* and other places of *Germany* where *Lutheranism* was professed. *Philip Melancthon* interceded with the senate on their behalf, but the clergy were so zealous for their *consubstantiation*, that they irritated the magistrates every where against them. The number of the refugees is computed at above 800 ; the most considerable of whom have been mentioned, as the bishops of *Winchester*, *Bath*, and *Wells*, *Chichester*, *Exeter*, and

\* Clarke's Martyr, p. 497.



*Ossory*; the deans of *Christ-church, Exeter, Durham, Wells, and Chichester*; the archdeacons of *Canterbury, Stow, and Lincoln*; with a great many other very learned divines.\* The laity of distinction were the dutchess of *Suffolk* with her husband, *Sir Thomas Wroth, Sir Richard Morison, Sir Anthony Cook, Sir John Cheeke*, and others.

The exiles were most numerous at *Frankfort*, where that contest and division began which gave rise to the PURITANS, and to that separation from the church of *England*, which continues to this day. It will therefore be necessary to trace it from its original. On the 27th of June, 1554, Mr. *Whittingham, Williams, Sutton, and Wood*, with their families and friends, came to settle at the city of *Frankfort*; and upon application to the magistrates were admitted to a partnership in the *French* church for a place of worship; the two congregations being to meet at different hours, as they should agree among themselves, but with this proviso, *That before they entered they should subscribe the French confession of faith, and not quarrel about ceremonies*, to which the *English* agreed; and after consultation among themselves they concluded, by universal consent of all present, *not to answer aloud after the minister, nor to use the litany and surplice*; but that the public service should begin with a general confession of sins, then the people to sing a psalm in metre in a plain tune, after which the minister to pray for the assistance of God's holy spirit, and so proceed to the sermon; after sermon, a general prayer for all estates, and particularly for *England*, at the end of which was joined the Lord's prayer, and a rehearsal of the articles of belief; then the people were to sing another psalm, and the minister to dismiss them with a blessing. They took possession of their church July 29th, 1554, and having chosen a minister and deacons to serve for the present, they sent to their brethren that were dispersed, to invite them to come to *Frankfort*, where they might hear God's word truly preached, the sacraments rightly ministered, and scripture discipline used, which in their own country could not be obtained.

\* *Strype's Life of Cranmer*, p. 354, &c.



The more learned clergymen, and some younger divines, settled at *Strasburgh*, *Zurich*, and *Basil*, for the benefit of the libraries of those places, and of the learned conversation of the professors, as well as in hopes of some little employment in the way of printing.\* The congregation at *Frankfort* sent letters to these places of the 2d of August, 1554, beseeching the *English* divines to send some of their number, whom they might choose, to take the oversight of them. In their letter they commend their new settlement, as nearer the policy and order of Scripture than the service-book of King *Edward*. The *Strasburgh* divines demurring upon the affair, the congregation at *Frankfort* sent for Mr. *Knox* from *Geneva*, Mr. *Haddon* from *Strasburgh*, and Mr. *Lever* from *Zurich*, whom they elected for their ministers. At length the students at *Zurich* sent them word, that unless they might be assured, that they would use the same order of service concerning religion, as was set forth by King *Edward*, they would not come to them, for they were fully determined to admit and use no other. To this the *Frankfort* congregation replied, that they would use the *service-book* as far as God's word commanded it ; but as for the unprofitable ceremonies, though some of them were tolerable, yet being in a strange country they could not be suffered to use them ; and indeed they thought it better that they should never be practised. “ If any (say they) think that the not  
“ using the book in all points should weaken our godly fath-  
“ ers and brethren's hands, or be a disgrace to the worthy  
“ laws of King *Edward*, let them consider, that they them-  
“ selves have upon consideration and circumstances altered  
“ many things in it heretofore ; and if God had not in these  
“ wicked days otherwise determined, would hereafter have  
“ altered more ; and in our case we doubt not but they would  
“ have done as we do,” So they made use of part of the book, but omitted the litany and responses.

But this not giving satisfaction, Mr. *Chambers* and Mr. *Grindal* came with a letter from the learned men of *Strasburgh*, subscribed with sixteen hands, in which they exhort them in most pressing language to a full conformity. They

\* History of the Troubles of Frankfort, printed 1575.

say, they make no question but the magistrates of *Frankfort* will consent to the use of the *English* service, and therefore they cannot doubt of the congregation's good-will and ready endeavors to reduce their church to the exact pattern of King *Edward's* book, as far as possible can be obtained : "Should they deviate from it at this time, they apprehend they should seem to condemn those who are now sealing it with their blood, and give occasion to their adversaries to charge them with inconstancy." The *Frankfort* congregation in their letter of December 3d, reply, that "They had omitted as few ceremonies as possible, so that there was no danger of their being charged with inconstancy. They apprehended that the martyrs in *England* were not dying in defence of ceremonies, which they allow may be altered ; and as for doctrine there is no difference ; therefore if the learned divines of *Strasburgh* should come to *Frankfort* with no other views but to reduce the congregation to King *Edward's* form, and to establish the popish ceremonies, they give them to understand that they had better stay away." This was signed by *John Knox*, now come from *Geneva*, *John Bale*, *John Fox* the martyrologist, and fourteen more.

Things being in this uncertain posture at *Frankfort* ; King *Edward's* book being used in part, but not wholly ; and there being no prospect of an accommodation with their brethren at *Strasburgh*, they resolved to ask the advice of the famous Mr. *Calvin*, pastor of the church at *Geneva* ; who having perused the *English* liturgy, took notice, "That there were many tolerable weaknesses in it, which, because at first they could not be amended, were to be suffered ; but that it behoved the learned, grave, and godly ministers of Christ to enterprize farther, and to set up something more filed from rust, and purer. If religion (says he) had flourished till this day in *England*, many of these things should have been corrected. But since the reformation is overthrown, and a church is to be set up in another place, where you are at liberty to establish what order is most for edification, I cannot tell what they mean, who are so fond of the leavings of popish dregs." Upon this letter the *Frankfort* congregation agreed not to submit to the *Stras-*

burgh divines, but to make use of so much of the service book as they had done, till the end of April 1555 ; and if any new contention arose among them in the mean time, the matter was to be referred to *Calvin, Musculus, Martyr, Bullinger*, and *Vyret*.

But upon the 13th of March Dr. *Cox*, who had been tutor to King *Edward VI.* a man of an high spirit, but of great credit with his countrymen, coming to *Frankfort* with some of his friends, broke through the agreement, and interrupted the public service by answering aloud after the minister ; and the Sunday following one of his company, without the consent of the congregation, ascended the pulpit, and read the *whole litany*. Upon this Mr. *Knox* their minister taxed the authors of this disorder in his sermon with a breach of their agreement ; and further affirmed, that some things in the service-book were superstitious and impure.—The zealous Dr. *Cox* reproved him for his censoriousness ; and being admitted with his company to vote in the congregation, got the majority to forbid Mr. *Knox* to preach any more. But *Knox's* friends applied to the magistrate, who commanded them to unite with the *French* church both in discipline and ceremonies, according to their first agreement. Dr. *Cox* and his friends, finding *Knox's* interest among the magistrates too strong, had recourse to an unchristian method to get rid of him. This divine, some years before when he was in *England*, had published an *English* book, called *An Admonition to Christians* ; in which he had said, *That the Emperor was no less an enemy to Christ than Nero*. For which, and some other expressions in the book, these gentlemen accused him of high treason against the Emperor. The senate being tender of the Emperor's honor, and not willing to embroil themselves in a controversy of this nature, desired Mr. *Knox*, in a respectful manner, to depart the city, which he did accordingly, March 25, 1555.

After this *Cox's* party being strengthened by the addition of several *English* divines from other places, sixteen of them, viz. 8 doctors of divinity, and 13 batchelors, petitioned the magistrates for the free use of King *Edward's* service-book, which they were pleased to grant. Thus the old congregation was broke up by Dr. *Cox* and his friends, who

now carried all before them. They chose new church-officers, taking no notice of the old ones, and set up the service-book of King *Edward* without interruption. *Knox's* friends would have left the matter to the arbitration of divines, which the others refused, but wrote to Mr. *Calvin* to countenance their proceedings, which that great divine could not do; but after a modest excuse for intermeddling in their affairs, told them, that “in his opinion they were too  
“much addicted to the *English* ceremonies; nor could he  
“see to what purpose it was to burden the church with such  
“hurtful and offensive things, when there was liberty to  
“have a simple and more pure order. He blamed their  
“conduct to Mr. *Knox*, which he said, was neither godly  
“nor brotherly; and concludes, with beseeching them to  
“prevent divisions among themselves.” This pacific letter having no effect, the old congregation left their countrymen in possession of their church, and departed the city. Mr. *Fox* the martyrologist with a few more went to *Basil*; and the rest to *Geneva*, where they were received with great humanity, and having a church appointed them, they chose Mr. *Knox* and *Goodman* their pastors. Here they set up the *Geneva* discipline, which they published in *English*, under the title of *The Service, Discipline, and Form of Common Prayers and Administration of Sacraments used in the English church of Geneva*: With a dedication to their brethren in *England* and elsewhere. Dated from *Geneva*, Feb. 10th, 1556. The liturgy is too long to be inserted in this place, but is agreeable to that of the *French* churches. In their dedication they say, “That their discipline is limited within  
“the compass of God’s word, which is sufficient to govern  
“all our actions. That the dilatory proceedings of the  
“bishops in reforming church discipline, and removing of-  
“fensive ceremonies, is one cause of the heavy judgments of  
“God upon the land. That the late service-book of King  
“*Edward* being now set aside by parliament according to  
“law, it was in no sense the established worship of the  
“church of *England*, and consequently they were under  
“no obligation to use it, any further than it was consonant  
“to the word of God. Being therefore at liberty, and in  
“a strange land, they had set up such an order as, in the

“judgment of Mr. *Calvin* and other learned divines, was  
“most agreeable to scripture, and the best reformed  
“churches.” Their reasons for laying aside the late rites  
and ceremonies were these ; “Because being invented by  
“men, though upon a good occasion, yet they had since  
“been abused to superstition, and made a necessary part  
“of divine worship. Thus *Hezekiah* was commended for  
“breaking in pieces the *Brazen Serpent*, after it had been  
“erected 800 years, and the *high places* that had been a-  
“bused to idolatry were commanded to be destroyed. In  
“the *New Testament*, the washing the disciples feet, which  
“was practised in the primitive church, was for wise rea-  
“sons laid aside, as well as their love-feasts. Besides, these  
“rites and ceremonies have occasioned great contentions in  
“the church in every age. The *Galatian* christians objected  
“to *St. Paul*, that he did not observe the *Jewish* ceremo-  
“nies as the other apostles did ; and yet he observed them  
“while there was any hope of gaining over weak brethren ;  
“for this reason he circumcised *Timothy* ; but when he per-  
“ceived that men would retain them as necessary things in  
“the church, he called that, which before he made indif-  
“ferent, wicked and impious, saying, that *Whosoever was*  
“*circumcised, Christ could nothing profit him.* The like  
“contentions have been between the *Greek* and *Latin* church  
“in later ages. For which, and other reasons, they have  
“thought fit to lay aside these human inventions which have  
“done so much mischief ; and have contented themselves  
“with that wisdom that is contained in God’s book ; which  
“directs them to preach the word of God purely, to min-  
“ister the sacraments sincerely, and use prayers and other  
“orders thereby approved, to the edification of the church,  
“and increase of God’s glory.”

The reader has now seen the first breach or schism be-  
tween the *English* exiles, on account of the service-book  
of *King Edward* ; which made way for the distinction, by  
which the two parties were afterwards known, of PURITANS  
and CONFORMISTS. It is evident that *Dr. Cox* and his  
friends were the aggressors, by breaking in upon the agree-  
ment of the congregation of *Frankfort*, which was in peace,  
and had consented to go on in their way of worship for a

limited time, which time was not then expired. He artfully ejected Mr. *Knox* from his ministry among them, and brought in the service-book with a high hand ; by which those who had been in possession of the church about nine months,\* were obliged to depart the city, and set up their worship in another place. The doctor and his friends discovered an ill spirit in this affair. They might have used their own forms without imposing them upon others, and breaking a congregation to pieces, that had settled upon a different foundation with the leave of the government under which they lived. But they insisted, that because the congregation of *Frankfort* was made up of *English* men, they ought to have the form of an *English* church ; that many of them had subscribed to the use of the service-book ; and that the departing from it at this time was pouring contempt on the martyrs who were sealing it with their blood. But the others replied, that the laws of their country relating to the service-book were repealed ; and as for their subscription, it could not bind them from making nearer approaches to the purity and simplicity of the Christian worship, especially when there was no established protestant church of *England*, and they were in a strange country, where the vestments and ceremonies gave offence. Besides, it was allowed on all hands, that the book itself was imperfect ; and it was credibly reported, that the archbishop of *Canterbury* had drawn up a form of common prayer much more perfect, but that he could not make it take place, because of the corruption of the clergy. As for discipline, it was out of the question that it was imperfect, for the service-book itself laments the want of it ; and therefore they apprehend, that if the martyrs themselves were in their circumstances they would practise with the same latitude, and reform those imperfections in the *English* service-book,

\* Mr. *Neal* has said, “ almost two years : ” Here, by consulting his authority, “ The Troubles at Frankfort.” it appears that he is properly corrected by bishop *Maddox*. In other respects his Lordship’s animadversions on this part of Mr. *Neal*’s History, are not just or accurate ; if Mr. *Neal*’s authority, to which he has faithfully adhered, deserves credit. This piece, when it was become scarce, was reprinted in the *Phoenix*, vol. ii. 1708. Mr. *Strype* refers to it, as giving authentic information. *Ec.*



which they attempted, but could not obtain in their own country.

To return to Dr. *Cox's* congregation at *Frankfort*. The doctor having settled Mr. *Horn* in the pastoral office, in the room of Mr. *Whitehead* who resigned, after some time left the place. But within six months a new division happened among them, occasioned<sup>d</sup> by a private dispute between Mr. *Horn* the minister, and Mr. *Ashby*, one of the principal members. Mr. *Horn* summoned *Ashby* to appear at the vestry before the elders and officers of the church; *Ashby* appealed from them as parties, to the whole church, who appointed the cause to be brought before them; but Mr. *Horn* and the officers protested against it, and chose rather to lay down their ministry and service in the church, than submit to a popular decision. The congregation being assembled on this occasion, gave it as their opinion, that in all controversies among themselves, and especially in cases of appeals, the *dernier resort* should be in the church. It is hardly credible what heats and divisions, factions and parties, these personal quarrels occasioned among a handful of strangers, to the scandal of religion, and their own reproach with the people among whom they lived. At length the magistrate interposed, and advised them to bury all past offences in oblivion, and to choose new church officers in the room of those that had laid down; and since their discipline was defective as to the points of controversy that had been before them, they commanded them to appoint certain persons of their number to draw up a new form of discipline, or correct and amend the old one; and to do this before they chose their ecclesiastical officers, that, being all private persons, they might agree upon that which was most reasonable in itself, without respect of persons or parties. This precept was delivered in writing, March 1, 1557, and signed by Mr. *John Glauburge*. Hereupon fifteen persons were appointed to the work, which after some time was finished; and having been subscribed by the church, to the number of 57, was confirmed by the magistrate; and on the 21st of December, 28 more were added to the church and subscribed; but Mr. *Horn* and his party, to the number of 12, dissented, and appealed to the magistrates, who had the patience to hear their objections, and



the others' reply. But Mr. *Horn* and his friends, not prevailing, left the congregation to their new discipline, and departed the city; from which time they continued in peace till the death of Queen *Mary*.

During these troubles died Dr. *Poynet*, late bishop of *Winchester*, born in *Kent*, and educated in *Queen's Coll. Oxon*, a very learned and pious divine, who was in such favor with King *Edward* for his practical preaching, that he preferred him first to the bishopric of *Rochester*, and then to *Winchester*.\* Upon the accession of Queen *Mary* he fled to *Strasburgh*, where he died, Aug. 2, 1556, before he was full 40 years old, and was buried with great lamentations of his countrymen.

To return to *England*. Both the universities were visited this year. At *Cambridge* they burnt the bodies of *Bucer* and *Fagius*, with their books and heretical writings. At *Oxford* the visitors went through all the colleges, and burnt all the English bibles, and such heretical books as they could find. They took up the body of *Peter Martyr's* wife out of one of the churches, and buried it in a dunghill, because, having been once a nun, she broke her vow; but her body was afterwards taken up again in Queen *Elizabeth's* time, and mixed with the bones of St. *Fridiswide*, that they might never more be disturbed by papists. The persecution of the reformed was carried on with all imaginable fury; and a design was set on foot to introduce the inquisition, by giving commissions to certain laymen to search for persons suspected of heresy, and present them to their ordinaries, as has been related. Cardinal *Pole* being thought too favorable to heretics, because he had released several that were brought before him upon their giving ambiguous answers, had his legantine power taken from him, and was recalled; but upon his submission he was forgiven, and continued here till his death, but had little influence afterwards either in the courts of *Rome* or *England*, being a clergyman of too much temper for the times he lived in.

Princess ELIZABETH was in constant danger of her life throughout the whole course of this reign. Upon the break-

\* Fuller's Worthies, b. ii. p. 72.

ing out of *Wyat's* conspiracy she was sent to the *Tower*, and led in by the Traitor's gate; her own servants being put from her, and no person allowed to have access to her : The governor used her hardly, not suffering her to walk in the gallery, or upon the leads. *Wyat* and his confederates were examined about her, and some of them put to the rack ; but they all cleared her except *Wyat*, who once accused her, in hopes to save his life, but declared upon the scaffold to all the people, that he only did it with that view. After some time she was sent to *Woodstock* in custody of Sir *Henry Benefield*, who used her so ill, that she apprehended they designed to put her privately to death. Here she was under close confinement, being seldom allowed to walk in the gardens. The politic bishop *Gardiner* often moved the Queen to think of putting her out of the way, saying, It was to no purpose to lop off the branches while the tree was left standing. But King *Philip* was her friend ; who sent for her to court, where she fell upon her knees before the Queen, and protested her innocence, as to all conspiracies and treasons against her Majesty ; but the Queen still hated her : However, after that, her guards were discharged, and she was suffered to retire into the country, where she gave herself wholly to study, meddling in no sort of business, for she was always apprehensive of spies about her. The Princess complied outwardly with her sister's religion, avoiding as much as she could all discourses with the bishops, who suspected her of an inclination to heresy from her education. The Queen herself was apprehensive of the danger of the popish religion if she died without issue ; and was often urged by her clergy, especially when her health was visibly declining, to secure the Roman Catholic religion, by delivering the kingdom from such a presumptive heir. Her majesty had no scruple of conscience about spilling human blood in the cause of religion ; the preservation of the princess was therefore little less than a miracle of divine providence, and was owing, under God, to the protection of King *Philip*, who, despairing of issue from his queen, was not without expectations from the princess.

But the hand of God was against Queen *Mary* and her government, which was hardly attended with one prosper-

ous event ; for instead of having issue by her marriage, she had only a false conception, so that there was little or no hopes afterwards of a child. This increased the sourness of her temper ; and her husband being much younger than herself, grew weary of her, slighted her company ; and then left her to look to his hereditary dominions, after he had lived with her about 15 months. There being a war between *Spain* and *France*, the Queen was obliged to take part with her husband ; this exhausted the treasure of the nation, and was the occasion of the loss of all the *English* dominions upon the continent. In the beginning of this year the strong town of *Calais* was taken, after it had been in the possession of the *English* 210 years : Afterwards the *French* took *Guines*, and the rest of that territory ; nothing being left but the Isles of *Jersey* and *Guernsey*. The *English* (says a learned writer) had lost their hearts ; the government at home being so unacceptable that they were not much concerned to support it, for they began to think Heaven itself was against it.

Indeed there were strange and unusual accidents in the Heavens.\* Great mischief was done in many places by thunder and lightning ; by deluges ; by excessive rains ; and by stormy winds. There was a contagious distemper like the plague, that swept away great numbers of people ; so that in many places there were not priests to bury the dead, nor men enough to reap the harvest. Many bishops died, which made way for protestant ones in the next reign. The parliament was dissatisfied with King *Philip's* demands of men and money for the recovery of *Calais* ; and the Queen herself grew melancholy upon the loss of that place, and the other misfortunes of the year. She had been declining in health ever since her pretended miscarriage, which was vastly increased by the absence of her husband, her despair of issue, and the cross accidents that attended her government. Her spirits were now decayed, and a dropsy coming violently upon her put an end to her unhappy life and reign, Nov. 17, 1558, in the 43d year of her

\* Burnet's Hist. Ref. vol. ii. p. 366.

age, and 6th of her reign ; cardinal *Pole*, archbishop of *Canterbury*, dying the same day.†

Queen *Mary* was a princess of severe principles, constant at her prayers, and very little given to diversions. She did not mind any branch of government so much as the church, being entirely at the disposal of her clergy, and forward to give a sanction to all their cruelties. She had deep resentments of her own ill usage in her father's and brother's reigns, which easily induced her to take revenge, though she colored it over with a zeal against heresy. She was perfectly blind in matters of religion, her conscience being absolutely directed by the pope and her confessor, who encouraged her in all the cruelties that were exercised against the protestants, assuring her, that she was doing God and his church good service. There is but one instance of a pardon of any condemned for heresy during her whole reign. Her natural temper was melancholy ; and her infirmities, together with the misfortunes of her government, made her so peevish, that her death was lamented by none but her popish clergy. Her reign was in every respect calamitous to the nation, and "ought to be transmitted down to posterity in characters of blood."

† During his residence in Italy, on the demise of Paul III. cardinal *Pole* had been elected pope, at midnight, by the conclave ; and sent for to come and be admitted. He desired that this, as it was not a work of darkness, might be postponed to the morning. Upon this message, the cardinals without any further ceremony, proceeded to another election, and chose the cardinal *de Monte* ; who, before he left the conclave, bestowed a hat upon a servant who looked after his monkey.

Granger's Biogh. History, 8vo. vol. i. p. 158, note. Ed.

## CHAP. IV.

FROM THE BEGINNING OF QUEEN ELIZABETH'S REIGN,  
TO THE SEPARATION OF THE  
*PROTESTANT NON-CONFORMISTS.*

**QUEEN ELIZABETH's** accession to the crown gave new life to the reformation: as soon as it was known beyond sea most of the exiles returned home; and those who had hid themselves in the houses of their friends began to appear; but the public religion continued for a time in the same posture the Queen found it; the popish priests kept their livings, and went on celebrating mass. None of the protestant clergy who had been ejected in the last reign were restored; and orders were given against all innovations without public authority. Though the Queen had complied with the changes in her sister's reign, it was well known she was a favorer of the reformation; but her majesty proceeded with great caution, for fear of raising disturbances in her infant government. No prince ever came to the crown under greater disadvantages. The pope had pronounced her illegitimate; upon which the Queen of Scots put in her claim to the crown. All the bishops and clergy of the present establishment were her declared enemies. The nation was at war with *France*, and the treasury exhausted; the Queen therefore, by the advice of her privy council, resolved to make peace with her neighbors as soon as possible, that she might be more at leisure to proceed in her intended alterations of religion, which, though very considerable, were not so entire as the best and most learned protestants of these times desired. The Queen inherited the spirit of her father, and affected a great deal of magnificence in her devotions, as well as in her court. She was fond of many of the old rites and ceremonies in which she had been educated. She thought her brother had stript religion too much of its ornaments; and made the doctrines of the church too narrow in some points. It was therefore with difficulty that she was prevailed on to go the length of King *Edward's* reformation.

The only thing her majesty did before the meeting of the parliament, was to prevent pulpit disputes ; for some of the reformed that had been preachers in King *Edward's* time, began to make use of his service-book without authority or licence from their superiors ; this alarmed the popish clergy, and gave occasion to a proclamation, dated Dec. 27, 1558. § By which all preaching of ministers, or others, was prohibited ; and the people were charged to hear no other doctrine or preaching, but the epistle and gospel for the day, and the ten commandments in *English*, without any exposition or paraphrase whatsoever. The proclamation admits of the litany, the Lord's prayer and the creed in *English* ; but no public prayers were to be read in the church but such as were appointed by law, till the meeting of the parliament, which was to be upon the 23d of January.\*

While the exiles were preparing to return home, conciliatory letters passed between them : those of *Geneva* desired a mutual forgiveness, and prayed their brethren of *Arrow*, *Basil*, *Frankfort*, *Strasburgh*, and *Worms*, to unite with them in preaching God's word, and in endeavoring to obtain such a form of worship as they had seen practised in the best reformed churches. The others replied, that it would not be in their power to appoint what ceremonies should be observed ; but they were determined to submit in things indifferent, and hoped those of *Geneva* would do so too ; however, they would join with them in petitioning the Queen, that nothing burthensome might be imposed. Both parties congratulated her majesty's accession, in poems, addresses, and dedications of books ; but they were reduced to the utmost poverty and distress. They came thread-bare home, bringing nothing with them (says Mr. *Strype*†) but much experience, as well as learning. Those who could comply with the Queen's establishment were quickly preferred, but the rest were neglected, and though

§ This proclamation was directed against the papists as well as the reformed : "for both" says *Strype*, "took their occasions to speak freely their minds in the pulpits," *Strype's Annals*, vol. i. Appendix, p. 2. *Cambden's Eliz.* p. 6.

\* *Burnet's History of the Reform.* vol. ii. p. 376, 77, 78.

† *Annals*, vol. i. p. 129.

suffered to preach in the churches for some time, they were afterwards suspended, and reduced to as great poverty as before.

It had been happy, if the sufferings of the exiles had taught them a little more charity and mutual forbearance; or that they had followed the advice of their learned friends and patrons beyond sea, who advised them to go through with the reformation, and clear the church of all the relics of popery and superstition at once. This was the advice of GUALTER, one of the chief divines of *Zurich*, who in his letter to Dr. *Masters*, the Queen's physician, Jan. 16, 1544, wishes, "That the reformers among us would not hearken to the counsels of those men, who, when they saw that popery could not be honestly defended, nor entirely retained, would use all artifices to have the outward face of religion to remain mixed, uncertain and doubtful; so that while an evangelical reformation is pretended, those things should be obtruded on the church which will make the returning back to popery, superstition, and idolatry, very easy. We have had the experience of this (says he) for some years in *Germany*, and know what influence such persons may have: Their counsels seem to a carnal judgment, to be full of modesty, and well fitted for carrying on an universal agreement; and we may well believe the common enemy of our salvation will find out proper instruments, by whose means the seeds of popery may still remain among you. I apprehend, that in the first beginnings, while men may study to avoid the giving some small offence, many things may be suffered under this color, that *they will be continued but for a little while*, and yet afterwards it will scarce be possible by all the endeavors that can be used to get them removed, at least not without great strugglings."\* The letter seems to be written with a prophetic spirit; *Masters* laid it before the Queen, who read it all over, though without effect. Letters of the same strain were written by the learned *Bullinger*, *Peter Martyr*, and *Weidner*, to the Earl of *Bedford*, who had been some time at *Zurich*; and to *Jewel*, *Sandys*, *Horn*, *Cox*, *Grindal*, and the rest of the late exiles, pressing them vehemently to act with

\* Hist. Ref. vol. iii. p. 278.



and courage, and to take care in the first beginnings to have all things settled upon sure and sound foundations.

The exiles in their answers seem resolved to follow their advice, and make a bold stand for a thorough reformation; and if they had done so, they might have obtained it.— Jewel, in his letter of May 23, 1559, thanks *Bullinger* for quickening their zeal and courage; and adds, “They were doing what they could; and that all things were coming into a better state.” In another of April 10, “He laments the want of zeal and industry in promoting the reformation; and that things were managed in so slow and cautious a manner, as if the word of God was not to be received on his own authority.” In another of Nov. 16, “He complains of the Queen’s keeping a crucifix in her chapel, with lighted candles; that there was worldly policy in this, which he did not like: That all things were so loose and uncertain with them, that he did not know whether he should not be obliged to return back to *Zurich*. He complains of the popish vestments, which he calls the relics of the *Amorites*, and wishes they were extirpated to the deepest roots.” The like complaints were made by *Cox*, *Grindal*, *Horn*, *Pilkington*, and others; but they had not the resolution to persevere: had they united counsels, and stood by one another, they might at this juncture have obtained the removal of those grievances which afterwards occasioned the separation.

To return to the parliament. The court took such measures about elections as seldom fail of success; the magistrates of the counties and corporations were changed, and the people, who were weary of the late persecutions, were assisted, and encouraged to exert themselves in favor of such representatives as might make them easy; so that when the houses met, the majority were on the side of the reformation. The temper of the house was first tried by a bill to restore to the crown the *first-fruits and tenths*, which Queen *Mary* had returned to the church. It passed the commons without much opposition, Feb. 4th, but in the House of Lords all the bishops voted against it.\* By another act they repealed some of the *penal laws*, and enacted, that no person should

\* Strype, p. 67.

be punished for exercising the religion used in the last year of King *Edward*. They appointed the public service to be performed in the vulgar tongue. They empowered the Queen to nominate bishops to the vacant bishoprics by *Congé d'Elire*, as at present. They suppressed the religious houses founded by Queen *Mary*, and annexed them to the crown ; but the two principal acts passed this session were the acts of *Supremacy*, and of *Uniformity of Common Prayer*.

The former is entitled, *An act for restoring to the crown the antient jurisdiction over the State Ecclesiastical and Spiritual ; and for abolishing foreign power*. It is the same for substance with the 25th of *Henry VIII.* already mentioned, but the commons incorporated several other bills into it ; for besides the title of *Supreme Governor in all causes Ecclesiastical and Temporal*, which is restored to the Queen, the act revives those laws of King *Henry VIII.* and King *Edward VI.* which had been repealed in the late reign. It forbids all appeals to *Rome*, and exonerates the subjects from all exactions and impositions heretofore paid to that court ; and as it revives King *Edward's* laws, it repeals a severe act made in the late reign for punishing heresy ;\* and three other old statutes mentioned in the said act.—“ Moreover, all persons in any public employs, whether  
“ civil or ecclesiastical, are obliged to take an oath in re-  
“ cognition of the Queen's right to the crown, and of her su-  
“ premacy in all causes ecclesiastical and civil, on penalty of  
“ forfeiting all their promotions in the church, and of being  
“ declared incapable of holding any public office.” In short, by this single act of the *supremacy*, all that had been done by Queen *Mary* was in a manner annulled, and the external policy of the church restored to the same foot as it stood at the death of King *Edward VI.*

\* The repeal of this act, it may not be improper to observe, operated in favor of those only who denied the essential and disseminating tenets of popery. It was a necessary step, when government was about to establish a reformation which would subvert the reception of those tenets. But it did not proceed from any just notions of the rights of conscience : and, as it appears in the course of this reign, still left those who went beyond the limits fixed by the new establishment, exposed to the heaviest penalties. En.

Further, "The act forbids all writing, printing, teaching, or preaching, and all other deeds or acts whereby any foreign jurisdiction over these realms is defended, upon pain that they and their abettors, being thereof convicted, shall for the first offence forfeit their goods and chattels; and if they are not worth 20l. suffer a year's imprisonment; spiritual persons shall lose their benefices, and all ecclesiastical preferments; for the second offence they shall incur the penalties of a præmunire; and the third offence shall be deemed high treason."

There is a remarkable clause in this act, which gave rise to a new court, called *The Court of High Commission*.\* The words are these, "The Queen and her successors shall have power, by their letters patents under the great seal, to assign, name, and authorize, as often as they shall think meet, and for as long time as they shall please, persons being natural-born subjects, to use, occupy, and exercise, under her and them, all manner of jurisdiction, privileges, and pre-eminences, touching any spiritual or ecclesiastical jurisdiction within the realms of *England and Ireland*, &c. to visit, reform, redress, order, correct and amend all errors, heresies, schisms, abuses, contempts, offences and enormities whatsoever. Provided, that they have no power to determine any thing to be heresy, but what has been adjudged to be so by the authority of the canonical scripture, or by the first four general councils, or any of them; or by any other general council, wherein the same was declared heresy by the express and plain words of canonical scripture; or such as shall hereafter be declared to be heresy by the high court of parliament, with the assent of the clergy in convocation."†

\* Strype, p. 96. Rapin, p. 236.

† On this statute Mr. Justice Blackstone remarks, that "a man continued still liable to be burnt for what perhaps he did not understand to be heresy, till the ecclesiastical judge so interpreted the words of the canonical scriptures." To this a late writer justly adds: "And even at this day, whoever, of the sectaries not tolerated, shall dare to interpret the holy scriptures, for himself, may be punished by ecclesiastical censures, if an ecclesiastical judge should decree such interpretation to be erroneous." *High Church Politics*, p. 66. Ed.

Upon the authority of this clause the Queen appointed a certain number of *commissioners* for ecclesiastical causes, who exercised the same power that had been lodged in the hands of one vicegerent in the reign of King *Henry VIII.* And how sadly they abused their power in this and the two next reigns will appear in the sequel of this history.\* They did not trouble themselves much with the express words of scripture, or the four first general councils, but entangled their prisoners with oaths *ex Officio*, and the inextricable mazes of the popish canon law; and though all ecclesiastical courts ought to be subject to a prohibition from the courts of *Westminster*, this privilege was seldom allowed by the commissioners.—The act makes no mention of an arbitrary jurisdiction of fining, imprisoning, or inflicting corporal punishments on the subjects, and therefore can be construed to extend no further than to suspension or deprivation; but notwithstanding this, these commissioners sported themselves in all the wanton acts of tyranny and oppression, till their very name became odious to the whole nation; inso-much that their proceedings were condemned by the united voice of the people, and the court dissolved by act of parliament, with a clause, that *no such jurisdiction should be revived for the future in any court whatsoever.*

Bishop *Burnet* says,† that the *supremacy* granted by this act is short of the authority that King *Henry* had; nor is it the whole that the Queen claimed, who sometimes stretch'd her prerogative beyond it. But since it was the basis of the reformation, and the spring of all its future movements, it

\* In addition to our Author's remark may be subjoined the reflections of a modern writer, "On this foundation," says he, "was erected, in a subsequent part of her reign, that court of ecclesiastical commission, which, in the sequel, was the source of the most arbitrary proceedings, and of the most shameful tyranny, oppression, and persecution. The powers we have mentioned, as granted to *Elizabeth*, will appear to many, in the present enlightened and liberal age, to have been unreasonable and enormous, and contrary to the just ends of political government. But the conferring of such powers accorded with the ideas of the times, which had no conception of introducing religious changes by the mere operation of reason and argument, and which had not learned to ascertain the true nature, objects, boundaries, and distinctions, of civil and ecclesiastical authority." *History of Knowledge in the new Annual Register for 1789*, p. 6. ED.

† *Burnet's Hist. Ref.* vol. ii. p. 386.

will be proper to enquire what powers were thought to be yielded the crown by this *act of supremacy*, and some others made in support of it. King *Henry VIII.* in his letter to the convocation of *York* assures them, that “He claimed  
“nothing more by the *supremacy*, than what christian prin-  
“ces in the primitive times assumed to themselves in their  
“own dominions.”\* But it is capable of demonstration, that the first christian Emperors did not claim all that jurisdiction over the church in spirituals, that King *Henry* did, who by the act of the 31st of his reign, was made absolute lord over the consciences of his subjects, it being therein enacted, that “whatsoever his Majesty should enjoin in  
“matters of religion should be obeyed by all his subjects.”

It is very certain, that the Kings and Queens of *England* never pretended to the character of *spiritual persons*, or to exercise any part of the ecclesiastical function in their own persons; they neither preached nor administered the sacraments, nor pronounced or inflicted the censures of the church; nor did they ever consecrate to the episcopal office, though the right of nomination is in them: These things were done by *spiritual persons*, or by proper officers in the spiritual courts, deriving their powers from the crown. When the adversaries of the supremacy objected the absurdity of a *lay person* being head of a *spiritual body*, the Queen endeavored to remove the difficulty, by declaring in her injunctions to her visitors, “That she did not, nor would she  
“ever challenge authority and power to minister divine ser-  
“vice in the church; nor would she ever challenge any  
“other authority, than her predecessors King *Henry VIII.*  
“and *Edward VI.* used.”

But abating this point, it appears very probable, that all the jurisdiction and authority, claimed by the pope, as head of the church, in the times preceding the reformation, was transferred to the King by the act of supremacy, and annexed to the imperial crown of these realms, as far as was consistent with the laws of the land then in being; though since it has undergone some abatements. The words of the

\* The *primitive times*, as they are called, did not commence till the beginning of the fourth century, under Constantine the Great; who was the first Prince that employed the powers of the state in the affairs of the church. EDITOR.

learned Mr. *Hooker*\* are very express: “If the whole ecclesiastical state should stand in need of being visited and reformed: or when any part of the church is infested with errors, schisms, heresies, &c. whatsoever spiritual powers the legates had from the see of *Rome*, and exercised in right of the pope for remedying of evils, without violating the laws of God or nature; as much in every degree have our laws fully granted to the King for ever, whether he thinks fit to do it by ecclesiastic synods, or otherwise according to law.”

The truth of this remark will appear, by considering the powers claimed by the crown in this and the following reigns.

1. *The Kings and Queens of England claimed authority in matters of faith, and to be the ultimate judges of what is agreeable or repugnant to the word of God.* The act of supremacy says expressly, “That the King has power to redress and amend all errors and heresies; he might enjoin what doctrines he would to be preached, not repugnant to the laws of the land: And if any should preach contrary, he was for the third offence to be judged an heretic, and suffer death; his Majesty claimed a right to forbid all preaching for a time, as King *Henry VIII.* King *Edward VI.* Queen *Mary*, and *Elizabeth* did; or to limit the clergy’s preaching to certain of the thirty-nine articles established by law, as King *Charles I.* did.” All the fore-mentioned Kings and Queens published instructions or injunctions concerning matters of faith, without consent of the clergy in convocation assembled; and enforced them upon the clergy under the penalties of a *præmunire*; which made it a little difficult to understand that clause of the 20th article of the church, which says, the church *has authority in matters of faith.*

2. With regard to *discipline*, the Kings of *England* seem to have had the keys at their girdle; for tho’ the old canon law be in force, as far as is consistent with the laws of the land, and the prerogative of the crown, yet the King is the supreme and ultimate judge in the spiritual courts by his delegates, as he is in the courts of common law by his

\* *Eccles. Pol. b. viii. §. 8.*

judges. His majesty might appoint a single person of the laity to be his vicar-general in all causes ecclesiastical to reform what was amiss, as King *Henry VIII.* and *Charles I.* did, which very much resembled the *Pope's legate* in the times before the reformation. By authority of parliament the crown was empowered to appoint 32 commissioners, some of the laity, and some of the clergy, to reform the canons or ecclesiastical laws; and though the design was not executed, the power was certainly in the King, who might have ratified the new canons, and given them the force of a law, without consent of the clergy in convocation, or of the parliament; and therefore at the coronation of King *Charles I.* the bishop was directed to pray, “*That God would give the King Peter's key of discipline, and Paul's doctrine.*”

3. As to *Rites* and *Ceremonies*, the act of uniformity\* says expressly, “That the Queen's majesty, by advice of her ecclesiastical commissioners, or of her metropolitan, may ordain and publish such ceremonies or rites, as may be most for the advancement of God's glory, and the edifying of the church.” Accordingly her majesty published her injunctions, without sending them into convocation or parliament, and erected a court of *High Commission* for ecclesiastical causes, consisting of commissioners of her own nomination, to see them put in execution. Nay, so jealous was Queen *Elizabeth* of this branch of her prerogative, that she would not suffer her high court of parliament to pass any bill for the amendment or alteration of the ceremonies of the church, it being (as she said) an invasion of her prerogative.

4. The *Kings* of England claimed the sole power of the nomination of bishops; and the Deans and Chapters were obliged to choose those whom their majesties named, under penalty of a *præmunire*; and after they were chosen and consecrated, they might not act but by commission from the crown. They held their very bishoprics for some time *durante bene placito*; and by the statute of the 5th and 6th of *Edward VI.* chap. 1, it was enacted, “That archbishops and bishops shall punish by censures of the church all

\* 1 Eliz. cap. 1.



“persons that offend, &c.” Which plainly implies, that without such a licence or authority they might not do it.

5. *No convocation, or synods of the clergy can assemble but by a writ or precept from the crown ; and when assembled, they can do no business without the King's letters patents, appointing them the particular subjects they are to debate upon ;\** and after all, their canons are of no force without the royal sanction.

Upon the whole it is evident, by the express words of several statutes,† that all jurisdiction, ecclesiastical as well as civil, was vested in the King, and taken away from the bishops, except by delegation from him. The King was chief in the determination of all causes in the church ; he had authority to make laws, ceremonies, and constitutions, and without him no such laws, ceremonies, or constitutions, are or ought to be of force. And, *lastly*, all appeals which before had been made to *Rome*, are for ever hereafter to be made to his majesty's chancery, to be ended and determined, as the manner now is, by delegates.§

I am sensible, that the constitution of the church has been altered in some things since that time : But let the reader judge, by what has been recited from acts of parliament, of the high powers that were then intrusted with the crown ; and how far they were agreeable with the natural or religious rights of mankind. The whole body of the papists refused the oath of supremacy, as inconsistent with their allegiance to the Pope ; but the Puritans took it under all these disadvantages, with the Queen's explication in her injunctions ; that is, that no more was intended, than “ *that her majesty, under God, had the sovereignty and rule over all persons born in her realms, either ecclesiastical or tem-*

\* Stat. 25 Hen. VIII. and Stat. Præmun.

† 31 Hen. VIII. cap. 17. 1 Eliz. c. i.

§ Thus the power, which had been for ages exercised by the Pope, was transferred to the temporal Monarch. The acquisition of this power was highly flattering to the love of authority in princes, especially as they had been so long under subjection to the pope. To a woman of Queen Elizabeth's spirit, it was, independently of every religious consideration, a powerful inducement to support the reformation. Ep.

*“poral, so as no foreign power had or ought to have authority over them.”* They apprehended this to be the natural right of all sovereign princes in their dominions, though there had been no statute law for it; but as they did not admit the government of the church to be monarchical, they were of opinion, that no single person, whether laymen or ecclesiastic, ought to assume the title of supreme head of the church on earth, in the sense of the acts abovementioned. This appears from the writings of the famous Mr. *Cartwright*, in his admonition to the parliament.

*“The christian sovereign (says he\*) ought not to be called Head under Christ of the particular and visible churches within his dominions : It is a title not fit for any mortal man ; for when the Apostle says that Christ is *xephale*, the Head, it is as much as if he had said, Christ and no other, is head of the church. No civil magistrate in councils or assemblies for church matters, can either be chief moderator, over-ruler, judge, or determiner ; nor has he such authority as that, without his consent, it should not be lawful for ecclesiastical persons to make any church orders or ceremonies. Church matters ought ordinarily to be handled by church officers. The principal direction of them is, by God’s ordinance, committed to the ministers of the church, and to the ecclesiastical governors : As these meddle not with the making civil laws, so the civil magistrate ought not to ordain ceremonies, or determine controversies in the church, as long as they do not intrench upon his temporal authority. Nevertheless, our meaning is not to seclude the magistrate from our church assemblies : He may call a council of his clergy, and appoint both time and place ; he may be there by himself or his deputy, but not as moderator, determiner, or judge ; he may have his voice in the assembly, but the orders and decrees of councils are not made by his authority ; for in ancient times the canons of the councils were not called the decrees of the emperors, but of the bishops. It is the prince’s province to protect and defend the councils of his clergy, to keep the peace, to see their decrees ex-*

\* Admonition to Parliament, lib. ii. p. 4, 11.

“ecuted, and to punish the contemners of them, but to exercise no spiritual jurisdiction.”

We shall meet with a fuller declaration of the Puritans upon this head hereafter ; in the mean time it may be observed, that the just boundaries of the civil and ecclesiastical powers were not well understood and stated in this age.

The powers of the civil magistrate seem chiefly to regard the civil welfare of his subjects ; he is to protect them in their properties, and in the peaceable enjoyment of their civil and religious rights ; but there is no passage in the New Testament that gives him a commission to be lord of the consciences of his subjects, or to have dominion over their faith. Nor is this agreeable to reason, because religion ought to be the effect of a free and deliberate choice. Why must we believe as the king believes, any more than as the clergy or pope ? If every man could believe as he would ; or if all men’s understandings were exactly of a size ; or if God would accept of a mere outward profession *when commanded by law*, then it would be reasonable there should be but one religion, and one uniform manner of worship : But to make ecclesiastical laws, obliging men’s practice under severe penalties, without or against the light of their consciences, looks like an invasion of the kingly office of Christ, and must be subversive of all sincerity and virtue.

On the other hand, the *jurisdiction of the church* is purely spiritual. No man ought to be compelled by rewards or punishments to become a member of any christian society, or to continue of it any longer than he apprehends it to be his duty. All the ordinances of the church are spiritual, and so are her weapons and censures. The weapons of the church are *scripture* and *reason*, accompanied with prayers and tears. These are her pillars, and the walls of her defence. The censures of the church are *admonitions*, *reproofs*, or declarations of persons’ unfitness for her communion, commonly called *excommunications*, which are of a spiritual nature, and ought not to affect men’s lives, liberties, or estates. No man ought to be cut off from the rights and privileges of a subject, merely because he is disqualified for christian communion. Nor has any church upon earth authority from Christ to inflict corporal punishments upon

those whom she may justly expel her society : These are the weapons of civil magistrates, who may punish the breakers of the laws of their countries, with corporal pains and penalties, as guardians of the civil rights of their subjects ; but *Christ's kingdom is not of this world*.

If these principles had obtained at the reformation, there would have been no room for the disturbance of any, whose religious principles were not inconsistent with the safety of the government. § Truth and charity would have prevailed ; the civil powers would have protected the church in her spiritual rights ; and the church, by instructing the people in their duty to their superiors, would have supported the state. But the reformers, as well Puritans as others, had different notions. They were for *one* religion, *one* uniform mode of worship, *one* form of discipline or church government for the whole nation, with which all must comply outwardly, whatever were their inward sentiments ; it was therefore resolved to have an act of parliament to establish an uniformity of public worship, without any indulgence to tender consciences ; neither party having the wisdom or courage to oppose such a law, but both endeavoring to be included in it.

To make way for this, the papists who were in possession of the churches were first to be vanquished ; the Queen therefore appointed a public disputation in *Westminster Abbey*, before her privy council and both houses of parliament, March 31st, 1559, between nine of the bishops and the like number of protestant divines, upon these three points :

1st. Whether it was not against scripture and the custom of the ancient church, to use a tongue unknown to the peo-

§ It would have been more consistent with our Author's reasoning, if, instead of "religious principles," he had submitted *actions*. If religious principles are to be the grounds of toleration or protection, according to their supposed consistency or inconsistency with the safety of the civil government, there is not only room for endless disputes concerning this consistency ; but men of the best views and characters will be liable to suffer through the imputation of consequences arising from their principles, which they themselves disavow and abhor. Besides, the pernicious tendency of some principles is counteracted by the influence of others, and the good dispositions of those who hold them. Overt-acts alone afford a clear, definite rule, by which to judge of moral, or political character. Ed.

ple in the common prayers and sacraments?—2dly. Whether every church had not authority to appoint, change, and take away ceremonies, and ecclesiastical rites, so the same were done to edifying?—3dly. Whether it could be proved by the word of God, that in the mass there was a propitiatory sacrifice for the dead and living?

The disputation was to be in writing; but the papists, finding the populace against them, broke it off after the first day, under pretence that the catholic cause ought not to be submitted to such an arbitration, though they had not these scruples in the reign of *Queen Mary*, when it was known the issue of the conference would be in their favor. The bishops of *Winchester* and *Lincoln* said, *The doctrine of the catholic church was already established, and that it was too great an encouragement to heretics, to admit them to discourse against the faith before an unlearned multitude.* They added, *That the Queen had deserved to be excommunicated; and talked of thundering out their anathemas against the privy council,* for which they were both sent to the *Tower*. The reformed had a great advantage by their adversaries quitting the field in this manner; it being concluded from hence, that their cause would not bear the light, which prepared the people for further changes.

The papists being vanquished, the next point was to unite the reformed among themselves, and get such an establishment as might make them all easy; for though the troubles at *Frankfort* were hushed, and letters of forgiveness had passed between the contending parties; and though all the reformers were of one faith, yet they were far from agreeing about discipline and ceremonies, each party being for settling the church according to their own model; some were for the late service and discipline of the English at *Geneva*; others were for the service-book of King *Edward VI.* and for withdrawing no farther from the church of *Rome* than was necessary to recover purity of faith, and the independency of the church upon a foreign power. Rites and ceremonies were (in their opinion) indifferent; and those of the church of *Rome* preferable to others, because they were venerable and pompous, and because the people had been used to them: These were the sentiments of the Queen, who

therefore appointed a committee of divines to review King *Edward's* liturgy, and to see if in any particular it was fit to be changed; their names were Dr. *Parker*, *Grindal*, *Cox*, *Pilkington*, *May*, *Bill*, *Whitehead*, and Sir *Thomas Smith*, doctor of the civil law. Their instructions were, to strike out all offensive passages against the pope, and to make people easy about the belief of the corporal presence of Christ in the sacrament; but not a word in favor of the stricter protestants.

Her Majesty was afraid of reforming too far; she was desirous to retain images in churches, crucifixes and crosses, vocal and instrumental music, with all the old popish garments; it is not therefore to be wondered, that in reviewing the liturgy of King *Edward*, no alterations were made in favor of those who now began to be called Puritans, from their attempting a purer form of worship and discipline than had yet been established. The Queen was more concerned for the papists, and therefore, in the litany this passage was struck out, *From the tyranny of the bishop of Rome, and all his detestable enormities, good Lord deliver us.* The rubric that declared, that *by kneeling at the sacrament no adoration was intended to any corporal presence of Christ*, was expunged. The committee of divines left it at the people's liberty to receive the sacrament kneeling or standing, but the Queen and parliament restrained it to kneeling; so that the enforcing this ceremony was purely an act of the state. The old festivals with their eves, and the popish habits, were continued, as they were in the 2d year of King *Edward VI.* till the Queen should please to take them away; for the words of the statute are, *They shall be retained till other order shall be therein taken by authority of the Queen's Majesty, with the advice of the commissioners authorized under the great seal of England for causes ecclesiastical.* Some of the collects were a little altered; and thus the book was presented to the two houses and passed into a law,\* being hardly equal to that which was set out by King *Edward*, and confirmed by parliament in the fifth year of his reign. For whereas in that liturgy all the garments were laid aside except the surplice, the Queen now returned to

\* Burnet's Hist. of the Ref. vol. ii. p. 390. Strype's Ann. p. 83.



King *Edward's* first book, wherein copes and other garments were ordered to be used.

The title of the act is, *An act for the Uniformity of Common Prayer and Service in the Church, and administration of the Sacraments.* It was brought into the House of Commons April 18th, and was read a third time April 20th. It passed the House of Lords April 28th, and took place from the 24th of June 1559. *Heath* archbishop of *York*\* made an elegant speech against it, in which among other things he observes very justly, that an act of this consequence ought to have had the consent of the clergy in convocation before it passed into a law. “Not only the orthodox, but even the “*Arian* Emperors (says he) ordered that points of faith “should be examined in councils; and *Gallio* by the light “of nature knew that a civil judge ought not to meddle with “matters of religion.” But he was over-ruled, the act of supremacy which passed the house the very next day having vested this power in the crown.† This statute lying open to common view at the beginning of the common prayer-book, it is not worth while to transcribe it in this place. I shall only take notice of one clause, by which all ecclesiastical jurisdiction was again delivered up to the crown:— “The Queen is hereby empowered, with the advice of her “commissioners or metropolitan, to ordain and publish such “further ceremonies and rites as may be for the advance- “ment of God’s glory, and edifying his church, and the rev- “crence of Christ’s holy mysteries and sacraments.” And had it not been for this clause of a reserve of power to make what alterations her majesty thought fit, she told archbishop *Parker*, that she would not have passed the act.

Upon this fatal rock of uniformity in things merely indifferent (in the opinion of the imposers) was the peace of the church of *England* split. The pretence was decency

\* *Mr. Strype* says there is so much learning and such strokes therein, that we need not doubt but that it is his. *Ann. Ref.* vol. i. p. 73. The speech itself is in his appendix to vol. i. No. 6. This prelate was always honorably esteemed by the Queen. and sometimes had the honor of a visit from her. He lived discreetly in his own house, till by very age he departed this life. *Annals*, vol. i. p. 143. ED.

† *D'Ew's Journal*, p. 29.



and order; but it seems a little odd that uniformity should be necessary to the decent worship of God, when in most other things there is a greater beauty in variety. It is not necessary to a decent dress that men's clothes should be always of the same colour and fashion; nor would there be any indecorum or disorder, if in one congregation the sacrament should be administered kneeling, in another sitting, and in a third standing; or if in one and the same congregation the minister were at liberty to read prayers either in a black gown or a surplice, supposing the garments to be indifferent, which the makers of this law admitted, tho' the Puritans denied. The rigorous pressing of this act was the occasion of all the mischiefs that befel the church for above 80 years. What good end could it answer to press men's bodies into the public service, without convincing their minds? If there must be one established form of worship, there should certainly have been an indulgence for tender consciences.—When there was a difference in the church of the *Romans* about eating flesh, and observing festivals, the apostle did not pinch them with an act of uniformity, but allowed a latitude, *Rom. xiv. 5.* *Let not him that eateth judge him that eateth not; but let every man be fully persuaded in his own mind. Why dost thou judge thy brother? or, why dost thou set at nought thy brother? For we must all stand before the judgment-seat of Christ.* Had our reformers followed this apostolical precedent, the church of *England* would have made a more glorious figure in the protestant world, than it did by this compulsive act of uniformity.

Sad were the consequences of these two laws, both to the papists and puritans. The papists in convocation made a stand for the old religion; and in their 6th session agreed upon the following articles, to be presented to the parliament for disburdening their consciences.

1. “That in the sacrament of the altar the natural body of Christ is really present, by virtue of the words of consecration pronounced by the priest.

2. “That after the consecration there remains not the substance of bread and wine, nor any other substance but God-Man.

3. “That in the mass the true body of Christ is offered as a propitiatory sacrifice for the living and the dead.

4. "That the supreme power of feeding and ruling the church is in St. *Peter* and his successors.

5. "That the authority of determining matters of faith and discipline belongs only to the pastors of the church, and not to laymen."

These articles or resolutions were presented to the lord keeper by their prolocutor Dr. *Harpsfield*, but his lordship gave them no answer; nor did the convocation move any further in matters of religion, it being apparent that they were against the reformation.

As soon as the sessions was ended the oath of supremacy was tendered to the bishops, who all refused it, except Dr. *Kitchen* bishop of *Landaff*, to the number of fourteen; the rest of the sees being vacant. Of the deprived bishops three retired beyond sea, viz. Dr. *Pate* bishop of *Worcester*, *Scot* of *Chester*, and *Goldwell* of *St. Asaph*; *Heath* archbishop of *Fork* was suffered to live at his own house, where the Queen went sometimes to visit him; *Tonstal* and *Thirleby* bishops of *Durham* and *Ely*, resided at *Lambeth* in the house of archbishop *Parker* with freedom and ease; the rest were suffered to go at large upon their parole; only *Bonner* bishop of *London*, *White* of *Winchester*, and *Watson* of *Lincoln*, whose hands had been deeply stained with the blood of the protestants in the late reign, were made close prisoners; but they had a sufficient maintenance from the Queen. Most of the monks returned to a secular life; but the nuns went beyond sea, as did all others who had a mind to live where they might have the free exercise of their religion.

Several of the reformed exiles were offered bishoprics, but refused them, on account of the habits and ceremonies, &c. as Mr. *Whitehead*, Mr. *Bernard Gilpin*, old father *Miles Coverdale*, Mr. *Knox*, Mr. *Thomas Sampson*, and others. Many who accepted, did it with trembling; from the necessity of the times, and in hopes by their interest with the Queen to obtain an amendment in the constitution of the church; among these were *Grindal*, *Parkhurst*, *Sandys*, *Pilkington*, and others.

The sees were left vacant for sometime. to see if any of the old bishops would conform; but neither time nor any

thing else could move them ; at length, after twelve months, *Dr. Matthew Parker* was consecrated archbishop of *Canterbury* at *Lambeth*, by some of the bishops that had been deprived in the late reign, for not one of the present bishops would officiate. This, with some other accidents, gave rise to the story of his being consecrated at the *Nags-head Tavern* in *Cheapside*, a fable that has been sufficiently confuted by our church historians ;\* the persons concerned in the consecration were *Barlow* and *Scory*, bishops elect of *Chichester* and *Hereford* ; *Miles Coverdale*, the deprived bishop of *Exeter*, and *Hodgkins*, suffragan of *Bedford* ; the two former appeared in their *chimere*, and *surplice*, but the two latter wore long gowns open at the arms, with a falling cape on the shoulders ; the ceremony was performed in a plain manner without gloves or sandals, ring or slippers, mitre or pall, or even without any of the Aaronical garments, only by imposition of hands and prayer. Strange ! that the archbishop should be satisfied with this, in his own case, and yet be so zealous to impose the popish garments upon his brethren.

But still it has been doubted, whether *Parker's* consecration was perfectly canonical.

1st. Because the persons engaged in it had been legally deprived in the late reign, and were not yet restored. To which it was answered, that having been once consecrated, the episcopal character remained in them, and therefore they might convey it ; though *Coverdale* and *Hodgkins* never exercised it after this time.

2dly. Because the consecration ought by law to have been directed according to the statute of the 25th of *Henry VIII.* and not according to the form of *King Edward's* ordinal for ordaining and consecrating bishops, inasmuch as that book had been set aside in the late reign, and was not yet restored by parliament.

These objections being frequently thrown in the way of the new bishops by the papists, made them uneasy ; they

\* *Life of Parker*, p. 38, 60, 61. Voltaire, though he knew, or, as a liberal writer observes, should have known, that this story was refuted even by the Puritans themselves, has yet related it as a fact. It was a calumny, to which the custom of the new ordained bishops furnishing a grand dinner or entertainment, gave rise. *Wendeborn's View of England*, vol. ii. p. 300. Ep.

began to doubt of the validity of their consecrations, or at least of their legal title to their bishoprics. The affair was at length brought before parliament, and to silence all future clamors *Parker's* consecration, and those of his brethren, were confirmed by the two houses, about seven years after they had filled their chairs.

The archbishop was installed December 17, 1559 soon after which he consecrated several of his brethren, whom the Queen had appointed to the vacant sees, as *Grindal* to the bishopric of *London*, *Horn* to *Winchester*, and *Pilkington* to *Durham*, &c. Thus the reformation was restored, and the church of *England* settled on its present basis. The new bishops being poor, made but a mean figure in comparison of their predecessors : They were unacquainted with courts and equipages, and numerous attendants ; but as they grew rich, they quickly rose in their deportment, and assumed a lordly superiority over their brethren.

The hierarchy being now at its standard, it may not be improper to set before the reader in one view the principles upon which it stands ; with the different sentiments of the Puritans, by which he will discover the reasons why the reformation proceeded no further :—

1. The court reformers apprehended, *That every Prince had authority to correct all abuses of doctrine and worship, within his own territories.* From this principle the parliament submitted the consciences and religion of the whole nation to the disposal of the King ; and in case of a minority to his council ; so that the King was sole reformer, and might, by commissioners of his own appointment, declare and remove all manner of errors, heresies, &c. and model the doctrine and discipline of the church as he pleased, provided his injunctions did not expressly contradict the statute law of the land.

Thus the reformation took place in sundry material points in the reigns of King *Edward VI.* and Queen *Elizabeth*, before it had the sanction of parliament or convocation :— And though Queen *Mary* disallowed of the supremacy, she made use of it to restore the old religion, before the laws for abolishing it were repealed. Hence also they indulged the foreign protestants with the liberty of their sep-

arate discipline, which they denied to their own countrymen.

The *Puritans* disowned all foreign authority and jurisdiction over the church as much as their brethren, but could not admit of that extensive power which the crown claimed by the supremacy, apprehending it unreasonable, that the religion of a whole nation should be at the disposal of a single lay person ; for let the Apostle's rule, *That all things be done decently and in order*, mean what it will, it was not directed to the prince or civil magistrate. However, they took the oath with the Queen's explication in her injunctions, as only restoring her majesty to the ancient and natural rights of sovereign princes over their subjects.

2. It was admitted by the *court reformers*, *That the church of Rome was a true church, though corrupt in some points of doctrine and government ; that all her ministrations were valid, and that the pope was a true bishop of Rome, though not of the universal church.* It was thought necessary to maintain this, for the support of the character of our bishops, who could not otherwise derive their succession from the apostles.

But the *Puritans* affirmed the pope to be Antichrist, the church of *Rome* to be no true church, and all her ministrations to be superstitious and idolatrous ; they renounced her communion, and durst not risk the validity of their ordinations upon an uninterrupted line of succession from the apostles through their hands.

3. It was agreed by all, that the holy scriptures were a perfect rule of faith ; but the *bishops and court reformers* did not allow them a standard of discipline or church government, but affirmed that our Saviour and his Apostles left it to the discretion of the civil magistrate, in those places where christianity should obtain, to accommodate the government of the church to the policy of the state.

But the *Puritans* apprehended the holy scriptures to be a standard of church discipline, as well as doctrine ; at least that nothing should be imposed as necessary but what was expressly contained in, or derived from them by necessary consequence. And if it should be proved, that all things necessary to the well government of the church, could not

be deduced from holy scripture, they maintained that the discretionary power was not vested in the civil magistrate, but in the spiritual officers of the church.

4. The court reformers maintained, that *the practice of the primitive church for the first four or five centuries was a proper standard of church government and discipline, and in some respects better than that of the apostles, which (according to them) was only accommodated to the infant state of the church while it was under persecution, whereas theirs was suited to the grandeur of a national establishment.* Therefore they only pared off the later corruptions of the papacy, from the time the pope usurped the title of universal bishop, and left those standing which they could trace a little higher, such as *archbishops, metropolitans, archdeacons, suffragans, rural deans, &c.* which were not known in the apostolic age, or those immediately following.

Whereas the *Puritans* were for keeping close to the scriptures in the main principles of church government; and for admitting no church-officers or ordinances, but such as are appointed therein. They apprehended that the form of government ordained by the apostles was aristocratical, according to the constitution of the *Jewish* sanhedrim, and was designed as a pattern for the churches in after-ages, not to be departed from in any of its main principles; and therefore they paid no regard to the customs of the papacy, or the practice of the earlier ages of christianity, any farther than they corresponded with the scriptures.

5. Our *Reformers* maintained, *That things indifferent in their own nature, which are neither commanded nor forbidden in the holy scriptures, such as rites, ceremonies, habits, &c. might be settled, determined, and made necessary by the command of the civil magistrate; and that in such cases it was the indispensable duty of all subjects to observe them.*

But the *Puritans* insisted, that those things which Christ had left indifferent ought not to be made necessary by any human laws, but that we are *to stand fast in the liberty wherewith Christ has made us free*: And further, that such rites and ceremonies as had been abused to idolatry, and manifestly tended to lead men back to popery and superstition, were no longer indifferent, but to be rejected as unlawful.



6. Both parties agreed too well in asserting the necessity of an uniformity of public worship, and of using the sword of the magistrate for the support and defence of their respective principles, which they made an ill use of in their turns, whenever they could grasp the power into their hands. The standard of uniformity, according to the *bishops*, was *the Queen's supremacy and the laws of the land*; according to the *Puritans*, the *decrees of provincial and national synods*, allowed and enforced by the civil magistrate: But neither party were for admitting that liberty of conscience, and freedom of profession, which is every man's right, as far as is consistent with the peace of the civil government he lives under.

The principle upon which the bishops justified their severities against the Puritans, in this and the following reigns, was the *subjects' obligation to obey the laws of their country in all things indifferent, which are neither commanded nor forbidden by the laws of God*. And the excellent archbishop Tillotson in one of his sermons, represents the *dissenters* as an humorous and perverse set of people, in not complying with the service and ceremonies of the church, for no other reason (says he) but because their superiors require them.— But if this were true, it is a justifiable reason for their dissent, supposing the magistrate requires that which is not within the bounds of his commission. Christ (say the non-conformists) is the sole law-giver of his church, and has enjoined all things *necessary* to be observed in it to the end of the world; therefore, where he has indulged a liberty to his followers, it is as much their duty to maintain it, as to observe any other of his precepts. If the civil magistrate should, by a stretch of the prerogative, dispense with the laws of his country, or enjoin new ones, according to his arbitrary will and pleasure, without consent of parliament, would it deserve the brand of humor or perverseness to refuse obedience, if it were *for no other reason, but because we will not submit to an arbitrary, dispensing power*? Besides, if the magistrate has a power to impose things indifferent, and make them necessary in the service of God; he may dress up religion in any shape, and instead of one ceremony may load it with a hundred.



To return to the history. The reformation being thus settled, the Queen gave out commissions for a general visitation, and published a body of *injunctions*, consisting of 53 articles, commanding her loving subjects obediently to receive, and truly to observe and keep them, according to their offices, degrees, and states. They are almost the same with those of King *Edward*. I shall therefore only give the reader an abstract of such as we may have occasion to refer to hereafter.

*Artic. 1.* ‘ All ecclesiastical persons shall see that the act  
‘ of supremacy be duly observed, and shall preach four  
‘ times a year against yielding obedience to any foreign  
‘ jurisdiction.—2. They shall not set forth or extol the  
‘ dignity of any images, relics or miracles, but shall de-  
‘ clare the abuses of the same, and that all *grace* is from  
‘ God.—3. Parsons shall preach once every month upon  
‘ works of faith, mercy and charity, commanded by God ;  
‘ and shall inform the people, that works of man’s devising,  
‘ such as pilgrimages, setting up of candles, praying upon  
‘ beads, &c. are offensive to God.—4. Parsons having  
‘ cure of souls shall preach in person once a quarter at least,  
‘ or else read one of the homilies prescribed by the Queen  
‘ to be read every Sunday in the churches where there is no  
‘ sermon.—5. Every holy day, when there is no sermon,  
‘ they shall recite from the pulpit the *Pater-Noster*, Creed,  
‘ and ten Commandments.—6. Within three months every  
‘ parish shall provide a Bible, and within twelve months  
‘ *Erasmus’s* paraphrase upon the gospels in *English*, and set  
‘ them up in their several churches.—7. The clergy shall  
‘ not haunt ale-houses or taverns, or spend their time idly  
‘ at dice, cards, tables, or any other unlawful game.—8.  
‘ None shall be admitted to preach in churches without li-  
‘ cence from the Queen, or her visitors ; or from the arch-  
‘ bishop or bishop of the diocese.—16. All parsons under  
‘ the degree of *M. A.* shall buy for their own use the New  
‘ Testament in *Latin* and *English*, with paraphrases, within  
‘ three months after this visitation.—17. They shall learn  
‘ out of the scriptures some comfortable sentences for the  
‘ sick.—18. There shall be no popish processions ; nor shall  
‘ any persons walk about the church, or depart out of it,

‘ while the priest is reading the scriptures.—19. Never-  
‘ theless the perambulation of parishes or processions with  
‘ the curates shall continue, who shall make a suitable ex-  
‘ hortation.—20. Holy days shall be strictly observed,  
‘ except in harvest-time after divine service.—21. Curates  
‘ may not admit to the holy communion, persons that live  
‘ openly in sin without repentance ; or that are at variance  
‘ with their neighbors, till they are reconciled.—22. Cu-  
‘ rates, &c. shall teach the people not obstinately to vio-  
‘ late the laudable ceremonies of the church.—23. Also,  
‘ they shall take away, utterly extinguish, and destroy all  
‘ shrines, coverings of shrines ; all tables, candlesticks,  
‘ trindals and rolls of wax, pictures, paintings, and all  
‘ other monuments of feigned miracles, pilgrimages, idol-  
‘ atry and superstition, so that there remain no memory of  
‘ the same in walls, glass windows, or elsewhere, within  
‘ their churches and houses ; preserving nevertheless, or re-  
‘ pairing both the walls and glass windows ; and they shall  
‘ exhort all their parishioners to do the like in their several  
‘ houses.—28. Due reverence shall be paid to the ministers  
‘ of the gospel.—29. No priest or deacon shall marry  
‘ without allowance of the bishop of his diocese, and two  
‘ justices of the peace ; nor without consent of the parents  
‘ of the woman (if she have any) or others that are nearest  
‘ of kin, upon penalty of being incapable of holding any  
‘ ecclesiastical promotion, or ministering in the word and  
‘ sacraments. Nor shall bishops marry without allowance  
‘ of their metropolitan, and such commissioners as the  
‘ Queen shall appoint.—30. All archbishops and bishops,  
‘ and all that preach or administer the sacraments, or that  
‘ shall be admitted into any ecclesiastical vocation, or into  
‘ either of the Universities, shall wear such garments, and  
‘ square caps, as were worn in the reign of King *Edward VI.*  
‘ —33. No person shall absent from his parish church, and  
‘ resort to another, but upon an extraordinary occasion.—  
‘ 34. No inn-holders or public-houses, shall sell meat or  
‘ drink in time of divine service.—35. None shall keep in  
‘ their *houses* any *abused images*, tables, pictures, paintings,  
‘ and other monuments of feigned miracles.—36. No man  
‘ shall disturb the minister in his sermon ; nor mock or

‘ make a jest of him.—37. No man, woman or child, shall  
‘ be otherways busied in time of divine service, but shall  
‘ give due attendance to what is read and preached.—40.  
‘ No person shall teach school but such as are allowed by  
‘ the ordinary.—41. School-masters shall exhort their  
‘ children to love and reverence the true religion now al-  
‘ lowed by authority.—42. They shall teach their scholars  
‘ certain sentences of scriptures tending to godliness.—43.  
‘ None shall be admitted to any spiritual cure that are ut-  
‘ terly unlearned.—44. The parson or curate of the parish  
‘ shall instruct the children of his parish for half an hour be-  
‘ fore evening prayer on every holy day, and second Sunday  
‘ in the year, in the Catechism, and shall teach them the  
‘ Lord’s Prayer, Creed, and ten Commandments.—45. All  
‘ the ordinaries shall exhibit to the visitors a copy of the  
‘ book containing the causes, why any have been impris-  
‘ oned, famished or put to death for religion in the late  
‘ reign.—46. Overseers in every parish shall see that all the  
‘ parishioners duly resort to church ; and shall present de-  
‘ faulters to the ordinary.—47. Church-wardens shall deliv-  
‘ er to the Queen’s visitors an inventory of all their church  
‘ furniture, as *vestments, copes, plate, books*, and especially  
‘ of *grayles, couchers, legends, processions, manuals, hym-*  
‘ *nals, portuesses*, and such like, appertaining to the church.  
‘ —48. The litany and prayers shall be read weekly on *Wed-*  
‘ *nesdays* and *Fridays*.—49. Singing men shall be continued  
‘ and maintained in collegiate churches, and there shall be  
‘ a modest and distinct song so used in all parts of the com-  
‘ mon prayers in the church, that the same may be as plainly  
‘ understood as if it were read without singing ; and yet  
‘ nevertheless, for the comforting such as delight in music,  
‘ it may be permitted that in the beginning or end of the  
‘ common-prayer, there may be sung an hymn, or such  
‘ like song, in the best sort of melody and music, that may  
‘ be conveniently devised, having respect that the sentences  
‘ of the hymn may be understood and perceived.—50.  
‘ There shall be no vain and contentious disputes in matters  
‘ of religion ; nor the use of opprobrious words, as *papist,*  
‘ *papistical, heretic, schismatic* or *sacramentary*. Offend-  
‘ ers to be remitted to the ordinary.—51. No book or

‘pamphlet shall be printed or made public without licence  
‘from the Queen, or six of her privy council, or her eccle-  
‘siastical commissioners, or from the archbishops of *Can-*  
‘*terbury* and *York*, the bishop of *London*, the chancellors  
‘of both universities, the bishop being ordinary, and the  
‘archdeacon also of the place, where any such book shall  
‘be printed, or two of them, whereof the ordinary to be  
‘always one: The names of the licensers to be printed at  
‘the end. Ancient and prophane authors are excepted.—  
‘52. In time of reading the litany, and all other collects  
‘and common prayer, all the people shall devoutly kneel;  
‘and when the name of Jesus shall be in any lesson, ser-  
‘mon, or otherways pronounced in the church, due rev-  
‘erence shall be made of all persons with lowness of cour-  
‘tesy, and uncovering the heads of the men, as has been  
‘heretofore accustomed.’

These injunctions were to be read in the churches once every quarter of a year.

An appendix was added, containing one form of *bidding prayer*; and an order relating to *tables in churches*, which enjoins, ‘That no altar be taken down but by oversight of  
‘the curate and churchwardens, or one of them at least,  
‘wherein no riotous or disorderly manner shall be used;  
‘and that the holy table in every church be decently made,  
‘and set in the place where the altar stood, and there to  
‘stand covered, saving when the sacrament is to be admin-  
‘istered; at which time it shall be so placed within the chan-  
‘cel, as thereby the minister may be more conveniently heard  
‘of the communicants, and the communicants also more  
‘conveniently, and in more numbers communicate with the  
‘said minister; and after the communion done the holy ta-  
‘ble shall be placed where it stood before.’

The penalties for disobeying these injunctions, were suspension, deprivation, sequestration of fruits and benefices, excommunication, and such other corrections as to those who have ecclesiastical jurisdiction under her Majesty should seem meet.

The major part of the visitors were laymen, any two of whom were empowered to examine into the true state of all churches; to suspend or deprive such clergymen as were

unworthy, and to put others into their places ;\* to proceed against the obstinate by imprisonment, church censures, or any other legal methods. They were to reserve pensions for such as quitted their benefices by resignation ; to examine into the condition of all that were imprisoned on the account of religion, and to discharge them ; and to restore all such to their benefices who had been unlawfully deprived in the late times.

This was the first high commission, which was issued about *midsummer*, 1559. It gave offence to many, that the Queen should give *lay-visitors* authority to proceed by ecclesiastical censures ; but this was no more than is frequently done by lay-chancellors in the ecclesiastical courts. § It was much more unjustifiable for the commissioners to go beyond the censures of the church, by fines, imprisonments, and inquisitory oaths, to the ruin of some hundreds of families, without the authority of that statute which gave them *being*, or any other.

Mr. *Strype* assures us, that the visitors took effectual care to have all the instruments and utensils of idolatry and superstition demolished and destroyed out of the churches where God's pure service was to be performed ; such as roods, *i. e.* Images of Christ upon the cross, with *Mary* and *John* standing by ; also images of tutelary saints of the churches that were dedicated to them, popish books, altars, and the like. But it does not appear that either the second or 23d articles of injunctions empowered them absolutely to remove all images out of churches ; the Queen herself was as yet undetermined in that matter. † Bishop *Jewel*, in his letter to *Peter Martyr*, Feb. 4, 1560, says, there was to be a conference about the lawfulness of images in churches the day following, between *Parker* and *Cox*, who were for them, and himself and *Grindal*, who were against them ; and if they prevail, (says he) I will be no longer a bishop. ‡ However, it is certain, that the visitors commanded the prebendaries and archdeacon of *London* to see that the

\* Hist. Ref. vol. ii. p. 400.

§ This Dr. *Warner* observes, was justifying one abuse by another. Ed.

† Hist. Ref. vol. iii. p. 290.

‡ Pierce's Vind. p. 38.

cathedral church of *St. Paul's* be purged and freed from all and singular images, idols and altars ; and in the place of the altars to provide a decent table for the ordinary celebration of the Lord's supper ; and accordingly the roods and high altar were taken away.\*

The populace was on the side of the reformation,† having been provoked with the cruelties of the late times : Great numbers attended the commissioners, and brought into *Cheapside, Paul's Church-yard, and Smithfield*, the roods and crucifixes that were taken down, and in some places the vestments of the priests, *copes, surplices, altar cloths, books, banners, sepulchres*, and burnt them to ashes, as it were, to make atonement for the blood of the martyrs which had been shed there. Nay, they went further, and in their furious zeal broke the painted glass windows, rased out some ancient inscriptions, and spoiled those monuments of the dead that had any ensigns of popery upon them. “ The  
“ divines of this time (says Mr. *Strype*) could have been  
“ content to have been without all relics, and ceremonies  
“ of the *Roman* church, that there might not be the least  
“ compliance with popish devotions.” And it had not been the worse for the church of *England* if their successors had been of the same mind.

But the Queen disliked these proceedings ;§ she had a

\* *Strype's Ann.* vol. i. p. 175.

† The following anecdotes mark the strong disposition of the people towards a reformation, and are pleasing specimens of the skill and ingenuity with which Queen *Elizabeth* knew how to suit herself to their wishes. On her releasing the prisoners, confined in the former reign on account of religion, one *Rainsford* told the Queen that he had a petition to present to her, in behalf of other prisoners, called Matthew, Mark, Luke, and John. She readily replied, that she must first consult the prisoners themselves, and learn of them whether they desired that liberty which he had asked for them. At the time of her coronation, from one of the principal arches, through which she was conducted, a boy personating Truth was let down, and presented her with a Bible. She received it on her knees, kissed it, and placing it in her bosom, said, “ She preferred that above all the other presents that were  
“ on that day made her.”——*History of Knowledge in the New Annual Register* for 1789, p. 4 : and *Burnet's History of the Reformation* abridged, 8vo. p. 344. ED.

§ *Hist. Ref.* vol. iii. p. 291. *Life of Parker*, p. 310. *Strype's Annals*, vol. i. p. 175, 176.

crucifix with the *Blessed Virgin* and *St. John*, still in her chapel; and when *Sandys* bishop of *Worcester* spoke to her against it, she threatened to deprive him. The crucifix was after some time removed, but replaced in 1570. To put some stop to these proceedings, her majesty issued out a proclamation, dated Sept. 19th, in the 2d year of her reign, prohibiting “The defacing or breaking any parcel of any  
“monument, tomb or grave, or other inscription, in mem-  
“ory of any person deceased, or breaking any images of  
“kings, princes, or nobles, &c. set up only in memory of  
“them to posterity, and not for any religious honor; or  
“the defacing or breaking any images in glass windows in  
“any churches, without consent of the ordinary.” It was with great difficulty, and not without a sort of protestation from the bishops, that her majesty consented to have so many monuments of idolatry, as are mentioned in her 23d injunction, removed out of churches; but she would not part with her altar, or her crucifix, nor with lighted candles, out of her own chapel. The gentlemen and singing children appeared there in their surplices, and the priests in their copes; the altar was furnished with rich plate, and two gilt candlesticks, with lighted candles, and a massy crucifix of silver in the midst: The service was sung not only with the sound of organs, but with the artificial music of cornets, sackbuts, &c. on solemn festivals. The ceremonies observed by the knights of the *garter* in their adoration towards the altar, which had been abolished by King *Edward*, and revived by Q’n *Mary*, were retained. In short, the service performed in the Queen’s chapel, and in sundry cathedrals, was so splendid and showy, that foreigners could not distinguish it from the *Roman*, except that it was performed in the *English* tongue. By this method most of the popish laity were deceived into conformity, and came regularly to church for nine or ten years, till the pope being out of all hopes of an accommodation forbid them, by excommunicating the Queen, and laying the whole kingdom under an interdict.

When the visitors had gone through the kingdom, and made their report of the obedience given to her Majesty’s laws and injunctions, it appeared that not above 243 clergymen had quitted their livings, (viz.) 14 bishops, and 3



bishops elect; one abbot, 4 priors, 1 abbess, 12 deans, 14 archdeacons, 60 canons or prebendaries, 100 beneficed clergy, 15 heads of colleges in *Oxford* and *Cambridge*; to which may be added about 20 doctors in several faculties. In one of the volumes in the *Cotton* library the number is 192; *D'Ewe's* Journal mentions but 177; Bishop *Burnet* 199; but *Cambden* and Cardinal *Allen* reckon as above. Most of the inferior beneficed clergy kept their places, as they had done through all the changes of the three last reigns; and without all question, if the Queen had died, and the old religion had been restored, they would have turned again; but the bishops and some of the dignified clergy having sworn to the *supremacy* under King *Henry*, and renounced it again under Queen *Mary*, they thought it might reflect a dishonor upon their character to change again, and therefore they resolved to hold together, and by their weight endeavor to distress the reformation. Upon so great an alteration of religion the number of recusants out of 9400 parochial benefices was inconsiderable; and yet it was impossible to find protestants of a tolerable capacity to supply the vacancies, because many of the stricter sort, who had been exiles for religion, could not come up to the terms of conformity, and the Queen's injunctions.

It may seem strange, that amidst all this concern for the new form of worship, no notice should be taken of the doctrinal articles which King *Edward* had published for avoiding diversities of opinions, though her Majesty might have enjoined them, by virtue of her supremacy under the great seal, as well as her brother; but the bishops durst not venture them into convocation, because the majority was for the old religion, and the Queen was not very fond of her brother's doctrines. To supply this defect for the present, the bishops drew up a declaration of their faith,\* which all *churchmen* were obliged to read publicly at their entrance upon their cures.

These were the terms of ministerial conformity at this time; the *oath of supremacy*, *compliance with the act of uniformity*, and this *declaration of faith*. There was no dispute among the reformers about the first and last of these quali-

\* See this Declaration, Appendix No. I.

fications, but they differed upon the second ; many of the learned exiles, and others, refusing to accept of livings in the church according to the act of uniformity, and the Queen's injunctions. If the popish habits and ceremonies had been left indifferent, or other decent ones appointed in their room, the seeds of division had been prevented ; but as the case stood, it was next to a miracle that the reformation had not fallen back into the hands of the papists ; and if some of the *Puritans* had not complied for the present, in hopes of the removal of these grievances, in more settled times, this would have been the sad consequence ; for it was impossible, with all the assistance they could get from both universities, to fill up the parochial vacancies with men of learning and character. Many churches were disfurnished for a considerable time, and not a few mechanics, altogether as unlearned as the most remarkable of those that were ejected, were preferred to dignities and livings, who being disregarded by the people, brought great discredit on the reformation, while others of the first rank for learning, piety and usefulness in their functions, were laid by in silence. There was little or no preaching all over the country ; the Bishop of *Bangor* writes, that " he had but two preachers in all his diocese."\* It was enough if the parson could read the service, and sometimes an homily. The bishops were sensible of the calamity ; but instead of opening the door a little wider, to let in some of the more conscientious and zealous reformers, they admitted the meanest and most illiterate who would come up to the terms of the law ; and published a second book of homilies for their further assistance.

It is hard to say at this distance of time, how far the bishops were to blame for their servile and abject compliance with the Queen ; yet one is ready to think, that those who had drunk so deep of the cup of persecution, and had seen the dreadful effects of it, in the fiery trial of their brethren the martyrs, should have insisted as one man, upon a latitude for their conscientious brethren in points of indifference ; whereas their zeal ran in a quite different channel ; for when the spiritual sword was put into their hands, they were too forward in brandishing it over the heads of others, and even

\* M. S. p, 896.

to out run the laws, by suspending, depriving, fining, and imprisoning men of true learning and piety, popular preachers, declared enemies of popery and superstition, and of the same faith with themselves, who were fearful of a sinful compliance with things that had been abused to idolatry.

All the exiles were now come home, except a few of the Puritan stamp that stayed at *Geneva* to finish their translation of the Bible begun in the late reign. The persons concerned in it were *Miles Coverdale*, *Christopher Goodman*, *John Knox*, *Anthony Gibbs*, *Thomas Sampson*, *William Cole* of *C.C.C. Oxon*, and *William Wittingham*: They compared *Tyndal's* old *English Bible* first with the *Hebrew*, and then with the best modern translations; they divided the chapters into verses, which the former translators had not done; they added some figures, maps and tables, and published the whole in 1560, at *Geneva*, in quarto, printed by *Rowland Harle*, with a dedication to the Queen, and an epistle to the reader, dated April 10th, which are left out in the later editions, because they touched somewhat severely upon certain ceremonies retained in the church of *England*, which they excited her majesty to remove, as having a popish aspect; and because the translators had published marginal notes, some of which were thought to affect the Queen's prerogative, and to allow the subject to resist wicked and tyrannical Kings; therefore when the proprietors petitioned the secretary of state for reprinting it in *England* for public use, in the year 1565, it was refused, and the impression stopt, till after the death of the archbishop in the year 1576. § The author of the *troubles at Frankfort*, published in the year 1575, complains that "If the *Geneva Bible* be such as  
"no enemy of God can justly find fault with, then may  
"men marvel that such a work, being so profitable, should  
"find so small favor, as not to be printed again."\* The exceptionable notes were on *Exodus* xv. 19, where disobedience to Kings is allowed. 2 *Chron.* xix. 16, where *Asa* is censured for stopping short at the deposing of his mother, and not executing her. *Rev.* ix. 3, where the locusts that come out of the smোক are said to be *heretics*, *false teachers*, *worldly*, *subtle prelates*, *with monks*, *friars*,

§ Life of Parker, p. 206.

\* Hickman against Heylin, p. 179.

*cardinals, patriarchs, archbishops, bishops, doctors, batchelors, and masters.* But notwithstanding these, and some other exceptionable passages in the notes, the *Geneva Bible* was reprinted in the years 1576 and 1579, and was in such repute, that some who had been curious to search into the number of its editions say, that by the Queen's own printers it was printed above thirty times. However, for a present supply *Tyndal* and *Coverdale's* translation printed in the reign of King *Henry VIII.* was revised and published for the use of the church of *England*, till the bishops should publish a more correct one; which they had now undertaken.

Together with the exiles, the *Dutch* and *German* Protestants, who in the reign of King *Edward VI.* had the church in *Austin Fryars* assigned them for a place of worship, returned to *England* with *John a Lasco*, a *Polonian*, their superintendant. They petitioned the Queen to restore them to their church and privileges, which her majesty declined for some time, because she would not admit of a *stranger* to be superintendant of a church within her bishop's diocese. To take off this objection *Alasco* resigned, and the people chose *Grindal* bishop of *London* their superintendant, and then the Queen confirmed their charter, which they still enjoy, though they never chose another superintendant after him. The *French* protestants were also restored to their church in *Threadneedle-street*, which they yet enjoy.

The reformation took place this year in *Scotland*, by the preaching of Mr. *John Knox*, a bold and courageous Scots divine, who shunned no danger, nor feared the face of any man in the cause of religion. He had been a preacher in *England* in King *Edward's* time, then an exile at *Frankfort*, and at last one of the ministers of the *English* congregation at *Geneva*, from whence he arrived at *Edinburgh*, May 2d, 1559, being 45 years of age, and settled at *Perth*, but was a sort of evangelist over the whole kingdom. He maintained this position, *That if Kings and Princes refused to reform religion, inferior magistrates and the people being directed and instructed in the truth by their preachers, may lawfully reform within their own bounds themselves; and if all or the far greatest part be enlightened by the truth, they may make a public reformation.* Upon this principle the Scots reformers humbly petitioned the

Queen Dowager, regent for her daughter [*Mary*] now in *France*, for liberty to assemble publicly or privately for prayer, for reading and explaining the holy scriptures, and administering the sacraments of baptism and the Lord's Supper in the vulgar tongue ; and the latter in both kinds, according to Christ's institution. This reasonable petition not being admitted, certain noblemen and barons formed an association, resolving to venture their lives and fortunes in this cause ; and they encouraged as many of the curates of the parishes within their districts as were willing to read the prayers and lessons in *English*, but not to expound the scriptures till God should dispose the Queen to grant them liberty. This being executed at *Perth* and the neighboring parts without disturbance, the association spread, and was signed by great numbers even in the capital city of *Edinburgh*. Upon this they presented another petition, representing to the regent the unseasonableness of her rigor against the Protestants, considering their numbers ; but she was deaf to all moderate councils. At the meeting of the parliament, the *congregation*, or heads of the association, presented the regent with sundry articles relating to liberty of conscience, to lay before the house, which she suppressed, and would not suffer to be debated ; whereupon they drew up the following protestation, and desired it might be recorded : “ That since they could not procure  
“ a reformation, agreeable to the word of God, from the  
“ government, that it might be lawful for them to follow  
“ the dictates of their consciences. That none that joined  
“ with them in the profession of the true faith should be  
“ liable to any civil penalties, or incur any damages for so  
“ doing. They protest, that if any tumults arise on the  
“ score of religion, the imputation ought not to lie upon  
“ them who now humbly entreat for a regular remedy ; and  
“ that in all other things they will be most loyal subjects.” The regent acquainted the court of *France* with the situation of affairs, and received an order to suffer no other religion but the *Roman Catholic* to be professed, with a promise of large supplies of forces to support her. Upon this she summoned the magistrates of *Perth*, and the reformed ministers, to appear before her at *Stirling*, with a

design to have them banished by a solemn decree. The ministers appeared accordingly, being attended by vast crouds of people armed and prepared to defend them, agreeably to the custom of *Scotland*, which allowed criminals to come to their trials attended with their relations and friends. The regent, astonished at the sight, prayed *John Areskin* to persuade the multitude to retire, and gave her *parole* that nothing should be decreed against the ministers; but they were no sooner gone quietly home than she condemned them for non-appearance.

This news being brought to *Perth*, the burghers, encouraged by great numbers of the nobility and neighboring gentry, formed an army of 7000 men under the command of the Earl of *Glencairne*, for the defence of their ministers against the regent, who was marching with an army of *French* and *Scots* to drive them out of their country; but being informed of the preparation of the burghers she consented to a treaty, by which it was agreed, that she should be received with honor into the city, and be suffered to lodge in it some days, provided she would promise to make no alteration in religion, but refer all to the parliament; the *Scots* forces on both sides to be dismissed: but the reformed had no sooner disbanded their army, and opened their gates to the regent, than she broke all the articles, set up the mass, and left a garrison of *French* in the town, resolving to make it a place of arms. Upon this notorious breach of treaty, as well as the regent's declaration, that *promises were not to be kept with heretics*, the congregations of *Fyfe*, *Perth*, *Dundee*, *Angus*, *Mearns* and *Montrose*, raised a little army, and signed an engagement to assist each other in maintaining the reformation with their lives and fortunes. Mr. *Knox* encouraged them by his sermons; and the populace being warmed, pulled down altars and images, plundered the monasteries, and dismantled the churches of their superstitious ornaments. The regent marched against them at the head of 2000 *French*, and 2000 *Scots* in *French* pay; but being afraid to venture a battle she retreated to *Dunbar*, and the confederates made themselves masters of *Perth*, *Scone*, *Stirling*, and *Lithgoe*. At length a truce was concluded, by which the ministers of the congregation had liberty to



preach in the pulpits of *Edinburgh* for the present ; but the regent, having soon after received large recruits from *France* repossessed herself of *Leith*, and ordered it to be fortified, and stored with all necessary provisions ; the confederates desired her to demolish the works, alledging it to be a violation of the truce ; but she commanded them upon their allegiance to be quiet and lay down their arms ; and marching directly to *Edinburgh*, she obliged them to desert the city and retire to *Stirling*, whither the *French* troops followed them, and dispersed them into the mountains. In this low condition they published a proclamation, discharging the regent of her authority, and threatening to treat as enemies all that obeyed her orders ; but not being able to stand their ground, they threw themselves into the arms of Queen *Elizabeth* ; who being sensible of the danger of the protestant religion, and of her own crown, if *Scotland* should become entirely popish, under the government of the Queen of *France*, who claimed the crown of *England*, entered into an alliance to support the confederate protestants in their religion and civil liberties, and signed the treaty at *Berwick*, February 27, 1560.

Among other articles of this treaty it was stipulated, that the Queen should send forces into *Scotland*, to continue there till *Scotland* was restored to its liberties and privileges, and the *French* driven out of the kingdom. Accordingly her majesty sent an army of 7000 foot, and 1200 horse, which joined the confederate army of like force.\* This army was afterwards reinforced by a large detachment from the *northern marches*, under the command of the duke of *Norfolk* ; after which they took the city of *Leith*, and obliged the queen regent to shut herself up in the castle of *Edinburgh*, where she died June 10th. The *French* offered to restore *Calais*, if the Queen would recall her forces from *Scotland* ; but she refused. At length the troubles of *France* requiring all their forces at home, plenipotentiaries were sent into *Scotland* to treat with *Elizabeth* about withdrawing the *French* forces out of that kingdom, and restoring the *Scots* to their parliamentary government. The treaty was concluded the beginning of

\* Rapin, vol. viii. p. 271.



August, whereby a general amnesty was granted; the *English* and *French* forces were to withdraw in two months, and a parliament to be called with all convenient speed, to settle the affairs of religion and the kingdom; but *Francis* and *Mary* refused to ratify it.

Before the parliament met *Francis* died, and left *Mary* queen of *Scots* a young widow. The late treaty not being ratified, the parliament had no direct authority from the crown, but assembled by virtue of the late treaty, and received the following petitions from the barons and gentlemen concerning religion :

1. “That the doctrines of the *Roman* church should be suppressed by act of parliament, in those exceptionable points therein mentioned.

2. “That the discipline of the ancient church be revived.

3. “That the pope’s usurped authority be discharged.”

All which was voted, and the ministers were desired to draw up a confession of faith, which they expressed in twenty-five articles, agreeable to the sentiments of *Calvin*, and the foreign reformers. The confession being read in parliament was carried but with three dissenting voices; the popish prelates offering nothing in defence of their religion.

By another act the pope’s authority was abolished, and reading mass was made punishable, for the first offence with loss of goods; for the second banishment; and for the third death. This was carrying matters too far; for to judge men to death for matters of mere conscience that do not affect the government, is not to be justified. “To affirm that we are in the right, and others in the wrong (says Mr. *Collier*\*) is foreign to the point; for every one that suffers for religion thinks himself in the right, and therefore ought not to be destroyed for his sincerity, for the prejudices of education, or the want of a better understanding, unless his opinions have mutiny and treason in them, and shake the foundations of civil society.”

Upon the breaking up of the parliament a commission was directed to Mr. *Knox*, *Willock*, *Spotiswood*, and some other divines, to draw up a scheme of discipline for the church, which they did pretty much upon the *Geneva* plan,

\* *Collier’s Eccl. Hist.* p. 468.

only admitting superintendants in the room of bishops, and rejecting imposition of hands in the ordination of ministers, because that miracles were ceased, which they apprehended to accompany that ceremony. Their words are these :\*

“ Other ceremonies than the public approbation of the people, and declaration of the chief minister, that the person there presented is appointed to serve the church, we cannot approve ; for albeit the apostles used *imposition* of hands, yet seeing the miracle is ceased, the using of the ceremony we judge not necessary.” They also appointed ten or twelve superintendants to plant and erect kirks, and to appoint ministers in such counties as should be committed to their care, where there were none already. But then they add, these men must not live like idle bishops, but must preach themselves twice or thrice a week, and visit their districts every three or four months, to inspect the lives and behavior of the parochial ministers, to redress grievances, or bring them before an assembly of the kirk. The superintendants were to be chosen by the ministers, and elders of the several provinces ; and to be deprived by them for misbehavior. The assemblies of the kirk were divided into classical, provincial, and national, in which last the dernier resort of all kirk jurisdiction was lodged.

When this plan of discipline was laid before the estates, it was referred to further consideration, and had not a parliamentary sanction, as the reformers expected. But after the recess of the parliament several noblemen, barons, and chief gentlemen of the nation, met together at the instance of Mr. Knox, and signed it, resolving to abide by the new discipline, till it should be confirmed or altered by parliament. From this time the old hierarchical government was disused, and the kirk was governed by general, provincial, and classical assemblies, with superintendants, though there was no law for it, till some years after.

To return to *England*. The popish bishops behaved rudely towards the Queen and her new bishops. They admonished her Majesty by letter to return to the religion of her ancestors, and threatened her with the censures of the

\* First Book of Discipline, p. 81.

church, in case she refused. This not prevailing. pope *Pius IV*th himself exhorted her by letter, dated May 5, 1570, to reject evil counsellors, and obey his fatherly admonitions, assuring her, that if she would return to the bosom of the church, he would receive her with like affectionate love as the father in the gospel received his son. *Parpalio*, the nuncio that was sent with this letter, offered in the pope's name to confirm the *English* liturgy, to allow of the sacrament in both kinds, and to disannul the sentence against her mother's marriage; but the Queen would not part with her *supremacy*.§ Another nuncio, the Abbot *Martmegues*, was sent this summer with other proposals, but was stopt in *Flanders* and forbid to set foot in the realm. The Emperor and other *Roman* Catholic princes, interceded with the Queen to grant her subjects of their religion churches to officiate in after their own manner, and to keep up a separate communion; but her Majesty was too politic to trust them; upon which they entered upon more desperate measures, as will be seen hereafter.†

Archbishop *Parker* visited his diocese this summer, and found it in a deplorable condition; the major part of the beneficed clergy being either mechanics or mass priests in disguise; many churches were shut up, and in those that were open not a sermon was to be heard in some counties within the compass of twenty miles; *the people perished for lack of knowledge*, while men who were capable of instructing them were kept out of the church, or at least denied all preferment in it. But the Queen was not so much concerned for this, as for maintaining her *supremacy*; *his grace* therefore, by her order, drew up a form of subscription to be made by all that held any ecclesiastical preferment,‡ wherein they acknowledge and confess, “ That the restoring the supremacy to the crown, and the abolishing all foreign power; “ as well as the administration of the sacraments according “ to the book of common prayer, and the Queen's injunc-

§ *Foxes and Firebrands*, part, iii. p. 15, 18.

¶ *Elizabeth*, as Dr. *Warner* expresses it, was not to be won with either “ threats or entreaties to part with her supremacy; of which she was as “ fond as the King her father.” ED.

† *Strype's Ann.* p. 408.

‡ *Life of Parker*, p. 77.

“tions, is agreeable to the word of God and the practice of “the primitive church.” Which most that favored the reformation, as well as great numbers of time-serving priests, complied with ; but some refused and were deprived.

The next thing the archbishop undertook was, settling the kalendar, and the order of lessons to be read throughout the year, which his *grace*, as one of the ecclesiastical commissioners, procured letters under the great seal to reform.\* Before this time it was left to the discretion of the minister to change the chapters to be read in course for some others that were more for edification ; and even after this new regulation the bishops recommended it ; for in the preface to the second book of homilies published in the year 1564, there is a serious *admonition* to all ministers ecclesiastical, to be diligent and faithful in their high functions ; in which, among others, is this remarkable instruction to the curates or ministers.† “ If one or other chapter of the Old Testament falls in order to be read on Sundays or holidays, it “ shall be well done to spend your time to consider well of “ some other chapter in the New Testament of more edification, for which it may be changed. By this your prudence and diligence in your office will appear, so that your “ people may have cause to glorify God for you, and be “ the readier to embrace your labors.” If this indulgence had been continued, one considerable difficulty to the *Puritans* had been removed, viz. their obligation to read the *Apocrypha* lessons ; and surely there could be no great danger in this, when the minister was confined within the canon of scripture.

But this liberty was not long permitted, though, the *admonition* being never legally reversed, archbishop *Abbot* was of opinion, that it was in force in his time, and ought to have been allowed the clergy throughout the course of this reign.‡ His words are these, in his book entitled, *Hill's Reasons unmask'd*, p. 317. “ It is not only permitted to “ the minister, but recommended to him, if wisely and quietly he do read canonical scripture, where the *Apocrypha* “ upon good judgment seemeth not so fit ; or any chapter

\* M. S. penes me, p. 88.

† Life of Parker, p. 84.

‡ Strype's Annals, p. 417.

“of the canonical may be conceived not to have in it so much edification before the simple, as some other parts of the same canonical scriptures may be thought to have.” But the governing bishops were of another mind, they would trust nothing to the discretion of the minister, nor vary a tittle from the act of uniformity.

Hitherto there were few or no peculiar lessons for holidays and particular Sundays, but the chapters of the Old and New Testament were read in course, without any interruption or variation ; so it is in the common prayer-book of 1549, *Fol.*‡ In the second edition of that book under King Edward VI. there were proper lessons for some few holidays, but none for Sundays ; but now there was a table of proper lessons for the whole year, thus entitled, *Proper lessons to be read for the first lesson, both at morning and evening prayer, on the Sundays throughout the year ; and for some also the second lessons.* It begins with the Sundays of *Advent*, and appoints *Isa. i.* for mattens, and *Isa. ii.* for even-song. There is another table for proper lessons on holidays, beginning with *St. Andrew* ; and a third table for proper *psalms* on certain days, as *Christmas, Easter, Ascension, Whitsunday, &c.* At the end of this common prayer-book, printed by *Jug and Cawood*, 1560, were certain prayers for private and family use, which in the later editions are either shortened or left out. Mr. *Strype* cannot account for this conduct, but says, it was great pity that the people were disfurnished of those assistances they so much wanted ; but the design seems to have been, to confine all devotion to the church, and to give no liberty to clergy or laity, even in their closets or families, to vary from the public forms. An admonition was published at the same time, and set up in all churches, forbidding all parsons under the degree of a master of arts, to preach or expound the scriptures, or to innovate or alter any thing, or use any other rite but only what is set forth by authority ; *these* were only to read the homilies.\* And whereas by reason of the scarcity of ministers, the bishops had admitted into the ministry sundry artificers, and others not brought up to learning, and some that were of base occupation, it was now desired, that

‡ *Life of Parker*, p. 88.

\* *Life of Parker*, p. 90.

no more tradesmen should be ordained, till the convocation met and took some better order in this affair.

But it was impossible to comply with this admonition ; for so many churches in country towns and villages were vacant, that in some places there was no preaching, nor so much as reading an homily, for many months together. In sundry parishes it was hard to find persons to baptize or bury the dead ; the bishops therefore were obliged to admit of pluralists, non-residents, civilians, and to ordain such as offered themselves, how meanly soever they were qualified, while others who had some scruples about conformity, stood by unprovided for ; the learned and industrious Mr. *John Fox* the martyrologist was of this number, for in a letter to his friend Dr. *Humphreys*, lately chosen president of *Magdalen College, Oxon*, he writes thus, “ I still wear  
“ the same clothes, and remain in the same sordid condi-  
“ tion that *England* received me in, when I first came home  
“ out of *Germany*, nor do I change my degree or order,  
“ which is that of the *mendicants* ; or if you will, of the  
“ *friars preachers*.” Thus pleasantly did this grave and learned divine reproach the ingratitude of the times. The Puritans complained of these hardships to the Queen, but there was no remedy.

The two universities could give little or no assistance to the reformers ; for the professors and tutors, being of the popish religion, had trained up the youth in their own principles for the last six or seven years. Some of the heads of colleges were displaced this summer, and Protestants put in their room ; but it was a long time before they could supply the necessities of the church. There were only three protestant preachers in the university of *Oxford* in the year 1568, and they were all Puritans, viz. Dr. *Humphreys*, Mr. *Kingsmill*, and Mr. *Sampson* ; and though by the next year the clergy were so modelled, that the bishops procured a convocation that favored the reformation, yet they were such poor scholars that many of them could hardly write their names.

Indeed the reformation went heavily on. The Queen could scarcely be persuaded to part with images, nor consent to the marriage of the clergy ; for she commanded that

no head or member of any collegiate or cathedral church, should bring a wife or any other woman within the precincts of it, to abide in the same, on pain of forfeiture of all ecclesiastical promotions :\* And her majesty would have absolutely forbid the marriage of all her clergy, if Secretary *Cecil* had not briskly interposed. She repented that she had made any married men bishops ; and told the archbishop in anger, that she intended to publish other injunctions, which his *grace* understood to be in favor of *Popery* ; upon which the archbishop wrote to the secretary, that he was sorry the Queen's mind was so turned ; but in such a case he should think it his duty to *obey God rather than man*. Upon the whole, the Queen was so far from improving her brother's reformation, that she often repented she had gone so far. §

Her majesty's second parliament met the 12th of January 1562, in which a remarkable act was passed, *for assurance of the Queen's royal power over all states and subjects within her dominions*. It was a confirmation of the act of supremacy. “ All persons that by writing, printing, preaching or teaching, maintained the pope's authority within this realm, incurred a præmunire for the first offence, and the second was high treason. The oath of supremacy was to be taken by all in holy orders, by all graduates in the universities, lawyers, schoolmasters, and all other officers of any court whatsoever ; and by all knights, citizens and burghesses in parliament.”† But the archbishop by the Queen's order wrote to the bishops, not to tender the oath but in case of necessity, and never to press it a second time without his special direction ; so that none of the popish bishops or divines were burdened with it, except *Bonner* and one or two more.

\* Life of Parker, p. 107, 109.

§ Of this Dr. *Warner* gives the following instances : When the dean of St. Paul's in a sermon at court, spoke with some dislike of the sign of the cross, her majesty called aloud to him from her closet, commanding him to desist from that ungodly digression, and to return to his text. At another time, when one of her chaplains preached a sermon on Good-Friday, in defence of the real presence, which without guessing at her sentiments, he would scarce have ventured on, she openly gave him thanks for his pains and piety. Ecclesiastical History, vol. ii. p. 427. Ed.

† Life of Parker, p. 426.



The convocation was opened at *St. Paul's* the day after the meeting of the parliament. Mr. *Day*, provost of *Eaton*, preached the sermon, and *Alexander Nowel*, dean of *St. Paul's*, was chosen prolocutor. Her majesty having directed letters of licence to review the doctrine and discipline of the church, they began with the doctrine, and reduced the 42 articles of King *Edward VI.* to the number of 39, as at present, the following articles being omitted : Article 39. *The resurrection of the dead is not passed already.* Art. 40. *The souls of men deceased do neither perish with their bodies nor sleep idly.* Art. 41. *Of the millenarians.* Art. 42. *All men not to be saved at last.* Some of the other articles underwent a new division, two being joined into one, and in other parts one is divided into two ; but there is no remarkable variation in the doctrine.†

It has been warmly disputed, whether the first clause of the 20th art. *The church has power to decree rites and ceremonies, and authority in controversies of faith*, was a part of the article which passed the synod, and was afterwards confirmed by parliament in the year 1571. It is certain that it is not among King *Edward's* articles ; nor is it in that original manuscript of the articles subscribed by both houses of convocation with their own hands, still preserved in *Bene't* college library among the rest of archbishop *Parker's* papers. The records of this convocation were burnt in the fire of *London*, so that there is no appealing to them ; but archbishop *Laud* says, that he sent to the public records in his office, and the notary returned him the 20th article with the clause ; and that afterwards he found the book of articles subscribed by the lower house of convoca-

† The eighth article of *Edward VI.* had a clause imputing to the Anabaptists as well as the Pelagians, the opinion that original sin consisted in following of Adam : In this revisal of the articles the part of the clause charging the Anabaptists with that opinion was left out. That article concerning baptism stated also the grounds of administering that rite to infants in this manner : “ *The custom of the church for baptizing young children is both to be commended, and by all means to be retained in the church.* ” It seems by this that the first reformers did not found the practice of infant baptism upon scripture ; but took it only as a commendable custom, that had been used in the christian church, and therefore ought to be retained. Crosby's History of the English Baptists, vol. i. p. 54. Ed.

tion in 1571, with the clause. *Heylin* says, that he consulted the records of convocation, and that the contested clause was in the book ; and yet *Fuller*, a much fairer writer, who had the liberty of perusing the same records, declares he could not decide the controversy.† The fact is this : The statute of 1571, expressly confirms *English* articles comprised in an imprinted book, entitled, *Articles, whereupon it was agreed by the archbishops and bishops of both provinces, and the whole clergy in the convocation holden at London in the year 1562, according to the computation of the church of England ; for the avoiding diversity of opinions, and for the establishing of consent touching true religion: Put forth by the Queen's authority.* Now there were only two editions of the articles in *English* before this time, both which have the same numerical title with that transcribed in the statute, and both (*says my author*) want the clause of the church's power. But *Mr. Strype*, in his life of archbishop *Parker*, says, that the clause is to be found in two printed copies of 1563, which I believe very few have seen. § However, till the original *MS.* abovementioned can be set aside, which is carefully marked as to the number of pages, and the number of lines and articles in each page, it seems more probable that the clause was some way or other surreptitiously inserted by those who were friends of the church's power, than struck out by the *Puritans*, as *Laud* and his followers have published to the world ; for it is hard to suppose, that a foul copy as this is pretended to be, should be so carefully marked and subscribed by every member of the synod with their own hands, and yet not be perfect ; but 'tis not improbable that the notary or register, who transcribed the articles into the convocation book, with the names of them that sub-

† Church History, b. ix. p. 74.

§ The celebrated *Mr. Anthony Collins* discussed the question concerning the genuineness of this clause, in several publications ; and professed to demonstrate that it was not a part of the articles agreed on by the convocations of 1562 and 1571. His first pamphlet was entitled "Priestcraft in Perfection." Its appearance gave a general alarm to the clergy ; and a variety of pamphlets, sermons, and larger works, in reply to it, issued forth from the press. The two principal of which *Mr Collins* answered in 1724, in "An historical and critical essay on the 39 articles of the church of *England.*" See *British Biography*, vol. ix. p. 275, 278, &c. Ed.

scribed, might by direction of his superiors privately insert it; and so it might appear in the records of 1571, though it was not in the original draught. The controversy is of no great moment to the present clergy, because it is certain, the clause was a part of the article confirmed by parliament at the restoration of King *Charles II.* 1662; though how far it was consistent with the act of supremacy, which lodged the ultimate power of determining matters of faith and discipline in the crown, I must leave with the reader. The synod itself seemed to be apprehensive of the danger of a *Præmunire* and therefore after their names these words were cautiously added, *Ista subscriptio facta est ab omnibus sub hac Protestatione, quod nihil statuunt in præjudicium cujusquam senatus consulti, sed tantum supplicem libellum petitiones suas continentem humiliter offerunt:* i. e. 'This subscription is made by all with this protestation, that they determine nothing in prejudice of any act of parliament, but only humbly offer this little book to the Queen or parliament, containing their requests and petitions.

The articles were concluded, and the subscription finished in the *Chapter-House* of *St. Paul's*, Jan. 31, 1562, in the 9th session of convocation. § All the bishops subscribed, except *Glocester* and *Rochester*, who I believe were absent. Of the Lower House there were upwards of an hundred hands; but whatever their learning was, many of them wrote so ill that it was hard to read their names. Among the subscribers are several of the learned exiles, who were dissatisfied with the constitution; as, the Reverend Mr. *Beseley, Watts, Cole, Mullyns, Sampson, Pullan, Spencer, Wisdom, Nowel, Heton, Beaumont, Pedder, Lever, Pownal, Wilson, Croley*, and others. But the articles did not pass into a law, and become a part of the establishment, till nine years after, though some of the more rigid bishops of the ecclesiastical commission insisted upon subscription from this time.

The next considerable affair that came under debate, was the rites and ceremonies of the church; and here, first bishop *Sandys* brought in a paper of advice to move her majesty,

§ Strype's Ann. p. 329.

“ That private baptism, and baptism by women, may be  
 “ taken out of the common prayer-book. That the cross  
 “ in baptism may be disallowed as needless and supersti-  
 “ tious. That commissioners may be appointed to reform  
 “ the ecclesiastical laws.”

Another paper was presented to the house with the fol-  
 lowing requests, signed by thirty-three names.

“ That the psalms may be sung distinctly by the whole  
 “ congregation ; and that organs may be laid aside. That  
 “ none may baptize but ministers ; and that they may leave  
 “ off the sign of the cross. That at the ministration of the  
 “ communion the posture of *kneeling* may be left indifferent.  
 “ That the use of copes and surplices may be taken away ;  
 “ so that all ministers in their ministry use a grave, comely,  
 “ and side garment, as they commonly do in preaching.  
 “ That ministers be not compelled to wear such gowns and  
 “ caps, as the enemies of Christ’s gospel have chosen to  
 “ be the special array of their priesthood. That the words  
 “ in the 33d article, concerning the punishment of those  
 “ who do not in all things conform to the public order  
 “ about ceremonies, may be mitigated. That all the saints  
 “ days, festivals, and holidays, bearing the name of a crea-  
 “ ture, may be abrogated ; or at least a commemoration on-  
 “ ly of them reserved by sermons, homilies, or common  
 “ prayer, for the better instructing the people in history ;  
 “ and that after service men may go to work.”

I have subjoined the names of the subscribers to this  
 paper, that the reader may take notice what considerable  
 persons they were for learning and ability, as well as num-  
 bers, that desired a further reformation in the church.†

† <i>Alexander Nowel</i> , dean of St. Paul’s, and prolocutor	<i>Lever</i> , archdeacon of Coventry
<i>Sampson</i> , dean of Christ Church, Oxon	<i>Bemont</i> , archdeacon of Huntingdon
<i>Lawrence Nowel</i> , dean of Litchfield	<i>Spencer</i> , archdeacon of Chichester
<i>Ellis</i> , dean of Hereford	<i>Croley</i> , archdeacon of Hereford
<i>Day</i> , provost of Eaton	<i>Heton</i> , archdeacon of Gloucester
<i>Dodds</i> , dean of Exon	<i>Rogers</i> , archdeacon of St. Asaph
<i>Mullins</i> , archdeacon of London	<i>Kemp</i> , archdeacon of St. Albans
<i>Pullan</i> , archdeacon of Colchester	<i>Prat</i> , archdeacon of St. Davids
	<i>Longland</i> , archdeacon of Bucks
	<i>Watts</i> , archdeacon of Middlesex.
	<i>Calphill</i> .

This paper not being approved, another was brought in- to the Lower House, February 13, containing the following articles, to be approved or rejected.\*

“That all Sundays in the year, and principal feasts of  
 “Christ, be kept *holidays* ; and that all other holidays be  
 “abrogated. That in all parish churches the minister in  
 “the common prayer turn his face towards the people, and  
 “there read distinctly the service appointed, that the peo-  
 “ple may hear and be edified. That in baptism the cross  
 “may be omitted, as tending to superstition. Forasmuch  
 “as divers communicants are not able to kneel for age and  
 “sickness at the sacrament, and others *kneel* and *knock*  
 “superstitiously, that therefore the order of kneeling may  
 “be left to the discretion of the ordinary. That it be suf-  
 “ficient for the minister in time of saying divine service,  
 “and ministering of the sacraments (once) to wear a sur-  
 “plice ; and that no minister say service, or minister the  
 “sacraments, but in a comely garment or habit. That the  
 “use of organs be removed.”

These propositions were the subjects of warm debates ; some approving and others rejecting them. In conclusion, the House being divided, it appeared upon the scrutiny, that the majority of those present were for approving them, 43 against 35 ; but when the proxies were counted, the scale was turned ; those who were for the propositions being 58, and those against them 59 ; so that by the majority of one single voice, and that not a person present to hear the de-

*Calfkil,*  
*Walker,*  
*Saul,*  
*Wiburn,*  
*Savage,*  
*W. Bonner,*  
*Arys,*  
*Wilson,*  
*Nevynson,*  
*Tremayne,*  
*Benyger,*  
*Roberts,*  
*Roore,*  
*Hills,*

Proctors of the

Church of Oxon  
 Clergy of Suffolk  
 Dean and Chapter of Gloucester  
 Church of Rochester  
 Clergy of Gloucester  
 Church of Somerset  
 Church of Wigorn  
 Church of Wigorn, Worcester  
 Clergy of Canterbury  
 Clergy of Exeter  
 Dean and Chapter of Winton  
 Clergy of Norwich  
 Dean and Chapter of Westminster  
 Clergy of Oxon.

\* Strype's Ann, p. 337.

bates, but a proxy, it was determined to make no alteration in the ceremonies, nor any abatements of the present establishment.\*

I mention these names, not to detract from the merit of those who appeared for the present establishment; for many of them would have voted for the alterations, had they not been awed by their superiors, or afraid of a præmunire; whereas, if the contrary vote had prevailed, it was only to address the Queen or parliament, to alter the service-book in those particulars: but I mention them to shew, that the voice of half the clergy in convocation and of no less numbers out of it, were for amendments, or at least a latitude in the observation of the rites and ceremonies of the church. Indeed it was very unkind, that when such considerable abatements had been made in favor of the *Roman Catholics*, nothing should be indulged to those of the same faith, who had suffered in the same cause with themselves, especially when the controversy was about points which one party apprehended to be sinful, and the other acknowledged to be indifferent. Sundry other papers and petitions were drawn

\* The names of the 43 that approved of the above articles were,

Dean Nowel, prolocutor, St. Paul's	Mr. Bradbridge, cancellar Cicest.
Mr. Archdeacon Lever, Coventry	Mr. Hills, proct. cler. Oxon
Dean Pedder, Wigorniensis	Mr. Savage, proct. cler. Glouc.
Mr. Archdeacon Watts, Middlesex	Mr. Archdeacon Pullan, Colchest.
Dean Nowel, of Litchfield	Mr. Wilson, proct. Wigorn.
Mr. Archd'n Spencer, Cicestrensis	Mr. Burton
Mr. Besely, proct. cler. Cant.	Mr. Archdeacon Bemont, Huntingd.
Mr. Nevynson, proct. cler. Cant.	Mr. Wiburne, proct. eccl. Roff.
Mr. Bower, proct. cler. Somers.	Mr. Day, prov. Eaton
Mr. Ebdon, proct. cler. Wint.	Mr. Reeve, proct. dec. cap. Westm.
Mr. Archdeacon Longland, Bucks	Mr. Roberts proct. cler. Norw.
Mr. Lancaster, thesaurar. Sarum	Mr. Calphill, proct. cler. Lond. and Oxon
Mr. Archdeacon Weston, Lewensis	Mr. Godwin, proct. cler. Linc.
Mr. Archdeacon Wisdom, Eliensis	Mr. Archdeacon Prat, St. David's
Mr. Saul proct. dec. cap. Glouc.	Mr. Tremayn, proct. cler. Exon
Mr. Walker, proct. Suffolk	Mr. Archdeacon, Heton, Glouc.
Mr. Becon	Mr. Archdeacon Kemp, St. Albans
Mr. Proctor, proct. cler. Sussex	Mr. Avys, proct. eccl. Wigorn.
Mr. Coccrel, proct. cler. Surrey	Mr. Renyger, proct. dec. cap. Wint.
Mr. Archdeacon Tod, Bedf.	Mr. Dean Elis, Hereford,
Mr. Archdeacon Croley, Hereford	Mr. Dean Sampson, Oxon.
Mr. Soreby, proct. cler. Cicest.	



up, by the lower house of convocation, in favor of a further reformation, but nothing passed into a law.

The church having carried their point against the *Puritans* in convocation, we are now to see what use they made of their victory. The plague being in *London* and several parts of the country this summer, put a little stop to their zeal for uniformity at present; some were indulged, but none preferred that scrupled the habits. In proof of this we may produce the examples of two of the worthiest and most learned divines of the age; one was father *Miles Coverdale*, formerly bishop of *Exeter*, who with *Tyndal* and *Rogers* first translated the bible into *English* after *Wickliffe*. This prelate was born in *Yorkshire*, bred at *Cambridge*, and proceeded doctor in divinity in the university of *Tubing*. Returning to *England* in the reign of King *Edward*, he was made bishop of *Exeter*, 1554.\* Upon the accession of Queen *Mary* he was imprisoned, and narrowly escaped the fire; but by the intercession of the King of *Denmark* was sent over into that country, and coming back at her death, assisted at the consecration of Queen *Elizabeth's* first archbishop of *Canterbury*; yet because he could not comply with the ceremonies and habits he was neglected, and had no preferment. This reverend man (says Mr. *Strype*†) being now old and poor, *Grindal* bishop of *London* gave him the small living of *St. Magnus*, at the *Bridge* foot, where he preached quietly about two years; but not coming up to the conformity required, he was persecuted thence, and obliged to relinquish his parish a little before his death, which happened May 20, 1567, at the age of 81.§ He was a celebrated preacher, admired and followed by all the Puritans; but the act of uniformity brought down his reverend hairs with sorrow to the grave. He was buried in *St. Bartholomew's* behind the *Exchange*, and was attended to his grave with vast crowds of people.

The other was that venerable man Mr. *John Fox*, the martyrologist, a grave, learned, and painful divine, and exile for religion, who employed his time abroad in writing the acts and monuments of that church which would hard-

\* Fuller's Worthies, b. iii. p. 198.

† Ann. p. 405.

§ Life of Parker, p. 149.



ly receive him into her bosom, and in collecting materials relating to the martyrdom of those that suffered for religion in the reigns of King *Henry VIII.* and Queen *Mary*; all which he published first in *Latin* for the benefit of foreigners, and then in *English* for the service of his own country, in the year 1561. No book ever gave such a mortal wound to popery as this; it was dedicated to the Queen, and was in such high reputation, that it was ordered to be set up in the churches; where it raised in the people an invincible horror and detestation of that religion which had shed so much innocent blood. Queen *Elizabeth* had a particular esteem for Mr. *Fox*; but this excellent and laborious divine, though reduced to very great poverty and want, had no preferment in the church, because he scrupled the habits, till at length, by the intercession of some great friend, he obtained a prebend in the church of *Sarum*, which he made a shift to hold till his death, though not without some disturbance from the bishops.\*

The parochial clergy, both in city and country, had an aversion to the habits; they wore them sometimes in obedience to the law, but more frequently administered without them; for which some were cited into the spiritual courts, and admonished, the bishops not having yet assumed the courage of proceeding to suspension and deprivation. At length the matter was laid before the Queen, as appears by a paper found among secretary *Cecil's MSS.* dated Feb. 14, 1564, which acquaints her Majesty, that “Some perform divine  
“service and prayers in the chancel, others in the body of  
“the church; some in a seat made in the church, some in the  
“pulpit with their faces to the people; some keep precise-  
“ly to the order of the book, some intermix psalms in me-  
“tre; some say with a surplice, and others without one.

“The table stands in the body of the church in some  
“places, in others it stands in the chancel; in some  
“places the table stands altarwise, distant from the wall a  
“yard; in others in the middle of the chancel, north and

\* Strype's Annals, vol. i. p. 130.

Bishop *Warburton* says, that he was also installed in the third prebend of *Durham*, Oct. 14, 1572, but held it not long; *Bellamy* succeeding to the same stall, Oct. 31, 1573.—Supplement to *Warburton's Works*, p. 456. Ed.

“ south ; in some places the table is joined, in others it  
 “ stands upon tressels ; in some the table has a carpet, in  
 “ others none.

“ Some administer the communion with surplice and cap ;  
 “ some with surplice alone ;\* others with none ; some with  
 “ chalice, others with a communion cup, others with a com-  
 “ mon cup ; some with unleavened bread, and some with  
 “ leavened.

“ Some receive kneeling, others standing, others sitting ;  
 “ some baptize in a font, some in a bason ; some sign with  
 “ the sign of the cross, others sign not ; some minister in a  
 “ surplice, others without ; some with a square cap, some  
 “ with a round cap, some with a button cap, some with a  
 “ hat ; some in scholars cloaths, some in others.”

Her Majesty was highly displeased with this report, and especially that her laws were so little regarded ; she therefore directed a letter to the archbishops of *Canterbury* and *York*, dated Jan. 25th, “ To confer with the bishops of the  
 “ ecclesiastical commission, and to enquire what diversities  
 “ there were among the clergy in doctrine, rites and cere-  
 “ monies, and to take effectual methods that an exact order  
 “ and uniformity be maintained in all external rites and  
 “ ceremonies, as by law and good usages are provided for ;  
 “ and *that none hereafter be admitted to any ecclesiastical*  
 “ *preferment, but who is well disposed to common order, and*  
 “ *shall formally promise to comply with it.*”† To give countenance to this severity, it was reported that some of the warmer Puritans had turned the *habits* into ridicule, and given unhandsome language to those that wore them ; which according to Mr. *Strype* was the occasion of their being pressed afterwards with so much rigor : but whatever gave occasion to the persecution that followed, or whoever was at the head of it, supposing the insinuation to be just, it was very hard that so great a number of useful ministers, who neither censured their brethren, nor abused their indulgence by an unmannerly behavior, should be turned out of their benefices for the indiscretion of a few. The bishops, in their letters to the foreign divines, had promised *not to urge their brethren in these things, and when opportunity serv-*

\* Life of Parker, p. 152.

† Ibid. p. 154.

*ed to seek reformation of them* ; but now they took themselves to be released from their promises, and set at liberty by the queen's express command to the contrary ; their meaning being, that they would not do it with their own accord, without direction from above.

The puritans and their friends, foreseeing the storm, did what they could to avert it. *Pilkington* bishop of *Durham* wrote to the earl of *Leicester*, October 25, to use his interest with the queen in their behalf. He said, “that  
“compulsion should not be used in things of liberty. He  
“prayed the earl to consider, how all reformed countries  
“had cast away popish apparel, with the pope, and yet we  
“contend to keep it as an holy relic.\* That many ministers  
“would rather leave their livings than comply ; and the  
“realm had a great scarcity of teachers ; many places being  
“destitute of any. That it would give incurable offence  
“to foreign protestants ; and since we have forsaken popery  
“as wicked, I do not see (says the bishop) how their ap-  
“parel can become saints and professors of the gospel.” *Wittingham* dean of *Durham* wrote to the same purpose. He dreaded the consequence of imposing that as necessary, which at best was only indifferent, and in the opinion of many wise and learned men superstitious. “If the apparel  
“which the clergy wear at present, (says he) seems not so  
“modest and grave as their vocation requires, or does not  
“sufficiently distinguish them from men of other callings,  
“they refuse not to wear that which shall be thought, by  
“godly magistrates, most decent for these uses ; provided  
“they may keep themselves ever pure from the defiled  
“robe of antichrist. Many papists (says he) enjoy their  
“livings and liberty, who have not sworn obedience, nor  
“do any part of their duty to their miserable flock.†—  
“Alas ! my Lord, that such compulsion should be used  
“towards us, and such great lenity towards the papists.  
“Oh ! noble Earl, be our patron and stay in this behalf,  
“that we may not lose that liberty, that hitherto by the  
“Queen's benignity, we have enjoyed.” Other letters were written to the same purpose ; and all made what friends they could among the courtiers.

\* Life of Parker, p. 155, and Appendix, p. 40.

† Life of Parker.

p. 157. and Appendix, p. 43.

The nobility were divided, and the Queen herself seemed to be at a stand, but the archbishop spirited her forward; and having received her majesty's letter, authorising him to proceed, he entered upon the unpleasing work with vigor and resolution. The bishops *Jewel* and *Horn* preached at *Paul's Cross* to reconcile the people to the habits. *Jewel* said, he did not come to defend them, but to shew, *that they were indifferent, and might be complied with.* *Horn* went a little further, and wished those cut off from the church, *that troubled it about white or black garments, round or square caps.* The Puritans were not allowed to preach against the habits, but they expostulated with the bishops, and told them, that in their opinions, those ought rather to be cut off, which stopped the course of the gospel, and that grieved and offended their weak brethren, by urging the remnants of antichrist more than God's commandments, and by punishing the refusers of them more extremely than the breakers of God's laws.

The archbishop, with the bishops of *London*, *Ely*, *Winchester*, and *Lincoln*, framed sundry articles to enforce the habits, which were afterwards published under the title of **ADVERTISEMENTS**. But when his grace brought them to court, the Queen refused to give them her sanction. The archbishop, chafed at the disappointment, said that the court had put him upon framing the *Advertisements*; and if they would not go on, they had better never had done any thing; nay, if the council would not lend their helping hand against the non-conformists, as they had done heretofore in *Hooper's* days, they should only be laughed at for all they had done.\* But still the Queen was so cold, that when the bishop of *London* came to court, she spoke not a word to him about the redressing the neglect of conformity in the city of *London*, where it was most disregarded. Upon which the archbishop applied to the secretary, desiring another letter from the Queen, to back their endeavors for conformity, adding, in some heat, *If you remedy it not by letter, I will no more strive against the stream, fume or chide who will.*

But the wearing the popish garments being one of the grand principles of non-conformity, it will be proper to set

\* Life of Parker, p. 159.

before the reader the sentiments of some learned reformers upon this controversy, which employed the pens of the most judicious divines of the age.

We have related the unfriendly behavior of the bishops *Cranmer* and *Ridley* towards *Hooper*; and that those very prelates who once threatened his very life for refusing the habits, if we may credit Mr. *Fox's* Latin edition of the book of martyrs, lived to see their mistakes and repent :† for when *Brooks* bishop of *Glocester* came to *Oxford*, to degrade bishop *Ridley*, he refused to put on the *surplice*, and while they were putting it on him, whether he would or no, he vehemently inveighed against the *apparel*, calling it *foolish, abominable, and too fond for a vice in a play*.

Bishop *Latimer* also derided the garments; and when they pulled off his surplice at his degradation, *Now*, says he, *I can make no more holy water*.

In the articles against bishop *Farrar* in King *Edward's* reign, it was objected, *Artic. 49*, that he had vowed never to wear the *cap*, but that he came into his cathedral with a long gown and hat; which he did not deny, alledging he did it to avoid superstition, and without any offence to the people.

When the popish vestments were put upon Dr. *Taylor*, the martyr, in order to his degradation, he walked about with his hands by his sides, saying, *How say you, my Lord, am I not a goodly fool? If I were in Cheapside, would not the boys laugh at these foolish toys and apish trumpery?* And when the surplice was pulled off, *Now*, says he, *I am rid of a fool's coat*.

When they were pulling the same off from archbishop *Cranmer*, he meekly replied, *All this I needed not, I myself had done with this gear long ago*.

Dr. *Heyler* testifies, That *John Rogers* the proto-martyr peremptorily refused to wear the habits, unless the popish priests were enjoined to wear upon their sleeves, by way of distinction, a *chalice with an host*. The same he asserts concerning *Philpot*, a very eminent martyr; and concerning one *Tyms* a deacon, who was likewise martyred in Queen *Mary's* reign.

† *Fox's Book of Martyrs*, vol. iii. p. 500.

The holy martyr *John Bradford*, as well as Mr. *Sampson*, and some others, excepted against the habits at their entrance into holy orders, and were ordained without them.

*Bucer* and *Peter Martyr*, professors of our two famous universities, were both against the habits, and refused to wear them. *Bucer* being asked, why he did not wear the square cap, answered, *Because his head was not square.\** And *Martyr*, in one of his letters after his return home, says, *When I was at Oxford, I would never use those white garments in the choir though I was a canon in the church; and I am satisfied in my own reasons for what I did.†* In the same letter, *Bucer* says he would be content to suffer some great pain in his body, upon condition that these things were utterly taken away.‡ And in such case as we are now, [1550] he willeth that in no case they should be received. He adds in his letter from *Cambridge* to a friend beyond sea, dated 12 Jan. 1550, that no foreigner was consulted about the purity of ceremonies, *de puritate rituum scito hic neminem extraneum de his rebus rogari.* And though both he, and *Peter Martyr* thought they might be borne with for a season; yet in our case, he would not have them suffered to remain.

These were the sentiments of our first reformers in the reign of King *Edward VI.* and Queen *Mary*.

Upon restoring the protestant religion under Queen *E. Elizabeth*, the same sentiments concerning the habits prevailed among all the reformers at first, though they disagreed upon the grand question, *Whether they should desert their ministry rather than comply.*

Mr. *Strype*, in his life of archbishop *Parker*, a most cruel persecutor of the Puritans, says, That he was not fond of the cap, the *surplice*, and the *wafer bread*, and such-like injunctions, and would have been pleased with a toleration; that he gloried in having been consecrated without the *Aaronical garments*; but that his concern for his prince's honor made him resolute that her royal will might take place.

\* Life of Parker, appendix, p. 41.

† Hist. Ref. p. 65.

‡ Ann. Ref. vol. ii. p. 554, 555.



Dr. *Horn* bishop of *Winchester*, in his letter to *Gaulter*, says, “That the act of parliament which enjoined the vestment was made before they were in office, so that they had no hand in making it;\* but they had obeyed the law, thinking the matter to be of an indifferent nature; and they had reason to apprehend that if they had deserted their stations on that account their enemies might have come into their places;† but he hoped to procure an alteration of the act in the next parliament, though he believed it would meet with great opposition from the papists.” Yet this very bishop a little after wished them cut off from the church that troubled it about white or black garments.

Bishop *Jewel* calls the vestments, “the habits of the stage, the relics of the *Amorites*, and wishes they may be extirpated to the roots, that all the remnants of former errors, with all the rubbish, and even the dust that yet remained, might be taken away.” But he adds, the Queen is fixed; and so was his lordship soon after, when he refused the learned Dr. *Humphreys* a benefice within his diocese on this account, and called all the non-conformists men of *squeamish stomachs*.‡

Bishop *Pilkington* complains, “that the disputes which began about the vestments were now carried further, even to the whole constitution; that pious persons lamented this, atheists laughed, and the papists blew the coals; and that the blame of all was cast upon the bishops. He urged that it might be considered, that all reformed churches had cast away popish apparel with the pope; that many ministers would rather leave their livings than wear them; and he was well satisfied that it was not an apparel becoming those that profess godliness. I confess, (says he) we suffer many things against our hearts, groaning under them; but we cannot take them away, though we were ever so much set upon it. We are under authority, and can innovate nothing without the Queen; nor can we alter the laws; the only thing left to our choice is, whether we will bear these things, or break the peace of the church.” §

\* *Pierce's Vindication*, p. 44. † *Hist. Ref.* vol. iii. p. 289, 294. *Life of Parker*, p. 154. ‡ *MS.* p. 873. § *Hist. Ref.* vol. iii. p. 316.



Bishop *Grindal* was a considerable time in suspense, whether he should accept a bishopric with the popish vestments. He consulted *Peter Martyr* on this head, and says, that all the bishops that had been beyond sea had dealt with the Queen to let the habits fall; but she was inflexible. This made them submit to the laws, and wait for a fit opportunity to reverse them. Upon this principle he conformed and was consecrated; and in one of his letters, “He calls God to witness, that it did not lie at their (the bishops) door, that the habits were not quite taken away.”

Dr. *Sandys* bishop of *Worcester*, and *Parkhurst* of *Norwich*, inveigh severely against the habits, and they with the rest of the bishops threaten to declaim against them, “till they are sent to hell from whence they came.” *Sandys*, in one of his letters to *Parker*, says, “I hope we shall not be forced to use the vestments, but that the meaning of the law is, that others in the mean time shall not take them away, but that they shall remain for the Queen.”

Dr. *Guest* bishop of *Rochester* wrote against the ceremonies to secretary *Cecil*, and gave it as his opinion, “That having been evil used, and once taken away, they ought not to be used again, because the *Galatians* were commanded, *To stand fast in the liberty wherewith Christ had made them free*; and because we are *to abstain from all appearance of evil*. The gospel teaches us to put away needless ceremonies, and to worship God in spirit and truth; whereas these ceremonies were no better than the devices of men, and had been abused to idolatry. He declares openly against the cross, against images in churches, and against a variety of garments in the service of God. If a surplice be thought proper for one, (says his lordship) it should serve for all divine offices.—The bishop is for the people’s receiving the sacrament into their hands, according to the example of Christ and the primitive church, and not for putting it into the people’s mouths: And as for the posture, that it should be rather standing than kneeling; but that this should be left to every one’s choice.”†

§ Bishop Burnet quotes this as concerning the corruptions of the spiritual courts, vol. iii. T.

† MS. p. 891. Strype’s Annals, vol. i. p. 38. Appendix, No. 14.

Not one of the first set of bishops after the reformation approved of the habits, or argued for their continuance from scripture, antiquity, or decency, but submitted to them out of necessity, and to keep the church in the Queen's favour.\* How much are the times altered! Our first reformers never ascribed any holiness or virtue to the vestments, but wished and prayed for their removal;† whereas several modern conformists have made them *essential* to their ministrations, and have represented religion as naked and defective without them.

But the question that divided the reformers, was *The lawfulness of wearing habits that had been consecrated to idolatrous and superstitious uses, and were the very marks and badges of that religion they had renounced.* Upon this they consulted the foreign divines, who all agreed in the reasonableness of abolishing the habits, but were divided in their sentiments about the *lawfulness* of wearing them in the mean time: Some were afraid of the return of *Lutheranism* or *Popery*, if the ministers should desert their stations in the church; and others apprehended, that if they did not reject them at first, they should never obtain their removal afterwards.

Dr. *Humphreys* and *Sampson*, two heads of the non-conformists, wrote to *Zurich* the following reasons against the *lawfulness* of wearing the habits: "That they did not think  
' the prescribing habits to the clergy merely a civil thing;  
' nor that the habits now prescribed were decent; for how  
' can that habit be decent that serves only to dress up the  
' theatrical pomp of popery? The papists glory in this, that  
' these habits were brought in by them, for which they

\* Strype's Annals, vol. i. p. 177.

† Bishop *Warburton* asks here, "Who ascribes any holiness or virtue to them now, I pray?" In reply it is sufficient to observe, that *Mr. Neal* refers to the time when he wrote, about 36 years before the bishop's strictures appear to have been penned, and not many years after Dr. *Nichols*, in his defence of the Church of *England*, had called ministers' ordinary habit *profane*; and when Dr. *Grey* (*System of Ecclesiastical Law*, p. 55.) had carried the notion of decency, in this respect, very high, representing "the church as by a *prescript form of decent and comely apparel* providing to have its ministers known to the people, and thereby to receive the honor and estimation due to the *special messengers and ministers of Almighty God.*" This representation approximates very much to the idea of holiness and virtue. *En.*

' vouch *Otho's* constitutions and the *Roman Pontifical*.—  
 ' They add, that in King *Edward's* time the surplice was  
 ' not universally used nor pressed, whereas the *cope*s then  
 ' taken away are now to be restored. This is not to extirpate  
 ' popery, but to plant it again, and, instead of going forward  
 ' in reformation, to go backward. We do not place religion  
 ' in habits, (say they) but we oppose them that do, [the  
 ' papists.] Besides, it gives some authority to servitude,  
 ' to depart from our liberty. We hate contention, nor do  
 ' we desert our churches, and leave them exposed to wolves,  
 ' but we are *driven from them*. We leave our brethren to  
 ' stand and fall to their own master, and desire the same  
 ' favorable forbearance from them. All that is pretended  
 ' is, that the habits are not *unlawful*; not that they are  
 ' good and expedient; but forasmuch as the habits of the  
 ' clergy are visible marks of their profession, they ought  
 ' not to be taken from their enemies. The ancient fathers  
 ' had their habits, but not peculiar to bishops, nor distinct  
 ' from the laity. The instances of *St. John* and *Cyprian*  
 ' are singular. In *Tertullian's* time the *palium* was the  
 ' common habit of old christians. *Chrysostom* speaks of  
 ' white garments, but with no approbation; he rather  
 ' finds fault with them: Nor do we condemn things indif-  
 ' ferent as unlawful; but we wish there might be a free  
 ' synod to settle this matter, in which things may not be  
 ' carried according to the minds of one or two persons.  
 ' The doctrine of our church is now pure, and why should  
 ' there be any defect in our worship? Why should we bor-  
 ' row any thing from popery? Why should we not agree  
 ' in rites, as well as in doctrine, with the other reformed  
 ' churches? We have a good opinion of our bishops, and  
 ' bear with their state and pomp; we once bore the same  
 ' cross with them, and preached the same Christ with  
 ' them; why then are we now turned out of our benefices,  
 ' and some put in prison, only for habits, and publicly de-  
 ' famed? \*

' But the dispute is not only about a cap and surplice;  
 ' there are other grievances which ought to be redressed

\* Hist. Ref. vol. iii. p. 311.

‘ or dispensed with ; as, 1. Music and organs in divine  
 ‘ worship. 2. The sponsors in baptism, answering in the  
 ‘ child’s name. 3. The cross in baptism. 4. Kneeling  
 ‘ at the sacrament, and the use of unleavened bread. 5.  
 ‘ There is also a want of discipline in the church. 6.  
 ‘ The marriage of the clergy is not legitimated, but their  
 ‘ children are looked upon by some as bastards. 7. Mar-  
 ‘ riage is not to be performed without a *ring*. 8. Wo-  
 ‘ men are not to be churched without the veil. 9. The  
 ‘ court of faculties ; pluralities ; licences for non-residence,  
 ‘ for eating flesh in *Lent*, &c. are insufferable grievances.  
 ‘ 10. Ministers have not a free liberty to preach with-  
 ‘ out subscribing to the use and approbation of all the  
 ‘ ceremonies.\* And, *lastly*, the article which explained  
 ‘ the manner of Christ’s presence in the sacrament is taken  
 ‘ away.’

The bishops alledged, in vindication of their compliance with these things, the necessity of the time ; the Queen’s peremptoriness ; the indifferent nature of the things required, and their fears of the loss of the whole reformation, if they should desert their stations in the church ; promising not to urge them upon their brethren who were dissatisfied ; but to endeavor their removal in a proper season.

The learned foreigners gave their opinions upon this nice question with caution and reserve. *Peter Martyr* in his letter to *Grindal*,† writes thus : ‘ As for the habits to be  
 ‘ used in holy things, since they carry an appearance of the  
 ‘ mass, and are merely remainders of popery, it is (says he)  
 ‘ the opinion of the learned *Bullinger*, the chief minister of  
 ‘ *Zurich*, that they are to be refrained from, lest by your  
 ‘ example a thing that is scandalous should be confirmed ;  
 ‘ but (he adds) though I have been always against the use  
 ‘ of such ornaments, yet I see the present danger, lest you  
 ‘ should be put from the office of preaching. There may  
 ‘ also be some hopes, that as images and altars are taken  
 ‘ away, so also those appearances of the mass may be re-  
 ‘ moved, if you and others, who have taken upon you epis-  
 ‘ copacy, labor in it.—I am therefore more backward

\* Hist. Ref. in Records, p. 335. † Strype’s Life of Grindal, p. 29, 30.

‘ to advise you rather to refuse the bishopric than to submit  
 ‘ to the use of those vestures; and yet, because I am sensible  
 ‘ scandals of this kind are to be avoided, I am more willing  
 ‘ to yield to *Bullinger’s* opinion aforesaid:’ But after all  
 he advises him to do nothing against his conscience.

*Bullinger* and *Gualter*, ministers of *Zurich*, in their letters  
 to *Horn* and *Grindal*, ‘ lament the unhappy breach in the  
 ‘ church of *England*, and approve of the zeal of those  
 ‘ divines, who wish to have the house of God purged from  
 ‘ all the dregs of popery. They are not pleased with them  
 ‘ who first made the laws about habits, nor with those  
 ‘ who zealously maintain them. They declare that they  
 ‘ acted unwisely, if they were of the reformed side; but if  
 ‘ they were disguised enemies, that they had been laying  
 ‘ snares with ill designs. They are therefore absolutely  
 ‘ against the imposition of these, and other grievances; but  
 ‘ they think many things of this sort should be submitted  
 ‘ to, rather than men should forsake the ministry at this  
 ‘ juncture, lest the whole reformation should be lost; but  
 ‘ that they should press the Queen and the nobility to go on  
 ‘ and complete the reformation, so gloriously begun.’\*

These divines wrote also to the Earl of *Bedford*, and ac-  
 quainted him, ‘ That they were sorry to hear that not only  
 ‘ the vestments, but many other things, were retained in the  
 ‘ church, which savored plainly of popery. They complain  
 ‘ of the bishops printing their letter, and that their private  
 ‘ opinion about the lawfulness of wearing the habits for  
 ‘ the present, should be made use of to cast reproaches on  
 ‘ persons, for whom they should rather have compassion  
 ‘ in their sufferings, than study to aggravate them. They  
 ‘ pray his lordship to intercede with the Queen and nobility,  
 ‘ for their brethren that were then under sufferings, who  
 ‘ deserved a very great regard, forasmuch as it had appeared  
 ‘ what true zeal they had for religion, since the only thing  
 ‘ they desired was, that the church should be purged from  
 ‘ all the dregs of popery. This cause (say they) in general  
 ‘ is such, that those who promote it are worthy of the  
 ‘ highest dignity. They do therefore earnestly pray his  
 ‘ lordship at this time, to exert himself, and employ all the

\* Hist. Ref. vol. iii. p. 508. MS. p. 889.

‘ interest he has in the Queen and nobility, that the church  
 ‘ of *England*, so happily reformed to the admiration of  
 ‘ the whole world, may not be defiled with the remnants of  
 ‘ popery. To retain these things will look like giddiness  
 ‘ (say these divines ;) it will offend the weak, and give great  
 ‘ scandal to their neighbors in *France* and *Scotland*, who  
 ‘ are yet under the cross ; and the very papists will justify  
 ‘ their tyrannical impositions by such proceedings.’\*

The divines of *Geneva* were more peremptory in their advices ; for in their letter of Oct. 24, 1564, signed by *Theodore Beza*, and seventeen of his brethren, they say, ‘ If the case  
 ‘ were theirs they would not receive the ministry upon these  
 ‘ conditions if it were proffered, much less would they sue  
 ‘ for it. As for those who have hitherto complied, if they  
 ‘ are obliged not only to wink at manifest abuses, but to approve of those things which ought to be redressed, what  
 ‘ thing else can we advise them to, but that they should retire to a private life. As for the popish habits, those men  
 ‘ that are authors of their being imposed, do deserve most  
 ‘ evil of the church, and shall verily answer it at the dreadful bar of Christ’s judgment.’ They then argue very strongly against the habits; and having advised the ministers not to lay down their ministry presently, for fear of the return of popery, they conclude thus : ‘ Nevertheless, if  
 ‘ ministers are commanded not only to tolerate these things,  
 ‘ but by their subscriptions to allow them as lawful, what  
 ‘ else can we advise them to, but that having witnessed their  
 ‘ Innocence, and tried all other means in the fear of the  
 ‘ LORD, they should give over their functions to open  
 ‘ wrong?’ They then declare their opinions against the cross in baptism ; the validity of baptism by midwives ; the power of the keys being in the hands of lay-chancellors and bishops’ courts ; and conclude with an exhortation and prayer for unity, and a more perfect reformation in the *English* church.

Though the reformation in *Scotland* was not fully established, yet the *superintendent ministers, and commissioners of charges* within that realm, directed a letter the very first opportunity, to their brethren the bishops, and pastors of

\* Hist. Ref. vol. ii. p. 313.



England, who have renounced the Roman Antichrist, and do profess with them the Lord Jesus Christ in sincerity. It was dated from *Edinburgh*, Dec. 28th, 1566, and signed by *John Spotswood*, and nine of his brethren, preachers of Christ Jesus. The letter does not enter into the debate, whether the habits are simply indifferent or not; but pleads in a most earnest and pathetic manner for toleration and forbearance, and that the deprived ministers may be restored. “If surplice, corner cap, and tippet, (say they) have been badges of idolatry, what have the preachers of Christian liberty, and the open rebukers of all superstition, to do with the dregs of the *Romish* beast? Our brethren that of conscience refuse that unprofitable apparel, do neither damn yours, nor molest you that use such vain trifles. If ye shall do the like by them, we doubt not but you will therein please God, and comfort the hearts of many.” But the whole letter breathes such an excellent spirit, that I cannot forbear recommending it to the reader’s perusal in the *Appendix*.

It is evident upon the whole, that it was the unanimous opinion of the foreign divines, that the *habits* ought to be laid aside by authority; and that in the mean time they should not be urged upon those that scrupled them: But they were not so well agreed in the lawfulness of wearing them till they were taken away; though their fears of the return of popery, if the ministers should desert their stations; their compassion to the souls of the people who were perishing for lack of knowledge; and their hopes, that the Queen would quickly be prevailed with to remove them; made most of them apprehend they might be dispensed with for the present.

The *English* laity were more averse to the habits than the clergy; as their hatred of popery increased, so did their aversion to the garments. There was a strong party in the very court against them, among whom was the great Earl of *Leicester*, Sir *Francis Knollys*, vice-chamberlain; *Burleigh*, lord treasurer; Sir *Francis Walsingham*, secretary of state; the Earls of *Bedford*, *Warwick*, and others. But the protestant populace throughout the nation were so inflamed, that nothing but an awful subjection to authority could



have kept them within bounds. Great numbers refused to frequent those places of worship where service was ministered in that dress ; they would not salute such ministers in the streets, nor keep them company ; nay, if we may believe *Dr. Whitgift*, in his defence against *Cartwright*, “ They “ spit in their faces, reviled them as they went along, and “ showed such like rude behavior,”\* because they took them for papists in disguise, for time-servers, for half-faced protestants, that would be content with the return of that religion whose badge they wore. § There was indeed a warm spirit in the people, against every thing which came from that pretended church, whose garments had been so lately dyed with the blood of their friends and relations. Upon the whole, I leave the reader to determine, how far the wisdom and moderation of the Queen can be vindicated, in imposing these habits on the clergy ; or the bishops be excused for imprisoning, suspending, and depriving, some of the most useful preachers in the kingdom, on account of things which in their own opinion were but barely tolerable, but in the judgment of their brethren were absolutely sinful.

We have already mentioned the Queen’s letter of January 25th ; in obedience to which archbishop *Parker* wrote to his brethren of the ecclesiastical commission, and in particular to *Grindal* bishop of *London*, (there being in that city the greatest number of clergy, and of the best learning, that refused the apparel) to consult proper methods to reduce them to an act of uniformity. † After some debate the commissioners agreed upon certain ADVERTISEMENTS (as they were called) *partly for due order in preaching and administering the sacraments, and partly for the apparel of persons ecclesiastical.* ‡

\* *Strype’s Annals*, vol. i. p. 178, 602, 460. *Mem. Cranmer*, p. 362. *Life of Parker*, p. 77.

§ The grounds, on which such a suspicion might rest, may be seen in *Mr. Neal’s Review*, in the quarto edition of his *History*, vol. i. p. 881, 82.

† *Life of Parker*, p. 161.

‡ The Articles for Preaching declare, “ That all licences granted before March 1st, 1564, shall be void and of none effect ; and that all “ that shall be thought meet for the office of preaching shall be admitted “ again, paying no more than four-pence for the writing. parchment, “ and wax ; and that those who were not approved as preachers, might “ read the homilies,

By the first of these articles, all preachers throughout the nation were disqualified at once; and by the last, they subscribed, and promised not to preach or expound the scriptures, without a licence from the bishop, which was not to be obtained without a promise under hand of an absolute conformity to the ceremonies. Here the *commissioners* surely broke through the act of *submission*, by which they are obliged *never to make or execute any canons or constitutions without the royal assent*. But the bishops presumed upon their interest with her majesty; they knew her mind, though

“ In the ministration of the communion in cathedrals and collegiate churches, the principal ministers shall wear a *cope* with *Gospeller* and *Epistoler* agreeably; but at all other prayers to be said at the communion table, they shall wear no copes, but surplices only: deans and prebendaries shall wear a surplice with a silk hood in the choir; and when they preach a hood.

“ Every minister saying the public prayers, or administering the sacraments, &c. shall wear a surplice with sleeves; and the parish shall provide a decent table standing on a frame for the communion table; and the ten Commandments shall be set on the east wall over the said table.

“ All dignitaries in cathedral churches, doctors, batchelors of divinity and law, having ecclesiastical livings, shall wear in their common apparel a broad side-gown with sleeves, strait at the hands, without any cuffs or falling capes; and tippetts of sarsenet, and a square cap, but no hats, except in their journeying. The inferior clergy are to wear long gowns and caps of the same fashion; except in case of poverty, when they may wear short gowns.”

To these Advertisements certain Protestations were annexed, to be made, promised, and subscribed, by such as shall hereafter be admitted to any office or cure in the church. “ And here every clergyman subscribed, and promised not to preach or expound the scriptures, without special licence of the bishop under his seal, but only to read the homilies; and likewise to observe, keep, and maintain, such order and uniformity in all external polity, rites, and ceremonies of the church, as by laws, good usages, and orders, are already well provided and established.”

These Advertisements were enjoined the clergy by the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, the bishops of *London* and *Rochester*, (commissioners in causes ecclesiastical) and by the bishops of *Winchester*, *Ely*, and some others. The preface says, “ That they do not prescribe these rules as equivalent with the word of God, or as of necessity to bind the consciences of the Queen’s subjects, in their own nature considered; or as adding any efficacy or holiness to public prayer, or to the sacraments; but as temporal orders merely ecclesiastical, without any vain superstition, and as rules of decency, distinction, and order for the time.”

she refused, for political reasons, to ratify their *advertisements*, telling them that the oath of canonical obedience was sufficient to bind the inferior clergy to their duty, without the interposition of the crown.

*Parker* therefore went on; and having cited the Puritan clergy to *Lambeth*, he admonished some, and threatened others :\* But *Grindal* withdrew, being naturally averse to methods of severity, and afraid of a *præmunire*. His grace took a great deal of pains to gain him over, and by his arguments (says *Strype*) brought him to a good resolution.—He also applied to the council for the Queen's and their assistance; and to the secretary of state, beseeching him to spirit up the bishop of *London* to his duty, which was done accordingly. What pains will some men take to draw their brethren into a snare, and force them to be partners in oppression and cruelty!

Among those that the archbishop cited before him were the Rev. Mr. *Thomas Sampson*, dean of *Christ-Church*, and Dr. *Lawrence Humphreys*, (regius professor of divinity) president of *Magdalen College, Oxon*, men of high renown throughout the nation for learning, piety, and zeal for the reformation, and exiles for religion in Queen *Mary's* reign. Upon their appearance the archbishop urged them with the opinions of *Bucer* and *Peter Martyr*; but the authority of these divines not being sufficient to remove their scruples, they were ordered not to depart the city without leave. After long attendance, and many checks from some of the council for their refractoriness, they framed a supplicatory letter in a very elegant but submissive stile, and sent it to the archbishop, and the rest of the ecclesiastical commissioners, March 20th, “In which they protest before God, what a  
“bitter grief it was to them, that there should be such dis-  
“sentions about a cap and surplice among persons of the  
“same faith. They alledge the authorities of St. *Austin*,  
“*Socrates*, and *Theodoret*, to shew that in their times there  
“was a variety of rites and observances which break not  
“unity and concord. They beseech the bishops therefore,  
“if there was any fellowship in Christ, that they would  
“follow the direction of St. *Paul* about things in their own

\* Life of Parker, p. 161, 216.

“nature indifferent, *That every one should be persuaded in*  
 “*his own mind.* Conscience (say they) is a tender thing,  
 “and all men cannot look upon the same things as indiffer-  
 “ent; if therefore these habits seem so to you, you are  
 “not to be condemned by us; on the other hand, if they  
 “do not appear so to us, we ought not to be vexed by you.  
 “They then appeal to antiquity, to the practice of other  
 “reformed churches, and to the consciences of the bishops  
 “themselves; and conclude thus: Wherefore we most  
 “humbly pray, that a thing which is the care and pleasure  
 “of papists, and which you [the bishops] have no great  
 “value for yourselves, and which we refuse not from any  
 “contempt of authority, but from an aversion to the com-  
 “mon enemy, may not be our snare nor our crime.”\*

The ecclesiastical commissioners were very much divided

\* In one of the examinations the Archbishop put nine questions to them, to which they gave the following answers:

Quest. 1. “*Is the surplice a thing evil and wicked; or is it indifferent?*”

Ans. “Though the surplice in substance be indifferent, yet in the  
 “present circumstance it is not, being of the same nature with the *vestis*  
 “*peregrina*, or the apparel of idolatry, for which God by the prophet  
 “threatens to visit.

Quest. 2. “*If it be not indifferent, for what cause?*”

Ans. “Because things that have been consecrated to idolatry are  
 “not indifferent.

Quest. 3. “*Whether the ordinary [or bishop] detesting papistry, may*  
 “*enjoin the surplice to be worn, and enforce his injunction?*”

Ans. “It may be said to such an one, in *Tertullian’s* words, *Si tu*  
 “*diaboli pompam oderis, quicquid ex ea attigeris, id scias esse idolatriam.*  
 “That is, If thou hatest the pomp and pageantry of the devil, whatsoever  
 “of it thou meddlest with, is idolatry. Which if he believes he will  
 “not enforce the injunction.

Quest. 4. “*Whether the cope be a thing indifferent, being prescribed*  
 “*by law for decency and reverence, and not in respect of superstition or*  
 “*holiness?*”

Ans. “Decency is not promoted by a cope, which was devised to  
 “deface the sacrament. *St. Jerome* says, that the gold ordained by God  
 “for reverence and decency of the *Jewish Temple*, is not to be admit-  
 “ted to beautify the church of Christ; and if so, much less copes brought  
 “in by papists, and continued in their service as proper ornaments of  
 “their religion.

Quest. 5. “*Whether any thing that is indifferent may be enjoined as*  
 “*godly, to the use of common prayer and sacraments?*”

Ans. “If it be merely indifferent, as *time, place*, and such necessary  
 “circumstances of divine worship, for the which there may be brought  
 “a ground out of scripture, we think it may.

in their opinions, how to proceed with these men. Some were for answering the reasons given below, and for enforcing the habits with a protestation, that *they wished them taken away*. Others were for connivance; and others for a compromise: accordingly a pacific proposition was drawn up which *Humphreys* and *Sampson* were willing to subscribe, with the reserve of the apostle, *All things are lawful, but all things edify not*. But the archbishop, who was at the head of the commission, would abate nothing; for on the

Quest. 6. *Whether the civil magistrates may constitute by law an abstinence from meats on certain days?*

Ans. "Because of abstinence a manifest commodity ariseth to the commonwealth in policy, if it be sufficiently guarded against superstition, he may appoint it, due regard being had to persons and times."

Quest. 7. *Whether a law may be made for the difference of minister's apparel from laymen?*

Ans. "Whether such prescription to a minister of the gospel of Christ be lawful, may be doubted, because no such thing is decreed in the New Testament; nor did the primitive church appoint any such thing, but would rather that ministers should be distinguished from the laity *doctrina, non veste*, by their doctrine, not by their garments."

Quest. 8. *Whether ministers going in such apparel as the papists used, ought to be condemned of any preacher for so doing?*

Ans. "We judge no man; to his own master he stands or falls."

Quest. 9. *Whether such preachers ought to be reformed, or restrained, or no?*

Ans. "*Irenæus* will not have brethren restrained from brotherly communion of diversity in ceremonies, provided there be unity of faith and charity; and it is to be wished that there may be the like charitable permission among us."

To these answers, our divines subjoined some other arguments against wearing and enforcing the habits; as, (1.) Apparel ought to be worn as meat ought to be eaten; but according to *St. Paul*, meat offered to idols ought not to be eaten, therefore popish apparel ought not to be worn. (2.) We ought not to give offence in matters of mere indifference, therefore the bishops who are of this opinion ought not to enforce the habits. (3.) Popish garments have many superstitious mystical significations, for which purpose they are consecrated by the papists; we ought therefore to consecrate them also, or lay them wholly aside. (4.) Our ministrations are supposed by some not to be valid, or acceptable to God, unless performed in popish apparel; and this being a prevailing opinion, we apprehend it highly necessary to disabuse the people. (5.) Things indifferent ought not to be made necessary, because then they change their nature, and we lose our christian liberty. (6.) If we are bound to wear popish apparel when commanded, we may be obliged to have shaven crowns, and to make use of oil, spittle, cream, and all the rest of the papistical additions to the ordinances of Christ.

29th of April, 1561, he told them peremptorily in open court, that they should conform to the habits; that is, to wear the square cap and no hats in their long gowns; to wear the surplice with non-regents' hoods in the choirs, according to antient custom; and to communicate kneeling in wafer bread; or else they should part with their preferment. To which our divines replied, that their consciences could not comply with these injunctions, be the event what it might.\* Upon this they were both put under confinement; but the storm fell chiefly upon Sampson, who was detained in prison a considerable time, as a terror to others; and by special order from the Queen, was deprived of his deanry; nor could he ever obtain, after this, any higher preferment in the church, than the government of a poor hospital.†

Humphreys's place was not at the Queen's disposal; however he durst not return to Oxford, even after he had obtained his release out of prison, but retired to one Mrs. Warcup's in Berkshire, a most devout woman, who had run all hazards for harboring the persecuted protestants in the late times: From hence he wrote a most excellent letter to the Queen, in which he "beseeches her majesty's favor about the habits, forasmuch as she well knew that the controversy was about things in their own nature indifferent, and in which liberty of conscience ought not to be restrained. He protests his own and his brethren's loyalty, and then expostulates with her majesty, why her mercy should be shut against them, when it was open to all others? Did she say she would not yield to subjects? Yet she might spare miserable men. Would she not rescind a public act? Yet she might relax and suspend.

\* Life of Parker, p. 185.

† Mr. Neal appears not to have known, that Mr. Sampson was also appointed a prebendary in St. Paul's cathedral, and was permitted by the Queen to be a theological lecturer in Whittingdon college in London.—And in justice to archbishop Parker, it should be added, that some favor, though it does not appear what, was on his application granted to Mr. Sampson, by the chapter of Christ church, and he also strongly solicited the secretary, "that as the Queen's pleasure had been executed upon him for example to the terror of others, it might yet be mollified to the commendation of her clemency."—British Biography, vol. iii. p. 20, note and p. 22.

Warner's Ecclesiastical History, vol. ii. p. 433. Ed.



“ Would she not take away a law ? Yet she might grant  
 “ a toleration. Was it not fit to indulge some men’s affec-  
 “ tions ? Yet it was most fit and equal not to force the minds  
 “ of men. He therefore earnestly beseeched her to con-  
 “ sider the majesty of the glorious gospel, the equity of  
 “ the cause, the fewness of the laborers, the greatness of  
 “ the harvest, the multitude of the tares, and the heaviness  
 “ of the punishment.” *Humphreys* made so many friends  
 at court, that at length he obtained a toleration, but had no  
 preferment in the church, till ten or twelve years after, when  
 he was persuaded to wear the habits.\* For although the  
 bishop of *Winchester* presented him to a small living with-  
 in the diocese of *Salisbury*, *Jewel* refused to admit him,  
 and said he was determined to abide by his resolution till  
 he had good assurance of his conformity. The *Oxford*  
 historian† says, Dr. *Humphreys* was a moderate, conscien-  
 tious non-conformist, a great and general scholar, an able  
 linguist, a deep divine; and that for his excellency of stile,  
 exactness of method, and substance of matter in his writ-  
 ings, he went beyond most of our theologists. ‡

As *Sampson* was thus deprived, so were others who would  
 not enter into bonds to wear the square cap.§ Of this  
 number was *George Withers*, a man of good learning,  
 preacher of *Bury St. Edmonds*, in *Suffolk*; but at the press-

\* MS. p. 878. Strype’s Annals, vol. ii. p. 451. Life of Parker, p. 185.  
 † Athen. Ox. p. 242.

‡ “ That Dr. *Humphreys*’s want of preferment, till 1576, was owing  
 to his puritanical principles is evident, (says Mr. *Neal* in his Review)  
 from the testimony of lord *Burleigh* and Mr. *Strype*, whose words are  
 these :” In the latter end of the year 1576, he (lord *Burleigh*) did  
*Humphreys* the honor to write to him, hinting that HIS NON-CONFORMI-  
 TY SEEMED TO BE THE CHIEF IMPEDIMENT OF HIS PREFERMENT, the  
*Queen* and some other honorable persons at court, considering him as for-  
 getful of his duty in disobeying her injunctions. This impediment being  
 surmounted, to whatever considerations or influence it was owing, he  
 was made dean of *Gloucester*, and afterwards dean of *Winchester*. This  
 last dignity and his professorship, notwithstanding his non-subscribing,  
*Fuller* says, he held as long as he lived. But then it appears by *Strype*,  
 that the lord Treasurer, was his particular friend, and had prevailed  
 with him to wear the habits.”

Maddox’s Vindication, p. 324, 5, and *Neal*’s Review, p. 898. Ed.

§ Life of Parker, p. 187, 192, 199.



ing instances of the people, he sent a letter to the archbishop to let him know, he would rather strain his conscience a little, that discourage the godly, or let the wicked have their mind. He afterwards preached at *Cambridge*, and pressed the university to destroy the superstitious paintings in the glass windows, which occasioned some disorder; upon which not long after, he travelled to *Geneva*, *Zurich*, and other places, and after some years, returned and became parish minister of *Danbury* in *Essex*, submitting to the rites for peace sake, though he did not approve of them, which was the case of many others.

While the case of the *Oxford* divines was under consideration, his grace was consulting how to reduce the *London* Puritans : he was afraid to press them with the Advertisements, because the Queen could not be prevailed with to put the seal to them ; he therefore sent them again to the secretary with a letter to the Queen, praying, “ That if not all, yet at least those articles that related to the apparel might be returned with some authority.”\* But the Queen was firm to her former resolution ; she would give no authority to the *Advertisements* ; but, to support her commissioners, issued a proclamation, peremptorily requiring uniformity in the habits, upon pain of *prohibition from preaching, and deprivation*.

Hereupon the archbishop consulted with men learned in the civil law, what method to proceed in ; and then concluded, with the consent of the rest of the commissioners, to summons the whole body of pastors and curates, within the city of *London*, to appear at *Lambeth*, and to examine every one of them upon this question, *Whether they would promise conformity to the apparel established by law, and testify the same by subscription of their hands ?* Those who demurred were immediately to be suspended, and after three months deprived of their livings. To prepare the way for this general citation, it was thought proper, first to summon the Rev. Mr. *John Fox* the martyrologist, that the reputation of his great piety might give the greater countenance to the proceedings of the commissioners ; but when they

\* Life of Parker, p. 212, 214.

called upon him to subscribe. he took his *Greek Testament* out of his pocket, and said, *To this I will subscribe.* And when they offered him the canons, he refused, saying, *I have nothing in the church but a prebend in Salisbury, and much good may it do you if you take it from me.* But the commissioners had not courage enough to deprive a divine of so much merit, who held up the ashes of *Smithfield* before their eyes.

The 26th of March being the day appointed for the appearance of the *London* clergy, the archbishop desired the secretary of state, with some of the nobility and Queen's council, to countenance the proceedings of the commissioners with their presence, but they refused to be concerned in such disagreeable work. When the ministers appeared in court, Mr. *Thomas Cole*, a clergyman, being placed by the side of the commissioners in priestly apparel, the bishop's chancellor from the bench addressed them in these words :  
 “ My masters, and ye ministers of *Lóndon*, the Council's  
 “ pleasure is, that ye strictly keep the unity of apparel, like  
 “ this man who stands here canonically habited with a square  
 “ cap a scholar's gown priest-like, a tippet ; and in the  
 “ church a linen surplice. Ye that will subscribe, write  
 “ *VOLO* ; those that will not subscribe, write *NOLO* : be brief,  
 “ make no words.” When some of the clergy offered to speak he interrupted them, and cried, *Peace, peace.* *Apparitor*, call over the churches, and ye masters answer presently *sub pœna contemptus*.\* Great was the anguish and distress of those ministers, who cried out for compassion to themselves and families, saying, *We shall be killed in our souls for this pollution of ours.* After much persuation and many threatnings, sixty-one out of a hundred were prevailed with to subscribe, and 37 absolutely refused ; of which last number, as the archbishop acknowledged, were the best, and some preachers.† These were immediately suspended, and put from all manner of ministry, with signification, that if they did not conform within three months they were to be deprived. The archbishop imagined that their behavior

\* Life of Grindal, p. 98. Strype's Annals, p. 463.

† Life of Parker, p. 215.

would have been rough and clamorous, but, contrary to his expectations, it was reasonable, quiet, and modest.

The ministers gave in a paper of reasons [see below] for refusing the apparel.\*

\* *REASONS grounded upon the SCRIPTURES, whereby we are persuaded not to admit the use of the outward apparel, and ministering garments of the Pope's Church.*

1st. Our Saviour saith, "Take heed that you contemn not one of these little ones; for he that offendeth one of these little ones that believeth in me, it were good for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea." To offend the *little ones* in Christ, is to speak or do any thing whereby the simple Christians may take occasion either to like that which is evil, or to dislike that which is good. Now for us to admit the use of these things may occasion *this mischief*, therefore in consenting to them we should offend many of these *little ones*.

Further, St. Paul saith, "If any man that is infirm shall see thee that hast knowledge sitting at meat at the idols table, will not his conscience be stirred up to eat that which is offered to idols? And so the weak brother, for whom Christ died, shall perish in thy knowledge: and in sinning after this sort against the brethren, and wounding their weak consciences, ye do sin against Christ." 1 Cor. viii. 10, 11, 12. This place proveth, that whatsoever is done by him that has knowledge, or seems to have it, in such sort that he may seem to allow that *as good*, which in itself cannot be other than *evil*, is an occasion for the *weak* to allow and approve of the thing that is evil, and to dislike that that is good, though the doing it be indifferent of itself in him that has knowledge. To set at the idols table, or to eat things offered to idols, is in him that has knowledge a thing indifferent, for he knows that the idol is nothing, and that every creature of God is good, and to be received with thanksgiving without asking any questions for conscience sake. But to do this in the presence of him that thinks that none can do so, but he must be partaker of idolatry, is to encourage him to like idolatry, and to dislike the true service of God; for none can like both. Now the case of eating and drinking, and of wearing apparel, is in this point the same; for though to wear the outward and ministering garments of the pope's church is in itself indifferent, yet to wear them in presence of the infirm and weak brethren, who do not understand the indifference of them, may occasion them to like the pomp of the pope's ministration, which of itself is evil, and to dislike the simple ministration of Christ, which in itself is good.

"2dly. We may not use any thing that is repugnant to *Christian Liberty*, nor maintain an opinion of holiness where none is; nor consent to idolatry, nor deny the truth, nor discourage the godly, and encourage the wicked; nor destroy the church of God, which we are bound to edify, nor shew disobedience where God commanded us to obey; all which we should do, if we should consent to wear the outward and ministering garments of the pope's church; as appears by the fol-

To their declaration, and every thing else that was offered, from the danger of the reformation, and the ruin of so many poor families ; the commissioners replied, it was not their business to argue and debate, but to execute the

following passages of scripture : By St. *Paul's* exhortation, Gal. v. i. "Stand fast in the liberty wherewith Christ has made you free:" By the example of Christ, Matth. xv. 2, 3, who would not have his disciples maintain an opinion of holiness which the Pharisees had in *washing hands* : By the doctrine of St. *Paul*, 2 Cor. vi. 15, where he teacheth, that there "can be no agreement between Christ and Belial:" By the example of *Daniel*, ch. vi. who, making his prayer to God contrary to the commandment of the King, set open his window towards *Jerusalem*, lest he might seem to deny his profession, or consent to the wicked : By the example of St. *Paul*, who rebuked *Peter* sharply, because he did by his dissimulation discourage the godly that from among the heathen were converted to Christ, and encourage the superstitious *Jews* : And again, by his doctrine, 2 Cor. xiii, where he teacheth, that ministers have *power to edify, but not to destroy*. It is farther evident, from the examples of the patriarchs and prophets, who in worshipping God would not use the rites and ceremonies of the *idolatrous* : And to conclude, from the doctrine and example of *Peter* and *John*, Acts iv. who refusing to obey the commandment of the rulers, in ceasing to preach Christ, said, "Whether it be right in the sight of God to obey you rather than God, be you yourselves judges."

"3dly. For a further proof we may bring the testimony and practice of the ancient fathers.

"*Tertullian*, in his book *de Corona Militis*, compares those men to *dumb idols*, who wear any thing like the decking of the idols. Again, he saith, *Si in idolio recumbere alienum est a fide, quid in idoli habitu videri?* If it be a matter of infidelity to sit at the idols feasts, what is to be seen in the habit or apparel of the idol?

"St. *Austin*, in his 86th epistle to *Casulanus*, warneth him not to fast on the same day, lest thereby he might seem to consent with the wicked *Manichees*.

"The fourth council of *Toletane*, [*Toledo*] canon 5th, to avoid consent with heretics, decreed, that in baptism the body of the baptized should be but once dipped.

"The great Clerk *Origen*, as *Epiphanius* writeth, Tom. I. B. 2 *Hæres.* 64, because he delivered *Palm* to those that offered to the image of *Serapis*, although he openly said, *Venite accipite non frondes simulachri sed frondes Christi* ; "Come and receive the boughs, not of the image but of Christ;" yet was he for this, and such like doings, excommunicated and cast out of the church, by those martyrs and confessors that were at *Athens*.

"In the tripartite history, B. 6. chap. 30, it is said, that the christian soldiers, who by the subtlety of *Julian* were brought to offer incense to the idol, when they perceived their fault, ran forth into the streets, professing the religion of Christ, testifying themselves to be

**Queen's injunctions.** Archbishop *Parker* seemed pleased with the resolution of his chancellor, and said, "That he did not doubt, when the ministers had felt the smart of poverty and want, they would comply; for *the wood* (says

Christians, and confessing that their hands had offended unadvisedly, but that now they were ready to give their whole bodies to the most cruel torments and pains for Christ.

"Further, to prove that wearing the ministring garments of the pope's church, is to confirm the opinion of the *necessity and holiness* of the same, and to shew consent to idolatry, let it be remembered that the first devisers of them have taught, *that of necessity they must be had*; and have made laws to punish and deprive those that had them not; as appears in the pontifical *de Clerico faciendo*, that is, *of the ordering of a clerk*, where the surplice is termed the habit or garment of the holy religion. And *Durandus*, in his 3d book, entitled *Rationale Divinor*, calls it the linen garment which those men that are occupied in any manner at the service of the altar and holy things, must wear over their common apparel.

"*Lindwood* also, in his constitutions for the province of *England*, *de Habitu Clericali*, affirms the necessity of this habit; so does *Ottobonus* and others, appointing grievous punishments for those that refuse to wear them; yea, and the pontifical teaches, that when a clerk has by murder, or otherwise, deserved to die, he must be degraded, by plucking violently from him those garments with these words, *Authoritate Dei Omnipotentis, Patris, Filii, and Spiritus Sancti, &c.* "By the authority of almighty God, Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, and by our authority, we take from thee the habit of the clergy, and we make thee naked and bare of the ornaments of religion; and we do depose, degrade, spoil, and strip thee of thy clergy order, benefice, and privilege; and as one that is unworthy of the profession of a clerk, we bring thee back again into the servitude and shame of the secular habit."

"These things being thus weighed, with the warning that St. Paul giveth, 1 Thess. chap. v. where he commands us to abstain from all appearance of evil, we cannot but think that in using of these things we should beat back those that are coming from superstition, and confirm those that are grown in superstition, and consequently overthrow that which we have been laboring to build, and incur the danger of that horrible curse that our Saviour has pronounced, *Wo to the world because of offences.*

"Knowing therefore how horrible a thing it is to fall into the hands of the living God, by doing that which our consciences (grounded upon the truth of God's word, and the example and doctrine of ancient fathers) do tell us were evil done, and to the great discrediting of the truth whereof we profess to be teachers; we have thought good to yield ourselves into the hands of men, to suffer whatsoever God hath appointed us to suffer, for the preferring of the commandments of God and a clear conscience, before the commandments of men; in complying with which we cannot escape the condemnation of our consciences; keeping always

“he) *is yet but green.*”\* He declared further, that he was fully bent to go through with the work he had begun; and the rather, because the Queen would have him try *with his own authority* what he could do for order. This raised his ambition, and put him upon soliciting the secretary of state by letter for his countenance; in one of which he tells him, that “*If he was not better backed there would be fewer*” “*Winchesters, as is desired,*” referring to *Stephen Gardiner*, the bloody persecuting bishop of *Winchester* in Queen *Mary’s* reign; “but for my part (says he) so that my prince “may win honor, I will be very gladly the *rock of offence*; “since the *Lord is my helper, I will not fear what man can do to me*; nor will I be amused or daunted *Fremat* “*Mundus ruat Cælum.*”† These were the weapons, and this the language, of one whom Mr. *Strype* calls the mild and gentle archbishop!

The *non-conformists* had juster thoughts of him; he was at the head of all their sufferings, and pushed them forward with unrelenting vigor. The Queen might have been softened; the secretary of state and courtiers declared they could not keep pace with him; *Grindal* relented, and the bishop of *Durham* declared he would rather lay down his bishopric than suffer such proceedings in his diocese. But *Parker* was above these reproaches, and instead of relaxing, framed such injunctions for the *London* clergy as had never been heard of in a protestant kingdom, or a free government. The commissioners obliged every clergyman that had cure of

in memory that horrible saying of *John* in his first epistle, “If our conscience condemn us, God is greater than our conscience:” And not forgetting the saying of the Psalmist, “It is good to trust in the Lord, and not to trust in man.” Psal. cxviii. “It is good to trust in the Lord, and not to trust in princes.” And again, Psal. cxlvi. “Trust not in princes, nor in the children of men, in whom there is no health, whose spirit shall depart out of them, and they shall return to the earth from whence they came, and in that day all their devices shall come to nought.”

“Not despising men therefore, but trusting in God only, we seek to serve him with a clear conscience, so long as we shall live here, assuring ourselves that those things that we shall suffer for doing so, shall be a testimony to the world, that great reward is laid up for us in Heaven, where we doubt not but to rest forever, with them that have before our days suffered for the like.” MS. penes me, p. 57, &c.

\* Life of Parker, p. 215.

† Life of Parker, p. 219, 220, &c.



souls to swear obedience. 1. To all the Queen's injunctions and letters patent. 2. To all letters from the lords of the privy council. 3. To the articles and injunctions of their metropolitan.\* 4. To the articles and mandates of their bishop, archdeacon, chancellors, somners, receivers, &c.—And in a word, to be subject to the control of all their *superiors* with patience.† To gird these injunctions close upon the Puritans, there was appointed in every parish four or eight censors, spies, or jurats, to take cognizance of all offences given or taken. These were under oath enjoined to take particular notice of the conformity of the clergy and of the parishioners, and to give in their presentments when required ; so that it was impossible for an honest Puritan to escape the high commission.

By these methods of severity, *religion* and *virtue* were discountenanced for the sake of their pretended ornaments ; the consciences of good men were entangled, and the reformation exposed to the utmost hazard.‡ Many churches were shut up in the city of *London* for want of ministers, to the grief of all good men, and the inexpressible pleasure of the papists, who rejoiced to see the reformers weakening their own hands, by silencing such numbers of the most useful and popular preachers, while the country was in distress for want of them. Bishop *Sandys*, in one of his sermons before the Queen some years after, tells her Majesty, “ That  
 “ many of her people, especially in the northern parts, per-  
 “ ished for want of saving food. Many there are (says he)  
 “ that hear not a sermon in seven years, I might safely say  
 “ in seventeen : their blood will be required at some-body's  
 “ hands.”§

But to make thorough work with the *refusers of the habits*, the archbishop called in all licences, according to the *Advertisements*, and appointed all preachers throughout his whole province to take out new ones ; this was to reach

\* Strype's Annals, p. 468.

† Dr. *Warner* calls this an oath of a most extraordinary nature under a free government, and adds, “ with this unrelenting rigor did the archbishop carry on the severity against the Puritans, and almost he alone.” *Ecclesiastical History*, vol. ii. p. 485.

‡ Life of Parker, p. 224. § Life of Grindal, p. 99. Pierce, p. 52.



those who were neither incumbents, nor curates, in parishes but lecturers or occasional preachers. All parsons and curates were forbid to suffer any to preach in their churches upon any former licences given by the archbishop; and such as took out new licences bound themselves for the future, not to disturb the public establishment, or vary from it.— And because some, when they had been discharged from their ministry in one diocese for non-conformity, got a settlement in another, it was now appointed that such curates as came out of other dioceses should not be allowed to preach without letters testimonial from the *ordinary* where they last served. But those Puritans who could not with a good conscience take out new licences kept their old ones, and made the best use of them they could.\* “They travelled “up and down the countries from church to church, preaching where they could get leave, as if they were apostles;” says bishop *Jewel* and so they were with regard to their poverty, *for silver and gold they had none*: but his lordship adds, “And they take money for their labors.” An unpardonable crime! that honest men of a liberal education, that had parted with their livings in the church for a good conscience, should endeavor after a very poor manner to live by the gospel.

There was still one door of entrance in the ministry left open to the Puritans, which the archbishop used all his interest to shut, but could not prevail. It was a privilege granted the university of *Cambridge* by Pope *Alexander VI.* to licence twelve ministers yearly, to preach any where throughout *England*, without obtaining licences from any of the bishops. The bull says, that “The chancellor of the “university (who was then *Fisher* bishop of *Rochester*) and “his successors, shall license twelve preachers yearly, under “the common seal of the university, who shall have liberty “to preach, &c. *durante vita naturali.*” The archbishop sent to secretary *Cecil* their chancellor, praying him to set aside this practice; 1. Because the present licences varied from the original bull, being given out by the vice-chancellor, whereas they ought to be in the name of the chancellor only. 2. Because it was unreasonable to give

\* Life of Parker, p. 189.

licences *durante vita naturali*, i. e. *for life* ; whereas they ought to be only *quam diu nobis placuerint*, and *dum laudabiliter gesserint*, i. e. *during our pleasure, or as long as they behave well.* § 3. But that which troubled the archbishop most, was the clause that infringed his own and his brethren's jurisdiction, *that they might preach without a licence from any of the bishops.* And yet this clause is in the letters patent of Queen *Elizabeth*, granted to the university for this purpose ; the words are, *Licentia ordinariorum locorum super hoc minime requisita.* This was thought insufferable ; the vice-chancellor therefore was sent for to town to defend the privilege of the university, which he did to the satisfaction of the chancellor ; but the archbishop was so angry, that he declared he would not admit any of their licences without the *chancellor's* name ; nor could he imagine that the vice-chancellor, by his pretended experience and skill in the civil law, could inform his *honor* of any thing, that he was not capable of answering. But here his *grace* met with a disappointment, for the university retained their privilege, and made use of it to the relief of the Puritans.\*

In the Queen's progress this year, [1565] her majesty visited the university of *Cambridge*, and continued there five days, being entertained by the scholars with speeches and disputations. On the 3d day of her being there, [Aug. 7.] a

§ Life of Parker, p. 193.

\* Bishop *Maddox* inveighs against them for availing themselves of a bull granted by the Pope, whom they affirmed to be antichrist, and when they loaded the queen and bishops with heavy accusations as encouragers of popery. The bishop's reflexions are also pointed against our historian for mentioning this conduct without a censure. To which Mr. *Neal* replies, that this grant from Pope *Alexander VI.* the advantage of which the puritans enjoyed, had been confirmed to the university by letters patent from Queen *Elizabeth* herself ; a copy of which may be seen in the appendix to Strype's Life of arch. Parker, p. 69. Mr. *Neal* also properly asks, " Would the protestants in France have shut up their churches, if the antichristian powers would have given them a licence to preach ? Nay, would they not have preached without any licence at all, if they had not been dragooned out of the country ? " He asserts for himself, " if he were a missionary, and could spread the christian faith, by virtue of a licence from the Pope, or the Grand Seigneur, or the Emperor of *China*, in their dominions, he would not scruple to accept it, but be thankful to the divine providence that had opened such a door." Appendix to the Review. Ed.

philosophy act was kept by *Thomas Byng*, of *Peter-house*, on these two questions. 1. Whether monarchy be not the best form of government? 2. Whether frequent alterations of the laws are dangerous? The opponents were *Mr. Thomas Cartwright*, fellow of *Trinity college*, *Mr. Chadderton*, of *Queens*, *Mr. Preston* and *Mr. Clark*, of *King's college*; who performed their parts to the satisfaction of the Queen, and the whole audience; but it seems *Preston* pleased her majesty best, and was made her scholar, with the settlement of a salary. The divinity questions were, 1. Whether the authority of the scripture is greater than that of the church? 2. Whether the civil magistrate has authority in ecclesiastical affairs? These were the tests of the times. At the close of the disputation, the Queen made a short and elegant oration in *Latin*, encouraging the scholars to pursue their studies, with a promise of her countenance and protection.

But this learned body was soon after thrown into confusion, by the controversy of *the habits*, especially of the *surplice*. *Dr. Longworth*, master of *St. John's*, being absent from his college, the students of that house came to chapel on a festival day, without their hoods and surplices, § to the number of 300, and continued to do so for some time; the master at his return making no complaint, nor attempting to recover them to uniformity. In *Trinity college*, all,\* except three, declared against the surplice, and many in other colleges were ready to follow their example. The news of this being sent to court, it was easy to foresee an impending storm: several members of the university wrote to the secretary, humbly beseeching his intercession with the Queen, that they might not be forced to receive a popish ceremony, which they had laid aside; assuring him before God, that nothing but reason, and the quiet enjoyment of their consciences, had induced them to do as they had done. But *Cecil* sent them an angry answer, admonishing them to return quietly to the habits, as they had used them before. He also wrote to the vice-chancellor, requiring him to call together the heads of the colleges, and let them know, that as they tendered the honor of God, the preservation

§ However they had worn them before. Bishop *Maddox*.

\* By the instigation of *T. Cartwright*. Ib. from *Strype*.

of Christian unity, the reputation of the university, the favor of the Queen, and his own good-will to them, they should continue the use of the habits.

The heads of colleges being sensible of the risk the university would run of being disfurnished of students, if the habits were pressed, applied again to their chancellor *Cecil*, to intercede with the Queen for a dispensation; one of their letters was signed by the master of *Trinity* college, *Dr. Beaumont*, who had been an exile, *John Whitgift*, afterwards archbishop of *Canterbury*, *Roger Kelk*, master of *Magdalen* college, *Richard Longworth*, master of *St. John's*, *Matthew Hutton*, master of *Pembroke-hall*, afterwards archbishop of *York*, and many others; in their letter they acquaint *his honor*, "That a great many persons in the university, of  
"piety and learning, were fully persuaded of the unlawfulness of the habits; and therefore if conformity were urged, they would be forced to desert their stations, and thus  
"the university would be stript of its ornaments; they  
"therefore give it as their humble opinion, that indulgence  
"in this matter would be attended with no inconveniencies;  
"but on the other hand, they were afraid religion and  
"learning would suffer very much by rigor and imposition."\* This letter was resented at court, and especially by the *ecclesiastical commission*; *Longworth*, master of *St. John's*, was sent for before the commissioners, and obliged to sign a recantation, and read it publicly in the church; the rest made their peace by letters of submission: All the heads of colleges were commanded to assist the vice-chancellor in bringing the scholars to an uniformity in the habits, which nevertheless they could not accomplish for many years. *Whitgift*, seeing which way the tide of preferment ran, drew his pen in defence of the hierarchy in all its branches, and became a most potent advocate for the habits. But the university of *Cambridge* was still a sanctuary for the puritans.

To return to the *puritan* clergy: April 2d, Mr. *Crowley*, the suspended minister of *Cripplegate*, seeing a corps coming to be buried at his church, attended with clerks in their surplices singing before it, threatened to shut the church doors

\* Life of Parker, p. 194. App. p. 69.

against them ; but the singing men resisted, resolving to go through with their work, till the alderman's deputy threatened to lay them by the heels for breaking the peace ; upon which they shrunk away, but complained to the archbishop, who sending for *Crowley*, deprived him of his living, and confined him to his house, for saying, *he would not suffer the wolf to come to his flock*. He also bound the deputy in a hundred pounds, to be ready when he shall be called for. § This Mr. *Crowley* was a learned man, and had been an exile in Queen *Mary's* days, at *Frankfort* ; he was very diligent in disputing against certain priests in the *Tower*, and took a great deal of pains to bring them over to their allegiance to the Queen, upon the principle of the unlawfulness of deposing princes upon any pretence whatsoever. He wrote divers learned books, and died a non-conformist in the year 1588, and was buried in the church of *Cripplegate*. Among the *deprived ministers*, some betook themselves to the study of physic, and others to secular employments ; some went into *Scotland*, or beyond sea ; others got to be chaplains in gentlemen's families ; but many who had large families were reduced to beggary. Many churches were now shut up, and the people ready to mutiny for want of ministers. Six hundred persons came to a church in *London*, to receive the communion on *Palm-Sunday*, but the doors were shut, there being none to officiate. The cries of the people reached the court ; the secretary wrote to the archbishop to supply the churches, and release the prisoners ; but his grace was inexorable, and had rather the people should have no sermons or sacraments, than have them without the *surplice and cap*. He acquainted the secretary in a letter, ‘ That when the Queen put him upon what he had done, he told her that these *precise folks* would offer their goods and bodies to prison rather than relent ; and her highness then willed him to imprison them.\* He confessed, that there were many parishes unserved ; that he underwent many hard speeches, and much resistance from the people ; but nothing more than was to be expected. That he had sent his chaplains into the city, to serve in some of the

§ Life of Parker, p. 218, 219.      \* Life of Parker, p. 228.

‘ great parishes, but they could not administer the sacrament,  
‘ because the officers of the parish had provided neither  
‘ surplice nor wafer bread. That on *Palm-Sunday*, one of  
‘ his chaplains designing to administer the sacrament to some  
‘ that desired it, the table was made ready, but while he was  
‘ reading the chapter of *the passion*, one of the parishioners  
‘ drew from the table both the cup and the wafer bread,  
‘ because the bread was not *common* ; and so the people  
‘ were disappointed, and his chaplain derided. That divers  
‘ churchwardens would provide neither surplice nor wafer  
‘ bread. He acquainted the secretary further, that he had  
‘ talked with several of the new preachers, who were mov-  
‘ ers of sedition and disorder, that he had commanded them  
‘ silence, and had put some into prison. That on *Maunday*  
‘ Thursday he had many of the bishop of *London’s* parish-  
‘ ioners, churchwardens, and others before him ; but that  
‘ he was fully tired, for some ministers would not obey  
‘ their *suspensions*, but preached in defiance of them.—  
‘ Some churchwardens would not provide the church fur-  
‘ niture ; and others opposed and disturbed those that were  
‘ sent to officiate in the prescribed apparel. He then calls  
‘ upon the secretary to spirit up [*Grindal*] bishop of *Lon-*  
‘ *don*, to his duty ; and assures him, that he had spoken to  
‘ him to no purpose ; that he was younger, and nearer the  
‘ city, and had vacant priests in his church, who might  
‘ supply the places of the deprived ministers ; he there-  
‘ fore bewailed that he should be put upon the oversight  
‘ of the parishes of *London*, which was another man’s  
‘ charge ; and that the burthen should be laid on his neck,  
‘ when other men drew back.’† The truth is, *Grindal*  
was weary of the unpleasant work, and having a real con-  
cern to promote the preaching of the word of God, he could  
not act against the ministers, otherwise than as he was  
pushed forwards ; and when the eyes of his superiors were  
turned another way, he would relax again. When the  
secretary and archbishop sent to him to provide for his  
*charge*, and fill up the vacant pulpits ; he told them it was  
impossible, there being no preachers ; all he could do was  
to supply the churches by turns, which was far from stop-  
ping the murmurs of the people.

† Life of Parker, p. 229.



This was the sad condition of the city of *London* ; the very bread of life being taken from the people for the sake of a few trifling ceremonies: And if it was thus in the city, how much worse must it be in those distant countries, where her majesty's injunctions were rigidly executed? And yet with all this rigor, it was not in the power of the Queen and her bishops, to reconcile the clergy and common people to the habits. The Queen herself was in earnest, and her archbishop went into the most servile measures, to fulfil the commands of his royal mistress ; the high commission was furious, but the council were backward to countenance their proceedings.

All applications to the Queen and her commissioners being ineffectual, the suspended ministers thought it their duty to lay their case before the world ; accordingly they published a small treatise this year [1566] in vindication of their conduct, intitled, *A declaration of the doings of those ministers of God's word and sacraments in the city of London, which have refused to wear the upper apparel, and ministering garments of the pope's church.* In this book they shew, ' That neither the prophets in the Old Testament, nor the apostles in the New, were distinguished by their garments ; that the linen garment was peculiar to the priesthood of *Aaron*, and had a signification of something to be fulfilled in Christ and his church.—That a distinction of garments in the christian church did not generally obtain till long after the rising of antichrist ; for the whole clergy of *Ravenna*, writing to the emperor *Carolus Calvus*, in the year of our Lord 876, say, *We are distinguished from the laity not by our clothes, but by our doctrines ; not by our habits, but our conversation.*—That the surplice, or white linen garment, came from the *Egyptians* into the *Jewish* church ; and that pope *Sylvester*, about the year 320, was the first that appointed the sacrament to be administered in a white linen garment ; giving this reason for it, because the body of Christ was buried in a white linen cloth. They represent how all these garments had been abused to idolatry, sorcery, and all kinds of conjurations ; for (say they) the popish priests can perform none of their pretended consecrations of holy water, transubstantiation



‘ of the body of Christ, conjurations of the devil out of  
‘ places or persons possessed, without a surplice, or an *albe*,  
‘ or some hallowed *stole*.—They argue against the habits  
‘ as an offence to weak christians, an encouragement to ig-  
‘ norant and obstinate papists, and as an affectation to re-  
‘ turn to their communion.—That at best they were but  
‘ human appointments, and came within the apostle’s re-  
‘ proof, *Col. ii. 20, 22.* *Why as though living in the world*  
‘ *are ye subject to ordinances, after the commandments and*  
‘ *doctrines of men ? Which all are to perish with the using.*  
‘ *Touch not, taste not, handle not.*—That supposing the  
‘ garments were indifferent, (which they did not grant) yet  
‘ they ought not to be imposed, because it was an infringe-  
‘ ment of the liberty wherewith Christ had made them  
‘ free.—*Lastly,* They call in the suffrages of foreign di-  
‘ vines, who all condemned the habits, though they were  
‘ not willing to hazard the reformation in its infancy for  
‘ them. Even bishop *Ridley*, who contended so zealously  
‘ for the habits, when Dr. *Brooks* at his degradation would  
‘ have persuaded him to put on the surplice with the rest of  
‘ the massing garments, absolutely refused, saying, *If you*  
‘ *put the surplice upon me, it shall be against my will.* And  
‘ when they forced it upon him, he inveighed against the  
‘ apparel, as foolish and abominable.’

At the end of the book is a prayer, in which are these  
words ;——‘ Are not the relics of *Romish* idolatry stoutly  
‘ retained ? Are we not bereaved of some of our pastors,  
‘ who by word and example sought to free thy flock from  
‘ these offences ? Ah, good Lord ! these are now by power  
‘ put down from pastoral care ; they are forbid to feed us ;  
‘ their voice we cannot hear. This is our great discomfort ;  
‘ this is the joy and triumph of Antichrist ; and, which is  
‘ more heavy, the *increase of this misery* is of some threat-  
‘ ened, of the wicked hoped for, and of us feared, as thy  
‘ judgments against us for our sins.’——At the conclusion  
is the Lord’s prayer and creed, after this manner, In thy  
name, O Christ our captain, we ask these things, and pray  
unto thee, O heavenly father, saying, *Our father, &c.*—  
After this ; O Lord, increase our faith, whereof we make  
confession, *I believe in God the Father Almighty, &c.* And

in the end is this sentence, *Arise, O Lord, and let thine enemies be confounded.\**

Other pamphlets of the same kind were published in defence of the suspended ministers, which the bishops appointed their chaplains to answer. Mr. *Strype* is of opinion, that the archbishop himself published an answer to their *declaration*; but whoever be the author, he is a man of a bad spirit, and abusive language.† The ministers printed a reply, intitled, *An answer for the time, to the examination put in print without the author's name, pretending to maintain the apparel prescribed, against the declaration of the ministers of London*; it answers the adversary paragraph by paragraph with good temper and judgment. But the bishops printed some new testimonies of foreign divines, without their consent, with a collection of tracts, of *obedience to the magistrate*, and *Melanchton's* exposition of *Rom. xiii. i. Let every soul be subject to the higher powers*: from whence they conclude, that because things are barely tolerable, though offensive, dangerous, and in their own opinions, to be removed out of the church, as soon as an opportunity shall offer, yet in the mean time they may be imposed under the penalties of suspension, deprivation, and imprisonment, from a mistaken interpretation of the apostle's words, *Let every soul be subject to the higher powers.*

The Puritans replied to all these attempts of their adversaries; their tracts were eagerly sought after, and had a wide spread among the people; upon which the commissioners had recourse to their last remedy, which was the further restraint of the press. They complained to the council, that notwithstanding the Queen's injunctions, the differences in the church were kept open by printing and publishing seditious libels; and hereupon procured the following decree of the star-chamber, viz.

1. "That no person shall print or publish any book  
"against the Queen's injunctions, ordinances, or letters  
"patents, set forth or to be set forth, or against the *mean-*  
*ing* of them.‡

\* *Strype's Annals*, p. 555.    *Pierce*, p. 61.

† *Pierce's Vindication*, p. 62.

‡ *Life of Parker*, p. 221.

That such offenders should forfeit all their books  
pies, and suffer three months imprisonment, and  
practise the art of printing any more.

That no person should sell, bind or stitch such books,  
pain of 20 shillings for every book.

That all forfeited books should be brought to *Sta-  
-Hall*, and half the money forfeited to be reserved  
Queen, the rest for the informer, and the books  
destroyed or made waste paper.

That the wardens of the company may from time  
search all suspected places, and open all packs, dry  
c. wherein paper or foreign books may be con-  
; and enter all warehouses where they have rea-  
e suspicion, and seize all books and pamphlets a-  
the Queen's ordinances, and bring the offenders  
the ecclesiastical commissioners.

All stationers, booksellers, and merchants trading in  
, shall enter into recognizances of reasonable sums  
ey, to observe the premises, or pay the forfeitures."

was signed by eight of the privy council, and by the  
of *Canterbury* and *London*, with five more of the  
tical commission, and published June 29th, 1566,  
ighth year of the Queen's reign.\*

puritans being thus foreclosed, and shut out of the  
by *sequestrations, imprisonments, the taking away of  
ences to preach, and the restraint of the press*, most  
were at a loss how to behave, being unwilling to  
from the church where the word and sacraments  
ly administered, though defiled with some popish  
tions; of this number were *Dr. Humphreys, Sampson,*  
martyrologist, *Lever, Whittingham, Johnson*, and  
who continued preaching up and down, as they

\* Life of Parker, p. 223.

Just remark of a modern writer here, "that without entering  
controversy between the bishops and the puritans, we may at  
are to affirm, that the former did no credit to their cause by  
rary restraint of the press." This is an expedient utterly in-  
e with the very notion of a free state, and therefore ever to  
ed by the friends of liberty. And it is an expedient which  
be of any service to the cause of truth; whatever it may to  
erstition, or tyranny. *British Biog. vol. iii. p. 25. Ed.*

had opportunity, and could be dispensed with for the habits, though they were excluded all parochial preferment.

But there were great numbers of the *common people*, who abhorred the habits as much as the ministers, and would not frequent the churches where they were used, thinking it as unlawful to countenance such superstitions with their presence, as if they themselves were to put on the garments. These were distressed where to hear; some staid without the church till *service* was over, and the minister was entering upon his prayer before sermon; others flocked after father Coverdale, who preached without the habits; but being turned out of his church at St. *Magnus, London-Bridge*, they were obliged to send to his house on *Saturdays*, to know where they might hear him the next day: The government took umbrage at this, insomuch that the good old man was obliged to tell his friends, that he durst not inform them any more of his preaching for fear of offending his superiors. At length, after having waited about eight weeks to see if the Queen would have compassion on them, several of the deprived ministers had a solemn consultation with their friends, in which, after prayer, and a serious debate about the lawfulness and necessity of separating from the established church, they came to this agreement, that *since they could not have the word of God preached, nor the sacraments administered without IDOLATROUS GEARE*, (as they called it) and *since there had been a separate congregation in London, and another at Geneva in Queen Mary's time, which used a book and order of preaching, administration of sacraments, and discipline, that the great Mr. Calvin had approved of, and which was free from the superstitions of the English service; that therefore it was their duty, in their present circumstances, to break off from the public churches, and to assemble, as they had opportunity, in private houses, or elsewhere, to worship God in a manner that might not offend against the light of their consciences.* Had the use of habits and a few ceremonies been left discretionary, both ministers and people had been easy; but *it was the compelling these things by law*, (as they told the archbishop) *that made them separate.*

\* Life of Parker, p. 241.

It was debated among them, whether they should use as much of the common prayer and service of the church as was not offensive, or resolve at once, since they were cut off from the church of *England*, to set up the purest and best form of worship, most consonant to the holy scriptures, and to the practice of the foreign reformers ; the latter of these was concluded upon, and accordingly they laid aside the *English* liturgy, and made use of the *Geneva* service-book.

Here was the *ÆRA* or date of the SEPARATION, a most unhappy event (says Mr. *Strype*) whereby “ people of the “ same country, of the same religion, and of the same judgment in doctrine, parted communions ; one part being obliged to go aside into secret houses, and chambers, to “ serve God by themselves, which begat strangeness between neighbors, christians, and protestants.” And not only strangeness, but unspeakable mischiefs to the nation in this and the following reigns. The breach might easily have been made up at first, but it widened by degrees ; the passions of the contending parties increased, till the fire, which for some years was burning under ground, broke out into a civil war, and with unspeakable fury destroyed the constitution both of church and state.

I leave the reader to judge at whose door the beginnings of these sorrows are to be laid, each party casting the blame on the other. The conformists charged the *deprived ministers* with disobedience to the Queen, and obstinacy, preciseness, and with breaking the peace of the church for matters of no consequence to salvation. The *ministers*, on the other hand, thought it cruel usage to be turned out of the church for things which their adversaries acknowledged to be of mere indifference ; whereas they took it upon their consciences, and were ready to aver in the most solemn manner, that they deemed them unlawful. They complied as far as they could with the establishment while they were within it, by using as much of the liturgy as was not offensive, and by taking the oath of supremacy ; they were as dutiful subjects to the Queen as the bishops, and declared themselves ready to obey their sovereign in all things lawful ; and when they could not obey, patiently to suffer her

displeasure. After all this, to impute the behavior of the *non-conformists* to obstinacy and peevishness, was very uncharitable. What could move them to part with their livings, or support them under the loss, *but the testimony of a good conscience?* When they could not but be sensible their NON-CONFORMITY would be followed with poverty and disgrace, with the loss of their characters and usefulness in the church; and with numberless unforeseen calamities to themselves and families, unless it should please God in his all-wise providence, to soften the Queen's heart in their favor.

In *Scotland* all things were in confusion. The young Queen *Mary*, after the death of her husband *Francis II.* returned into her own country, August 21, 1561, upon ill terms with Queen *Elizabeth*, who could not brook her assuming the arms of *England*, and putting in her claim to the crown, on the pretence of her bastardy, which most of the popish powers maintained, because she was born during the life of Queen *Katherine*, whose marriage had been declared valid by the pope. *Elizabeth* offered her a safe conduct, if she would ratify the treaty of *Edinburgh*; but she chose rather to run all risks than submit. *MARY* was a bigotted papist, and her juvenile amours and follies soon entangled her government, and lost her crown. As soon as she arrived in *Scotland* she had the mortification to see the whole nation turned protestant, and the reformation established by laws so secure and strict, that only herself was allowed the liberty of mass in her own chapel, and that without pomp or ostentation. The protestants of *Scotland*, by the preaching of Mr. *Knox* and others, having imbibed the strongest aversion to popery, were for removing at the greatest distance from its superstitions. The general assembly petitioned her majesty, to ratify the acts of parliament for abolishing the mass, and for obliging all her subjects to frequent the reformed worship. But she replied, that she saw no impiety in the mass, and was determined not to quit the religion in which she was educated, being satisfied it was founded on the word of God. To which the general assembly answered a little coarsely, that *Turcism stood upon as good ground as Popery*; and then required her, in the name of the *eternal God*, to inform herself better, by frequenting sermons, and

conferring with learned men : But her majesty gave no ear to their counsels.

In the year 1564, the Queen married *Henry Stuart*, Lord *Darnly*, who was joined with her in the government. By him she was brought to bed of a son June 15, 1566, afterwards *James I.* King of *England* ; and while she was with child of him, she received a fright by her husband's coming into her chamber with his servants, and putting to death her favorite *David Rizzo* an *Italian* musician, who was sitting with her at table. This was thought to have such an influence upon the prince that was born of her, that he never loved the sight of a sword. Soon after this the King himself was found murdered in a garden, the house in which the murder was committed being blown up with gunpowder, to prevent the discovery. Upon the King's death the Earl of *Bothwel* became the Queen's favorite, and as soon as he had obtained a divorce from his lawful wife, she took him into her marriage-bed, to her very great infamy, and the regret of the whole *Scots* nation, who took up arms to revenge the late King's murder, and dissolve the present incestuous marriage. When the two armies were ready to engage, *Bothwel* fled to *Dunbar* ; and the Queen being apprehensive her soldiers would not fight in such an infamous cause, surrendered herself to the confederates, who shut her up in the castle of *Lock-Levin*, and obliged her to resign the crown to her young son, under the regency of the Earl of *Murray*. From hence she made her escape into *England* in the year 1568, where she was detained prisoner by Queen *Elizabeth* almost 18 years, and then put to death. *Bothwel* turned pirate, and being taken by the *Danes*, was shut up for ten years in a noisome prison in *Denmark* till he lost his senses and died mad.

The Earl of *Murray* being regent of *Scotland* convened a parliament and assembly at *Edinburgh*, in which the pope's authority was again discharged, and the act of parliament of the year 1560, for renouncing the jurisdiction of the court of *Rome* was confirmed, and all acts passed in former reigns, for the support of *popish idolatry*, were an-

\* Rapin, p. 857.



nulled.—The new confession of faith was ratified, and the protestant ministers, and those of their communion, declared to be the only true and holy kirk within that realm. The examination and admission of ministers, is declared to be only in the power and disposition of the church; with a saving clause for *lay-patrons*. By another act, the Kings at their coronation, for the future, are to take an oath to maintain the reformed religion then professed: And by another, none but such as profess the reformed religion are capable of being judges or proctors, or of practising in any of the courts of justice; except those who held offices hereditary, or for life.

The general assembly declared their approbation of the discipline of the reformed churches of *Geneva* and *Switzerland*; and for a parity among ministers, in opposition to the claim of the bishops, as a superior order. All church-affairs were managed by provincial, classical, and national assemblies; but these acts of the general assembly not being confirmed by parliament, *episcopal government* was not legally abolished, but tacitly suspended till the King came of age. However, the general assembly shewed their power of the keys at this time, by deposing the bishop of *Orkney* for marrying the Queen to *Bothwell*, who was supposed to have murdered the late King; and by making the Countess of *Argyle* do penance for assisting at the ceremony.

## CHAP. V.

*From the separation of the Protestant Non-Conformists  
to the death of Archbishop PARKER.*

**THOUGH** all the Puritans of these times would have remained within the church, might they have been indulged in the habits and a few ceremonies, yet they were far from being satisfied with the **HIERARCHY**. They had other objections besides those for which they were deprived, which they labored incessantly throughout the whole course of this reign to remove. I will set them before the reader in one view, that he may form a complete judgment of the whole controversy.

*First.* They complained of the **BISHOPS** affecting to be thought a superior order to *Presbyters*, and claimed the sole right of ordination, and the use of the keys, or the sole exercise of ecclesiastical discipline. They disliked the temporal dignities and baronies annexed to their office, and their engaging in secular employments and trusts, as tending to exalt them too much above their brethren, and not so agreeable to their characters as *ministers of Christ*, nor consistent with the due discharge of their spiritual function.

*Secondly.* They excepted to the titles and offices of *archdeacons, deans, chapters*, and other *officials* belonging to *cathedrals*, as having no foundation in scripture or primitive antiquity, but intrenching upon the privileges of the *presbyters* of the several dioceses.

*Thirdly.* They complained of the exorbitant power and jurisdiction of the bishops and their chancellors in their *spiritual courts*, as derived from the canon law of the pope, and not from the word of God, or the statute law of the land. They complained of their fining, imprisoning, depriving, and putting men to excessive charges for small offences; and that the highest censures, such as *excommunication* and *absolution*, were in the hands of *laymen*, and not in the spiritual officers of the church.

*Fourthly.* They lamented the want of a *godly discipline*, and were uneasy at the promiscuous and general access of all persons to the Lord's table. The church being described in her articles as a *congregation of faithful persons*, they thought it necessary that a power should be lodged somewhere, to inquire into the qualifications of such as desired to be of her communion.

*Fifthly.* Though they did not dispute the lawfulness of *set forms of prayer*, provided a due liberty was allowed for prayers of their own composure, before and after sermon; yet they disliked some things in the public liturgy, established by law; as the frequent repetition of the *Lord's prayer*; the interruption of the prayers, by the frequent *responses* of the people, which in some places seem to be little better than vain repetitions, and are practised in no other protestant church in the world. They excepted to some passages in the offices of *marriage* and *burial*, &c. which they very unwillingly complied with; as in the office of marriage. *With my body I thee worship*; and in the office of burial, *In sure and certain hope of the resurrection to eternal life*. to be pronounced over the worst of men, unless in a very few excepted cases.

*Sixthly.* They disliked the reading of the *apocryphal books* in the church, while some parts of canonical scripture were omitted; and though they did not disapprove the homilies, they thought that no man ought to be ordained a minister in the church, who was incapable of preaching and expounding the scriptures. One of their great complaints, therefore, throughout the course of this reign, was, that there were so many *dumb ministers, pluralists, and non-residents*; and that presentations to benefices were in the hands of the queen, bishops, or *lay-patrons*, when they ought to arise from the election of the people.

*Seventhly.* They disapproved of the observation of sundry of the church *festivals* or *holidays*, as having no foundation in scripture, or primitive antiquity. *We have no example, say they, in the Old or New Testament, of any days appointed in commemoration of saints: To observe the fast in Lent of Friday and Saturday, &c. is unlawful and superstitious: as also buying and selling on the Lord's day.*

*Eighthly.* They disallowed of the *cathedral mode of worship*; of singing their prayers, and of the *antiphone*, or chanting the psalms by turns, which the ecclesiastical commissioners in King *Edward VI*th's time advised the laying aside. Nor did they approve of musical instruments, as *trumpets, organs, &c.* which were not in use in the church for above 1200 years after Christ.

*Ninthly.* They scrupled conformity to certain rites and ceremonies, which were enjoined by the rubric, or the Queen's injunctions; as,

1. To the sign of the cross in baptism, which is no part of the institution as recorded in scripture; and though it was usual for christians, in the earlier ages, to cross themselves, or make a cross in the air upon some occasions, yet there is no express mention of its being used in baptism, till about the fifth century. Besides, it having been abused to superstition by the church of *Rome*, and been had in such reverence by some protestants, that baptism itself has been thought imperfect without it, they apprehend it ought to be laid aside. They also disallowed of baptism by *midwives*, or other women, in cases of sickness; and of the manner of *churching* women, which looked to them too much like the *Jewish* purification.

2. They excepted to the use of *godfathers and godmothers*, to the exclusion of parents from being sureties for the education of their own children. If parents were dead, or in a distant country, they were as much for sponsors to undertake for the education of the child, as their adversaries; but when the education of children is by the laws of God and nature intrusted to parents, who are bound to form them to virtue and piety, they apprehended it very unjustifiable to release them totally from that promise, and deliver up the child to a stranger; as was then the constant practice, and is since enjoined by the 29th canon, which says, "*No parent shall be urged to be present, nor be admitted to answer as godfather to his own child.*" In giving names to children it was their opinion, that *heathenish names* should be avoided, as not so fit for christians; and also, the names of *God and Christ*, and *Angels*, and the peculiar offices of the mediator. They also disliked the godfathers answering in the name of the child, and not in their own.

3. They disapproved the custom of *confirming children*, as soon as they could repeat the Lord's prayer and their catechism, by which they had a right to come to the sacrament, without any other qualification ; this might be done by children of five or six years old. They were also dissatisfied with that part of the office, where the bishop, laying his hand upon the children, prays that God would *by this sign* certify them of his favor and goodness, which seems to impute a sacramental efficacy to the imposition of his hands.

4. They excepted against the injunction of *kneeling at the sacrament of the Lord's supper*, which they apprehended not so agreeable to the example of Christ and his apostles, who gave it to his disciples rather in a posture of feasting than of adoration. Besides, it has no foundation in antiquity for many hundred years after Christ ; and having since been grossly abused by the papists to idolatry, in their worshipping the host, it ought, say they, to be laid aside ; and if it should be allowed, that the *posture* was indifferent, yet it ought not to be imposed and made a necessary term as communion ; nor did they approve of either of the sacraments being administered in private ; no, not in cases of danger.

5. To *bowing at the name of Jesus*, grounded upon a false interpretation of that passage of scripture, *At the name of Jesus every knee shall bow* ; as if greater external reverence was required to that name, than to the person of our blessed Saviour, under the titles of *Lord, Saviour, Christ, Immanuel*, &c. and yet upon this mistake was founded the injunction of the Queen, and the 18th canon, which says, "When in time of divine service the name of Jesus shall be mentioned, due and lowly reverence shall be done by all persons present." But the Puritans maintained, that all the names of *God* and *Christ* were to be had in equal reverence, and therefore it was beside all reason to bow the knee, or uncover the head, only at the name of *Jesus*.

6. To *the ring in marriage*. This they sometimes complied with, but wished it altered. It is derived from the papists, who make marriage a sacrament, and the ring a sort of sacred sign or symbol. The words in the liturgy are, "Then shall they again loose their hands, and the man shall give unto the woman a ring, laying the same upon

“ the book ; and the priest taking the ring, shall deliver it  
 “ to the man, to put it on the fourth finger of the woman’s  
 “ left hand ; and the man holding the ring there, and  
 “ taught by the priest, shall say, *With this ring I thee wed,*  
 “ *with my body I thee worship, and with all my wordly goods*  
 “ *I thee endow ;* in the name of the Father, and of the Son,  
 “ and of the Holy Ghost.” They also disallowed the for-  
 bidding of marriage at certain times of the year, and then  
 “ licensing it for money (say they) is more intolerable. Nor  
 “ is it lawful to grant licences that some may marry without  
 “ the knowledge of the congregation, who ought to be ac-  
 “ quainted with it, lest there should be any secret letts or  
 “ hindrances.”

7. *To the wearing of the surplice, and other ceremonies to be used in divine service ;* concerning which the church says, in the preface to her liturgy, that *though they were devised by men, yet they are reserved for decency, order, and edification.* And again, *they are apt to stir up the dull mind of man to the remembrance of his duty to God by some notable and special signification, whereby he might be edified.* But the Puritans saw no decency in the vestments ; nay, they thought them a disgrace to the reformation, and in the present circumstances absolutely unlawful, because they had been defiled with superstition and idolatry ; and because many pretended protestants placed a kind of holiness in them. Besides, the wearing them gave countenance to popery, and looked as if we were fond of being thought a branch of that communion, which we had so justly renounced. But suppose them to be indifferent, they gave great offence to weak minds, and therefore ought not to be imposed, when there was no foundation for the use of them in scripture or primitive antiquity.

These things (say they) every one should endeavor to reform in his place, *ministers* by the word, *magistrates* by their authority, according to the word of God, and the *people* by prayer.

There was no difference in points of doctrine between the *Puritans* and *conformists* ;\* so that if we add but one arti-

\* This was, undoubtedly true, with respect to the majority : but this history has furnished different instances of objections in point of doctrine.

ele more, we have the chief head of controversy between the church of *England*, and the protestant dissenters at that day ; and this is, *the natural right that every man has to judge for himself, and make profession of that religion, he apprehends most agreeable to truth, as far as it does not affect the peace and safety of the government he lives under ; without being determined by the prejudices of education, the laws of the civil magistrate, or the decrees of councils, churches, or synods.\** This principle would effectually put an end to all impositions ; and unless it be allowed, I am afraid our separation from the church of *Rome* can hardly be justified. The Bible, says Mr. *Chillingworth*, and that only, is the religion of protestants ; and every one, by making use of the helps and assistances that God has put into his hands, must learn and understand it for himself as well as he can.

It will appear hereafter what sort of discipline the Puritans would have introduced ; but these were the objections that hindered their compliance with the present establishment,

The established sentiments concerning the Trinity and the person of Christ, though they did not form the grounds of that separation, of which our author writes, were yet called in question, and as we have seen in the note p. 66, were by no means universally received. But it would not have been surprising, if in that early period of the reformation, there had been a perfect acquiescence in every doctrinal principle, that did not appear to have been peculiar to the system of popery : for the progress of the mind and of enquiry is necessarily gradual. The gross corruptions of popery were at first sufficient to occupy and fill the thoughts of the generality. A kind of sacred awe spread itself over questions connected with the character and nature of God and his Christ, which would deter many from a close and free examination of them. And ceremonies and habits, being more obvious to the senses, continually coming into use and practice, and being enforced with severity, the questions relative to them more easily engaged attention, were more level to the decision of common understandings, and became immediately interesting. In this state of things there was little room and less inclination to push enquiries on matters of speculation. *Ed.*

\* Bishop *Warburton* is displeased with Mr. *Neal* for speaking of the *natural right* every man has to judge for himself as one of the heads of controversy between the Puritans and Conformists : when, his lordship adds, “ his whole history shews that this was a *truth* unknown to either party.” It is true, that neither party had clear, full, and extensive views on this point ; or were disposed to grant the consequences arising from it. But each in a degree admitted it and acted upon it. And the Puritans it appears, by p. 217, rested their vindication, in part, upon this principle. *Ed.*



and for which they were content *to suffer the loss of all things*. Those who remained within the church became itinerant preachers, lecturers, or chaplains. The chief leaders of the *separation*, according to Mr. Fuller, were the Rev. Mr. Colman, Mr. Button, Mr. Hullingham, Mr. Benson, Mr. White, Mr. Rowland, and Mr. Hawkins, all beneficed within the diocese of *London*. These had their followers of the laity, who forsook their parish-churches, and assembled with the deprived ministers in woods and private houses, to worship God without the habits and ceremonies of the church.

The Queen, being informed of their proceedings, sent to her commissioners to take effectual measures to keep the laity to their parish-churches: and to let them know, that if they frequented any separate conventicles, or broke through the ecclesiastical laws, they should for the first offence be deprived of their freedom of the city of *London*, and after that abide what further punishment she should direct. This was a vast stretch of the prerogative;† there being no law as yet to disfranchise any man for not coming to church.

But notwithstanding this threatening message, they went on with their assemblies, and on the 19th of June 1567, agreed to have a sermon and a communion at *Plumbers-Hall*, which they hired for that day under pretence of a wedding; but here the sheriffs of *London* detected and broke them up, when they were assembled to the number of about one hundred; most of them were taken into custody, and some sent to the *Compter*, and next day seven or eight of the chief were brought before the bishop of *London*, Dean Goodman, Mr. Archdeacon Watts, and Sir Roger Martin, lord-mayor of *London*.\* The bishop charged them *with absenting from their parish-churches, and with setting up separate assemblies for prayer and preaching, and ministering the sacrament*.—He told them, that by these proceedings they condemned the church of England, which was well reformed according to the word of God, and those martyrs who had

† Which, adds Dr. Warner, “plainly showed Elizabeth to be the true daughter of Henry.”

\* Life of Grindal, p. 242. Life of Parker, p. 342.

shed their blood for it. To which one of them replied, in the name of the rest, that they condemned them not, but only stood for the truth of God's word. Then the bishop asked the antientest of them, *Mr. John Smith*, what he could answer? who replied, "That they thanked God for the reformation; that as long as they could hear the word of God preached without idolatrous gear about it, they never assembled in private houses; but when it came to this point, that all their preachers were displaced who would not subscribe to the apparel, so that they could hear none of them in the church, for the space of seven or eight weeks, except father *Coverdale*, they began to consult what to do; and remembering there had been a congregation of protestants in the city of *London* in *Queen Mary's* days, and another of *English* exiles at *Geneva*, that used a book framed by them there, they resolved to meet privately together, and use the said book." And finally, *Mr. Smith* offered, in the name of the rest, to yield, and do penance at *St. Paul's Cross*, if the bishop and the commissioners with him, could reprove that book, or any thing else that they held, by the word of God.

The bishop told him, *they could not reprove the book*; but that was no sufficient answer for his not going to church.\* To which *Mr. Smith* replied, that "He would as soon go to mass as to some churches, and particularly to his own parish-church; for the minister that officiated there was a very papist." Others said the same of other parish priests. The bishop asked, if they accused any of them by name; upon which one of them presently named *Mr. Bedel*, who was there present, but the bishop would not enquire into the accusation.

The dean of *Westminster*, who was one of the ecclesiastical commission, charged them *with derogating from the Queen's authority of appointing indifferent things in God's worship*. To which one of them answered, that "it lay not in the authority of a prince, nor the liberty of a christian man, to use and defend that which appertained to papistry, idolatry, and the pope's canon law." Another said, that *these things* were preferred before the word of God and

\* Pierce, p. 42.

“the ordinances of Christ.” The bishop asked them what was preferred? One of them answered boldly, “That which was upon the bishop’s head, and upon his back; their copes and surplices, and canon laws.” Another said, “that he thought both prince and people ought to obey the word of God.” To which the bishop yielded, except in things that were indifferent, which God had neither commanded nor forbidden; in these he asserted, that princes had authority to order and command. Whereupon several of them cried out, “*Prove that, where find you that?*”—But the bishop would not enter into the debate, alledging the judgment of the learned *Bullinger*; to which Mr. Smith replied, that perhaps they could shew *Bullinger* against *Bullinger*, in the affair of the habits.

The bishop asked them, whether they would be determined by the church of *Geneva*. Mr. Smith replied, “that they revered the learned in *Geneva*, and in other places, but did not build their faith and religion upon them.”—The bishop produced the following passage out of one of *Beza’s* letters against them; *that against the bishops and prince’s will, they should exercise their office, they* [the ministers of *Geneva*] *did much the more tremble at it.* Mark, says the bishop, how the learned *Beza* trembles at your case. Whereupon one of them said they knew the letter well enough, and that it made nothing against them, but rather against the prince and the bishops. *Beza* and his learned brethren trembled at their case, and in proceeding to such extremities with men, as to drive them against their wills to that which they did not care to mention. Their words are these, “We hope that her royal majesty, and so many men of dignity and goodness, will endeavor that care may rather be taken of so many pious and learned brethren, than so great an evil should happen, to wit, that the pastors should be forced, against their consciences, to do that which is evil, and so to involve themselves in other men’s sins, or to give over; for we more dread that third thing, (viz.) to exercise their ministry contrary to the will of her majesty and the bishops, for causes, which though we hold our peace, may well

*“ enough be understood.”*\* How the bishop could think this was levelled against the non-conformists is hard to understand.

To go on with the examination. One of the prisoners said, that “ before they compelled the ceremonies, so that “ none might officiate without them, all was quiet.” Another (viz. Mr. *Hawkins*) produced a passage out of *Melanchton*, that “ when the opinion of holiness, or necessity, “ is put unto things indifferent, they darken the light of the “ gospel.” The bishop replied, *that the ceremonies and habits were not commanded of necessity.* To which *Hawkins* rejoined, that they had made them matters of necessity, as many a poor man had felt to his cost, who had been discharged of his living for non-conformity. When the bishop had occasionally observed, that he had formerly said mass, but was sorry for it, one of them answered, he went still in the habit of a mass-priest. To which he replied, that *he had rather minister without the cope and surplice, but for order sake and obedience to the Queen.* When some of the commissioners urged them with the reformation of King *Edward*, one said, that “ they never went so far in his time, “ as to make a law that none should preach or minister “ without the garments.” Sundry other expressions of warmth passed on both sides ; at length one of them delivered to Justice *Harris* their book of order, [the *Geneva* book] and challenged any of the commissioners to disprove it by the word of God, and they would give over. The bishop said they *reproved it not*, but they liked not their separate assemblies to trouble the common quiet of the realm against the Queen’s will. But the others insisted on their superior regards to the *word of God*. In conclusion the prisoners, not yielding to the bishop, were sent to *Bridewell*, where they with their brethren, and sundry women, were kept in durance above a year : at length, their patience and constancy having been sufficiently tried, an order was sent from the lords of the council to release them ;† with an admonition to behave themselves better for the future.‡—

\* Life of Grindal, Records, No. xvi.

† This was done at the motion and council of bishop *Grindal*. ED.

‡ Grindal’s Life, p. 135.

Accordingly twenty-four men and seven women were discharged.\* Whether these severities were justifiable by the laws of God or the land, I leave with the reader.

There was a spirit of uncommon zeal in these people to suffer all extremities for the cause in which they were engaged. In one of their letters, directed *to all the brethren that believed in Christ*, the writer, who was but a layman, says,—‘ The reason why we will not hear our parish ministers, is, because they will not stand forth and defend the gospel against the *leavings* of popery, for fear of loss of goods, or punishment of body, or danger of imprisonment, or else for fear of men more than God.’ He then calls up their courage, ‘ Awake, O ye cold and lukewarm preachers, out of sleep; gird up yourselves with the truth; come forth and put your necks [to the yoke] and think with *Peter*, that persecution is no strange thing; for which of the prophets were not persecuted as well as Christ and his apostles; not for evil doing, but for preaching God’s word, and for rebuking the world of sin, and for their faith in Jesus Christ? This is the ordinance of God, and this is the highway to Heaven, by corporeal death to eternal life, as Christ saith, *John v.* Let us never fear death, that is killed [conquered] by Christ, but believe in him and live forever. *There is no condemnation to them that are in Christ. O death! where is thy sting? thanks be to God, that has given us the victory.*—Let us not then dissemble, as some do, to save their pigs, but be valiant for the truth. I doubt not, but all they who believe the truth, and will obey it, will consider the cause;† and the Lord, for his Christ’s sake, make *Ephraim* and *Manasses* to agree, that we may all with one heart and mind unfeignedly seek God’s glory, and the edification of his people, that we may live in all godly peace, unity,

\* The names of the men were, *John Smith, John Roper, Robert Tod, Robert Hawkins, James Ireland, William Nickson, Walter Hynkesman, Thomas Rowland, George Waddy, William Turner, John Nuphe, James Adderton, William Wight, Thomas Lydford, Richard Langton, Alexander Lacy, John Leonard, Roger Hawksworth, Robert Sparrow, Richard King, Christopher Colman, John Benson, John Bolton, Robert Gates.*

† MS. p. 42.

‘ and concord. This grant, O Lord, for Christ Jesus’  
 ‘ sake, to whom with thee, and the Holy Ghost, be all  
 ‘ praise, glory and honor, for ever and ever.’

Another in a letter to Bishop *Grindal*, occasioned by his lordship’s discourse to the *prisoner* at his examination before him, December 19, begins thus, “ Pleasethy our *wisdom*,  
 ‘ my duty remembered, &c. being grieved at certain words  
 ‘ spoken by you, and at your extreme dealing with us of  
 ‘ late, I am bold to utter my grief in this manner. You  
 ‘ said, if discipline did not tend to peace and unity, it were  
 ‘ better refused ; whereas our Savior Christ commandeth  
 ‘ discipline as one part of the gospel, most necessary for  
 ‘ the church’s peace and order ; the apostles practised it,  
 ‘ and Mr. *Calvin* and other learned men, call it the sinews  
 ‘ of the church, that keeps the members together ; and  
 ‘ *Beza* says, where discipline is wanting, there will be a li-  
 ‘ centious life and a school of wickedness.—*Secondly*, You  
 ‘ seemed to be offended with a late exercise of *prayer*, and  
 ‘ *fasting*, saying, that you had not heard of any exercise  
 ‘ of this kind without consent of public authority ; to which  
 ‘ the example of the *Ninerites* plainly answers, who pro-  
 ‘ claimed a fast before they acquainted the King with it ;  
 ‘ nor did the King blame his subjects for going before him  
 ‘ in well-doing, but approved it by doing the like.—*Thirdly*,  
 ‘ You said, you would never ask God mercy for using the  
 ‘ apparel ;\* and should appear before him with a better  
 ‘ conscience than we ; whereas you said in a sermon, as  
 ‘ many can witness, that *you was sorry*, for that you knew  
 ‘ you should offend many godly consciences by wearing  
 ‘ this apparel ; requiring your auditory to have patience for  
 ‘ a time, for that you did but use them for a time, to the  
 ‘ end you might the sooner abolish them : And now you  
 ‘ displace, banish, persecute, and imprison, such as will not  
 ‘ wear, nor consent thereunto, and at the same time say,  
 ‘ you fear not to appear before God for so doing. But if  
 ‘ the *Corinthians*, for eating meat to the offence of their  
 ‘ brethren, are said to sin against Christ, how much more  
 ‘ do you, who not only retain the remnants of Antichrist,

\* MS. p. 22.

‘ but compel others to the same? Better were it for you to  
 ‘ leave your *lordly dignity*, not given you by Christ, and to  
 ‘ suffer affliction for the truth of the gospel, than by enjoying  
 ‘ thereof to become a persecutor of your brethren. Consid-  
 ‘ er (I pray you) if throughout the whole scriptures you can  
 ‘ find one, that was first a persecutor, and after was perse-  
 ‘ cuted for the truth, that ever fell to persecuting again and  
 ‘ repented. I desire you, in the bowels of Christ, to consid-  
 ‘ er your own case, who by your own confession was once  
 ‘ a persecutor, and have since been persecuted ; whether  
 ‘ displacing, banishing, and imprisoning God’s children  
 ‘ more streightly than felons, heretics or traitors, be perse-  
 ‘ cuting again or no? They that make the best of it, say, you  
 ‘ buffet your brethren, which if the master of the house find  
 ‘ you so doing you know your reward. I desire you, there-  
 ‘ fore, in the bowels of Christ, not to restrain us of the lib-  
 ‘ erty of our consciences, but be a means to enlarge our lib-  
 ‘ erty in the truth and sincerity of the gospel ; and use your  
 ‘ interest, that all the remnants of Antichrist may be abol-  
 ‘ ished, *with every plant that our heavenly father has not*  
 ‘ *planted.* Signed, *Yours in the Lord to command, Wm.*  
 ‘ *WHITE, who joineth with you in every speck of truth, but*  
 ‘ *utterly detesteth whole Antichrist, head, body, and tail,*  
 ‘ *never to join with you, or any, in the least joint thereof ;*  
 ‘ *nor in any ordinance of man, contrary to the word of God,*  
 ‘ *by his grace unto the church.”*

But neither the arguments nor sufferings of the *Puritans*,  
 nor their great and undissembled piety, had an influence upon  
 the *commissioners*, who had their spies in all suspected pla-  
 ces, to prevent their religious assemblies ; and gave out strict  
 orders, that no clergyman should be permitted to preach in  
 any of the pulpits of *London*, without a licence from the  
 archbishop of *Canterbury*, or the bishop of *London*.

The persecution of the protestants in *France* and the  
*Low Countries* was hot and terrible about this time. The  
 King of *France* broke through all his edicts, for the free  
 exercise of the reformed religion ; he banished their min-  
 isters, and much blood was spilt in their religious wars.  
 In the *Netherlands* the Duke *D’Alva* breathed out nothing  
 but blood and slaughter, putting multitudes to death for re-



ligion. This occasioned great numbers to fly into *England*, which multiplied the *Dutch* churches in *Norwich*, *Colchester*, *Sandwich*, *Canterbury*, *Maidstone*, *Southampton*, *London*, *Southwark*, and elsewhere. The Queen, for their encouragement, allowed them the liberty of their own *modes of worship*, and as they brought their manufactures over with them, they proved very beneficial to the trade and commerce of the nation.

Even in *England* the hearts of all good men were ready to fail, for fear of the return of popish idolatry; the Queen being suddenly seized with a severe fit of sickness this summer, [1568] which brought her to the very point of death, and the presumptive heir, *MARY*, late Queen of *Scots*, being a bigotted papist. The Queen, together with her bodily distemper, was under great terror of mind for her sins, and for not discharging the duty of her high station as she ought: She said, *she had forgotten her God! to whom she had made many vows, and been unthankful to him.* Prayers were composed, and publicly read in all churches for her majesty's recovery, in which they petitioned, *that God would heal her soul, and cure her mind as well as her body.* The papists were never more sanguine in their expectations, nor the reformation in greater danger, than now; and yet *Bridewell* and other prisons were full of Puritans, as appears by a manuscript letter of Mr. *Thomas Lever*, now before me, dated Dec. 5, 1568, in which he endeavors to comfort the prisoners, and declares that though the popish garments and ceremonies were not unclean in themselves,\* yet he was determined for himself, by God's grace, never to wear the *square cap and surplice*, because they tended neither to decency nor edification, but to offence, dissension, and division in the church of Christ: nor would he kneel at the communion, because it was a symbolizing with popery, and looked too much like the adoration of the host. But at length it pleased Almighty God to dissipate for the present the clouds that hung over the reformation, by the Queen's recovery.

This year was published the Bible in folio, called the *Bishop's Bible*, with a preface by Archbishop *Parker*. It was

\* MS. p. 18.

only *Cranmer's* translation revised and corrected by several bishops and learned men, whose names may be seen in the records of bishop *Burnet's* history of the reformation.—The design was to set aside the *Geneva translation*, which had given offence. In the beginning, before the book of *Genesis*, is a map of the land of *Canaan* ; before the *New Testament* is inserted a map of the places mentioned in the four evangelists, and the journeys of Christ and his apostles. There are various cuts dispersed through the book, and several genealogical and chronological tables, with the arms of divers noblemen, particularly those of *Cranmer* and *Parker*. There are also some references and marginal notes, for the explication of difficult passages.\* This was the Bible that was read in the churches till the last translation of King *James I.* took place.

But there was another storm gathering abroad, which threatened the reformation all over *Europe* ; most of the popish princes having entered into a league to extirpate it out of the world : the principal confederates were the pope, the emperor, the kings of *Spain*, *France*, and *Portugal* ; with the Duke of *Savoy*, and some lesser princes : their agreement was, to endeavor by force of arms to depose all protestant kings or potentates, and to place catholics in their room ; and to displace, banish, and condemn to death, all well-wishers, and assistants of the clergy of *Luther* and *Calvin*, while the pope was to thunder out his anathemas against the Queen of *England*, to interdict the kingdom, and to absolve her subjects from their allegiance. In prosecution of this league, war was already begun in *France*, *Holland*, and in several parts of *Germany*, with unheard-of cruelties against the reformed. Under these difficulties, the protestant princes of *Germany* entered into a league, for their common defence, and invited the Queen of *England* to accede to it. Her majesty sent Sir *Henry Killigrew* over to the Elector *Palatine* with a handsome excuse ; and at the same time ordered her ambassador in *France*, to offer her mediation between that King and his protestant subjects : but the confederacy was not to be broken by treaties ;

\* *Strype's Annals*, p. 216.

upon which her majesty, by way of self-defence, and to ward off the storm from her own kingdoms, assisted the confederate protestants of *France* and *Holland*, with men and money. This was the second time the Queen had supported *them* in their religious wars against their natural Kings. The foreign popish princes reproached her for it; and her majesty's ministers had much ado to reconcile it with the court doctrines of passive obedience and non-resistance.

At home the papists were in motion, having vast expectations from certain prophecies, that the Queen should not reign above twelve years; their numbers were formidable and such was their latitude, that it was not easy to bring them within the verge of the laws. In *Lancashire* the common prayer-book was laid aside, churches were shut up, and the mass celebrated openly. The Queen sent down commissioners of enquiry, but all they could do was to bind some of the principal gentlemen to their good behavior in recognizances of 100 marks.\* Two of the colleges of *Oxford*, (viz.) *New College* and *Corpus Christi*, were so overrun with papists, that the bishop of *Winchester* their visitor, was forced to break open the gates of the college, and send for the ecclesiastical commission to reduce them to order.† Great numbers of papists harbored in the inns of court, and in several other places of public resort, expecting with impatience the death of the Queen, and the succession of the presumptive heir, *MARY*, late Queen of *Scotland*.

Towards the latter end of the year, the earls of *Northumberland* and *Westmoreland*, with their friends, to the number of 4000, broke out into open rebellion; their pretence was, to restore the popish religion, and deliver the Queen of *Scots*. In the city of *Durham* they tore the Bible and common prayer-book to pieces, and restored the mass in all places wherever they came; but hearing of the advance of the Queen's army under the Earl of *Suffolk*, they fled northward, and mouldered away, without standing a battle: the Earl of *Northumberland* was taken in *Scotland*, and executed at *York*, with many of his confederates; but the Earl of *Westmoreland* escaped into *Flanders*, and died in poverty.

\* Strype's Ann. p. 541.

† Grindal's Life, p. 133.

No sooner was this rebellion over but the lord *Dacres* excited another on the borders of *Scotland*; but after a small skirmish with the governor of *Berwick* he was defeated and fled, and the rabble were pardoned. There was a general commotion among the papists in all parts of the kingdom, who would have united their forces, if the northern rebels had maintained their ground.

To give new life to the catholic cause, the pope published a *bull*, excommunicating the Queen, and absolving her subjects from their allegiance. In this bull he calls her majesty an *usurper*, and a *vassal of iniquity*; and having given some instances of her aversion to the catholic religion, he declares ‘her an heretic, and an encourager of heretics; ‘and anathematizes all that adhere to her. He deprives ‘her of her royal crown and dignity, and absolves all her ‘subjects from all obligations of fidelity and obedience.\* ‘He involves all those in the same sentence of excommu- ‘nication who presume to obey her orders, commands, or ‘laws, for the future; and excites all foreign potentates to ‘take up arms against her.’ This alarmed the *administration*, and put them upon their guard; but it quickly appeared that the pope’s thunderbolts had lost their terror; for the Roman catholic princes not being forward to encourage the court of *Rome’s* pretended power of excommunicating princes, continued their correspondence with the Queen; and her own Roman catholic subjects remained pretty quiet; though from this time they separated openly from the church. But the Queen took hold of the opportunity to require all *justices of peace*, and other *officers in commission*, throughout all the counties in *England*, to subscribe their names to an instrument, professing their conformity and obedience to the act of *uniformity in religion*, and for *due resorting to their parish churches to hear common prayer*. This affected *puritans* as well as *papists*. The gentlemen of the inns of court were also cited before the ecclesiastical commission, and examined about their resorting to church, and receiving the sacrament, of which most of them were very negligent. This raised a clamor, as if the Queen intended to ransack into men’s consciences; in an-

\* Collier, p. 523.

swer to which she published a declaration, that she had no such intention, “ That she did not enquire into the sentiments of people’s mind, but only required an external conformity to the laws ; and that all that came to church, and observed her injunctions, should be deemed good subjects.” So that if men would be hypocrites, her majesty would leave them to God ; but if they would not conform they must suffer the law.

When the next parliament met they passed a law making it high treason *to declare the Queen to be an heretic, schismatic, tyrant, infidel or usurper ; to publish or put in use the pope’s bulls ; to be reconciled to the church of Rome, or to receive absolution by virtue of them .\** The concealing, or not discovering offenders against this act, is misprision of treason. A protestation was likewise drawn up, to be taken by all reputed papists, in these words : ‘ I do profess and confess before God, that Queen *Elizabeth*, my sovereign lady, now reigning in *England*, is rightfully, and ought to be and continue Queen, and lawfully beareth the imperial crown of these realms, notwithstanding any act or sentence that any pope or bishop has done or given, or can do or give ; and that if any pope, or other, say or judge to the contrary, whether he say it as *pope*, or howsoever, he erreth and affirmeth, holdeth and teacheth error.’ And that the puritans might not escape without some note of disloyalty, another protestation was drawn up for them ;† in which they profess before God, that ‘ they believe in their consciences, that Queen *Elizabeth* is and ought to be lawful Queen of *England*, notwithstanding any act or sentence, that any church, synod, consistory, or ecclesiastical assembly, hath done or given, or can give ; and that if any say or judge the contrary, in what respect soever he saith it, he erreth, and affirmeth, holdeth and teacheth, error and falshood.’

There was no manner of occasion for this last protestation ; for in the midst of these commotions the *Puritans* continued the Queen’s faithful and dutiful subjects, and served her majesty as chaplains in her armies and navy, though they were not admitted into the churches. One would have

\* 13 Eliz. cap. 1.

† Life of Parker, p. 324.

thought the formidable conspiracies of the Roman catholics should have alienated the Queen's heart from them, and prevailed with her majesty to yield something, for the sake of a firmer union among her protestant subjects ; but instead of this, the edge of the laws that were made against popish recusants, was turned against protestant non-conformists, which instead of bringing them into the church, like all other methods of severity, drove them further from it.

This year [1570] died Mr. *Andrew Kingsmill*, born in *Hampshire*, and educated in *All Souls* college, *Oxon*, of which he was elected fellow in 1558. He had such a strong memory, that he could readily rehearse in the *Greek* language, all *St. Paul's* epistles to the *Romans* and *Galatians*, and other portions of scripture *memoriter*. He was a most pious and religious person, undervaluing all worldly profit, in comparison of the assurance of his salvation. In the year 1563, there were only three preachers in the university, of whom *Kingsmill* was one ; but after some time, when conformity was pressed, and *Sampson* deprived of his deanery, he withdrew from the kingdom, resolving to live in one of the best reformed churches for doctrine and discipline, the better to prepare himself for the service of the church ;\* accordingly he lived three years at *Geneva*, from thence he removed to *Lausanne*, where he died this year, in the prime of his days, leaving behind him an excellent pattern of piety, devotion, and all manner of virtue.

The rigorous execution of the penal laws, made business for the *civilians* ; many were cited into the spiritual courts, and after long attendance, and great charges, were suspended or deprived ; the *pursuivant*, or messenger of the court, was paid by the mile ; the fees were exorbitant, which the prisoner must satisfy before he is discharged ; the method of proceeding was dilatory and vexatious, though they seldom called any witnesses to support the charge, but usually tendered the *defendant* an oath, to answer the interrogatories of the court ; and if he refused the oath, they examined him without it, and convicted him upon his own confession ; if the prisoner was dismissed, he was almost ruined with the costs, and bound in a recognizance to appear again

\* Wood's *Athen. Ox.* vol. i. p. 125, 126.

whensoever the court should require him. We shall meet with many sad examples of such proceedings in the latter part of this reign. The honest *puritans* made conscience of not denying any thing they were charged with, if it was true, though they might certainly have put the accusers on proof of the charge: Nay, most of them thought themselves bound to confess the truth, and bear a public testimony to it, before the civil magistrate, though it was made use of to their disadvantage.\*

\* I have an example of this now before me. The Reverend Mr. *Axton*, minister of *Morton-Corbet*, in *Leicestershire*, was cited into the bishop's court three several times this year, and examined upon the reasons of his refusing the *apparel*, the cross in baptism, and *kneeling* at the sacrament, which he debated with the bishop and his officers with a decent freedom and courage. At the close of the debate the bishop said,

*Bishop.* Now, Mr. *Axton*, I would know of you, what you think of the calling of the bishops of *England*?

*Axton.* I may fall into danger by answering this question.

*Bish.* I may compel you to answer upon your oath.

*Axt.* But I may choose whether I will answer upon oath or not. I am not bound to bring myself into danger; but because I am persuaded it will redound to God's glory, I will speak, be the consequence what it will; and I trust in the *holy spirit* that I shall be willing to die in defence of the truth.

*Bish.* Well; what do you think of my calling?

*Axt.* You are not lawfully called to be a bishop, according to the word of God.

*Bish.* I thought so; but why?

*Axt.* For three causes, 1. Because you were not ordained by the consent of the *eldership*.

*Bish.* But I had the hands of three or four bishops.

*Axt.* But that is not the *eldership* St. *Paul* speaks of, 1 *Tim.* iv. 14.

*Bish.* By what *eldership* were you ordained? Was it not by a bishop?

*Axt.* I had indeed the laying on of the hands of one of the bishops of *England*, but that was the least part of my calling.

*Bish.* What calling had you more?

*Axt.* I having exercised and expounded the word several times in an ordinary assembly of ten ministers; they joined in prayer, and, being required to speak their consciences in the presence of God, declared upon the trial they had of me, that they were persuaded I might become a profitable laborer in the house of God; after which I received the laying on of the hands of the bishop.

*Bish.* But you had not the laying on of the hands of those preachers.

*Axt.* No; I had the substance, but I wanted the action, wherein I beseech the Lord to be merciful to me; for the laying on of hands, as it is the word, so it is agreeable with the mighty action of ordaining the ministers of God.



The controversy with the church, which had hitherto been chiefly confined to the *habita*, to the *cross in baptism*, and *kneeling at the Lord's supper*, began now to open into several more considerable branches, by the lectures of the

*Bish.* Well, then your ordination is imperfect as well as mine.—What is your second reason?

*Art.* Because you are not ordained bishop over any one flock; nay, you are not a pastor over any one congregation, contrary to 1 *Pet.* v. ii. *Feed the flock*; and to *Acts* xiv. 23; from whence it is manifest that there should be bishops and elders through every congregation.

*Bish.* What is a congregation?

*Art.* Not a whole diocese, but such a number of people as ordinarily assemble in one place to hear the word of God.

*Bish.* What if you had a parish six or seven miles long, where many could not come to hear once in a quarter of a year?

*Art.* I would not be pastor over such a flock.

*Bish.* What is your third reason?

*Art.* Because you are not chosen by the people *Acts* xiv, 23. *And they ordained elders by election in every church, [Cheirotonesantes,] by the lifting up of hands.*

*B's Chanc.* How came you to be parson of *Morton Corbet*?

*Art.* I am no parson.

*Chanc.* Are you then vicar?

*Art.* No; I am no vicar. I abhor those names as antichristian; I am pastor of the congregation there.

*Chanc.* Are you neither parson nor vicar? How hold you your living?

*Art.* I receive these temporal things of the people, because I, being their pastor, do minister to them spiritual things.

*Chanc.* If you are neither parson nor vicar you must reap no profit.

*Art.* Do you mean good faith in that you say?

*Chanc.* Yea, if you will be neither parson nor vicar, there is good cause why another should.

*Bish.* You must understand, that all livings in the church are given to ministers as *parsons* and *vicars*, and not as *pastors* and *ministers*. How were you chosen pastor?

*Art.* By the free election of the people and leave of the patron; After I had preached about six weeks by way of probation, I was chosen by one consent of them all, a sermon being preached by one of my brethren, setting forth the mutual duties of pastor and people.

*Bish.* May the bishops of *England* ordain ministers?

*Art.* You ought not to do it in the manner ye do; that is, without the consent of the eldership, without sufficient proof of their qualifications, and without ordaining them to a particular congregation.

*Bish.* Well, Mr. *Axton*, you must yield somewhat to me, and I will yield somewhat to you; I will not trouble you for the *cross in baptism*; and if you will wear the *surplice* but sometimes it shall suffice.

*Art.* I can't consent to wear the surplice, it is against my conscience;

Rev. Mr. *Thomas Cartwright*, B. D. fellow of *Trinity college, Cambridge*, and *Lady Margaret's* professor, a courageous man, a popular preacher, a profound scholar, and master of an elegant *Latin* style ; he was in high esteem in

I trust by the help of God, I shall never put on that *sleeve* which is a mark of the beast.

*Bish.* Will you leave your flock for the surplice ?

*Art.* Nay ; will you persecute me from my flock for a surplice ? I love my flock in Jesus Christ, and had rather have my right arm cut off than be removed from them.

*Bish.* Well, I will not deprive you this time.

*Art.* I beseech you consider what you do in removing me from my flock, seeing I am not come in at the window, or by simony, but according to the institution of Jesus Christ.

On the 22d of November following Mr. *Axton* appeared again, and was examined touching organs, music in churches, and obedience to the Queen's laws, &c.

*Bish.* You in refusing the *surplice* are disloyal to the Queen, and shew a contempt of her laws.

*Art.* You do me great injury in charging me with disloyalty ; and especially when you call me and my brethren traitors, and say, that we are more troublesome subjects than the papists.

*Bish.* I say still, the papists are afraid to stir, but you are presumptuous, and disquiet the state more than they.

*Art.* If I, or any that fear God, speak the truth, doth this disquiet the state ? The papists have for twelve years been plotting treason against the Queen and the gospel, and yet this doth not grieve you.— But I protest in the presence of God, and of you all, that I am a true and faithful subject to her majesty ; also I do pray daily both publicly and privately, for her majesty's safety, and for her long and prosperous reign, and for the overthrow of all her enemies, and especially the papists. I do profess myself an enemy to her enemies, and a friend to her friends ; therefore, if you have any conscience, cease to charge me with disloyalty to my prince.

*Bish.* In as much as you refuse to wear the surplice, which she has commanded, you do in effect deny her to be supreme' governess in all causes ecclesiastical and temporal.

*Art.* I admit her majesty's supremacy so far, as, if there be any error in the governors of the church, she has power to reform it ; but I do not admit her to be an ecclesiastical elder, or church governor.

*Bish.* Yes ; but she is, and hath full power and authority all manner of ways ; indeed she doth not administer the sacraments and preach, but leaveth those things to us. *But if she were a man, as she is a woman, why might she not preach the word of God as well as we ?*

*Art.* May she, if she were a man, preach the word of God ? Then she may also administer the sacraments.

*Bish.* This does not follow, for you know *Paul* preached, and yet did not baptize.



the university, his lectures being frequented by vast crouds of scholars; and when he preached at St. *Mary's* they were forced to take down the windows. *Beza* says of him, that he thought *there was not a more learned man under the sun*. This divine, in his lectures, disputed against certain blemishes of the *English* hierarchy, and particularly against these six, which he subscribed with his own hand :\*

“The names and functions of *archbishops* and *archdeacons* ought to be abolished, as having no foundation in scripture.—The offices of the lawful ministers of the church, viz. *bishops* and *deacons*, ought to be reduced to the apostolical institution; the *bishop* to preach the word of God and pray, and *deacons* to take care of the poor.—The government of the church ought not to be intrusted with *bishops' chancellors*, or the *officials of archdeacons*; but every church should be governed by its own minister and

*Art.* *Paul* confesses that he did baptize, though he was sent especially to preach.

*Bish.* Did not *Moses* teach the people? and yet he was their civil governor.

*Art.* *Moses's* calling was extraordinary. Remember the King of *Judah*, how he would have sacrificed in the temple of God. Take heed how you confound those offices which God has distinguished.

*Bish.* You see how he runneth.

*Bickley.* You speak very confidently and rashly.

*Bish.* This is his arrogant spirit.—MS. p. 55, 56.

Thus the dispute broke off, and the good man, notwithstanding all his supplications, was deprived of his living, and driven to seek his bread in another country, though the bishop owned he was a divine of good learning, a ready memory, and well qualified for the pulpit.

One sees here the difficulties the puritans labored under in their *ordinations*; they apprehended the election of the people, and the examination of presbyters, with the imposition of their hands, necessary to the call of a minister; but this, if it were done in *England* without a *bishop*, would hardly entitle them to preach in the church, or give them a legal title to the profits of their livings: Therefore, after they had passed the former trials, they applied to the *bishop* for the imposition of his hands; but others being dissatisfied with the ordination of a single person, not rightly called, as they thought, to the office of a *bishop*, went beyond sea, and were ordained by the presbyteries of foreign churches: For though the *English* puritans had their synods and presbyteries, yet it is remarkable that they never ordained a single person to the ministry.

\* *Strype's Ann.* vol. i. p. 628, 9.

“presbyters.—Ministers ought not to be at large, but every one should have the charge of a certain flock.—No-body should ask, or stand as a candidate for the ministry.—Bishops should not be created by civil authority, but ought to be fairly chosen by the church.”

These propositions are said to be untrue, dangerous, and tending to the ruin of learning and religion ; they were therefore sent to secretary *Cecil*, chancellor of the university, who advised the vice-chancellor to silence the author, or oblige him to recant. *Cartwright* challenged Dr. *Whitgift*, who preached against him, to a public disputation, which he refused, unless he had the Queen’s licence ; and *Whitgift* offered a private debate by writing, which the other declined, as answering no valuable purpose.

Other dangerous and seditious propositions, as they were called, were collected out of *Cartwright’s* lectures, and sent to court by Dr. *Whitgift*, to incense the Queen and chancellor against him. As,

1. “In reforming the church, it is necessary to reduce all things to the apostolical institution.

2. “No man ought to be admitted into the ministry, but who is capable of preaching.

3. “None but such a minister of the word ought to pray publicly in the church, or administer the sacraments.

4. “Popish ordinations are not valid.

5. “Only canonical scripture ought to be read publicly in the church.

6. “The public liturgy should be so framed, that there be no private praying or reading in the church, but that all the people attend to the prayers of the minister.

7. “The care of burying the dead, does not belong more to the ministerial office, than to the rest of the church.

8. “Equal reverence is due to all canonical scripture, and to all the names of God ; there is therefore no reason why the people should stand at the reading of the gospel, or bow at the name of Jesus.

9. “It is as lawful to sit at the Lord’s table, as to kneel or stand.

10. “The Lord’s supper ought not to be administered

“in private ; nor should baptism be administered by women or lay-persons.

11. “The sign of the *cross* in baptism is superstitious.

12. “It is reasonable and proper, that the parent should offer his own child to baptism, making a confession of that faith he intends to educate it in, without being obliged to answer in the child’s name, I WILL, I WILL NOT, I BELIEVE, &c. nor ought it to be allowed, that women, or persons under age, should be *sponsors*.

13. “In giving names to children, it is convenient to avoid *paganism*, as well as the names and offices of *Christ, Angels, &c.*

14. “It is papistical to forbid marriages at certain times of the year ; and to give licences in those times is intolerable.

15. “Private marriages, that is, such as are not published before the congregation, are highly inconvenient.

16. “The observation of *lent*, and fasting on *Fridays* and *Saturdays*, is superstitious.

17. “The observation of *festivals* is unlawful.

18. “Trading or keeping markets on the Lord’s day, is unlawful.

19. “In ordaining of the ministers the pronouncing those words, *Receive thou the Holy Ghost*, is both ridiculous and wicked.

20. “Kings and bishops should not be anointed.”

These were *Cartwright’s* dangerous doctrines, which he touched occasionally in his lectures, but with no design to create discord, as appears by a *testimonial* sent to the secretary of state in his favor, signed by fifteen considerable names in the university ; in which they declare, that they heard his lectures, and, that “he never touched upon the controversy of the *habits* ; and though he had advanced some propositions with regard to the ministry, according to which he wished things might be regulated, he did it with all imaginable caution and modesty.”\* Other letters were written in his favor, signed by twenty names or upwards, of whom some were afterwards bishops, but it was

\* *Strype’s Ann.* vol. ii. p. 2.

resolved to make him an example. *Cartwright* himself sent an elegant *latin* letter to the secretary, in which he declares, that he waved all occasions of speaking concerning the *habits*, but owns he had taught that our ministry declined from the ministry of the apostolical church in some points, according to which he wished it might be modelled ; however, that he did this with all imaginable caution, as almost the whole university would witness, if they might be allowed. He prayed the secretary to hear and judge the cause himself ; which was so far from *novelty*, that it was as venerable for its antiquity as the apostolic age, but though the secretary was convinced,\* that his behavior was free from arrogancy, or an intention to cause trouble, and that only as a public reader in the university, he had given notes of the difference between the ministry in the times of the apostles, and the present ministry of the church of *England*, yet he left him to the mercy of his enemies, who poured upon him all the infamy and disgrace their power would admit.— They first denied him his degree of doctor in divinity, then forbade his reading public lectures, and at last deprived him of his fellowship, and expelled him the university. A short and compendious way of confuting an adversary !

Mr. *Cartwright* being now out of all employment, travelled beyond sea, and settled a correspondence with the most celebrated divines in the protestant universities of *Europe*. While he was abroad he was chosen minister to the *English* merchants at *Antwerp*, and afterwards at *Middleburgh*, where he continued two years with little or no profit to himself ; and then returning to *England*, being earnestly solicited thereunto by letters from Dr. *Deering*, *Fulk*, *Wiburne*, *Fox*, and *Lever*, we shall hear more of the sufferings of this eminent divine for his non-conformity.†

This year [1570] *Grindal* bishop of *London* being translated to *York*, *Sandys* bishop of *Worcester* was removed to *London* ; in his primary visitation, Jan. 10, he charged his clergy, 1. To keep strictly to the book of common-prayer. 2. Not to preach without a licence. 3. To wear the apparel, *that is*, the square cap and scholar's gown, and in

\* *Pierce's Vindication*, p. 77.

† *Clarke's Life of Cratwright*, p. 18.

divine service, the surplice. 4. Not to admit any of other parishes to their communion. He also ordered all clerks' *tolerations* to be called in; by which it appears that some few of the non-conformists had been tolerated, or dispensed with hitherto, but now this was at an end.\* However, the puritans encouraged one another by conversation and letters, to steadfastness in their opposition to the corruptions of the church, and not to fear the resentments of their adversaries.

There was a *spirit* in the parliament, which was convened April 2, 1571, to attempt something in favor of the puritans, upon whom the bishops bore harder every day than other. Mr. *Strickland*, an ancient gentleman, offered a bill for a further reformation in the church, April 6, and introduced it with a speech, proving, that the *common prayer-book, with some superstitious remains of popery in the church* might easily be altered without any danger to religion. He enforced it with a second speech, April 13, upon which the treasurer of the Queen's household stood up, and said, "All matters of ceremonies were to be referred to the Queen, and for them to meddle with the royal prerogative was not convenient." Her majesty was so displeased with Mr. *Strickland's* motion, that she sent for him before the council, and forbid him the parliament-house, which alarmed the members, and occasioned so many warm speeches, that she thought fit to restore him on the 20th of April. This was a bold stroke at the freedom of parliaments, and carrying the prerogative to its utmost length. But Mr. *Strickland* moved further, that a confession of faith should be published and confirmed by parliament, as it was in other protestant countries; and that a committee might be appointed to confer with the bishops on this head. The committee drew up certain articles, according to those which passed the convocation of 1562, but left out others. The archbishop asked them, why they left out the article for *homilies*, and for the *consecrating of bishops*, and some others relating to the hierarchy. Mr. *Peter Wentworth* replied, because they had not yet examined how far they were agreeable to the word of God, having confined themselves chiefly to *doctrines*.—

\* Strype's Annals, vol. ii. p. 29.



The archbishop replied, Surely you will refer yourselves wholly to us the bishops in these things? To which Mr. *Wentworth* replied warmly, *No, by the faith I bear to God, we will pass nothing before we understand what it is, for that were but to make you popes. Make you popes who list, for we will make you none.* So the articles relating to discipline were waved, and an act was passed, confirming all the doctrinal articles agreed upon in the synod of 1562.

The act is entitled, *For reformation of disorders in the ministers of the church* ;\* ‘ And enjoins all that have any ecclesiastical livings, to declare their assent before the bishop of the diocese to all the articles of religion, WHICH ONLY CONCERN THE CONFESSION OF THE TRUE FAITH, AND THE DOCTRINE OF THE SACRAMENTS, comprized in the book imprinted, and entitled, *articles, whereupon it was agreed by the archbishops and bishops, &c. and the whole clergy in the convocation of 1562, for avoiding diversity of opinions, and for the establishing of consent touching true religion* ; and to subscribe them ; which was to be testified by the bishop of the diocese, under his seal ; which testimonial he was to read publicly with the said articles, *as the confession of his faith*, in his church on a Sunday, in the time of divine service, or be deprived. If any clergyman maintained any doctrine repugnant to the said articles, the bishop might deprive him. None were to be admitted to any benefice with cure, except he was a deacon of the age of 23 years, and would subscribe, and declare his unfeigned assent to the articles above-mentioned. Nor might any administer the sacraments under 24 years of age.’

It appears from the words of this statute, that those articles of the church which relates to its *discipline* were not designed to be the terms of ministerial conformity ; and if the Queen and the bishops had governed themselves accordingly, the separation had been stifled in its infancy ; for there was hardly a puritan in *England* that refused subscription to the doctrinal articles : If all the 39 articles had been

\* 13 Eliz. cap. 12.

established, there had been no need of the following clause, *Which ONLY concern the confession of the true christian faith, and the doctrine of the sacraments.* And yet notwithstanding this act, many that held benefices and ecclesiastical preferments, and that offered to conform to the statute, were deprived in the following part of this reign; which was owing to the bishops' servile compliance with the prerogative, and pressing subscription to more than the law required. §

It deserves further to be taken notice of, that by a clause in this act the parliament admits of *ordination by presbyters without a bishop*; which was afterwards disallowed by the bishops in this reign, as well as at the restoration of King *Charles II.* when the church was deprived of great numbers of learned and useful preachers, who scrupled the matter of *re-ordination*, as they would at this time, if it had been insisted on. Many of the present clergy had been exiles for religion, and had been ordained abroad, according to the custom of foreign churches, but would not be re-ordained, any more than those of the popish communion; therefore to put an end to all disputes the statute includes both; the words are these, "That every person under the degree of a bishop, that doth, or shall pretend to be a priest or minister of God's word and sacraments, by reason of any other form of institution, consecration, or ordering, than the form set forth in parliament in the time of the late King *Edward VI.* or now used in the reign of our most sovereign lady Queen *Elizabeth*, shall, before *Christmas* next, declare his assent, and subscribe the articles aforesaid." The meaning of which clause (says Mr. *Strype*) is undoubtedly to comprehend papists, and likewise such as received their orders in some of the foreign reformed churches, when they were in exile under Queen *Mary*. †

It is probable that the controverted clause of the 20th article, *the church has power to decree rites and ceremonies, and authority in controversies of faith*, was not among the articles of 1562, as has been shewn under that year; though it might be (according to *Laud* and *Heylin*) inserted in the

§ *Strype's Ann.* vol. ii. p. 72.    † *Strype's Ann.* vol. ii. p. 71.

convocation book of 1571, but what has this to do with the act of parliament, which refers to a book printed nine years before? Besides, it is absurd to charge the *puritans* with striking out the clause, as archbishop *Laud* has done; they having no share in the government of the church at this time, nor interest to obtain the least abatement in their favor; nor does it appear that they disapproved the clause under proper regulations: One might rather suppose, that the Queen should take umbrage at it as an invasion of her prerogative, and that therefore some zealous *churchman*, finding the articles defective upon the head of the *church's* authority, might insert it *privately*, to avoid the danger of a *præmunire*.

But after all, subscription to the doctrinal articles of the church ONLY, has been reckoned a very great grievance by many pious and learned divines, both in church and out of it; for it is next to impossible to frame 36 propositions in any human words, to which ten thousand clergymen can give their hearty assent and consent. Some that agree to the doctrine itself may dissent from the words and phrases by which it is expressed; and others that agree to the *capital* doctrines of christianity, may have some doubts about the deeper and more abstruse points of speculation. It would be hard to deprive a man of his living, and shut him out from all usefulness in the church, because he doubts of the *local descent of Christ into hell*; or, *whether the best actions of men before their conversion have the nature of sins*;\* or that *every thing in the three creeds, commonly called the Apostles, the Nicene, and the Athanasian, may be proved by most certain warrants of holy scripture, and are therefore to be believed and received*.† Wise and good men may have different sentiments upon the doctrine of the *decrees*, which are a depth which no man can fathom. These, and some other things, have galled the consciences of the clergy, and driven them to evasions destructive to morality, and the peace of their own minds. Some have subscribed them as articles of peace, contrary to the very title, which says, *they are for avoiding the diversity of opinions*. Others have tortured

\* Art. 13.

† Art. 8.

the words to a meaning contrary to the known sense of the compilers. Some subscribe them with a secret reserve, *as far as they are agreeable to the word of God* ; and so they may subscribe the council of *Trent*, or even *Mahomet's* alcoran. Others subscribe them not as doctrines which they believe, but as doctrines that they will not openly contradict and oppose ; and others, I am informed, put no sense upon the articles at all, but only subscribe them as a test of their obedience to their superiors, who require this of them as the legal way to preferment in the church. How hard must it be for men of learning and probity to submit to these shifts ! when no kinds of subscriptions can be a barrier against ignorant or dishonest minds. Of what advantage is uniformity of profession without an agreement in principles ? If the fundamental articles of our faith were drawn up in the language of *holy scripture* ; or if those who were appointed to examine into the learning, and other qualifications of ministers, were to be judges of their orthodox confessions of faith, it would answer a better purpose than subscription to human *creeds* and *articles*.

Though the *Commons* were forbid to concern themselves with the discipline of the church, they ventured to present an address to the Queen,\* complaining, “That for  
“lack of true discipline in the church, great numbers are  
“admitted ministers that are infamous in their lives and  
“conversations ; and among those that are of ability, their  
“gifts in many places are useless, by reason of pluralities  
“and non-residency, whereby infinite numbers of your ma-  
“jesty's subjects are like to *perish for lack of knowledge*.  
“By means of this, together with the common blasphem-  
“ing of the Lord's name, the most wicked licentiousness  
“of life, the abuse of excommunication, the commutation  
“of penance, the great numbers of atheists, schismatics  
“daily springing up, and the increase of papists, the prot-  
“estant religion is in imminent danger : wherefore in re-  
“gard first and principally to the glory of God, and next  
“in discharge of our bounden duty to your majesty ; be-  
“sides, being moved with pity towards so many thousands

\* MS p. 92.

“ of your majesty’s subjects, daily in danger of being lost  
 “ for want of the food of the word, and true discipline ; we  
 “ the commons in this present parliament assembled, are  
 “ humbly bold to open the griefs, and to seek the salving  
 “ of the sores of our country, and to beseech your majesty,  
 “ seeing the same is of so great importance, if the parlia-  
 “ ment at this time may not be so long continued, as that  
 “ by good and godly laws provision may be made for sup-  
 “ ply and reformation of these great and grievous wants  
 “ and abuses, that yet by such other means, as to your  
 “ majesty’s wisdom shall seem meet, a perfect redress of the  
 “ same may be had ; by which the number of your majes-  
 “ ty’s faithful subjects will be increased, popery will be  
 “ destroyed, the glory of God will be promoted, and your  
 “ majesty’s renown will be recommended to all posteri-  
 “ ty.” But the Queen broke up the parliament without  
 taking any notice of the supplication.

The convocation which sat with this parliament assem-  
 bled April 3, 1571, when the Rev. Mr. *Gilbert Alcock* pre-  
 sented a supplication to them in behalf of the deprived mi-  
 nisters, praying their interest with the Queen for a redress of  
 their grievances :\* “ If a godly minister (says he) omit but  
 “ the least ceremony, for conscience sake, he is immediately  
 “ indicted, deprived, cast into prison, and his goods wasted  
 “ and destroyed ; he is kept from his wife and children, and  
 “ at last excommunicated. We therefore beseech your fa-  
 “ therhoods to pity our case, and take from us these stumb-  
 “ ling-blocks.” But the convocation were of another spir-  
 it, and, instead of removing their burthens, increased them ;  
 by framing certain new canons of discipline, against the pu-  
 ritans ; as, that the bishops should call in all their *licences*  
 for preaching, and give out *new ones* to those who were best  
 qualified ;§ and among the qualifications they insist not on-  
 ly upon subscription to the doctrines of the church enjoined  
 by parliament, but upon subscription to the common pray-  
 er-book, and *ordinal* for consecration of archbishops, bish-  
 ops, priests and deacons, *as containing nothing contrary to*  
*the word of God*. And they declare, that all such preachers

\* MS. p. 92.

§ Sparrow, p. 223.

as do not subscribe, or that disturb people's minds with contrary doctrine, shall be excommunicated. But as these canons never had the sanction of the *broad seal*, surely the enforcing them upon the puritans was a stretch of power hardly to be justified. Bishop *Grindal* confessed they had not the force of a law, and might possibly involve them in a *præmunire*; and yet the bishops urged them upon the clergy of their several dioceses. They cancelled all the licences of preachers, and insisted peremptorily on the subscription above-mentioned.

The complaints of the ministers, under these hardships, reached the ears of the elector *Palatine* of the *Rhine*, who was pleased to order the learned *Zanchy*, professor of divinity in the university of *Heidelburgh*, to write to the Queen of *England* in their behalf, beseeching her majesty, not to insist upon subscriptions, or upon wearing the habits, which gave such offence to great numbers of the clergy, and was like to make a schism in the church.\* The letter was inclosed to bishop *Grindal*; who, when he had read it, would not so much as deliver it to the Queen, for fear of disobliging her majesty, whose resolution was to put an end to all distinctions in the church, by pressing the act of uniformity. Instead therefore of relaxing to the puritans, orders were sent to all church-wardens, “Not to suffer any to read, “pray, preach, or minister the sacraments, in any church-“es, chapels, or private places, without a new licence from “the Queen or the archbishop, or bishop of the diocese, to “be dated since May 1571.” The more resolved puritans were therefore reduced to the necessity of assembling in private, or of laying down their ministry.

Though all the bishops were obliged to go into these measures of the court, yet some were so sensible of the want of *discipline*, and of *preaching the word*, that they permitted their clergy to enter into associations for the promoting of both. The ministers of the town of *Northampton*, with the consent and approbation of Dr. *Scambler* their bishop, the mayor of the town, and the justices of the county, agreed upon the following regulations for worship and discipline.†

\* *Strype's Ann.* vol. ii. p. 87.

† *Ibid.*

‘ That singing and playing of organs in the choir shall be  
‘ put down. and common prayer read in the body of the  
‘ church, with a psalm before and after sermon. That every  
‘ *Tuesday* and *Thursday* there shall be a lecture from nine to  
‘ ten in the morning, in the chief church of the town, begin-  
‘ ning with the *confession* in the book of common prayer,  
‘ and ending with prayer and a confession of faith. Every  
‘ *Sunday* and *holiday* shall be a sermon after morning prayer,  
‘ with a psalm before and after. *Service* shall be ended in  
‘ every parish church by nine in the morning every *Sunday*  
‘ and holidays, to the end that people may resort to the ser-  
‘ mon in the chief church, except they have a sermon in  
‘ their own. None shall walk abroad, or sit idly in the  
‘ streets, in time of divine service. The youth shall every  
‘ *Sunday* evening be examined in a portion of *Calvin’s*  
‘ catechism, which the *reader* shall expound for an hour.  
‘ There shall be a general communion once a quarter in  
‘ every parish church, with a sermon. A fortnight before  
‘ each communion, the minister with the church-wardens  
‘ shall go from house to house, to take the names of the  
‘ *communicants*, and examine into their lives; and the party  
‘ that is not in charity with his neighbor shall be put from  
‘ the communion. After the communion the minister shall  
‘ visit every house, to understand who have not received  
‘ the communion, and why. Every communion-day each  
‘ parish shall have *two communions*, one beginning at five in  
‘ the morning, with a sermon of an hour, and ending at  
‘ eight, for servants; the other from nine to twelve for mas-  
‘ ters and dames. The manner of the communion shall be  
‘ according to the order of the Queen’s book, saving that  
‘ the people being in their confession upon their *knees*, shall  
‘ rise up from their pews and so pass to the communion-ta-  
‘ ble, where they shall receive the sacrament in companies,  
‘ and then return to their pews, the minister reading in the  
‘ pulpit. The communion table shall stand in the body of  
‘ the church, according to the book, at the upper end of  
‘ the middle aisle, having three ministers, one in the middle  
‘ to deliver the bread, the other two at each end for the  
‘ cup, the ministers often calling upon the people to remem-  
‘ ber the poor. The communion to end with a psalm.—



‘ Excessive ringing of bells on the Lord’s day is prohibit-  
‘ ed; and carrying of the bell before corpses in the streets,  
‘ and *bidding prayers for the dead*, which was used till  
‘ within these two years, is restrained.”

Here was a sort of association, or voluntary discipline, introduced, independent of the Queen’s injunctions, or canons of the church; this was what the puritans were contending for, and would gladly have acquiesced in, if it might have been established by law.

Besides these attempts for discipline, the *clergy*, with leave of their bishop, encouraged *religious exercises* among themselves, for the interpretation of some texts of scripture, one speaking to it orderly after another; these were called PROPHESYINGS from the apostolical direction, 1 Cor. xiv. 31. *Ye may all prophesy one by one, that all may learn, and all be comforted.* They also conferred among themselves, touching sound doctrine and good life and manners.

The regulations or orders for these *exercises* in *Northampton*, were these :—

‘ That every minister, at his first allowance to be of this  
‘ *exercise*, shall by subscription declare his consent, in  
‘ Christ’s true religion with his brethren, and submit to the  
‘ discipline and order of the same. The names of all the  
‘ members shall be written in a table; three of whom shall  
‘ be concerned at each exercise; the first, beginning and  
‘ ending with prayer, shall explain his text, and confute  
‘ foolish interpretations, and then make a practical reflec-  
‘ tion, but not dilate to a *common place*. Those that speak  
‘ after may add any thing they think the other has omitted,  
‘ tending to explain the text; but may not repeat what has  
‘ been said, nor oppose their predecessor, unless he has  
‘ spoken contrary to the scriptures. The *exercise* to con-  
‘ tinne from nine to eleven; the first speaker to end in three  
‘ quarters of an hour, the second and third not to exceed  
‘ each one quarter of an hour; one of the moderators always  
‘ to conclude. After the exercise is over, and the auditors  
‘ dismissed, the *president* shall call the learned brethren to  
‘ him to give their judgment of the performances, when it  
‘ shall be lawful for any of the brethren to oppose their ob-  
‘ jections against them in writing, which shall be answered

‘ before the next exercise. If any break orders, the president shall command him, in the name of the *eternal* God, to be silent ; and after the exercise he shall be reprimanded. When the exercise is finished, the next *speaker* shall be appointed, and his text given him.”

The confession of faith, which the members of these *prophesyings* signed at their admission, was to the following purpose :—

‘ That they believed the word of God, contained in the Old and New Testament, to be a perfect rule of faith and manners ; that it ought to be read and known by all people, and that the authority of it exceeds all authority, not of the pope only, but of the church also ; and of councils, fathers, men and angels.

‘ They condemn, as a tyrannous yoke, whatsoever men have set up of their own invention, to make articles of faith, and the binding men’s consciences by their laws and institutes : in sum, all those manners and fashions of serving God, which men have brought in without the authority of the *word* for the warrant thereof, though recommended by custom, by unwritten traditions, or any other names whatsoever ; of which sort are the *Pope’s supremacy*, *purgatory*, *transubstantiation*, *man’s merits*, *free-will*, *justification by works*, *praying in an unknown tongue*, and *distinctions of meats, apparel, and days*, and *briefly all the ceremonies, and whole order of papistry*, which they call the *hierarchy* ; which are a devilish confusion, established as it were in spite of God, and to the reproach of religion.

‘ And we content ourselves (say they) with the simplicity of this pure word of God, and doctrine thereof ; a summary of which is in the *apostle’s creed* ; resolving to try and examine, and also to judge all other doctrines whatsoever by this pure word, as by a certain rule and perfect touchstone. And to this word of God we humbly submit ourselves, and all our doings, willing and ready to be judged, reformed, or further instructed thereby, in all points of religion.”

Mr. *Strype* calls this a *well-minded, and religiously disposed combination of both bishop, magistrates, and people*. It

was designed to stir up an emulation in the clergy to study the scriptures, that they may be more capable of instructing the people in christian knowledge ; and though men of loose principles censured it, yet the ecclesiastical commissioners, who had a special letter from the Queen, to inquire into novelties, and were acquainted with the scheme above-mentioned, gave them as yet neither check nor disturbance; but when her majesty was informed that *they* were nurseries of puritanism, and tended to promote alterations in the government of the church, she quickly suppressed them, as will be seen in its proper place.

This year [1571] put a period to the life of the eminent *John Jewel*, bishop of *Salisbury*, author of the famous ‘ *Apology for the church of England.*’ He was born in *Devonshire*, 1522, and educated in *Christ Church* college, *Oxon*, where he proceeded *M.A.* 1544. In King *Edward’s* reign he was a zealous promoter of the reformation ; but not having the courage of a martyr, he yielded to some things against his conscience in the reign of Queen *Mary*, for which he asked pardon of God and the church among the exiles in *Germany*, where he continued a confessor of the gospel till Queen *Elizabeth’s* accession, when he returned home, and was preferred to the bishopric of *Salisbury*, in 1559. He was one of the most learned men among the reformers, a *calvinist* in doctrine, but for absolute obedience to his sovereign in all things of an indifferent nature, which led him not only to comply with all the Queen’s injunctions about the *habits*, when he did not approve them, but to bear hard upon the consciences of his brethren who were not satisfied to comply. He published several treatises in his life-time, and others were printed after his death ; but that which gained him greatest reputation, was his *apology*, which was translated into the foreign languages, and ordered to be chained in all the churches in *England*.§ He was a truly pious man, and died in a comfortable frame of mind. Some of his last

§ This book was originally written in *Latin* ; but, for the use of the generality of the people, it was translated into *English*, with remarkable accuracy, by *Anne*, Lady *Bacon*, the second of the four learned daughters of Sir *Anthony Coke*. Such was the esteem in which it was held that there was a design of its being joined to the thirty-nine articles, and

words were, "*I have not so lived that I am ashamed to die; neither am I afraid to die, for we have a gracious Lord. There is laid up for me a crown of righteousness. Christ is my righteousness. Lord, let thy servant depart in peace ;*" which he did at *Monkton-Farley*, Sept. 23, 1571, in the 50th year of his age, and lies buried in the middle of the choir of the cathedral of *Salisbury*.

In the same year died the Rev. Mr. *David Whitehead*, a great scholar, and a most excellent professor of divinity.—He was educated in *Oxford*, and was chaplain to Queen *Anne Boleyn*, and one of the four divines nominated by Archbishop *Cranmer* to bishoprics in *Ireland*. In the beginning of Queen *Mary's* reign he went into voluntary exile, and resided at *Frankfort*, where he answered the objections of Dr. *Horne*, concerning church discipline and worship. Upon his return into *England* he was chosen one of the disputants against the popish bishops, and shewed himself so profound a divine, that the Queen, out of her high esteem for him, offered him the archbishopric of *Canterbury*; but he refused it from puritanical principles, and would accept of no preferment in the church, as it then stood: He excused himself to the Queen, by saying, he could live plentifully on the gospel without any preferment; and accordingly did so: He went up and down like an apostle, preaching the word where it was wanted; and spent his life in celibacy, which gained him the higher esteem with the Queen, who had no great affection for married priests. He died this year in a good old age;\* but in what church or chapel he was buried I know not.

Our archbishop was very busy this summer, with the bishops of *Winchester* and *Ely*, in harrassing the Puritans; for which purpose he summoned before him the principal clergy of both provinces who were disaffected to the uniformity established by law, and acquainted them, that if they intended to continue their ministry, they must take out *new*

of causing it to be deposited not only in all cathedrals and collegiate churches, but also in private houses. It promoted the reformation from popery more than any other publication of that period. *The New Annual Register for 1789, History of Knowledge, p. 19. Ed.*

\* *Ath. Ox. vol. i. p. 135, 8.*

*licences*, and subscribe the articles, framed according to a new act of parliament, *for reforming certain disorders in ministers*; otherwise they might resign quietly, or be deprived. He took in the bishops above-mentioned to countenance his proceedings; but *Grindal* declared he would not be concerned, if his grace proceeded to suspension and deprivation; upon which *Parker* wrote back, that “He thought it high time to set about it; and however the world may judge, he would serve God and his prince, and put her laws in execution; that *Grindal* was too timorous, there being no danger of a *præmunire*; that the Queen was content the late book of articles (though it had not the broad seal) should be prosecuted; and in case it should hereafter be repealed there was no fear of a *præmunire*, but only of a fine at her pleasure, which he was persuaded her majesty, out of love to the church, would not levy: but *Grindal* being now at *York* wisely declined the affair.” §

In the month of June the archbishop cited the chief Puritans about *London* to *Lambeth*,\* viz. Messrs. *Goodman*, *Lever*, *Sampson*, *Walker*, *Wyburn*, *Goff*, *Percival*, *Deering*, *Field*, *Browne*, *Johnson*, and others. These divines being willing to live peaceably, offered to subscribe the articles of religion *as far as concerned the doctrine and sacraments only*, and the book of *common prayer*, as far as it tended to edification, it being acknowledged on all hands, that there were some imperfections in it; but they prayed, with respect to the *apparel*, that neither party might condemn the other, but that those who wore them, and those that did not, might live in unity and concord. How reasonable soever this was, the archbishop told them peremptorily, that they must come up to the standard of the Queen’s injunctions, or be deprived.‡ *Goodman* was also required to renounce a book that he had written many years ago, when he was an exile, *against the government of women*; which he refused, and was therefore suspended. Mr. *Strype* says, that he was at length brought to a revocation of it, and signed a protestation before the commissioners at *Lambeth*, April 23, 1571, concerning his dutiful obedi-

§ Life of *Grindal*, p. 166. \* MS. p. 117. ‡ Life of *Parker*, p. 326, 327.

ence to the Queen's majesty's person and her lawful government.\* *Lever* quietly resigned his prebend in the church of *Durham*. *Browne* being domestic chaplain to the duke of *Norfolk*, his patron undertook to screen him; but the archbishop sent him word, that no place within her majesty's dominions was exempt from the jurisdiction of the commissioners, and therefore if his grace did not forthwith send up his chaplain, they should be forced to use other methods. This was that *Robert Browne* who afterwards gave name to that denomination of dissenters called *Brownists*; but his family and relations covered him for the present.—*Johnson* was domestic chaplain to the lord keeper *Bacon*, at *Gorambury*, where he used to preach and administer the sacrament in his family: he had also some place at *St. Albans* and was fellow of *King's college Cambridge*. He appeared before the commissioners in July, but refusing to subscribe to *the book of common prayer as agreeable to the word of God*, he was suspended, though he assured them he used the book, and thought for charity sake it might be suffered, till God should grant a time of more perfect reformation; that he would wear the apparel, though he judged it neither expedient nor for edification; and that he was willing to subscribe all the doctrinal articles of the church, according to the late act of parliament: But the commissioners insisting peremptorily upon an absolute subscription, as above, he was suspended, and resigned his prebend in the church of *Norwich*; but about two years after he fell into further troubles, which cost him his life.

The learned *Beza* [in 1572] wrote to the bishops not to be the instruments of such severities; and being informed that a parliament was shortly to be called, in which a consultation was to be had concerning the establishing of religion, he excited the lord treasurer to endeavor some reformation of discipline: 'For I will not dissemble (says he) that not a few complain of divers things wanting in the church; and when I say not a few, I do not mean that worse sort whom nothing pleases but what is perfect and absolute in all respects; but I understand godly men, learned men, and some that are best affected to God's church, and lovers of

\* An. Ref. vol. ii. p. 95.



‘their nation. I look upon the reformation of discipline  
 ‘as of great importance to the peace and welfare of the  
 ‘nation, and the strengthening of the reformation; and  
 ‘therefore there is nothing the Queen’s majesty and her  
 ‘council should sooner think of than this, however great  
 ‘and difficult the work might be, especially since the *Eng-*  
 ‘*lish* nation affords so many divines of prudence, learning  
 ‘and judgment in these affairs: If they, together with the  
 ‘bishops, to whom indeed especially, but not alone, this  
 ‘care belongs, would deliberate hereupon, I doubt not but  
 ‘such things would follow whence other nations would  
 ‘take example.’

Thus did this learned divine intercede for the recovery of discipline, and the ease of tender and scrupulous consciences: But this was more than our archbishop thanked him for, (says Mr. *Strype*) after he had taken so much pains in pressing the act of uniformity.\*

The parliament met May 8, 1572; the lord keeper opened it with a speech, in which he recommended to the houses, in the Queen’s name, “To see that the laws relating to  
 ‘the discipline and ceremonies of the church were put in  
 ‘due execution; and that if any further laws were wanting,  
 ‘they should consider of them; and so, says his lordship,  
 ‘*Gladius Gladium juvabit, the civil sword will support*  
 ‘*the ecclesiastical*, as before time has been used.’§ But the parliament, seeing the ill use the Queen and bishops made of their spiritual power, instead of framing new laws to enforce the ceremonies, ordered two bills to be brought in to regulate them; in one of which the hardships that the puritans complained of were redressed.† The bills passed smoothly through the Commons, and were referred to a select committee of both houses, which alarmed the bishops, and gave the Queen such offence, that two days after she sent to acquaint the Commons by their speaker, that it was her pleasure, that no bills concerning religion should henceforth be received, unless the same should be first considered and approved by the bishops or clergy in convocation; and further, her majesty commanded them to deliver up the

\* Life of Parker, p. 344. § Strype’s Annals, vol. ii. p. 125. D’Ewe’s Journal, p. 207.

† Life of Parker, p. 394.



two bills last read in the house, touching *rites and ceremonies*.§ This was a high strain of the prerogative, and a blow at the very root of the freedom of parliament. But the Commons sent her majesty the bills, with a servile request, that she would not conceive an ill opinion of the house if she should not approve them.\* Her majesty sent them word, within a day or two, that she utterly disliked the bills, and never returned them. This awakened a brave spirit of liberty among some of the members ; many free speeches were made upon this occasion, and among others, *Peter Wentworth*, esq. stood up and said,† “ That it grieved him to see ‘ how many ways the liberty of free speech in parliament ‘ had been infringed. Two things, says he, do great hurt ‘ among us, one is a rumor that ran about the house, when

§ In the face of this full and positive evidence of the temper and measures of the Queen, Bishop Maddox talks of the great favor and indulgence shewn to the puritans in the year 1572 ; and refers us to Strype, in his life of Whitgift, saying, ‘ That they were as gently treated as might ‘ be ; no kind of brotherly persuasion omitted towards them ; and most ‘ of them as yet kept their livings, though *one* or *two* were displaced.’ In this connexion he quotes also a letter of *Fox*, the martyrologist, to her majesty, ‘ exalting her in his praises for her regard and gracious ‘ answer to a petition of certain divines concerning the habits.’ *Vindication* p. 173. This letter Mr. Neal observes was written in 1564, several years before that part of her reign, wherein she thought fit to inflict severe punishments upon the dissenters. Besides, whatever weight is due to Mr. Fox’s praises, or to Mr. Strype’s representation ; though the puritans had some intervals of ease, some tokens of royal indulgence and favor ; her reign and their situation under it are not, surely, to be characterised by a *few intervals* of ease, and by *partial indulgences* ; but by the *spirit of the laws* framed against them ; and by the *great leading measures* and the *general tenor* of her government. The first Christians are, generally, understood to have suffered ten severe persecutions under the Roman Emperors : ‘ but it is not to be supposed, that ‘ persecution was always violent and uninterrupted ; there might be ‘ some abatements of those troubles, and some seasons of rest and peace. ‘ In the reigns of Adrian and Titus Antoninus, there were some edicts, ‘ or rescripts, which were favorable to them ; though during *those very ‘ reigns many Christians still suffered* in almost *every part* of the empire.’ Lardner’s Works, vol. viii. p. 341, 42, 8vo. So as to the period before us, the question is. Did the puritans enjoy liberty and security under the reign of Queen Elizabeth ; or was their situation the reverse of enjoying these blessings ? If it were the latter. (and the particulars of this long detail will shew what was the case) then the *leading features* of her government were INTOLERANCE and PERSECUTION. [ED.

\* Strype’s Annals, vol. ii. p. 127, 128.

† *Ib.* p. 126.

‘the bill about *the rites of the church* was depending; *Take heed what you do, the Queen liketh not such a matter, she will be offended with them that prosecute it.* The other is, that sometime a message was brought to the house, either commanding or inhibiting our proceedings.” He added, That it was dangerous always to follow a prince’s mind, because the prince might favor a cause prejudicial to the honor of God, and the good of the state. Her majesty has forbid us to deal in any matter of religion, unless we first receive it from the bishops. This was a doleful message; there is then little hope of reformation. I have heard from old parliament men, that the banishment, of the pope, and the reforming true religion, had its beginning from this *house*, but not from the *bishops*; few laws for religion had their foundation from them; and I do surely think (before God I speak it) that the bishops were the cause of that doleful message.” But for this speech and another of a like nature, *Wentworth* was sent to the *Tower*.

In the mean time the late act of the 13th *Eliz.* for *subscribing the articles*, was put in execution all over *England*, together with the Queen’s injunctions; and according to Mr. *Strype*’s computation one hundred clergymen were deprived this year for refusing to subscribe.\* The university of *Cambridge* was a nest of puritans; many of the graduates were disaffected to the discipline of the church, as particularly Mr. *Browning*, Mr. *Brown* of *Trinity college*, Mr. *Millain* of *Christ’s*, Mr. *Charke* of *Peter-house*, Mr. *Deering* of *Christ’s college*, and several in *St. John’s college*, who, being men of learning, had great numbers of followers; but Dr. *Whitgift* the vice-chancellor watched them narrowly, and kept them under. The Rev. Mr. *Charke*, in one of his sermons at *St. Mary’s*, had said, that “there ought to be a parity among the ministers in the church; and that the hierarchical orders of archbishops, patriarchs, metropolitans, &c. was introduced into the church by *tan.*” For which he was summoned before the vice-chancellor and heads of colleges, and, refusing to recant, was expelled the university. *Charke* wrote a handsome

\* *Strype’s Annals*, p. 187.

*latin* apology to lord *Burleigh* their present chancellor, in which he confesses that it was his opinion, that the church of *England* might be brought nearer to the *apostolic character or likeness*; but that this must not be said either in the pulpit or desk, under the severest penalties. The chancellor, knowing him to be a good scholar, and in consideration that he had been hardly dealt with, interceded for him, but to no purpose. Mr. *Browning*, Mr. *Deering*, and others, met with the like usage. *Deering* was a man of good learning, and made a chief figure in the university; he was also reader at *St. Paul's, London*, and a most popular preacher; but being an enemy to the superior order of bishops, he fell into the hands of the commissioners and was silenced.

The puritans, finding it in vain to hope for a reformation from the Queen or bishops, resolved for the future to apply to parliament, and stand by the constitution; for this purpose they made interest among the members, and compiled a treatise, setting forth their chief grievances in one view; it was drawn up by the Rev. Mr. *Field*, minister of *Aldermary, London*, assisted by Mr. *Wilcox*, and was revised by several of the brethren. It was entitled, AN ADMONITION TO THE PARLIAMENT; with *Beza's* letter to the Earl of *Leicester*, and *Gualter's* to bishop *Parkhurst* for reformation of church discipline, annexed. It contains the platform of a church; the manner of electing ministers; their several duties, and their equality in government. It then exposes the corruptions of the hierarchy, and the proceedings of the bishops, with some severity of language. When Mr. *Pearson*, the archbishop's chaplain, taxed the authors with this in prison, Mr. *FIELD* replied, "This concerns me; the scriptures of the Old and New Testament use such vehemency; we have used gentle words too long, which have done no good; the wound grows desperate, and wants a corrosive; it is no time to blanch or sew pillars under men's elbows, but God knoweth we meant to touch no man's person, but their places and abuses." The *admonition* concludes with a petition to the houses, that a discipline more consonant to the word of God, and agreeing with the foreign reformed churches, may be established by law. The authors themselves, viz. the Rev. Mr. *Field*

and *Wilcox*, presented it to the house, for which they were sent for into custody, and by the influence of the bishops committed to *Newgate*, Oct. 2, 1573.\* Upon this the book already printed was suffered to go abroad, and had three or four editions within the compass of two years, notwithstanding all the endeavors of the bishops to find out the press.†

The imprisonment of the two ministers occasioned the drawing up a *second admonition*, by Mr. CARTWRIGHT,‡ lately returned from beyond sea, with a humble petition to the two houses, for relief against the *subscription* required by the ecclesiastical commissioners, which they represent had no foundation in law, but was an act of sovereignty in the crown, and was against the peace of their consciences; many having lost their places and livings for not complying; they therefore beseech their honors to take a view of the causes of their *non-subscribing*, that it might appear they were not disobedient to the church of God, or to their sovereign; and they most humbly intreat for the removal and abolishing of such corruptions and abuses in the church as withheld their compliance. “The matters (say they) contained in the *admonition*, how true soever they be, have found small favor; the persons that are thought to have made it are laid up in no worse prison than *Newgate*; the men that set upon them are no worse than bishops; the name that goeth of them is no better than *rebels*; and great words there are, that their danger will yet prove greater. Well, whatsoever is said or done against them, that is not the matter; but the equity of the cause, that is the matter; and yet this we will say, that the state sheweth not itself upright, if it suffers them to be molested for that which was spoken only by way of *admonition* to the parliament, which was to consider of it, and receive or reject it, without further matter to the authors, except it contained some wilful maintenance of treason or rebellion,

\* MS. p. 119, 135.

† Life of Parker, p. 347.

‡ He was at the head (observes Mr. *Neal* in his Review) of a new generation of Puritans, of warmer spirits; who opened the controversy with the church into other branches, and struck at some of the main principles of the hierarchy. *En.*

“which it cannot be proved to do.”\* Two other pamphlets were published on this occasion, one entitled, *an exhortation to the bishops to deal brotherly with their brethren*. The other, *an exhortation to the bishops and clergy to answer a little book that was published last parliament; and an exhortation to other brethren to judge of it by God’s word, till they saw it answered*.

The prisoners themselves drew up an elegant *latin* apology to the Lord Treasurer *Burleigh*, in which they confess their writing the *admonition*, but that they attempted not to correct or change any thing in the hierarchy of themselves, but referred all to the parliament, hoping by this means that all differences might be composed in a legal way, and the corruptions which the most learned foreign divines complained of might be removed, to the preventing any schism or separation in the church.† However the treasurer had not courage to intermeddle with an affair which might embroil him with the Queen, or at least with her ecclesiastical commissioners, though it was well enough known he had a good-will to the cause. But the *commissioners*, not content with the severity of the law, sported themselves in an *arbitrary manner* with the miseries of their fellow creatures; detained them in prison beyond the time limited by the *statute*, as appears by their humble supplication to the Earl of *Leicester*, representing “that they had been condemned ‘according to the act of uniformity, to a year’s imprisonment, which they had now suffered patiently in the common goal of *Newgate*, besides four months close imprisonment before their conviction, which they apprehend to be ‘contrary to law: that by this means they and their poor ‘wives and children were utterly impoverished; their health ‘very much impaired, by the unwholesome savor of the ‘place, and the cold weather; and that they were like to ‘suffer yet greater extremities: they therefore humbly beseech his lordship, for the tender mercies of God, and in ‘consideration of their poor wives and children, to be a ‘means to the most honorable Privy Council, that they may ‘be enlarged; or, if that could not be obtained, that they

\* Pierce’s Vindication, p. 85.

† Strype’s Ann. vol. ii. p. 186.

“might be confined in a more wholesome prison.” They preferred another petition of the same nature to the Lords of the council; and a third was sent in the names of their wives and children. They also wrote a confession of their faith dated from *Newgate*, Dec. 4, 1572, with a preface, in which they complain of the reproaches and calumnies of their adversaries: “Because (say they) we would have ‘bishops *unlorded*, according to God’s word, therefore it ‘is said, we seek the overthrow of civil magistrates: because we say, all bishops and ministers are equal, and ‘therefore may not exercise sovereignty over one another; ‘therefore they say, when they have brought this in among ‘the bishops, we shall be for levelling the nobility of the ‘land. Because we find fault with the regimen of the ‘church as drawn from the pope, therefore they say, we ‘design the ruin of the state. Because we say the ministry ‘must not be a bare reading ministry, but that every minister must be learned, able to preach, to refute gainsayers, ‘to comfort, to rebuke, and to do all the duties of a ‘shepherd, a watchman, and a steward; therefore they bear ‘the world in hand, that we condemn the reading of the ‘holy scriptures in churches. Because we are afraid of ‘joining with the church in all her rites and ceremonies, ‘therefore we are branded with the odious names of *donatists, anabaptists, aerians, arians, hinckfeldians, puritans, &c.*”\*

The confession itself is orthodox, according to the doctrinal articles of the church of *England*, and must give a general satisfaction to them who read it; it is written *by the authors of the first admonition to the parliament, to testify their persuasion in the faith, against the uncharitable surmises of Dr. Whitgift; uttered in his answer to their admonition, in defence both of themselves and their fautors; and is subscribed* JOHANNES FIELDUS.†

\* MS. p. 120.

† I have the whole before me, but shall only transcribe a few passages relating to the present controversy.

“We hold and believe, that we ought to keep inviolably that kind of government that is left us in the gospel.—That the office of a pastor ‘is to preach the word, and administer the sacraments, and therefore that ‘bare readers, or single service sayers, are no more fit for pastors, than ‘women or children that can read well; yet we deny not the reading of



The authors of this confession lay in prison a considerable time ; for though the inhabitants of *Aldermary, London*, presented two supplications for the enlargement of their valuable pastor, and learned and faithful preacher, as they

the scriptures in all congregations, but this is not a part of the minister's office.

" We think it unlawful to withdraw from the church, where the word is truly preached, the sacraments sincerely ministered, and true ecclesiastical discipline exercised. We are not for an unspotted church on earth, and therefore, though the church of *England* has many faults, we would not willingly withdraw from it ; and yet we believe that God's children, when they are threatened with persecution, and the church doors are shut against them, may draw themselves into private assemblies, separating from cursed idolatry and pestilent popery, though the laws of princes are against it ; and whosoever refuseth to be subject to these congregations separating themselves, resisteth the ordinances of God.

" We affirm, that the church of God is a company or congregation of the faithful, called and gathered out of the world, by the preaching of the gospel, united in the true faith, and resolving to form their lives, government, order and ceremonies, according to the word of God.

" We hold, that there ought to be joined to the pastors of the church elders and deacons, for the bridling of vices, and providing for the poor : That no pastor ought to usurp dominion over another ; nor any church exercise lordship or rule over another.

" We believe, that the pastor should be chosen by the congregation, and being chosen, should be confirmed in his vocation by the elders, with public prayer and imposition of hands.

" Concerning ceremonies, we hold that they ought to be few, and such as have no shew of evil, but manifestly tend to decency and good order. We reject therefore all the popish ceremonies and apparel.—We hold, that churches may differ in order and ceremonies, and yet keep the unity of the faith ; and therefore we condemn not other churches that have ceremonies different from ours.—Concerning public worship ; we hold, that there ought to be places appointed for this purpose, and that there may be a *præscript form of prayer*, and service in the known tongue, because all have not the gift of prayer, but we would not have it patched out of the pope's *portuises* ; But be the form of prayer never so good, we affirm that ministers may not think themselves discharged when they have said it over, for they are not sent to say service, but to preach deliverance through Christ : Preaching, therefore, must not be thrust out of doors for reading. Neither ought the minister so to be tied to a *præscript form*, that at all times he must be bound of necessity to use it ; for who can draw a form of prayer, necessary for all times, and fit for all congregations. We deny not, but it is well that there be various manners of prayers, but we must take heed that they be not long and tedious ; wherefore preaching, as it is the chief part of a minister's office, so all other things must give place to it.



called Mr. *Field* ; and though some great friends interceded for them they could not obtain their release. The archbishop sent his chaplain to confer with them in prison, after they had been there three months, for which they were thankful. The conference began with a suitable prayer which Mr. *Field* made, and was carried on with such decency as moved the chaplain's compassion ; but nothing would prevail with the inexorable commissioners to release them, till they had suffered the extremity of the law, and paid their fees, though the keeper gave it under his hand, that they were so poor as not to have money to pay for their lodgings or victuals.

To return to the ADMONITION, which consisted of twenty-three chapters, under the following titles :

Chap. I. Whether Christ forbiddeth rule or superiority to ministers.

—— II. Of the authority of the church in things indifferent.

—— III. Of the election of ministers.

‘ Concerning singing of psalms, we allow of the people's joining with one voice in a plain tune, but not of tossing the psalms from one side to the other, with the intermingling of organs.

‘ Touching holidays, we say, that religion is tied to no time ; nor is one day more holy than another ; but because time must be had to hear the word of God, and to administer the holy sacraments, therefore we keep the *Lord's day* as we are commanded, but without all *Jewish* superstition.—We think, that those feast-days of Christ, as of his *birth, circumcision, passover, resurrection, and ascension, &c.* may by christian liberty be kept, because they are only devoted to Christ, to whom all days and times belong. But *days dedicated to saints*, with *fasts on their eves*, we utterly dislike though we approve of the *reverend memory of the saints*, as examples to be propounded to the people in sermons ; and of public and private fasts, as the circumstances of nations or private persons require.

The confession concludes with an article concerning the office of the civil magistrate : ‘ We hold that christians may bear offices ; that magistrates may put offenders to death lawfully ; that they may wage war, and require a lawful oath of the subject ; that subjects are bound to obey all their just and lawful commands ; to pray for them, to give them all honor ; to call them by their lawful titles, and to be ready with their bodies and goods, lives, and all that they have, to serve them with bodily service ; yea, all these things we must do, though they be infidels, and obtain their dominion, either by inheritance, by election, by conquest, or otherwise. On the other hand, it is the magistrate's duty to provide for the public peace and quiet of their subjects ; and to set forth Christ's pure religion, by advancing the preaching of the gospel, and rooting out all superstition and idolatry.”——MS. p. 131.

- Chap. IV. Of ministers having no pastoral charge ; and of ceremonies used in ordering ministers.
- V. Of the residence of the pastors.
  - VI. Of ministers that cannot preach, and of licences to preach.
  - VII. Of the apparel of ministers.
  - VIII. Of archbishops, metropolitans, bishops, archdeacons, &c.
  - IX. Of the communion book.
  - X. Of holidays.
  - XI. What kind of preaching is most effectual.
  - XII. Of preaching before the administration of the sacraments.
  - XIII. Of reading the scriptures.
  - XIV. Of ministering and preaching by deacons.
  - XV. Of matters touching the communion.
  - XVI. Of matters touching baptism.
  - XVII. Of seniors, or government by elders.
  - XVIII. Of certain matters concerning discipline of the church.
  - XIX. Of deacons and widows.
  - XX. Of the authority of the civil magistrate in ecclesiastical matters.
  - XXI. Of subscribing the communion book.
  - XXII. Of cathedral churches.
  - XXIII. Of civil offices in ecclesiastical persons.

These were the chief heads of complaint ; which the puritans having laid before the world, the bishops thought themselves obliged to answer. Dr. *John Whitgift*, master of *Trinity* college, and vice-chancellor of *Cambridge*, was appointed to this work, which he performed with great labor and study, and dedicated it to the church of *England*. His method was unexceptionable ; the whole text of the *admonition* being set down in paragraphs, and under each paragraph the doctor's answer.\* Before it was printed it was revised and corrected by archbishop *Parker*, Dr. *Cooper* bishop of *Lincoln*, and *Pern* bishop of *Ely* ; so that in this book (says Mr. *Strype*) may be seen all the arguments for and against the hierarchy, drawn to the best advantage.


Dr. *Whitgift's* book was answered by Mr. *Cartwright*, whose performance was called a master-piece in its kind, and had the approbation of great numbers in the university of *Cambridge*, as well as foreign divines. *Whitgift* replied a-

\* Life of Whitgift, p. 42.

gain to *Cartwright*, and had the thanks of the bishops and the Queen; who, as a reward for his excellent and learned pains, made him dean of *Lincoln*, while *Cartwright*, to avoid the rigor of the *commissioners*, was forced to abscond in friends' houses, and at length retire into banishment.

But it was impossible for these divines to settle the controversy, because they were not agreed upon one and the same standard, or rule of judgment. Mr. *Cartwright* maintained, that "the holy scriptures were not only a standard of doctrine, but of discipline and government; and that the church of Christ in all ages was to be regulated by them." He was therefore for consulting his Bible only, and for reducing all things as near as possible to the apostolical standard. Dr. *Whitgift* went upon a different principle, and maintained, "That though the holy scriptures were a perfect rule of faith, they were not designed as a standard of church discipline or government; but that this was changeable, and might be accommodated to the civil government we live under; that the apostolical government was adapted to the church in its infancy, and under persecution, but was to be enlarged and altered as the church grew to maturity, and had the civil magistrate on its side." The doctor, therefore, instead of reducing the external policy of the church to scripture, takes into his standard the four first centuries after Christ; and those customs that he can trace up thither, he thinks proper to be retained, because the church was then in its mature state, and not yet under the power of antichrist.

The reader will judge of these principles for himself.—One is ready to think, that the nearer we can come to the apostolical practice the better; and the less our religion is incumbered with rites and ceremonies of later invention, the more it must resemble *the simplicity that is in Christ*. If our blessed Saviour had designed that his worship should be set off with pomp and grandeur, and a multitude of ceremonies, he would have told us so; and, it may be, have settled them, as was done for the church of the *Jews*; but nothing of this appearing, his followers should be cautious of inserting human commandments or traditions into the religion of Christ, lest they cast a reflection upon his *kingly* office.



The dispute between *Whitgift* and *Cartwright* was managed with some sharpness; the latter thought he had reason to complain of the hardships himself and his brethren suffered; and *Whitgift* having the government on his side, thought he stood upon higher ground, and might assume a superior air; when *Cartwright* and his friends pleaded for indulgence because they were *brethren*, the doctor replies, “What signifies their being *brethren*; anabaptists, arians, “and other heretics, would be accounted brethren; their “haughty spirits will not suffer them to see their error; they “deserve as great punishment as papists, because both conspire against the church. If they are shut up in *Newgate*, “it is a meet reward for their disorderly doings; for ignorance may not excuse libels against a private man, much “less when they slander the whole church.”—How would the doctor have liked this language in the mouth of a papist sixteen years before? But this has been the method of warm and zealous disputants; the knots they cannot untie with their fingers, they would fain cut asunder with the sword.

Thus Dr. *Whitgift* routed his adversary; he had already deprived him of his professor’s chair, and of his degree of D. D., and being now vice-chancellor of *Cambridge*, he got him expelled the university upon the following pretence: Mr. *Cartwright*, being senior fellow of his college, was only in *deacon’s* orders; the doctor being informed of this, and that the statute requiring such to take upon them the order of *priesthood*, might be interpreted to *priest’s* orders, concluded he was perjured;\* upon which he summoned the heads of colleges together, and declared, that Mr. *Cartwright* had broken his oath, and without any further admonition, pushed his interest among the *masters*, to rid the college of a man whose popularity was too great for his ambition, insomuch that he declared he would not establish order in the university while a person of his principles was among them; after this he wrote to the archbishop, Sept. 21st, 1572, and begged his grace to watch at court, that *Cartwright* might get no advantage against him, for (says he) he is flatly perjured, and it is God’s just judgment that

\* Life of Whitgift, p. 46.

he should be so punished, for not being a *full* minister. A very mean and pitiful triumph !

The Queen also, and her commissioners, brandished their swords against *Cartwright* and his followers. Her majesty by proclamation called in the *admonition*, commanding all her subjects, who had any in their possession, to bring them to the bishop of the diocese, and not to sell them, upon pain of imprisonment ; upon which Mr. *Stroud* the publisher brought in 34, and his wife burnt the rest that were unsold : 'This Mr. *Stroud* was the suspended minister of *Cranbrook*, an excellent preacher, and universally beloved ; but being reduced to poverty, he was forced to condescend to the low offices of correcting the press, and of publishing books for a livelihood ;\* when he appeared before the bishop of *London* upon this occasion, his lordship reproached him for laying down the ministry, though *Parker* had actually deprived him, and forbid him to preach six years before.

The bishops were no less careful to crush the favorers of the *admonition* ; for when Mr. *Wake* of *Christ* church had declared in favor of it, in a sermon at *St. Paul's Cross*, the bishop of *London* sent for him next morning into custody ; but he made his escape. Mr. *Crick*, chaplain to the bishop of *Norwich*, having also commended the book in a sermon at the same place ; the archbishop sent a special messenger to apprehend him ; and though he escaped for the present, he afterwards fell into the hands of the commissioners, and was deprived ;† the like misfortune befel Dr. *Aldrich*, an eminent divine, and dignitary of the church, with many others ; notwithstanding which Dr. *Sandys* bishop of *London*, in his letter to the treasurer, calls for further help : " The  
' city (says he) will never be quiet, till these authors of  
' sedition, who are now esteemed as gods, as *Field*, *Wil-*  
' *cox*, *Cartwright*, and others, be far removed from the city ;  
' the people resort to them, as in popery they were wont to  
' run on pilgrimages ; if these idols, who are honored as  
' saints, were removed from hence, their honor would fall  
' into the dust, and they would be taken for *blocks* as they  
' are. A sharp letter from her majesty would cut the cour-

\* MS. p. 105.

† Life of Whitgift, p. 53.

‘age of these men. Good my lords, for the love you bear to the church of Christ, resist the tumultuous enterprizes of these new-fangled fellows.’ These were the weapons with which the doctor’s answer to the *admonition* were enforced ; so that we may fairly conclude with *Fuller* the historian, “ *That if Cartwright had the better of his adversary in learning, Whitgift had more power to back his arguments ; and by THIS he not only kept the field, but gained the victory.*”

On the other hand it is certain, vast numbers of the clergy, both in *London* and the two universities, had a high opinion of *Cartwright’s* writings ; he had many admirers ; and if we may believe his adversaries, wanted not for presents and gratuities : Many hands were procured in approbation and commendation of his reply to *Whitgift* ; and some said, they would defend it to death.\* In short, though *Whitgift’s* writings might be of use to confirm those who had already conformed, they made no converts among the puritans, but rather confirmed them in their former sentiments.

To pursue this controversy to the end : In the year 1573, *Dr. Whitgift* published his defence against *Cartwright’s* reply ; § in which he states the difference between them thus : ‘The question is not, *whether many things mentioned in your PLATFORM OF DISCIPLINE were fitly used in the apostles’ time, or may now be well used in sundry reformed churches ?* this is not denied ; but *whether, when there is a settled order in doctrine and government established by law, it may stand with godly and christian wisdom to attempt so great alteration as this PLATFORM must needs bring in, with disobedience to the prince and laws, and unquietness of the church, and offence of many consciences ?* If this were the whole question, surely it might stand with the wisdom of the *legislature* in settled times, to make some concessions in favor of pious and devout men ; nor can it be inconsistent with *godly and christian wisdom*, for subjects to attempt it by lawful and peaceable methods.

Two years after [1575] *Mr. Cartwright* published a second reply to *Whitgift’s* defence ; it consisted of two parts ;

\* Life of Parker, p. 427.

§ Whitgift’s Life p. 56.



first was intitled, *The second reply of T.C. against Dr. Whitgift's second answer touching the church discipline*; and these two sentences of scripture in the title page, *For n's sake I will not hold my tongue; for Jerusalem's sake I will not rest, till the righteousness thereof break forth as light, &c.—Ye are the Lord's remembrancers: Keep silence.* Isa. lxii. 6, 7. It is dedicated to the church of *gland*, and all that love the truth in it. In his preface answers divers personal matters between the doctor and himself: He remembers him of his illegal depriving him of his fellowship, and pronouncing him perjured. He says, he never opened his lips for the divinity chair, as he had solemnly charged him: That he had never desired the degree of *doctor*, but by the advice of more than a dozen learned ministers, who, considering his office of *divinity reader*, thought he ought to assume the title. He added, that he never refused a private conference with him [*Whitgift*,] that he offered it, and the other refused it, saying, he was incorrigible; indeed, he did refuse private conference writing, having had experience of his adversary's untruthfulness; and because he thought that the doctrine he taught openly should be defended openly. *Whitgift* urged him, that after he was expelled the college, he sat up and down doing no good, but living at other men's expenses.\* How ungenerous was this! After the doctor had taken away his adversary's bread, and stopped his mouth, that he might not preach, to reproach him with *doing no good*, and being beholden to his friends for a dinner. *Cartwright* answered, that he was poor; that he had no wife, nor house of his own; and that it was with small delight that he lived upon his friends, but that he still did what little good he could, in instructing their children. *Whitgift* charged his adversary further, with want of learning, though he had held the divinity chair with vast reputation, and had been read by *Beza*, *Sol*, the very *sun* of *England*: He taxed him with making extracts of other men's notes, and that he scarce read one of the ancient authors he had quoted. To which *Cartwright* modestly replied, that as to great learning he would let it pass; for if *Whitgift* had read all

\* Life of Whitgift, p. 64.



the *fathers*, and he scarce one, it would easily appear to the learned world by their writings; but that it was sufficiently known that he had hunted him with more hounds than one.

The strength of his reply lies in reducing the policy of the church as near as possible to the standard of scripture; for when Dr. *Whitgift* alledged some of the fathers of the 4th and 5th century on his side, *Cartwright* replied, “That  
“ forasmuch as the fathers have erred, and that corruptions  
“ crept early into the church, therefore they ought to have  
“ no further credit than their authority is warranted by the  
“ word of God and good reason; to press their bare au-  
“ thority without relation to this, is to bring an intolerable  
“ tyranny into the church of God.”

The second part of *Cartwright's* reply was not published till two years forward, when he was fled out of the kingdom;\* it is intitled, *The rest of the second reply of Thomas Cartwright against Master Doctor Whitgift's answer, touching the church discipline, imprinted 1577*: in which he shews, that church-government by an ELDERSHIP is by divine appointment, and of perpetual obligation. He then considers the defects of the church of *England*, and treats of the power of the civil magistrate in ecclesiastical matters; of ecclesiastical persons bearing civil offices; and of the habits. He apologizes for going through with the controversy at such a distance of time, but he thought it of importance, and that it need not be ashamed of the light. Speaking of his own poverty, disgrace and banishment, for appearing in this cause, he says, ‘It were an intolerable delicacy, if he could  
‘ not give up a little ease and commodity, for that whereun-  
‘ to his life was due, if it had been asked; or that he would  
‘ grudge to dwell in another corner of the world, for that  
‘ cause for which he ought to be ready altogether to depart  
‘ out of it.’ But he was sensible he strove against the stream, and that his work might be thought unseasonable, his adversary being now advanced so much above him; for this year *Whitgift* was made a bishop, when poor *Cartwright* was little better than a wandering beggar.†

\* Strype's Ann.

† Ibid.

Thus ended the controversy between these two champions ; so that *Fuller*, *Heylin* and *Collier*, must be mistaken, when they say, *Whitgift* kept the field, and carried off a complete victory, when *Cartwright* had certainly the last word. But whoever had the better of the argument, *Whitgift* got the most by it ; and when he was advanced to the pinnacle of church-preferment, acted an ungenerous part towards his adversary for many years, prosecuting him with continual vexations and imprisonments, and pointing all his church artillery against him, not suffering him so much as to defend the common cause of christianity against the papists, when he was called to it ; however, at length being wearied out with the importunities of great men, or growing more temperate in his old age, he suffered him to govern a small hospital in *Warwick*, given him by the Earl of *Leicester*, where this great and good man's grey hairs came down with sorrow to the grave.

To return : notwithstanding all this opposition from the Queen and her commissioners, the puritans gained ground ; and though the press was restrained, they galled their adversaries with pamphlets, which were privately dispersed both in city and country. *Parker* employed all his emissaries to discover their printing presses, but to no purpose ; whereupon he complained to the treasurer in these words, " I understand throughout all the realm (says he) how the matter is taken ; the puritans are justified, and we judged to be *extreme persecutors* ; I have observed this for seven years ; if the sincerity of the gospel should end in such judgments, I fear the *council* will be overcome. The puritans slander us with books and libels, lying they care not how deep, and yet the more they write the more they are applauded and comforted."\* The scholars of *Cambridge* were generally with the puritans, but the masters and heads of colleges were against them ; so that many who ventured to preach for the *discipline* were deprived of their fellowships, and expelled the university, or obliged to a public retractation.

There being no further prospect of a public reformation by the legislature, some of the leading puritans agreed to

\* Life of Parker, p. 889.

attempt it in a more private way ; for this purpose they erected a presbytery at *Wandsworth*, a village five miles from the city, conveniently situated for the *London* brethren, as standing on the banks of the river *Thames*. The heads of the association were, Mr. *Field* lecturer of *Wandsworth*, Mr. *Smith* of *Mitcham*, Mr. *Crane* of *Roehampton*, Messrs. *Wilcox*, *Standen*, *Jackson*, *Bonham*, *Saintloe*, and *Edmonds*, to whom afterwards were joined Messrs. *Travers*, *Chake*, *Barber*, *Gardiner*, *Crook*, *Egerton*, and a number of very considerable laymen. On the 20th of November eleven elders were chosen, and their offices described in a register, intitled, *The orders of Wandsworth*. This was the first presbyterian church in *England*. All imaginable care was taken to keep their proceedings secret, but the bishop's eye was upon them, who gave immediate intelligence to the *high commission*, upon which the Queen issued out a proclamation for putting the *act of uniformity* in execution ; but though the *commissioners* knew of the *presbytery*, they could not discover the members of it, nor prevent others being erected in neighboring counties.

While the Queen and bishops were defending the out-works of the church against the puritans, and bracing up the building with *articles*, *canons*, *injunctions*, and *penal laws*, enforced by the sword of the civil magistrate, the papists were sapping the very foundation ; for upon publishing the pope's *bull* of excommunication against the Queen, great numbers deserted the public worship, and resorted to private conventicles to hear mass, while others who kept their stations in the church were secretly undermining it. “ There  
‘ were at this time (says a learned writer\*) certain ministers  
‘ of the church that were *papists*, who subscribed and ob-  
‘ served the orders of the church, wore a side gown, a square  
‘ cap, a cope and surplice. They would run into corners,  
‘ and say to the people, Believe not this new doctrine, it is  
‘ naught, it will not long endure ; although I use order  
‘ among them outwardly, my heart is not with them, but  
‘ with the mother church of *Rome*. No, no, we do not  
‘ preach, nor yet teach openly ; though we read their

\* *Strype's Ann.* p. 93.

‘new devised homilies for a colour to satisfy the time for  
‘a season.” In *Yorkshire* they went openly to mass, and  
were so numerous, that the protestants stood in awe of  
them. In *London* there was a great resort to the *Portugal*  
ambassador’s chapel ; and when the sheriff, by order of  
the bishop of *London*, sent his officers to take some of  
them into custody. the Queen was displeased, and ordered  
them immediately to be released.

Sad was the state of religion (says Mr. *Strype*) at this  
time ; “the substantials being lost in contending for exter-  
‘nals ; the *churchmen* heaped up many benefices upon  
‘themselves, and resided upon none ; neglecting their cures. §  
‘Many of them alienated their lands, made unreasonable  
‘leases, and waste of woods, and granted reversions, and  
‘advowsons to their wives and children.—Among the laity  
‘there was little devotion ; the Lord’s day greatly profan-  
‘ed, and little observed ; the common prayers not frequent-  
‘ed ; some lived without any service of God at all ; many  
‘were mere heathens and atheists ; the Queen’s own court  
‘an harbor for *epicures* and atheists, and a kind of lawless  
‘place, because it stood in no parish ; which things made  
‘good men fear some sad judgments impending over the  
‘nation.” The governors of the church expressed no con-  
cern for suppressing of vice, and encouraging virtue ; there  
were no citations into the Commons for immoralities : but  
the bishops were every day shutting the mouths of the  
most pious, useful and industrious preachers in the nation,  
at the time when the Queen was sick of the small-pox, and  
troubled with fainting fits, and the whole reformation de-  
pended upon the single *thread* of her life.

This precarious state of religion was the more terrible,  
because of the *Parisian massacre*, which happened this very  
summer [1572] on the 24th of August, being *Bartholomew-*  
*day*, when great numbers of protestants having been invit-  
ed to *Paris*, on pretence of doing honor to the King of *Na-*  
*varre*’s marriage to the King’s sister, ten thousand were  
massacred in one night, and twenty thousand more in other  
parts of the kingdom, within the compass of a few weeks,

§ Life of Parker, p. 395.

by his majesty's commission ; no distinction being made between lords, gentlemen, justices, lawyers, scholars, physicians, and the meanest of the people ;\* they spared neither women, maids, children in the cradle, nor infants in their mother's womb. Many who escaped fled to *Geneva* and *Switzerland*, and great numbers into *England*, to save their lives. The protestant princes of *Germany* were awakened with this butchery ; and the Queen put the coats into a posture of defence, but made no concessions for uniting her protestant subjects among themselves.

This year died the reverend and learned Mr. *John Knox*, the apostle, and chief reformer of the kirk of *Scotland*.—This divine came into *England* in the reign of King *Edward VI.* and was appointed one of the itinerant preachers for the year 1552 ; he was afterwards offered a parochial living in *London*, but refused it ; upon King *Edward's* death he retired beyond sea, and became preacher to the *English* exiles at *Frankfort*, till he was artfully spirited away by the contrivance of Mr. *Cox*, now bishop of *Ely*, for not reading the *English* service. He afterwards preached to the *English* at *Geneva* ; and upon the breaking up of that congregation in the year 1559, he returned to *Scotland*, and was a great instrument in the hand of providence for the reformation of that kirk. He was a son of thunder, and feared not the face of any man in the cause of religion, which betrayed him sometimes into too coarse treatment of his superiors.‡ However, he had the respect of all the protestant nobility and gentry of his country ; and after a life of great service and labor, he died comfortably in the midst of his friends, in the 67th year of his age,† being greatly supported in his last hours from the 17th chapter of *St. John*, and 1 *Cor.* 15th chapter ; both which

\* Strype's Ann. p. 160.

§ It has been justly observed, " That though the praise of sincerity and piety cannot be denied him, it is to be regretted that those virtues were accompanied with a narrow and bigotted turn of mind. In the time of *John Knox*, the having suffered persecution, did not hinder men from exercising persecution when it was in their power.

The New Annual Register for 1789. History of Knowledge, p. 31,

† Life of Parker, p. 366.

be ordered to be frequently read to him : His body was attended to the grave with great solemnity and honor.

The Queen being incensed against the puritans for their late applications to parliament, reprimanded the bishops for not suppressing them, resolving to bend all the *powers* of the crown that way. Accordingly *commissioners* were appointed under the great seal,† in every shire, to put in execution the *penal laws* by way of *Oyer* and *Terminer*, and the Queen published a proclamation in the month of Oct. declaring her royal pleasure, that all offenders against the act of uniformity should be severely punished. Letters were also sent from the lords of the council to the bishops, dated Nov. 7th, 1573, to enforce her majesty's proclamation;† in which, after having reproached them with holding their courts only to get money, or for such like purposes, they now require them in her majesty's name, either by themselves, which is most fit, or by their archdeacons, personally to visit and see that the *habits*, with all the Queen's injunctions, be exactly and uniformly observed in every church of their diocese ; and to punish all refusers according to the ecclesiastical laws. The lord treasurer also made a long speech before the commissioners in the *star chamber*,§ in which by the Queen's order, " He charged the bishops ' with neglect, in not enforcing her majesty's proclamation ; ' he said the Queen could not satisfy her conscience without ' crushing the *puritans* ; for she thought none of her subjects ' worthy of her protection that favored innovations, or that ' directly or indirectly countenanced the alteration of any ' thing established in the church : ' That by too much lenity ' some might be apt to think the exceptions of these novelists

† Life of Parker, p. 447, 479. Strype's Ann. vol. ii. p. 260.

† Life of Parker, Append, vol. ii. p. 434.

§ Life of Parker, p. 436, 438.

The letter from the lords of the council, and the speech of the lord treasurer, are alledged by bishop *Maddox*, as convincing proofs of the *mild conduct* of the bishops. How far his conclusion is justly drawn ; whether it prove any thing more than that the zeal and activity of the bishops did not keep pace with the wishes of the court, the reader will judge from the facts Mr. *Neal*'s history has exhibited. But, however this evidence may exculpate the bishops, it certainly impeaches the lenity of the Queen, and is a direct proof of the severity, the unyielding severity, of her government. ED.

against the ceremonies were reasonable and well founded, or but trifling matters of disputation ; but the Queen was resolved that her orders and injunctions should not be contemned ; that the public rule should be inviolably observed ; and that there should be an absolute obedience, because the safety of her government depended upon it." The treasurer, therefore, or some other member, proposed in council, that all ministers throughout the kingdom should be bound in a bond of 200l. to conform in all things to the act of uniformity, and in case of default their names to be returned into the *exchequer* by the bishop, and the bond to be sued.\* If this project had taken place, it would have ruined half the clergy of the kingdom.

Another occasion of these extraordinary proceedings of the court, is said to arise from the accidental madness of one *Peter Birchet*, of the *Middle Temple*, who had the name of a *puritan*, but was disordered in his senses ; this man came out of the *Temple* in his gown, Oct. 14, 1573, about eleven in the morning, and seeing Mr. *Fitz-Gerard*, lieutenant of the pensioners, Sir *Wm. Winter*, and Mr. *Hawkins*, officers of the Queen's navy, riding through the *Strand*, with their servants on foot, came up to them, and suddenly struck *Hawkins* with a dagger through the right arm into the body about the arm-hole, and immediately ran into the *Bell-Inn*, where he was taken, and upon examination being asked, whether he knew Mr. *Hawkins* ? he answered he took him for Mr. *Hatton*, captain of the guards, and one of the privy chamber, whom he was moved to kill by the spirit of God, by which he should do God and his country acceptable service because he was an enemy of God's word and a maintainer of papistry. In which opinion he persevered, without any signs of repentance, till, for fear of being burnt for *heresy*, he recanted before Dr. *Sandys* bishop of *London*, and the rest of the commissioners. The Queen asked her two chief justices, and attorney-general, what corporal punishment the villain might undergo for his offence ; it was proposed to put him to death as a *felon*, because a premeditated attempt with an intention of killing had been so punished by King *Edward II.* though the party wounded did not die ; but the

\* *Strype's Ann.* p. 260. *Life of Grindal*, p. 185.



udges did not apprehend this to be law. It was then moved, that the Queen, by virtue of her prerogative, should put him to death by *martial law* ; and accordingly a warrant was made out under the great seal for his execution, though the fact was committed in time of peace. This made some of the council hesitate, apprehending it might prove a very bad precedent. At length the poor creature put an end to the dispute himself, for on the 10th of November, in the afternoon, he killed his keeper *Longworth* with one blow, striking him with a billet on the hinder part of the head, as he was looking upon a book in the prison window of the *Tower* ; for this crime he was next day indicted and arraigned at the *King's-Bench*, where he confessed the fact, saying, that *Longworth* in his imagination was *Hatton* : There he received judgment for murder, and the next day, Nov. 12, had his right hand first cut off at the place in the *Strand* where he struck *Hawkins*, and was then immediately hanged on a gibbet erected purposely, between 8 and 9 of the clock in the morning, and continued hanging there for three days. The poor man talked very wildly, and was by fits downright mad, so that if he had been shut up in *Bedlam* after his first attempt, as he ought to have been, all further mischief had been prevented.\* However, it was very unreasonable to lay this to the charge of the *puritans*, and to take occasion from hence to spread a general persecution over the whole kingdom : But the Queen was for laying hold of all opportunities to suppress a number of conscientious men, whom she would often say, *she hated more than the papists*.†

The commissioners, being thus pushed forward from above, sent letters to the bishops, exhorting them to command their archdeacons, and other ecclesiastical officers, to give it in charge to their *clergy* and *quest-men*, to present the names and surnames of all non-conformists in their several parishes, before the first week in *Lent*.§ A letter of this sort was sent, among others, by the old bishop of *Norwich* to his chancellor, dated from *Ludham*, Jan. 30, 1573. This was very unacceptable work to a man who was dropping into

\* MS. p. 370. † Life of Parker, p. 434. § Strype's Ann. vol. ii. p. 261.

his grave ;† but he gave orders as he was commanded ; and many ministers of his diocese being returned *unconformable*, were suspended from reading common prayer and administering the sacraments, but allowed still to catechise youth ;\* several of whom offered to preach to some congregations as the bishops should appoint, of which his lordship wrote to the archbishop, but his grace refused to set them on work, and continue their parts in the public *exercises* or *prophecys*, for which the bishop was severely reprimanded, and threatened by the *commissioners* with the Queen's high displeasure ; whereupon he allowed his chancellor to silence them *totally*, though it was against his judgment ; for in his letter to a gentleman on this occasion, he writes, “ — I was ‘ obliged to restrain them, unless I would willingly procure ‘ my own danger.—Therefore let not this matter seem ‘ strange to you, for the matter was of importance, and ‘ touched me so near, that I could do no less if I would avoid extreme danger.”‡ But, after all, his lordship being suspected of remissness, *Parker* directed a special commission to *commissaries* of his own appointing, to visit his diocese parochially ; which they did, and reported, that some ministers were absent, and so could not be examined ; other churches had no surplices, but the ministers said they would wear them when provided ; but that there were about 300 non-conformists whom they had suspended ; one of whom, as the good old bishop wrote, was *godly and learned, and had done much good*.‡

The heads of the puritans, being debarred the liberty of preaching and printing, challenged their adversaries to a public disputation : This had been allowed the protestants in Queen *Mary's* reign, and the papists at the accession of Queen *Elizabeth* ; but the Queen and council would not now admit, that what was established by law should be exposed to question, and referred to the hazard of a dispute. Instead therefore of a conference, they took a shorter way,

† Life of Parker, p. 449, 246, 251, 252, 159.

\* Strype's Annals, vol. ii. p. 261, 262. Life of Parker, p. 336.

‡ Life of Parker, p. 246, 259, 449, 451, 452. Strype's Ann. vol. ii. p. 109, 261, 262, 263. Life of Parker, p. 336.

by summoning the disputants before the *ecclesiastical commission*, to answer to sundry articles exhibited against them, and among others to this, *Whether the common prayer book is every part of it grounded upon holy scripture?*—an honor hardly to be allowed to any human composure: And for not answering to the satisfaction of the commissioners, Mr. *Wyburn, Johnson, Brown, Field, Wilcox, Sparrow*, and *King*, were deprived, and the four last committed to *Newgate*,\* from whence two of them had been but lately released.—They were told further, that if they did not comply in a short time they should be banished; though there was no law for inflicting such punishment.

Mr. *Cartwright* was summoned among the rest, but wisely got out of the way, upon which the *commissioners* issued out the following order: “To all mayors, bailiffs, sheriffs, constables, headboroughs, and all others the Queen’s officers, to be aiding and assisting to the bearer [their messenger] with the best means they can devise to apprehend one THOMAS CARTWRIGHT, student in divinity, wheresoever he be within the realm, and to bring him up to *London* with a sufficient guard, to appear before us her majesty’s commissioners in causes ecclesiastical, for his misdemeanors in matters of religion; § Dec. 15th, 1578. Signed by John Rivers, mayor, Edwin, bishop of *London*, Alex. Nowell, dean of *St. Paul’s*, Gabriel Goodman, dean of *Westminster*, together with the attorney-general, solicitor-general, recorder, master of the rolls, and master of the requests.” But Mr. *Cartwright* lay concealed among his friends till an opportunity offered of leaving the kingdom.

The Reverend Mr. *Deering*, reader of *St. Paul’s*, was also suspended for some trifling words spoken against the hierarchy in conversation; and in order to his restoration was obliged to subscribe four articles, viz. To the supremacy; to the 39 articles; to the book of common prayer; and that the word and sacraments are rightly administered in the church of England; which he did, with some few exceptions. The commissioners then examined him upon fifteen or twenty articles more, of which these were some:

\* Life of Parker, p. 413.

§ Strype’s Annals, vol. ii. p. 282.

“ Whether we be tied by God’s word to the order and  
 ‘ use of the apostles, and of the primitive church, in all  
 ‘ things? Whether nothing may be in the church, concern-  
 ‘ ing ceremonies or regimen, but only that which Christ  
 ‘ himself has commanded in his word? Whether every  
 ‘ particular parish church, of necessity, and by the order  
 ‘ of God’s word, ought to have their pastors, elders, and  
 ‘ deacons, chosen by the people, and they only to have the  
 ‘ whole government of the church in ecclesiastical matters?  
 ‘ Whether there should be an equality among the ministers  
 ‘ of this realm, as well concerning government and disci-  
 ‘ pline, as the ministration of the word and sacraments?  
 ‘ Whether the patrimony of the church, as *glebe lands and*  
 ‘ *tithes*, &c. ought to be taken from them? Whether the  
 ‘ present ministers of the church of *England* are true min-  
 ‘ isters, and their administrations effectual? Whether it be  
 ‘ more agreeable to God’s word, and more for the profit of  
 ‘ the church, to use a form of common prayer; or that ev-  
 ‘ ery minister pray publicly, as his own spirit shall direct  
 ‘ him? Whether the children of papists ought to be re-  
 ‘ baptized? Whether an ecclesiastical person may have  
 ‘ more livings than one? Whether a minister of Christ  
 ‘ may exercise a civil function?”§

The rest of the articles, making in all above twenty, were about the *obligation of the judicial laws of Moses, and the power of the civil magistrate in matters of religion*. To all which Mr. *Deering* gave wise and modest answers, yielding as much as his principles and the nature of things would admit; but being called, as it were, before an inquisition, as he thought himself not bound to be his own accuser, so he prayed their honors, that what he had said might not be interpreted to his prejudice; yet the commissioners ungenerously took advantage of his answers, and deprived him of his lecture.

Mr. *Deering* appealed from the commissioners to the council, who were pleased to restore him, which galled the archbishop, as appears by his letter to one of the commissioners, dated July 6th, 1573, in which are these words; “ We  
 ‘ have sent you certain articles taken out of *Cartwright’s*

§ Pierce’s Vindication, p. 80, 81.

‘book, by the council propounded to Mr. *Deering*, with  
 ‘his answers to the same ; and also a copy of the council’s  
 ‘letter to Mr. *Deering*, to restore him to his former reading  
 ‘and preaching, *notwithstanding our advices never requir-*  
 ‘*ed thereunto*. These proceedings puff them up with pride,  
 ‘make the people hate *us*, and magnify *them* with great  
 ‘triumphing, that her majesty and her privy council have  
 ‘good liking of this new building :——But we are persuad-  
 ‘ed her majesty has no liking thereof, howsoever the mat-  
 ‘ter be favored by others.”

Mr. *Deering* was a learned, pious, and peaceable non-conformist ; his printed sermons are polite and nervous. In his letter to the lord treasurer *Burleigh* on this occasion, he offered to shew, before any body of learned men, the difference between bishops of the primitive church, and those of the present church of *England*, in the following particulars :—bishops and ministers were then in one degree, now they are divers. There were then many bishops in one town, now there is but one in a whole country. No bishop’s authority was more than in one city, but now it is in many shires. Bishops then used no bodily punishments, now they imprison, fine, &c. The primitive bishops could not excommunicate, or absolve, merely by their own authority, now they may. Then, without consent of presbyters, they could make no ministers, now they do. They could confirm no children in other parishes, they do now in many shires. They had then but one living, now they have divers. They had neither officials, commissaries, nor chancellors. They dealt in no civil government by any established authority.\* They had no right to alienate any parsonage, or let it in lease. Then they had a church where they served the cure, as those we call *parish priests*, though they were metropolitans or archbishops ; so that *Ambrose*, *St. Austin*, and others, who lived as late as the 4th or 5th century, and were called bishops, had very little agreement with ours. But for this our archbishop never left him till he was silenced again and deprived.

On the 29th of Jan. 1573, the Rev. Mr. *Arthur Wake*, parson of *Great Willing*, value 100l. a year ; *Eusebius Pa-*

\* Collier’s Church History, p. 543.

get, parson of *Owld*, 100l. a year; *Thurston Moseley*, parson of *Hardingston*, 40l. a year; *George Gilderd*, parson of *Collingtrouge*, and *William Dawson*, parson of *Weston-Farel*, 100 marks, (all in the diocese of *Peterborough*. of which *Dr. Scambler* was bishop. and *James Ellis*, L.L.D. chancellor,) were first suspended for three weeks, and then deprived of their livings. They were all preachers: four of them were licensed by the university as learned and religious divines, and three of them had been moderators in the *exercises*. The reasons of their deprivation were not for errors in doctrine, or depravity of life, but for not subscribing two *forms* of the commissioner's devising, one called *forma promissionis*, the other *forma objuratonis*. In the *forma promissionis* they swear and subscribe, "to use  
 ' the service and common prayer-book, and the public form  
 ' of administration of sacraments, and no other; that they  
 ' will serve in their cures according to the rites, orders,  
 ' forms and ceremonies prescribed; and that they will not  
 ' hereafter preach or speak any thing tending to the deroga-  
 ' tion of the said book, or any part thereof, remaining au-  
 ' thorized by the laws and statutes of this realm." In the *forma objuratonis* they subscribe and protest upon oath,  
 ' that the book of consecration of archbishops and bishops,  
 ' and of the ordering of deacons, set forth in the time of King  
 ' *Edward VI.* and confirmed by authority of parliament, doth  
 ' contain in it all things necessary for such consecration and  
 ' ordering, having in it nothing that is either superstitious  
 ' or ungodly, according to their judgment; and therefore  
 ' that they which be consecrated and ordered according to  
 ' the same book, be duly, orderly, and lawfully ordained  
 ' and consecrated, and that they do acknowledge their duty  
 ' and obedience to their ordinary and diocesan as to a law-  
 ' ful magistrate under the Queen's majesty, so set forth as  
 ' the laws and statutes do require; which obedience they  
 ' do promise according as the laws shall bind them to per-  
 ' form. In testimony whereof they do hereunto subscribe  
 ' their names.'"\*

The *ministers* offered to use the book of common prayer and no other; and not to preach against the same before the

\* MS. p. 198.

meeting of the next parliament; but apprehending the *oath and subscription* to be contrary to the laws of God and the realm, they appealed to the archbishop of *Canterbury*, who denied their appeal.\* Hereupon they presented a supplication to the Queen, and another to the parliament, but could not be heard, though their case was most compassionate, for they had wives and large families of children, which were now reduced to poverty and want, so that (as they say in their supplication) if God in his providence does not help they must beg.

In the room of the deprived ministers certain *outlandish men* succeeded, who could hardly read so as to be understood; the people were left untaught; instead of having two sermons every Lord's day, there was now but one in a quarter of a year, and for the most part not that. The parishioners signed petitions to the bishop for their former preachers, but to no purpose; they must swear and subscribe, or be buried in silence.

On the 20th of September 1573, the Rev. Mr. *Robert Johnson*, already mentioned, sometime domestic chaplain to the Lord-keeper *Bacon*, now parson of *St. Clements* near *Temple-Bar*, was tried at *Westminster-Hall* for non-conformity;† it was alledged against him, that he had married without the ring; and that he had baptised without the cross. Mr. *Pierce*‡ says, he was also accused of a misdemeanor, because when once he was administering the sacrament, the wine falling short, he sent for more, but did not consecrate it afresh, accounting the former consecration sufficient for what was to be applied to the same use; but nothing of this kind appears in his two indictments which are now before me, with the names of all the witnesses; but for the other offences, viz. for omitting these words in the office of baptism, "I receive this child into the congregation of Christ's flock, and do sign him with the sign of the cross, 'in token' &c. And for omitting these words in the marrying of *Leonard Morris* and *Agnes Miles*, "With this ring I thee wed, with my body I thee worship, and with all my worldly goods I thee endow, in the name of the

\* MS. p. 202.

† MS. p. 199.

‡ Vindicat. p. 83.



‘ Father,’ &c. and for refusing to subscribe, he was shut up in close prison for seven weeks, till he died in great poverty and want.

The forms of subscription varied in the several dioceses, though the usual subscription and protestation for such clergymen as were cited before the commissioners for non-conformity,\* was this : “ I promise unfeignedly by these presents, and subscribe with my hand, that I will teach the word of God soberly, sincerely and truly, according to the doctrine established by law, without moving unnecessary contentions ; and that I will never suffer any person to use my licence of preaching, by rasing out the name, or abusing the seal ; and that I will deliver up my licence, being so required by that authority from whence I had it.”

“ I acknowledge the book of articles agreed on in the synod of 1563, and confirmed by the Queen, to be sound, and agreeable to the word of God. That the Queen’s majesty is supreme governor of the church of *England* next under Christ, as well in ecclesiastical as in civil causes. That in the book of common prayer there is nothing evil, or repugnant to the word of God, and that it may be well used in this our christian church of *England*. That as the public preaching of the word in the church of *England*, is sound and sincere, so the public order of administration of sacraments, is consonant to the word of God. And whereas I have in public prayer, and administration of sacraments, neglected and omitted the order by public authority set down, following my own fancy in altering, adding, or omitting of the same, not using such rites as by law and order are appointed ; I acknowledge my fault therein, and am sorry for it, and humbly pray pardon for that disorder. And here I do submit myself to the order and rites set down ; and I do promise that I will from henceforth, in public prayer, and administration of the sacraments, use and observe the same. The which I do presently and willingly testify with the subscription of mine own hand.”

\* MS. p. 200.

But this not reaching the LAITY, many of whom deserted their own parish churches, and went to hear the non-conformists, the *commissioners* framed the following subscription for such of them as should be presented as defaulters:

“I acknowledge the Queen’s majesty to be chief governor of the church of *England* under Christ. That in the book of common prayer there is nothing repugnant to the word of God. That as the public preaching in this church of *England* is sound, so the public administration of the sacraments is consonant to the word of God. . And whereas I have absented myself from my parish church, and have refused to join with the congregation in public prayer, and in receiving the sacrament, according to the public order set down, and my duty in that behalf, I am right sorry for it, and pray that this my fault, may be pardoned; and do promise, that from henceforth I will frequent my parish church, and join with the congregation there, as well in prayer as in the administration of the sacraments, according to such order as by public authority is set down and established; and to witness this my promise I do hereunto willingly subscribe my name.”§

The officers of the spiritual courts planted their spies in all suspected parishes, to make observation of those who came not to church, and cause them to be summoned into the Commons, where they were punished at pleasure.—The keepers were charged to take notice of such as came to visit the prisoners, or bring them relief; and upon notice given, spies were set upon them to bring them into trouble. Complaints have been made of their rude language to the bishops, and the rest of the commissioners; and it is possible that their *lordly* behavior, and arbitrary proceedings, might sometimes make their passions overflow. *Oppression will make a wise man mad.* But I have the examinations of several before me, in which nothing of this kind appears. On the other hand, it is certain the conduct of the commissioners was high and imperious; their under officers were ravenous, and greedy of gain; the fees of the court were exorbitant,\* so that if an honest *puritan* fell into their hands he

§ MS. p. 201.

\* MS. p. 176.

was sure to be half ruined before he got out, though he was cleared of the accusation.\*

\* The commissioners treated those that came before them neither like men nor christians, as will appear, among many others, by the following examination of Mr. *White*, a substantial citizen of *London*, Jan. 18, 1573; who had been fined, and tossed from one prison to another, contrary to law and justice, only for not frequenting his parish church. His examiners were the *Lord Chief Justice*; the *Master of the Rolls*; the *Master of the Requests*; Mr. *Gerard*; the *Dean of Westminster*; the *Sheriff of London*, and the *Clerk of the Peace*. After sundry others had been despatched, Mr. *White* was brought before them, whom his lordship accosted after this manner:

*L. C. J.* Who is this?

*White.* *White*, an't please your honor.

*L. C. J.* *White*, as black as the devil.

*White.* Not so, my lord; one of Gon's children.

*L. C. J.* Why will you not come to your parish church?

*White.* My lord, I did use to frequent my parish church before my troubles, and procured several godly men to preach there, as well as in other places of preaching and prayer; and since my troubles I have not frequented any private assemblies, but as I have had leave and liberty have gone to my parish church; and therefore those that presented me, have done it out of malice; for if any of these things can be proved against me simply, or that *I hold all things in common*, your lordship may dismiss me from hence to the gallows.

*Mr. Ger.* You have not usually frequented your own parish church.

*White.* I allow I have more used other places, where I was better edified.

*Mr. Ger.* Then your presentment is in part true?

*White.* Not, an't please you, for I am presented for not coming at all to my parish church.

*Ger.* Will you then come to prayers when there is no sermon?

*White.* I would avoid those things that are an offence to me and others, and disturb the peace of the church; however, I crave the liberty of a subject, and if I do not publicly frequent both preaching, prayer, and the sacraments, deal with me accordingly.

*Dean of West.* What fault find you in the common prayer?

*White.* Let them answer to whom it appertains; for being in prison almost a year about these matters, I was upon a statute relating to that book indicted, and before I came to liberty almost outlawed, as your worship, Mr. *Gerard*, knows.

*Mast. Req.* What scripture have you to ground your conscience against these garments?

*White.* The whole scriptures are for destroying idolatry, and every thing that belongs to it.

*Mast. Req.* These things never served to idolatry.

*White.* Shough; they are the same which heretofore were used to that purpose.

*Mast. Req.* Where is the place where these are forbidden?

Notwithstanding the dangers already mentioned, “ people resorted to the suffering *puritans* in prison, as in pop-  
 ‘ ery they were wont to run on pilgrimage : (They are the  
 ‘ bishop of *London’s* words.’ Some aldermen, and several

*White.* In *Deuteronomy*, and other places, the *Israelites* are com-  
 manded, not only to destroy the altars, groves, and images, with all there-  
 to belonging, but also to abolish the very names ; and God by *Isaiah*  
 commandeth not to pollute ourselves with the garments of the image,  
 but to cast it away as a menstruous clout.

*Mast. Rolls.* These are no part of idolatry, but are commanded by  
 the prince for civil order, and if you will not be ordered you shew your-  
 self disobedient to the laws.

*White.* I would not willingly disobey any law, only I would avoid  
 those things that are not warranted by the word of God.

*Mast. Req.* These things are commanded by act of parliament, and  
 in disobeying the laws of your country you disobey God.

*White.* I do it not of contempt but of conscience ; in all other things  
 I am an obedient subject.

*L. C. J.* Thou art a contemptuous fellow, and wilt obey no laws.

*White.* Not so my lord, I do and will obey laws, and therefore re-  
 fusing but a ceremony out of conscience, and not refusing the penalty for  
 the same, I rest still a true subject.

*L. C. J.* The Queen’s majesty was over-seen not to make you of her  
 council, to make laws and orders for religion.

*White.* Not so, my lord ; I am to obey laws warranted by God’s word.

*L. C. J.* Do the Queen’s law command any thing against God’s word?

*White.* I do not say, my lord.

*L. C. J.* Yes, marry do you, and there I will hold you.

*White.* Only God and his laws are absolutely perfect : all men and  
 their laws may err.

*L. C. J.* This is one of *Shaw’s* darlings ; I tell thee what, I will not  
 say any thing of affection, for I know thee not, saving by this occasion ;  
 thou art the wickedest, and most contemptuous person, that has come  
 before me, since I sat in this commission.

*White.* Not so, my lord, my conscience witnesseth otherwise.

*Mast. Req.* What if the Queen should command to wear a grey frize  
 gown, would you come to church then ?

*White.* That were more tolerable, than that God’s ministers should  
 wear the habit of his enemies.

*L. C. J.* How, if she should command to wear a fool’s coat and cock’s  
 comb ?

*White.* That were very unseemly, my lord, for God’s ministers.

*Dean West.* You will not then be obedient to the Queen’s commands ?

*White.* I would only avoid those things that have no warrant in the  
 word of God, that are neither decent nor edifying, but flatly the contra-  
 ry, and so recondemned by the foreign reformed churches.

*L. C. J.* You would have no laws.

‘wealthy citizens, gave them great and stout countenances,  
‘and persuaded others to do the like.’

Separate communions were established, where the sacrament of the Lord’s supper was administered privately after

*White.* If there were no laws, I would live a Christian and do no wrong; if I received any, so it were.

*L. C. J.* Thou art a rebel.

*White.* Not so, my lord, a true subject.

*L.C.J.* Yea, I swear by God, thou art a very rebel; for thou wouldst draw thy sword, and lift up thy hand against thy prince, if time served.

*White.* My lord, I thank God, my heart standeth right towards God and my prince; and God will not condemn, though your honor hath so judged.

*L. C. J.* Take him away.

*White.* I would speak a word which I am sure will offend, and yet I must speak it; I heard the name of God taken in vain; if I had done it, it had been a greater offence than that which I stand here for.

*Ger. White, White,* you don’t behave yourself well.

*White.* I pray your worship, shew me wherein, and I will beg pardon and amend it.

*L. C. J.* I may swear in a matter of charity.

*White.* There is no such occasion; but because it is bruited, that at my last being before you, I denied the supremacy of my prince, I desire your honors and worships, with all that be present, to bear witness that I acknowledge her majesty the chief governor, next under Christ, over all persons and causes within her dominions, and to this I will subscribe. I acknowledge the book of articles, and the book of common prayer, as far as they agree with the word of God. I acknowledge the substance of the doctrine and sacraments of the church to be sound and sincere; and so I do of rites and orders, as far as they agree with the word of God.

*Dean of West.* You will not then allow, that all things in the book of common prayer are taken out of the word of God?

*White.* Though they should be so, yet being done by man, I cannot give them the same warrant as to the writings of the Holy Ghost.

*L. C. J.* Take him away.

*White.* I would to the Lord Jesus, that my two years imprisonment might be a means of having these matters fairly decided by the word of God, and the judgment of other reformed churches.

*L. C. J.* You shall be committed, I warrant you.

*White.* Pray, my lord, let me have justice; I am unjustly committed; I desire a copy of my presentment.

*L. C. J.* You shall have your head from your shoulders; have him to the Gate-house.

*White.* I pray you to commit me to some prison in London, that I may be near my house.

*L. C. J.* No, sir, you shall go thither.

*White.* I have paid fines and fees in other prisons; send me not where I shall pay them over again.

the manner of the foreign reformed churches ; and those who joined with them, according to Archbishop *Parker*, signed the following PROTESTATION :—

“ BEING thoroughly persuaded in my conscience, by the *working*  
 “ and by the *word* of the *Almighty*, that these relics of Antichrist are  
 “ abominable before the Lord our God ; and also, for that by the power,  
 “ mercy, strength, and goodness of the Lord our God only, I am escap-  
 “ ed from the filthiness and pollution of these detestable traditions,  
 “ through the knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ : And  
 “ last of all, in as much as by the working also of the Lord Jesus his  
 “ holy spirit, I have joined in prayer and hearing God’s word, with  
 “ those that have not yielded to this idolatrous *trash*, notwithstanding  
 “ the danger for not coming to my parish church, &c. ‘Therefore I  
 “ come not back again to the preaching of them that have received  
 “ these marks of the *Romish* beast.

“ Because of God’s commandment to go forward to perfection. *Heb.*  
 “ vi. 1. 2. *Cor.* vii. 1. *Psalm* lxxxiv. 1. *Ephes.* iv. 15. Also to avoid  
 “ them. *Rom.* xvi. 17. *Ephes.* v. 11. 1 *Thess.* v. 22.

“ Because they are an abomination before the Lord our God. *Deut.*  
 “ xxvii. 25, 26. and xiii. 17. *Ezek.* xiv. 6.

“ I will not beautify with my presence those filthy rags, which bring  
 “ the heavenly word of the *ETERNAL* our Lord God into bondage, sub-  
 “ jection and slavery.

“ Because I would not communicate with other men’s sins. *John* ii.  
 “ 9, 10, 11. 1 *Cor.* vi. 17. Touch no unclean thing, &c. *Sirach* xiii. 1.

“ They give offence both to preacher and hearers. *Rom.* xvi. 17.  
 “ *Luke* xvii. 1.

“ They glad and strengthen the papists in their errors, and grieve  
 “ the godly. *Ezek.* xiii. 21, 22. [Note this 21st verse.]

“ They do persecute our Savior Jesus Christ in his members. *Acts*  
 “ ix. 4, 5. 2 *Cor.* i. 5. Also they reject and despise our Lord and

*L. C. J.* Yes, marry shall you : This is your glory.

*White.* I desire no such glory.

*L. C. J.* It will cost you twenty pounds, I warrant you, before you come out.

*White.* God’s will be done.

These severities against zealous protestants, of pious and sober lives, raised the compassion of the common people, and brought them over to their interests. “ It was a great grief to the archbishop, (says *Mr. Strype*)  
 “ and to other good bishops, to see persons going off from the first estab-  
 “ lishment of the protestant religion among us, making as if the *service*  
 “ *book* was unlawful, and the ecclesiastical state antichristian ; and la-  
 “ boring to set up another government and discipline——” But who drove them to these extremities ? Why were not a few amendments in the liturgy yielded to at first, whereby conscientious men might have been made easy ; or liberty given them to worship God in their own way ?

“ Savior Jesus Christ. *Luke* x. 16. Moreover, those *laborers*, who at  
 “ the prayer of the faithful, the Lord hath sent forth into his harvest,  
 “ they refuse and also reject. *Matth.* ix. 38.

“ These popish garments are now become very *idols* indeed, because  
 “ they are exalted above the word of the *Almighty*.

“ I come not to them because they should be ashamed, and so leave  
 “ their idolatrous garments, &c. *Thess.* iii. 14. *If any man obey not*  
 “ *our sayings, note him.*

“ Moreover, I have now joined myself to the church of Christ, where-  
 “ in I have yielded myself subject to the discipline of God’s word, as  
 “ I promised at my baptism, which if I should now again forsake, and  
 “ join myself with their traditions, I should forsake the union where-  
 “ in I am knit to the body of Christ, and join myself to the discipline  
 “ of Antichrist; for in the church of the *traditionaries* there is no  
 “ other discipline than that which has been maintained by the anti-  
 “ christian pope of *Rome*, whereby the church of God has always been  
 “ afflicted, and is until this day, for the which cause I refuse them.

“ God give us grace still to strive in suffering under the cross, that  
 “ the blessed word of our God may only rule, and have the high-  
 “ est place, to cast down strong holds, to destroy or overthrow policy,  
 “ or imaginations, and every high thing that is exalted against the  
 “ knowledge of God, and to bring into captivity or subjection, every  
 “ thought to the obedience of Christ. *2 Cor.* x. 4, 5. *That the name and*  
 “ *word of the ETERNAL our Lord God may be exalted, and magnified*  
 “ *above all things. Psalm viii. 2. Finis.\**”

To this protestation the congregation did severally swear,  
 and then received the communion for the ratification of their  
 assent; if we may believe the relation of Archbishop *Parker*,  
 who wrote this last paragraph with his own hand; though  
 his *grace* had not always the best information, nor was suffi-  
 ciently careful to distinguish between *subscribing* and  
*swearing*.

Sundry non-conformists, who were willing to be at ease,  
 and avoid the hazard of persecution, took shelter in the  
*French* and *Dutch* churches, and joined themselves to their  
 communion: There were not many of this sort, because  
 they understood not their language. But the Queen and  
 council had their eye upon them, and resolved to drive them  
 from this shelter; for this purpose a letter was written from  
 the council board, to the ministers and elders of the *Dutch*  
*church* in *London*, bearing date April, 1573, in which

\* Life of Parker, p. 435.



they say, “That they were not ignorant, that from the beginning of the christian religion various churches had various and divers rites and ceremonies; that in their service and devotions some *stood*, some *kneeled*, and others lay *prostrate*, and yet the piety and religion was the same, if they directed their prayers to the *true God*, without impiety and superstition. They added further, that they contemned not their rites; nay, that they approved their ceremonies as fit and convenient for *them*, and that state whence they sprang. They expected therefore, that *their* congregation should not despise the customs of the *English church*, nor do any thing that might create a suspicion of disturbing its peace; and in particular, that *they* should not receive into their communion any of this realm that offered to join with them, and leave the customs and practice of their native country, lest the *Queen* should be moved to banish them out of the kingdom.”\*

Endeavors had been used to bring these churches under the jurisdiction or superintendency of the bishop of the diocese for the time being; but they pleaded their charter, and that *Grindal*, while bishop of *London*, was their *superintendent* only by their own consent; however, a quarrel happening sometime after in the *Dutch* church at *Norwich*, the *Queen’s commissioners* interposed; and because the elders refused to own their jurisdiction, they banished all their three ministers; which struck such a terror into those of *London*, that when they received the council’s letter they were perfectly submissive, and after returning thanks for their own liberties, they promised to expel all such out of their church; and for the future not to receive any *English*, who from such principles should separate themselves from the customs of their own country.†

*Gualter*, *Bullinger*, and other foreign divines, again this year addressed the bishops their correspondents for *moderation*, but nothing could be obtained; only *Parkhurst*, bishop of *Norwich*, lamented the case, and wished to God, that all the *English* people would follow the church of *Zurich*, as the most absolute pattern. “The papists (says he)

\* Life of Parker, p. 334.

† Strype’s Ann. vol. ii. p. 284.

‘ lift up their crests, while protestants walk about the streets  
 ‘ dejected and sorrowful ; for at this time there are not a  
 ‘ few preachers that have laid down their cures of souls,  
 ‘ and left them to fools and idiots, and that for this reason,  
 ‘ because they would not use the linen garment called a sur-  
 ‘ plice. New and severe edicts are lately published here  
 ‘ against such as refuse to observe our ceremonies : Pray  
 ‘ God give a good issue, and have mercy upon all the  
 ‘ churches of Christ.”

The *propheying*s of the clergy, begun in the year 1571, had by this time [1574] spread into the dioceses of *York*, *Chester*, *Durham*, and *Ely* ; the bishop of *London* set them up in several parts of his diocese ; as did most of the other bishops. The clergy were divided into *classes*, or *associations*, under a moderator appointed by the bishop ; their meetings were once a fortnight ; the people were present at the sermon ; and after they were dismissed, the members of the association whose names were subscribed in a book, censured the performance. These *exercises* were of great service to expose the errors of popery, and spread the knowledge of the scriptures among the people.

But the Queen was told by the archbishop, that they were no better than seminaries of puritanism ;\* that the more averse the people were to popery, the more they were in danger of non-conformity : That these exercises tended to popularity, and made the people so inquisitive, that they would not submit to the orders of their superiors, as they ought. It was said further, that some of the *ministers* disused the habits, and discoursed on church discipline ; and that others were too forward to shew their abilities, to the discouragement of honest men of lower capacities ; and that all this was notorious in the diocese of *Norwich*.—Hereupon the Queen gave the archbishop private orders to put them down every where, and to begin with *Norwich* ; his grace accordingly wrote to *Matchet*, one of the chaplains in that diocese, requiring him to repair to his *ordinary*, and shew him, how the Queen had willed him to suppress those *vain propheying*s ; and that thereupon he should

\* Life of Parker, p. 461.

require the said *ordinary*, in her majesty's name, immediately to discharge them from any further such doings.

This was very unacceptable news to the good old bishop, who taking hold of the word *vain*, wrote to the archbishop, desiring to be resolved, whether he meant thereby the *abuse*, or some vain speeches used in some of these conferences; or in general, the whole order of those *exercises*; of which he freely declared his own approbation, saying, 'That they had, and still did bring singular benefit to the church of God, as well in the clergy as in the laity, and were right necessary exercises to be continued, so the same were not abused, as indeed they had not been, unless in one or two places at the most; whereof after he had knowledge he wrote an earnest letter to his chancellor, that such persons as were over-busy speakers should be put to silence, unless they would subscribe to the articles of conformity in religion, or else promise not to intermeddle with any matter established and commanded by her majesty; which was performed accordingly, since which time he had not heard, but all things had succeeded quietly without offence to any.'

The archbishop was vexed at this letter, and wrote back to his chaplain, 'That it was one of his *old griefs*, that this bishop had shewn his letter to his friends, who had eluded its true meaning, by standing upon the word *vain*. It is pity, says he, that we should shew any vanity in our obedience.' In the mean time the bishop of *Norwich* applied to the privy council, who knew nothing of this affair; but were surprized at the archbishop's order, and gave his lordship instructions to uphold the *prophesyings*. Their letter was as follows:

"*SALUTEM in Christo*. Whereas we understand that there are certain good exercises of *prophesyings*, and expounding of scriptures in *Norfolk*, as namely, at *Holt* town, and other places, whereby both speakers and hearers do profit much, in the knowledge of the word of God. And whereas some not well minded towards true religion, and the knowledge of God, speak evil and slanderously of these exercises, as commonly they used to do against the sincere preaching of God's holy word: these are to require your lordship, that so long as the truth is godly and reverently uttered in their *prophesyings*, and



"iently as you may, you give notice to every of my commissaries, that they in their several circuits may suppress the same. And so I leave you to God." Thus were these religious *exercises* suppressed in one diocese, which was but the prologue to their downfall over the whole kingdom.

But his lordship did not long survive this distinguishing mark of the archbishop's displeasure, for towards the latter end of the year he departed this life, to the great loss of his diocese, and of the whole church of *England*.

*John Parkhurst*, bishop of *Norwich*, was born at *Guildford* in *Surry*, 1511, and educated in *Merton* college, *Oxon*. He had been domestic chaplain to Queen *Katherine Parr*, tutor to bishop *Jewel*, and rector of the rich parsonage of *Clive*; all which he forsook in the reign of Queen *Mary*, and was an exile at *Zurich* in *Switzerland*, where he was so delighted with the order and discipline of that church, that he would often wish the church of *England* were modelled according to it. He was an open favorer of the *puritans*, and never entered willingly into any methods of severity against them. "I find, (says he, in one of his letters to archbishop *Parker*) that rough and severe methods do the least good, and that the contrary has won over divers; and therefore I choose to go in this way, rather than with others, to over-rule by rigor and extremity."\* He would willingly have allowed a liberty of officiating in the church, to such as could not conform to the ceremonies; but by command from above, he was forced sometimes to obey his superiors, contrary to his judgment. The bishop was a zealous protestant, and a great enemy to popery; a learned divine, a faithful pastor, a diligent and constant preacher, and an example to his flock in righteousness, in faith, in love, in peace, in word, and in purity. He was exceeding hospitable, and kept a table for the poor; and was universally beloved, honored, and esteemed by his whole diocese. This character is given him (says Mr. *Strype*) by one that knew him well, *Thomas Becon*, a native of *Norfolk*, and of known eminence in those days. He was made bishop of *Norwich* 1560, and died of the stone this year, [1574] in the 63d year of his age.

\* *Strype's Annals*, vol. ii. p. 343.

Sundry well-disposed people in the parishes of *Balsham* in *Cambridgeshire*, and of *Strethall*, in *Essex*, met together on holidays, and at other times, after they had done work, to read the scriptures, and to confirm one another in the christian faith and practice; but as soon as the *commissioners* were informed of these assemblies, the parsons of the parishes were sent for, and ordered to suppress them; though the honest people declared themselves conformable to the orders of the church, and that they met together after dinner, or after supper, upon *holidays only*, for their own and their families' instruction; for the reformation of vice, and for a further acquaintance with the word of God: The occasion of their assemblies we have in their own words, "For 'that heretofore (say they) we have at divers times spent 'and consumed our holidays vainly, in drinking at the ale-house, and playing at cards, tables, dice, and other vain 'pastimes, not meet for us and such of our calling and degree, for the which we have been often blamed of our 'parson; we thought it better to bestow the time in soberly and godly reading the scriptures, only for the purposes 'aforesaid, and no other. We do not favor or maintain any 'of the opinions of the *anabaptists*, *puritans*, *papists*, or 'libertines, but would be glad to learn our duty towards 'God, our prince, and magistrates, towards our neighbors 'and our families, in such sort as becomes good, and faithful, and obedient subjects, and it is our greatest and only 'desire to live, follow, and perform the same accordingly, 'as God shall give us grace." But our archbishop had rather these poor people should be drinking and gaming at an ale-house, than engaged in a religious assembly not appointed by public authority. \*

The Rev. Mr. *Sampson*, late dean of *Christ* church, *Oxon*, was this year struck with the dead palsy on one side, which made him resign his lecture in the church at *Whittington* college, which he had held to this time, and for which he had 10l. a year: It was in the gift of the *Cloth-Workers'* company, to whom he recommended Mr. *Deering* for his successor; but *Deering* being silenced for non-conformity,

\* Life of Parker, p. 473.



the archbishop utterly refused him, which *Sampson* complained of in a letter to the treasurer, saying, "That though my lord of *Canterbury* liked not to take pains in the congregation himself, yet should he not forbid others who were both able and willing ; that he could find no fault with *Mr. Deering's* doctrine or manner of life ; and that this was no great promotion."\* He therefore humbly desired, that if the *Cloth-Workers* chose him, that his lordship would use his interest with the archbishop not to refuse him ; but his grace was inflexible, and so the business miscarried.

This *Mr. Sampson* was a most exact man in his principles and morals ; and having suffered the loss of all things for a good conscience, he took the liberty to write freely to his superiors upon proper occasions ; and among others to *Grindal*, archbishop of *York*, who had been his companion in exile, though now advanced to the dignity of a *lord archbishop*. *Sampson* in one of his letters put him in mind of his former low condition, and cautioned him against being too much exalted with his high title. *Grindal* told him, he did not value the title of a *lord*, but that his great care was, to discharge his function faithfully until the great day of the Lord. *Sampson* replied, "That if he, whom worldly policy had made a *lord*, kept the humility of an humble brother and minister of the gospel, he was a *phoenix* ; but his port, his train of waiting men in the streets, his gentlemen-ushers going before him with bare heads, and his family full of idle serving men, looked very *lordly*." He adds, "That his own and his brethren's revenues should not be laid out in maintaining a parcel of lazy idle servants, but rather upon those who were laborers in the harvest of the Lord Jesus. That whereas the archbishop had called them *puritans*, it was a name unjustly imposed on brethren with whose doctrine and life none could find fault : If by *puritans* such were meant as, following *Novatus*, dissembled themselves to be teachers, and wished the ceremonies might be observed, while they hated the customs of the antient church, then might a number of church,

\* Life of Parker, p. 478.



‘men be called *puritans*; and he prayed God to purge  
‘them and make them more pure’—And whereas the  
archbishop in his letter had pitied his complaints of *poverty*  
and *lameness*, he said, “He complained of nothing; if he  
‘should complain of the former it would be before he had  
‘need; but when he had need he would complain to those  
‘to whom he might complain. Concerning his *lameness*,  
‘he was so far from complaining of that, that he humbly  
‘thanked God for it; and these chains he would choose to  
‘carry before the clogs and cares of a bishopric.”\* Such  
was the plain dealing of this *confessor* to one of the high-  
est dignitaries in the church.

*Parker’s* zeal against the puritans betrayed him sometimes  
into great inconveniencies; like a true *inquisitor*, he listened  
to every idle story of his scouts, and sent it presently to the  
Queen or council; and the older he grew, the more did his  
jealousies prevail. In the month of June one of his servants  
acquainted him, that there was a design of the *puritans* a-  
gainst the life of the lord treasurer and his *own*; and that  
the chief conspirator was one *Undertree*, encouraged by the  
great Earl of *Leicester*: The old archbishop was almost  
frighted out of his wits at the news, as appears by the fol-  
lowing passage in his letter to the treasurer: “This horrible  
‘conspiracy (says he) has so astonished me, that my will and  
‘memory are quite gone; I would I were dead before I see  
‘with my corporal eyes that which is now brought to a full  
‘ripeness.” He then prays, that the detector of this con-  
spiracy may be protected and honorably considered, and the  
conspirators punished with the utmost severity, otherwise the  
end would be worse than the beginning. And that he might  
not seem to express all this concern for his own safety, he  
tells the treasurer, that it was for *his* sake and the *Queen’s*  
that he was so jealous, “for he feared that when rogues at-  
‘tempted to destroy those that were so near her majesty’s  
‘person, they would at last make the same attempt upon her  
‘too; and that even some that lay in her bosom [*Leices-*  
‘*ter*] when opportunity served, would sting her.” The  
archbishop sent out his scouts to apprehend the conspirators

\* Life of Parker, p. 469.

that his *steward* had named, who pretended a secret correspondence with *Undertree* ; and among others who were taken into custody, were the Rev. Mr. *Bonham*, *Brown* and *Stonden*, divines of great name among the puritans : *Stonden* had been one of the preachers to the Queen's army, when the earl of *Warwick* was sent against the Northern rebels. Many persons of honor were also accused, as the earls of *Bedford*, *Leicester*, and others. But when *Undertree* came to be examined before the council, the whole appeared to be a sham, between *Undertree* and the archbishop's *steward*, to disgrace the puritans, and punish them as enemies to the state as well as the church. So early was the vile practice of fathering sham plots upon the *puritans* begun, which was repeated so often in the next age ! *Undertree* had forged letters in the names of *Bonham*, *Stonden*, and others ; as appeared to a demonstration when they were produced before the council, for they were all written with one hand. When he was examined about his accomplices he would accuse nobody, but took the whole upon himself ; so that *their honors* wrote immediately to the archbishop to discharge his *prisoners*.\* But, which is a little unaccountable, neither *Undertree* nor the archbishop's *steward* received any punishment.

His grace's reputation suffered by this plot ; all impartial men cried out against him, for shutting up men of character and reputation in prison, upon such idle reports. The *puritans* and their friends reflected upon his honor and honesty ; and in particular the bishop of *London*, and Dr. *Chatterton* master of *Queen's college*, *Cambridge*, whom in his wrath he called a *chatterer* ; and in his letter to *Grindal* archbishop of *York*, said, " That he cared not three chips for ought ' that could be proved as to his allegiance ; he doing it so ' secretly, faithfully and prudently as he did ; and would do ' the same again, if he knew no more than he did at that ' time." The earl of *Leicester* could not but resent his ill usage of him, which he had an opportunity to repay had he been so minded ; the archbishop having executed an act of justice [as he called it] upon a person in the late plot, after he had received a letter from court forbidding him to do it ;

\* Life of Parker, p. 466.

which was not very consistent with his allegiance. But the archbishop braved out his conduct against every body, after his own brethren the bishops, and all the world, had abandoned him. He told the lord treasurer, “ That he cared  
 ‘ not for *Leicester*, though he was informed he took counsel  
 ‘ with the *precisians* to undo him : That though he had writ-  
 ‘ ten to the earl, and to another puritan courtier, it was not  
 ‘ in way of submission, as some of the crew reported and  
 ‘ took it.\* That the earl had peaceably written again to him,  
 ‘ dissembling his malice like a right courtier ; but he not-  
 ‘ withstanding understood what was purposed against him,  
 ‘ and for religion sake he took it.” This was the spirit and language of our archbishop !

One of the last public acts in which his *grace* was employed, was visiting the diocese of *Winchester*, and in particular the Isle of *Wight*, in 1575 ; and here he made use of such methods of severity (says Mr. *Strype*) as made him talked against all over the country. This *Island* was a place of resort for *foreign protestants*, and sea-faring men of all countries, which occasioned the habits and ceremonies not to be so strictly observed as in other places, their trade and commerce requiring a latitude. When the archbishop came thither with his retinue, he gave himself no trouble about the welfare of the island, but turned out all those ministers who refused the habits, and shut up their churches. This was so great a concern to the inhabitants, that they sent up their complaints to the earl of *Leicester*, who made such a report to the Queen of the archbishop’s proceedings, that her majesty immediately gave order, that things should return to their former channel ;† and when his *grace* came to court after his visitation, her majesty received him coldly, and declared her displeasure against his unseasonable severities. The bishop of *Winchester* also complained that the clergy of his diocese had been sifted in an unmerciful manner ; all which, instead of softening this prelate, drew from him the following angry letter to the lord treasurer, wherein he complains “ of the strong interest the *puritans* had at  
 ‘ court ; and of the inconstancy of some of the bishops ;

\* Life of Parker, p. 477.

† Life of Parker, p. 491.

‘that several of that order lay by and did little, while others endeavored to undermine him. That the Queen was almost the only person that stood firm to the church; but if the *precisians* had the advantage, her majesty would be undone. That he was not so much concerned for the *cap, tippet, surplice, wafer bread*, and such like ceremonies, as for the authority of the laws that enjoined them. The Queen indeed had told him, that he had the supreme government ecclesiastical, but upon experiment he found it very much hampered and embarrassed. Before God (says he) I fear that her highness’s authority is not regarded; and if public laws are once disregarded, the government must sink at once.’\*

There was but one corner of the *British* dominions that our archbishop’s arm could not reach, (viz.) the isles of *Guernsey* and *Jersey*; these had been a receptacle for the *French* refugees from the *Parisian massacre*; and lying upon the coasts of *France*, the inhabitants were chiefly of that nation, and were allowed the use of the *Geneva* or *French discipline*, by the lords of the council. An order of the states of *France* had been formerly obtained, to separate them from the jurisdiction of the bishop of *Constance* in *Normandy*, but no form of discipline having been settled by law since the reformation, Mr. *Cartwright* and *Snape* were invited to assist the ministers in framing a proper discipline for their churches: This fell out happily for *Cartwright*, who being forced to abandon his native country, made this the place of his retreat. The two divines being arrived, one was made titular pastor of *Mount Orgueil*, in the isle of *Jersey*; and the other of *Castle Cornet*, in *Guernsey*. The representatives of the several churches being assembled at *St. Peter’s Port*, in *Guernsey*, they communicated to them a draught of discipline, which was debated, and accommodated to the use of those islands, and finally settled the year following, as appears by the title of it, which is this: *The ecclesiastical discipline observed and practised by the churches of Jersey and Guernsey, after the reformation of*

\* Life of Parker, Appendix, No. xcix.

*the same, by the ministers, elders, and deacons of the isles of Guernsey and Jersey, Sark and Alderney, confirmed by the authority, and in the presence of the governors of the same isles, in a synod holden in Guernsey, June 28, 1576; and afterwards revived by the said ministers and elders, and confirmed by the said governors in a synod, holden in Jersey the 11th, 12th, 13th, 14th, 15th and 17th days of October, 1577.* The book consists of 20 chapters, and each chapter of several articles, which were constantly observed in these islands till the latter end of the reign of King *James* the first, when the liturgy of the church of *England* supplanted it.\*

Though the papists were the Queen's most dangerous enemies, her majesty had a peculiar tenderness for them; § she frequently released them out of prison, and connived at their religious assemblies, of which there were above 500 in *England* at this time: Many of the Queen's subjects resorted to the *Portugal* ambassador's house in *Charter-house* yard, where mass was publicly celebrated; and because the sheriffs and recorder of *London* disturbed them, they were committed to the *Fleet* by the Queen's express command. At the same time they were practising against the Queen's life: And that their religion might not die with the present age, seminaries were erected and endowed, in several parts of *Europe*, for the education of *English* youth, and for providing a succession of missionaries to be sent into *England* for the propagation of their faith. The first of these was erected when the kingdom was excommunicated; after which many others were founded, to the unspeakable prejudice of the protestant religion. To set them before the reader in one view: Colleges were erected at the following places:

The 1st at <i>Douay</i> ,	1569, by <i>Philip</i> King of <i>Spain</i> .
2d at <i>Rome</i> .	1579, by Pope <i>Gregory</i> 13th.
3d at <i>Valladolid</i> ,	1589, by the King of <i>Spain</i> .
4th at <i>Seville</i> ,	1593, by the same.
5th at <i>St. Omers</i> ,	1596, by the same.
6th at <i>Madrid</i> ,	1606, by <i>Joseph Creswel</i> , Jesuit.
7th at <i>Louvaine</i> ,	1606, by <i>Philip</i> III. of <i>Spain</i> .
8th at <i>Liege</i> ,	1616, by the <i>Abp.</i> of that country.
9th at <i>Ghent</i> ,	1624, by <i>Philip</i> IV.

\* Heylin's *Acrius Ridivivus*, p. 276.      § Strype's *Annals*, p. 329, 410.

The popish nobility and gentry sent over their children to these colleges for education,\* and it is incredible what a mass of money was collected in *England* for their maintenance, by their *provincials*, *sub-provincials*, *assistants*, *agents*, *coadjutors*, *familiars*, &c. out of the estates of such catholics as were possessed of abbey lands ; the pope dispensing with their holding them on these considerations. The oath taken by every student at his admission was this :

“ **HAVING** resolved to offer myself wholly up to divine service, as much as I may, to fulfil the end for which this our college was founded, I promise and swear, in the presence of Almighty God, that I am prepared from mine heart, with the assistance of divine grace, in due time to receive *holy orders*, and to return into *England*, to convert the souls of my countrymen and kindred, when, and as often as it shall seem good to the superior of this college.”

The number of students educated in these colleges may be collected from hence ; that whereas according to *Saunders* an eminent popish writer,† there were but thirty old priests remaining in *England*, this year [1575] the two colleges of *Douay* and *Rome* alone, in a very few years, sent over 300 ; and it is not to be doubted, but there was a like proportion from the rest.

About this time began to appear the *family of love*, which derived its pedigree from one *Henry Nicholas*, a *Dutchman*. By their confession of faith published this year, it appears that they were high enthusiasts ; that they allegorized the doctrines of revelation, and, under a pretence of attaining to spiritual perfection, adopted some odd and whimsical opinions, while they grew too lax in their morals, being in their principles something akin to the *quietists* of the church of *Rome*, and the *quakers* among ourselves. They had their private assemblies for devotion, for which they tasted of the severities of the government.

But the weight of the penal laws fell heaviest upon some of the *German anabaptists*, who refused to join with the

\* Fuller, b. ix. p. 92.

† De Schismat. Aug. p. 365.



*Dutch or English churches* : There were two sorts of *anabaptists* that sprung up with the reformation in *Germany* ; one was of those who differed only about the subject and mode of baptism, whether it should be administered to infants, or in any other manner than by dipping the whole body under water. But others, who bore that name, were meer enthusiasts, men of fierce and barbarous tempers, who broke out into a general revolt, and raised the war called the *rustic war*. They had an unintelligible way of talking of religion, which they usually turned into *allegory* ; and these being joined in the common name of *anabaptists*, brought the others under an ill-character. Twenty-seven of them were apprehended in a private house without *Aldersgate-Bars*, on *Easter-day*, 1575, where they were assembled for worship : Of these, four recanted the following errors, (1.) *That Christ took not flesh of the substance of the Virgin.* (2.) *That infants born of faithful parents ought to be rebaptized.* (3.) *That no christian man ought to be a magistrate.* (4.) *That it is not lawful for a christian man to take an oath.* But others refusing to abjure, eleven of them, *all Dutchmen*, were condemned in the consistory of *St. Paul's* to be burnt, nine of whom were banished, and two suffered the extremity of the fire in *Smithfield*, July 22, 1575, viz. *John Wielmacker* and *Hendrick Ter Woort*. Thus the writ *de Hæretico comburendo*, which had hung up only *in terrorem* for 17 years, was taken down and put in execution upon these unhappy men. The *Dutch* congregation interceded earnestly for their lives ; as did *Mr. Fox* the martyrologist, in an elegant *Latin* letter to the Queen, but she was immovable ; so distant was her majesty from the tender spirit of her brother *King Edward*.\*

\* The remarks of that valuable historian, *Gerard Brandt*, on these cruel proceedings are so just and liberal, that they deserve to be laid before the reader. “ This severity, (says he) which was not the first that had been practised in *England* since the reformation, appeared to many protestants, who were still under the cross in *Flanders* and *Brabant*, both strange and incredible. They lamented that those who not long before had been persecuted themselves, were now harassing others for the sake of their religion, and offering violence with fire and sword to the consciences of other men, though they had before taught, and that with great truth, that it did not belong to any mortal man to lord it over the



A little before the burning of these heretics MATTHEW PARKER, archbishop of *Canterbury*, departed this life. He was born at *Norwich*, 1504, and educated in *Bene't* college, *Cambridge*. In the reign of King *Edward VI.\** he married and was therefore obliged to live privately under Queen *Mary*. Upon Queen *Elizabeth's* accession he was advanced to the archbishopric of *Canterbury*; and how he managed in that high station, may be collected from the foregoing history. He wrote a book entitled, *Antiquitates Britannicæ*, which shews him to have some skill in ecclesiastical antiquity; but he was a severe churchman; of a rough and unchurlly temper, and of high and arbitrary principles both in church and state; a slave to the prerogative and the supremacy; and a bitter enemy to the puritans, whom he persecuted to the length of his power, and beyond the limits of the law.† His religion consisted in a servile obedience to the Queen's injunctions, and in regulating the public service of the church: but his grace had too little

*' consciences of others. That faith was the gift of God, and not to be im-*  
*' planted in the minds of men by any external force, but by the word of*  
*' God, and illumination of the holy spirit: that heresy was not a carnal*  
*' but spiritual crime, and to be punished by God alone: that error and*  
*' falshood were not to be overcome with violence but truth: that the obli-*  
*' gation which the children of God lie under, is not to put others to death*  
*' for the faith, but to die themselves in bearing witness to the truth.—*  
*' Lastly, that the shedding of blood for the sake of religion is a mark of*  
*' ANTICHRIST, who thereby sets himself in the judgment-seat of God,*  
*' assuming to himself the dominion over conscience, which belongs to none*  
*' but God only." See Brandt's History of the Reformation in the Low*  
*Countries, quoted in Mr. Lindsey's second address to the youth of the*  
*two universities, p. 230, &c. or La Roche's abridgement of Brandt, p.*  
*168. It should be added, that one ground of the odium which fell on*  
*those who were called anabaptists, was their deviation from the estab-*  
*lished creed, in their ideas concerning the person of Christ and the doc-*  
*trine of the Trinity. Which shews in how very early a period of the*  
*reformation Unitarian sentiments arose among the more thoughtful and*  
*inquisitive; but the hand of power was lifted up to suppress their*  
*growth and spread. Ed.*

\* In this reign he was initiated into the exercise of power and measures of persecution: for in the year 1551, he was put into a commission with thirty other persons, for correcting and punishing anabaptists.—*British Biography*, vol. iii. p. 4. Ed.

† *Life of Parker*, p. 524.

regard for public virtue; his entertainments and feasting being chiefly on the Lord's day: nor do we read, among his episcopal qualities, of his diligent preaching or pious example. *Fuller* calls him a *Parker* indeed, careful to keep the fences, and shut the gates of discipline, against all such night-stealers as would invade the same; and indeed this was his chief excellence. He was a considerable benefactor to *Bene't* college, the place of his education, where he ordered his MS papers to be deposited, which have been of considerable service to the writers of the *English* reformation.\* He died of the stone on the 17th of May, 1575, in the 72d year of his age, and was interred in *Lambeth chapel* the 6th of June following; where his body rested till the end of the civil wars; when Col. *Scot*, having purchased that palace for a mansion-house took down the monument, and buried the bones (says Mr. *Strype*†) in a stinking dung-hill, where they remained till some years after the restoration, when they were decently reposed near the place where the monument had stood, which was now again erected to his memory.‡

\* It should be added, that literature was indebted to him for editions of our best ancient historians; *Matthew* of Westminster, *Matthew Paris*, *Thomas Walsingham*, and *Asser's* life of King *Alfred*. It should also, says Mr. *Granger*, be remembered to his honour, that he was the first founder of the society of antiquaries in *England*. Ed.

† Life of Parker, p. 499.

‡ As a balance to this, the bodies of nineteen or twenty puritan divines were dug up in *Westminster-Abbey*, and thrown into a pit in the yard, Dr. *Trap*, Mr. *Marshal*, Mr. *Strong*, &c. See in *Strype*, what a pompous funeral *Parker* had ordered for himself. Ed.

## CHAP. VI.

*From the death of Archbishop PARKER to the death of  
Archbishop GRINDAL.*

**DR. EDMUND GRINDAL**, archbishop of *York*, succeeded *Parker* in the see of *Canterbury*, and was confirmed Feb. 15, 1575-6. He was a divine of moderate principles, and moved no faster in courses of severity against the *puritans* than his superiors obliged him, being a friend to their *preaching* and *propheying*s. *Sandys* was translated from *London* to *York*, and *Aylmer* was advanced to the see of *London*. This last was one of the exiles, and had been a favorer of *puritanism*; for in his book against *Knox*, entitled, *An Harbor for faithful subjects*, he declaims against the wealth and splendor of the bishops, and speaks with vehemence against their *lordly dignities* and *civil authority*. In the convocation of 1562, when the question about the habits was debated, he withdrew, and would not be concerned in the affair; but upon his advancement to the *episcopal order* he became a new convert, and a cruel persecutor of the *puritans*. He was a little man, of a quick spirit, and of no extraordinary character.

The parliament being now sitting, a bill was brought into the House of Lords, to mulct such as did not come to church and receive the sacrament, with the payment of certain sums of money; but it was thought proper to drop it for the present.

The convocation was busy in framing articles touching the admitting able and fit persons to the ministry, and establishing good order in the church.\* Thirteen of them were published with the Queen's licence, though they had not the broad seal; but the other two, *For marrying at all times of the year*, and *for private baptism by a lawful minister, in cases of necessity*, her majesty would not countenance. One of the articles makes void all licences for preaching, dated

\* *Strype's Life of Grindal*, p. 194.

before the 8th of Feb. 1575, but provides, *That such as should be thought meet for that office should be re-admitted without difficulty or charge.* This had been practised once and again in *Parker's* time, and was now renewed, that by disqualifying the whole body of the clergy, they might clear the church of all the non-conformists at once; and if all the bishops had been equally severe in renewing their licences, the church would have been destitute of all preaching; for the body of the conforming clergy were so ignorant and illiterate, that many who had *cure of souls* were incapable of preaching, or even of reading to the edification of the hearers; being obliged by law only to read the service, and administer the *sacrament* in person once in half a year, on forfeiture of five pounds to the poor.

The non-conformist ministers, under the character of *curates* or *lecturers*, supplied the defects of these *idle drones*, for a small recompence from the incumbent, and the voluntary contribution of the parish; and by their warm and affectionate preaching gained the hearts of the people: They resided upon their curacies, and went from house to house visiting their parishioners, and instructing their children; they also inspected their lives and manners, and, according to the apostolical direction, *reproved, rebuked, and exhorted them, with all long-suffering and doctrine*, as long as they could keep their licences. Thus most of the puritan ministers remained as yet within the church, and their followers attended upon the word and sacraments in such places where there were sober and orthodox preachers.

But still they continued their associations and private assemblies, for recovering the *discipline* of the church to a more primitive standard: This was a grievance to the Queen and court bishops, who were determined against all innovations of this kind. Strange! That men should confess in their *public service* every first day of *Lent*, *That there was a godly discipline in the primitive church; that this discipline is not exercised at present in the church of England, but that it is much to be wished that it were restored*; and yet never attempt to restore it, but set themselves with violence and oppression to crush all endeavors that way! For the reader will observe, that this was one chief occasion of the

sufferings of the puritans in the following part of this reign.

Some of the ministers of *Northampton* and *Warwickshire*, in one of their associated meetings, agreed upon certain rules of *discipline* in their several parishes ; but as soon as they began to practise them, the court took the alarm, and sent letters to the new archbishop to suppress them.\* His grace accordingly sent to the bishops of those dioceses, to see things reduced to their former channel ; and if need were, to send for assistance from himself or the *ecclesiastical commissioners* : Accordingly Mr. *Paget* and Mr. *Oxenbridge*, the two heads of the association, were taken into custody and sent up to *London*.

Sometime after there was another assembly at Mr. *Knewstub's* church, at *Cockfield* in *Suffolk*, where 60 clergymen of *Norfolk*, *Suffolk*, and *Cambridgeshire*, met together to confer of the common prayer book, and come to some agreement as to what might be tolerated, and what was necessary to be refused. They consulted also about *apparel*, *holidays*, *fastings*, *injunctions*, &c.† From thence they adjourned to *Cambridge*, at the time of the next commencement, and from thence to *London*, where they hoped to be concealed by the general resort of the people to parliament : In these assemblies they came to the following conclusions, which were drawn up in an elegant *Latin* stile by Mr. *Cartwright* and *Travers*, and given to the ministers for their direction in their several parishes.

### *Concerning Ministers.*

“LET no man, though he be an university man, offer himself to the ministry ; nor let any man take upon him an uncertain and vague ministry, though it be offered unto him.

“But such as are called by some church, let them impart it to the *classis* or *conference*, of which they are members, or to some greater church assemblies ; and if the called be approved, let them be commended by letters to the bishop, that they may be ordained ministers by him.

\* Life of Grindal, p. 215.

† Fuller, b. ix. p, 135.

“ Those ceremonies in the book of common prayer, which  
‘ being taken from popery are in controversy, ought to be  
‘ omitted, if it may be done without danger of being put  
‘ from the ministry ; but if there be imminent danger of be-  
‘ ing deprived, then let the matter be communicated to the  
‘ classis in which that church is, to be determined by them.

“ If subscription to the articles and book of common  
‘ prayer shall be again urged, it is thought that the book of  
‘ articles may be subscribed, according to the *Stat. 13 E.*  
‘ *liz.* that is, *To such only as contain the sum of the christian*  
‘ *faith and the doctrine of the sacraments.* But neither the  
‘ common prayer book, nor the rest of the articles, may be  
‘ allowed ; no, though a man should be deprived of his  
‘ ministry for refusing it.

### *Concerning Churchwardens.*

“ It seems that churchwardens, and collectors for the  
‘ poor, may be thus turned into elders and deacons.

“ Let the church have warning of the time of election,  
‘ and of the ordinance of the realm, fifteen days before-  
‘ hand ; but especially of *Christ’s ordinance*, touching ap-  
‘ pointing of watchmen and overseers in his church, who  
‘ are to take care that no offence or scandal arise in the  
‘ church ; and if any such happen, that it be duly abolish-  
‘ ed.”

### *Of Collectors for the poor, or Deacons.*

“ Touching deacons of both sorts, viz. men and women,  
‘ the church shall be admonished what is required by the  
‘ apostle ; and that they are not to choose men of custom or  
‘ course, or for their riches, but for their faith, zeal and in-  
‘ tegrity ; and that the church is to pray in the mean time,  
‘ to be so directed, that they may choose them that are  
‘ meet.

“ Let the names of those that are thus chosen, be pub-  
‘ lished the next Lord’s day, and after that, their duties to  
‘ the church, and the church’s duty towards them ; then let  
‘ them be received into their office with the general prayers  
‘ of the whole church.”

*Of Classes.*

“ The brethren are to be requested to ordain a distribution of all churches, according to the rules set down in the synodical discipline, touching *classical, provincial, comital, and assemblies for the whole kingdom.*

“ The classes are to be required to keep acts of memorable matters, and to deliver them to the *comital* assembly, and from thence to the *provincial* assembly.

“ They are to deal earnestly with patrons, to present fit men whensoever any church falls void in their classis.

“ The *comital* assemblies are to be admonished to make collections for the relief of the poor, and of scholars, but especially for the relief of such ministers as are deprived for not subscribing the articles tendered by the bishops ; also for the relief of *Scots* ministers, and others ; and for other profitable and necessary uses.

“ *Provincial synods* must continually foresee in due time to appoint the keeping of their next provincial synods ; and for the sending of chosen persons with certain instructions to the *national synod*, to be holden whensoever the parliament for the kingdom shall be called, at some certain time every year.”

The design of these *conclusions* was to introduce a reformation into the church without a separation. The chief debate in their assemblies was, *How far this or the other conclusion might consist with the peace of the church, and be moulded into a consistency with episcopacy.* They ordained no ministers ; and though they maintained the choice of the people to be the *essential call* to the pastoral charge, yet most of them admitted of ordination and *induction* by the bishop only, as the officer appointed by law, that the minister might be enabled to demand his legal dues from the parish.

In the room of that pacific prelate *Parkhurst*, bishop of *Norwich*, the Queen nominated Dr. *Freke*, a divine of a quite different spirit, who in his primary visitation made sad havoc among the puritan ministers. Among others that were suspended in that diocese, were, Mr. *John More*, Mr. *Richard Crick*, Mr. *George Leeds*, Mr. *Thomas Roberts*, and Mr. *Richard Dowe*, all ministers in or near the city of *Nor-*



*rich* : They addressed the Queen and council for relief; but were told that her majesty was fully bent to remove all those that would not be persuaded to conform to established orders.—The Rev. Mr. *Gawton*, minister of *Goring* in the same diocese, being charged with not wearing the *surplice*, nor observing the order of the Queen's book, he confessed the former, but said that in other things he was conformable, though he did not keep exactly to the *rubric*.\* When the bishop charged him with holding divers errors he answered, we are here not above half-a-dozen unconformable ministers in this city [*Norwich*;) and if you will confer with us by learning, we will yield up our very lives if we are not able to prove the doctrines we hold to be consonant to the word of God. After his suspension he sent his lordship a bold letter, in which he maintained, that Christ was the only lawgiver in his church. “If any king or prince in the world ordain or allow other officers than Christ has allowed, we will (says he) rather lay down our necks on the block than consent thereunto; wherefore do not object to us so often the name of our *prince*, for you use it as a cloke to cover your cursed enterprizes. Have you not thrust out those who preached the lively word faithfully and sincerely? Have you not plucked out those preachers where God set them in? And do you think that this plea will excuse you before the high judge, *I did but execute the law*?”

Mr. *Harvey*, another minister of the same city, was cited before the bishop May 13, for preaching against the hierarchy of bishops and their ecclesiastical officers; and at a court held at St. *George's* church he was suspended from his ministry, with Mr. *Vincent Goodwin* and *John Mapes*.

Mr. *Rockrey*, B. D. of *Queen's* college, *Cambridge*, a person of great learning and merit, was expelled the university for non-conformity to the *habits*.† Lord *Burleigh* the chancellor got him restored, and dispensed with for a year, at the end of which the master of his college admonished him three times, to conform himself to the custom of the university in the habits, which he refusing, was finally discharged, as an example to keep others to their duty.

\* MS. p. 253. Strype's Ann. p. 448.

† MS. p. 285.

About the same time Mr. *Richard Greenham*, minister of *Drayton*, was suspended,\* a man of a most excellent spirit, who, though he would not subscribe or conform to the habits, avoided speaking of them, that he might not give offence; and whoever reads his letter to *Cox* bishop of *Ely*, will wonder what sort of men they must be who could bear hard on so peaceable a divine.

Some time before the death of archbishop *Parker*, Mr. *Stroud*, the suspended minister of *Cranbrook*, returned to his parish church; but being represented to the present archbishop as a disturber of the peace, he was forbid to continue his accustomed *exercises* in the church, and commanded to leave the country; but the good man was so universally beloved, that the whole county of *Kent*, almost, signed petitions to the archbishop for his continuance among them.

“WE know, *most reverend father*, say they, that  
 ‘ Mr. *Stroud* has been several times beaten and whipt with  
 ‘ the untrue reports of slanderous tongues, and accused of  
 ‘ crimes whereof he has most clearly acquitted himself to  
 ‘ the satisfaction of others. Every one of us, for the most  
 ‘ part, *most gracious Lord*, hath heard him preach Christ  
 ‘ truly, and rebuke sin boldly, and hath seen him hitherto  
 ‘ apply to his calling faithfully, and live among us peace-  
 ‘ ably; so that not only by his diligent doctrine our youth  
 ‘ has been informed, and ourselves confirmed in true reli-  
 ‘ gion and learning; but also by his honest conversation and  
 ‘ example we are daily allured to a christian life, and the  
 ‘ exercises of charity; and no one of us, *reverend father*,  
 ‘ hath hitherto heard from his own mouth, or by credible  
 ‘ relation from others, that he has publicly in his sermons,  
 ‘ or privately in conversation, taught unsound doctrine, or  
 ‘ opposed the discipline, about which great controversy  
 ‘ (alas!) is now maintained; yea, he has given faithful prom-  
 ‘ ise to forbear the handling any questions concerning the  
 ‘ policy of the church, and we think in our consciences he  
 ‘ has hitherto performed it. In consideration whereof, and  
 ‘ that our country may not be deprived of so diligent a la-

\* *Pierce’s Vindication*, p. 97.

‘ borer in the Lord’s harvest ; nor that the enemies of God’s  
 ‘ truth, the papists, may find matter of joy and comfort ;  
 ‘ nor the man himself, in receiving a kind of condemnation  
 ‘ without examination, be thus wounded at the heart and  
 ‘ discouraged : We most humbly beseech your grace, for  
 ‘ the poor man’s sake, for your own sake, and the Lord’s  
 ‘ sake, either to take judicial knowledge of his cause, to  
 ‘ the end he may be confronted with his adversaries ; or  
 ‘ else, of your great wisdom and goodness, to restore him  
 ‘ to his liberty of preaching the gospel among us. *And we*  
 ‘ *as in duty bound shall ever pray, &c.*”

This petition was signed by nineteen or twenty hands ; another was signed by twenty-four ministers ; and a third by *George Ely*, vicar of *Tenterden*, and twenty-one parishioners ; *Thomas Bathurst*, sen. minister of *Staplehurst*, and nine parishioners ; *William Walter*, of *Frittenden*, and fourteen of his parishioners ; *Antony Francis*, minister of *Lamberhurst*, and four parishioners ; *Alexander Lore*, minister of *Rolenden*, and eighteen parishioners ; *Christopher Vinebrook*, minister of *Helcorne*, and nine parishioners ; *William Vicar*, of *Tysherst*, and ten parishioners ; *Matthew Wolton*, curate of *Beneden*, and eleven parishioners ; *William Cocks*, minister of *Marden*, and thirteen parishioners ; *William Hopkinson*, minister of *Saleherst*, and eight parishioners.†

Such a reputation had this good man among all who had any taste for true piety, and zeal for the protestant religion ! He was a peaceable divine, and by the threatening of *Aylmer*, bishop of *London*, had been prevailed with to subscribe with some reserve, for the support of a starving family ; and yet he was continually molested and vexed in the *spiritual courts*.

Two eminent divines of puritan principles died this year ; one was *James Pilkington*, B. D. and bishop of *Durham* ; he was descended from a considerable family near *Bolton* in *Lancashire*, and was educated in *St. John’s* college, *Cambridge*, of which he was master. In the reign of *Queen Mary* he was an exile, and confessor for the gospel ; upon the accession of *Queen Elizabeth* he was nominated to the see of *Dur-*

† MS. p. 126.

ham, being esteemed a learned man and a profound divine; but could hardly be prevailed with to accept it on account of the *habits*, to which he expressed a very great dislike; he was always a very great friend and favorer of the non-conformists, as appears by his letters, and a truly pious and christian bishop.\* He died in peace at his house at *Bishops-Aucland*, Jan. 23, 1575-6, in the 56th year of his age; Dr. *Humphreys*, and Mr. *Fox* the martyrologist, adorning his tomb with their funeral verses.

The other was Mr. *Edward Deering*, a non-conformist divine, of whom mention has been made already; he was born of an ancient and worthy family in *Kent*, and bred fellow of *Christ's college, Cambridge*; a pious and painful preacher, (says *Fuller*†) but disaffected to bishops and ceremonies; he was a learned man and a fine orator, but in one of his sermons before the Queen he took the liberty to say, that when her majesty was under persecution her motto was *Tanquam ovis*; but now it might be, *Tanquam indomita juvenca, As an untamed heifer.*‡ For which he was forbid preaching at court for the future, and lost all his preferments in the church.

Archbishop GRINDAL had endeavored to regulate the *propheesyings*, and cover them from the objections of the court, by enjoining the *ministers* to observe decency and order, by forbidding them to meddle with politics and church government, and by prohibiting all non-conformist ministers and laymen from being speakers. The other bishops also in their several dioceses, published [in 1577] the following regulations:

That the exercises should be only in such churches as the bishop under his hand and seal should appoint.

That the archdeacon, or some other grave divine, appointed and allowed by the bishop, should be moderator.

That a list of the names of those that are thought fit to be speakers in course, be made and allowed of by the bishop; and the bishop to appoint such part of scripture they shall treat of.

That those ministers that are judged not fit to speak publicly, be assigned some other task by the moderator, for the increase of their learning.

\* Ath. Ox. i. 590. † Fuller, b. ix. p. 109. ‡ Life of Parker, p. 380.

*Interdicta*, that no lay-person be admitted to speak publicly in the exercises.

That if any man glance at affairs of state, the moderator shall immediately silence him, and give notice to the bishop.

If any man inveighs against the laws concerning rites and ceremonies, and discipline established, he shall immediately be silenced, and not be admitted to speak any more, till he has given satisfaction to the auditory, and obtained a new admission and approbation of the bishop. And

No suspended or deprived ministers shall be suffered to be speakers, except they shall first conform to the public order and discipline of the church, by subscription and daily practice.

But the Queen was resolved to suppress them; and having sent for the archbishop, told him, she was informed that the rites and ceremonies of the church were not duly observed in these *propheying*s; that persons not lawfully called to be ministers exercised in them; that the assemblies themselves were illegal, not being allowed by public authority; that the laity neglected their secular affairs by repairing to these meetings, which filled their heads with notions, and might occasion disputes and seditions in the state; that it was good for the church to have but few preachers, three or four in a county being sufficient.\* She further declared her dislike of the number of these exercises, and therefore commanded him peremptorily to put them down. Letters of this tenor were sent to all the bishops in *England*.†

\* MS. p. 203.

† The copy of her Majesty's letter to the bishop of *London*, with his lordship's order thereupon, being before me, I shall impart it to the reader.

“*Salutem in Christo,*

“HAVING received from the Queen's majesty letters of strait commandment, touching the reformation of certain disorders and innovations within my diocese; the tenor whereof I have inserted, as followeth:

**ELIZABETH.**

“*Right Reverend Father in God,*

“WE greet you well. We hear to our great grief, that in sundry parts of our realm there are no small number of persons presuming to be preachers and teachers in the church, though neither lawfully thereunto called, nor yet meet for the same; who contrary to our laws established, for the public divine service of Almighty God, and the administration of his holy sacraments within this church of *England*, do

Most of the bishops complied readily with the Queen's letter, and put down the *propheesyings*; but some did it with

' daily devise, imagine, propound, and put in execution, sundry new rites  
' and forms in the church, as well by the inordinate preaching, reading,  
' and ministering the sacraments, as by procuring unlawfully of assem-  
' blies. and great numbers of our people, out of their ordinary parishes,  
' and from places far distant; and that also of some of our subjects of  
' good callings (though therein not well advised) to be hearers of their  
' disputations, and new devised opinions upon points of divinity, far  
' unmeet for vulgar people; which manner of ministrations they in some  
' places term *PROPHESYINGS*, and in some other places *EXERCISES*; by  
' means of which assemblies great numbers of our people, especially of  
' the vulgar sort, (meet to be otherwise occupied with some honest labor  
' for their living) are brought to idleness, seduced, and in manners schis-  
' matically divided among themselves into variety of dangerous opinions,  
' not only in towns and parishes; but even some families are manifestly  
' thereby encouraged to the violation of our laws, and to the breach of  
' common orders. and not smally to the offence of all our quiet subjects,  
' that desire to live and serve God according to the uniform orders es-  
' tablished in the church, whereby these [*exercises*] cannot but be  
' dangerous to be suffered. Wherefore considering it should be the duty  
' of the bishops, being the principal ordinary officers in the church of  
' God (as you are one) to see these disorders against the honor of God,  
' and the quietness of the church reformed, and that by the increase of  
' these through sufferance, great danger may arise, even to the decrease  
' of christian faith, whereof we are by God appointed the defender; be-  
' sides the other inconveniences, to the disturbance of our peaceable  
' government.

" We therefore, according to the authority which we have, do charge  
' and command you, as bishop of that diocese, with all manner of dili-  
' gence to take order throughout your diocese, as well in all places ex-  
' empt, or otherwise, that no manner of public or divine service, nor other  
' form of ministration of the holy sacraments, or any other rites and  
' ceremonies, be in any sort used in the church, but directly according to  
' the order established by our laws: Neither that any manner of person  
' be suffered in your diocese to teach, preach, read, or exercise any  
' function in the church, but such as shall be lawfully approved and li-  
' cenced, as persons able by their knowledge, and conformable to the  
' ministrations in the rites and ceremonies of this church of *England*.  
' And where there shall not be sufficient able persons for learning in any  
' cure, to preach and instruct their cures, as are requisite, then shall  
' you limit the curates to read the public homilies, according to the in-  
' junctions heretofore by us given for like cause.

" And furthermore, considering the great abuses that have been in  
' sundry places of our realm, by reason of the aforesaid assemblies called  
' *exercises*; and for that these are not, nor have been appointed or war-  
' ranted by us or our laws; we will and straitly charge you, that you do  
' cause the same forthwith to cease, and not to be used; but if any shall  
' attempt to continue or renew the same, we will you not only to com-



reluctance, and purely in obedience to the royal command ; as appear by the following letter of the bishop of *Litchfield* and *Coventry*, to his archdeacon :—

*“ Salutem in Christo,*

“ Whereas the Queen has been informed of some matters handled and  
 “ abused in the exercise at *Coventry*, and thereupon hath written to me  
 “ a strait charge to inhibit the said exercise ; these are therefore to will  
 “ and require you, and nevertheless in her majesty’s name to charge you,  
 “ to forbear and stay yourselves from that exercise, till it shall please  
 “ God we may either by earnest prayer, or humble petition, obtain the full  
 “ use thereof with her good pleasure and full authority ; and in the mean  
 “ time so to use the heavenly and most comfortable gift of preaching,  
 “ that you may seek and set forth Jesus Christ and his kingdom with-  
 “ out contempt and controlment of the state and laws, under which we  
 “ ought to live in unity and peace ; which I beseech God grant unto  
 “ you and me, and all that look for the coming of our Saviour Christ, to  
 “ whose direction I commit you, this 18th of June, 1577.”\*

Your loving friend and brother in Christ.

THOMAS COV. AND LICHF.

*To my very loving friend and brother  
 in Christ, Thomas Lever, archdea-  
 con of Cov. or in his absence to the  
 censors of the exercise there.*

But our archbishop could not go this length ; he who had complied with all the Queen’s injunctions, and with the severities of the *ecclesiastical commissioners* against the puritans hitherto, is now distressed in conscience, and con-

‘ mit them to prison, as maintainers of disorders, but also to advertise us  
 ‘ or our council of the names and qualities of them, and of their main-  
 ‘ tainers and abettors ; that thereupon for better example their punish-  
 ‘ ment may be made more sharp, for their reformation. And in these  
 ‘ things we charge you to be so careful and vigilant, as by your negligence  
 ‘ (if we shall hear of any person attempting to offend in the premises  
 ‘ without your correction or information to us) we be not forced to make  
 ‘ some example in reforming of you according to your deserts. Given  
 ‘ under our signet at our manor of *Greenwich*, the 7th of May, 1577,  
 ‘ and in the 19th year of our reign.”†

“ Therefore I will and straitly charge you, in her majesty’s name,  
 ‘ that immediately upon the receipt hereof, you do diligently and care-  
 ‘ fully put in execution, in every point, all such things as therein be  
 ‘ contained, throughout and in every place within your whole archdea-  
 ‘ conry ; so that at my visitation, which God willing shall be shortly, suf-  
 ‘ ficient account may be given of that your doing and diligence in that  
 ‘ behalf accordingly. Fail you not so to do, as you will answer the  
 ‘ contrary, at your peril.—

Your loving brother,

JOHN LONDON.”

\* MS. p. 284.

† MS. p. 283.



strained to disobey the commands of his royal mistress, in an affair of much less consequence than others he had formerly complied with. Instead therefore of giving directions to his archdeacons to execute the Queen's commands, he writes a long and earnest letter to her majesty, dated Dec. 10, 1576, to inform her of the necessity and usefulness of preaching, and of the subserviency of the *exercises*, to this purpose :

“ With regard to PREACHING, nothing is more evident from scripture (says his grace) than that it was a great blessing to have the gospel preached, and to have plenty of laborers sent into the Lord's harvest. That this was the ordinary means of salvation, and that hereby men were taught their duty to God and their civil governors. That though reading the homilies was good, yet it was not comparable to preaching, which might be suited to the diversity of times, places, and hearers; and be delivered with more efficacy and affection. That *homilies* were devised only to supply the want of preachers, and were by the statute of King *Edward VI.* to give place to sermons whensoever they might be had. He hoped therefore her majesty would not discountenance an ordinance so useful, and of divine appointment.

“ For the second point, concerning the EXERCISES, he apprehended them profitable to the church; and it was not his judgment only, but that of most of the bishops, as *London, Winton, Bath and Wells, Litchfield, Gloucester, Lincoln, Chichester, Exon, and St. David's*, who had signified to him by letter, that by means of these *exercises* the clergy were now better versed in the scripture than heretofore; that they had made them studious and diligent; and that nothing had beat down popery like them. He affirms that they are *legal*, for as much as by the canons and constitutions of the church now in force, every bishop has authority to appoint such exercises, for inferior ministers to increase their knowledge in the scriptures, as to him shall seem most expedient.”\* Towards the close of this letter his grace declares himself willing to resign his province, if it should be her majesty's pleasure; and then makes

\* MS. p. 245.

these two requests, “(1.) That your majesty would refer  
‘ ecclesiastical matters to the bishops and divines of the  
‘ realm, according to the practice of the first christian empe-  
‘ rors. And, (2.) That when your majesty deals in matters of  
‘ faith and religion, you would not pronounce so perempto-  
‘ rily as you may do in civil matters ; but remember that in  
‘ God’s cause, *his will, and not the will of any earthly crea-*  
‘ *ture, is to take place.* It is the antichristian voice of the  
‘ pope, *Sic, volo sic jubeo, stet pro ratione voluntas.*” He  
then puts her in mind, that though she was a great and  
mighty princess, she was nevertheless a mortal creature,  
and accountable to God ; and concludes with a declaration,  
that whereas before there were not three able preachers,  
now there were thirty fit to preach at *St. Paul’s Cross*, and  
forty or fifty besides able to instruct their own cures. That  
therefore he could not without offence of the majesty of  
God send out injunctions for suppressing the *exercises*.

The Queen was so inflamed with this letter, that she de-  
termined to make an example of the honest *archbishop*, as  
a terror to the whole bench : She would not suffer her com-  
mands to be disputed by the *primate of all England*, but  
by an order from the *star chamber* confined him immediate-  
ly to his house, and sequestered him from his archiepis-  
copal function for six months. This was a high display  
of the supremacy, when *the head of the church*, being a  
*woman*, without consulting the bishops, or any of the cler-  
gy in convocation assembled, shall pronounce so peremp-  
torily in a matter purely respecting religion ; and for non-  
compliance tie up the hands of her *archbishop*, who is the  
first mover under the prince in all ecclesiastical affairs.

Before the expiration of the six months, which was in  
Dec. *Grindal* was advised to make his submission, which  
he did so far as to acknowledge the Queen’s mildness and  
gentleness in his restraint, and to promise obedience for the  
future ; but he could not be persuaded to retract his opinion,  
and confess his sorrow for what was past ; there was there-  
fore some talk of depriving him, which being thought too se-  
vere, his sequestration was still continued till about a year  
before his death ; however his *grace* never recovered the  
Queen’s favor. Thus ended the *propheesyings*, or *religious*

*exercises* of the clergy, an useful institution for promoting christian knowledge and piety, at a time when both were at a very low ebb in the nation. The Queen put them down chiefly because they enlightened the people's minds in the scripture, and encouraged their enquiries after truth ; her majesty being always of opinion, that knowledge and learning in the laity would only endanger their peaceable submission to her absolute will and pleasure.

This year put an end to the life of that eminent divine, **Mr. Thomas Lever**, a great favorite of Queen *Elizabeth* till he refused the *habits*. He was master of *St. John's* college, *Cambridge*, in the reign of King *Edward VI.* and was reckoned one of the most eloquent preachers in those times. He had a true zeal for the protestant religion, and was an exile for it all the reign of Queen *Mary*. Upon Queen *Elizabeth's* accession, he might have had the highest preferment in the church, but could not accept it upon the terms of *subscription and wearing the habits* ; he was therefore suspended by the ecclesiastical commissioners ; till his great name and singular merit, reflecting an odium upon those who had deprived the church of his labors, and exposed him a second time to poverty and want after his exile ; he was at length dispensed with, and made archdeacon of *Coe*, and master of *Sherburne* hospital near *Durham*, where he spent the remainder of his days in great reputation and usefulness. He was a resolute non-conformist, and wrote letters to encourage the deprived ministers to stand by their principles, and wait patiently for a further reformation. He was buried in the chapel of his own hospital, having this plain inscription on a flat marble stone over his grave, *Thomas Lever, preacher to King Edward VI.* Had he lived a little longer he had been persecuted by the new bishop, as his brother *Whittingham* was ; but God took him away from the evil to come. He died in July 1577, and was succeeded in the hospital by his brother *Ralph Lever*.

**Mr. Cartwright**, upon his return from the Isle of *Guernsey*, was chosen preacher to one of the *English* factories at *Antwerp* : These factories submitted to the discipline of the *Dutch* churches among whom they lived, and their ministers

became members of their consistories. While *Cartwright* was here, many of the *English*, who were not satisfied with the terms of conformity, or the *English* manner of giving orders, went over thither, and were ordained by the presbyters of those churches; nay, some who had received *deacon's orders* in the church of *England*, chose to be made *full ministers* by the foreign consistories; among these were *Mr. Cartwright, Fenner, Ashton and Travers.\** *Travers* was batchelor of divinity in the university of *Cambridge* before he left *England*, and was ordained at *Antwerp*, May 14, 1578. The copy of his testimonial† is to this effect:

“FORASMUCH as it is just and reasonable, that such as are received into the number of the ministers of God’s word, should have a testimonial of their vocation; we declare, that having called together a synod of twelve ministers of God’s word, and almost the same number of elders, at *Antwerp*, on May 8th, 1578, our very learned, pious, and excellent brother, the Rev. Dr. *Gualter Travers* was, by the unanimous votes and ardent desires of all present, received and instituted into the ministry of God’s holy word, and confirmed according to our accustomed manner, with prayer and imposition of hands; and the next day after the sabbath, having preached before a full congregation of *English*, at the request of the ministers, he was acknowledged and received most affectionately by the whole church. That Almighty God would prosper the ministry of this our reverend brother among the *English*, and attend it with great success, is our most earnest prayer, through Jesus Christ. *Amen.*

“Given at *Antwerp*, May 14, 1578, and signed

“JOANNES TAFFINUS, V. D. M.

“LOGELERIUS VILERIUS, V. D. M.

“JOANNES HOCHLEUS, V. D. M.”

*Pilkington*, late bishop of *Durham*, was succeeded by Dr. *Barnes*, bishop of *Carlisle*, a prelate of severer principles than his predecessor; who having in vain attempted to reduce the clergy of his diocese to an absolute conformity, complained to his metropolitan of the lax government of his predecessor, and of the numbers of non-conformists whom he could not reduce to the established orders of the church. Upon this *Sandys*, the new archbishop of *York*, resolved

\* *Strype's Ann.* vol. ii. p. 524.

† *Fuller*, b. ix. p. 214.

to visit his whole province, and to begin with *Durham*, where dean *Whittingham* was the principal man under the bishop; he was a divine of great learning, and of long standing in the church, but not ordained according to the form of the *English service book*. The accusation against him was branched out into thirty five articles, and forty-nine interrogatories, the chief whereof was his *Geneva ordination*.\* The dean, instead of answering the charge, stood by the rights of the church of *Durham*, and denied the archbishop's power of visitation, upon which his grace was pleased to excommunicate him; but *Whittingham* appealed to the Queen, who directed a commission to the archbishop, to the lord president of the council in the north, and to the dean of *York*, to hear and determine the validity of his ordination, and to enquire into the other misdemeanors contained in the articles. The president of the north was a favorer of the puritans, and Dr. *Hutton* dean of *York* was of *Whittingham's* principles, and boldly averred, *That the dean was ordained in a better sort than even the archbishop himself*; so that the commission came to nothing. But *Sandys*, vexed at the disappointment, and at the calling in question his right of visitation, obtained another commission directed to himself, the bishop of *Durham*, the lord president, the chancellor of the diocese, and some others whom he could depend upon, to visit the church of *Durham*. The chief design was to deprive *Whittingham* as a layman; when the dean appeared before the commissioners, he produced a certificate under the hands of eight persons, for the manner of his *ordination*, in these words; "It pleased God, by the suffrages of the whole congregation [at *Geneva*] orderly to choose Mr. *W. Whittingham*, unto the office of preaching the word of God and ministering the sacraments; and he was admitted minister, and so published, with such other ceremonies as here are used and accustomed."† It was objected, that here was no mention of a *bishop* or *superintendent*, nor of any external solemnities, not so much as of *imposition of hands*. The dean replied, there was mention in general of the ceremonies of that church, and that he was

\* Strype's Ann. vol. ii. p. 481.

† Ibid. vol. ii. p. 523.

able to prove his vocation to be the same that all the ministers of *Geneva* had ; upon which the Lord *President* rose up and said, that he could not in conscience agree to deprive him for that cause only, for (says he) it will be ill taken by all the godly and learned both at home and abroad, that we should allow of the popish massing priests in our ministry, and disallow of ministers made in a reformed church ; whereupon the commission was adjourned *sine die*. These proceedings of the archbishop against the dean were invidious, and lost him his esteem both in city and country. The calling his ordination in question was expressly contrary to the stat. 13 *Eliz.* by which (says Mr. *Strype*) *the ordination of foreign reformed churches was declared valid ; and those that had no other orders were made of like capacity with others, to enjoy any place of ministry within England.*

But the death of Mr. *Whittingham*, which happened about 6 months after, put an end to this and all his other troubles: He was born in the city of *Chester* 1524, and educated in *Brazen-Nose* college, *Oxon* ; he was afterwards translated to *Christ Church*, when it was founded by King *Henry VIII.* being reckoned one of the best scholars in the university ; in the year 1550, he travelled into *France, Germany* and *Italy*, and returned about the latter end of King *Edward VI.* In the reign of Queen *Mary* he was with the exiles at *Frankfort*, and upon the division there went with part of the congregation to *Geneva*, and became their minister. He had a great share in translating the *Geneva* bible, and the psalms in metre, as appears by the first letter of his name [*W*] over many of them. Upon his return home he was preferred to the deanry of *Durham*, 1563, by the interest of the earl of *Leicester*, where he spent the remainder of his life. He did good service, says the *Oxford* historian,\* against the popish rebels in the north, and in repelling the archbishop of *York* from visiting the church of *Durham* ; but he was at best but a lukewarm conformist, an enemy to the habits, and a promoter of the *Geneva* doctrine and discipline. However, he was a truly pious and religious man, an excellent preacher, and an ornament to religion. He died while the cause of his deprivation, for not being ordained

\* *Ath. Ox.* vol. i. p. 154.



according to the rites of the *English* church was depending, June 10, 1579, in the 65th year of his age.

We have mentioned the bishop of *Norwich*'s severity in his primary visitation ; his lordship went on still in the same method, not without some marks of unfair designs ;† for the incumbent of *Sprouton* being suspected to be of the *family of love*, his lordship deprived him, and immediately begged the living for his son-in-law Mr. *Maplesdon*, who was already archdeacon of *Suffolk*.§ He shewed no mercy to his suspended clergy, though they offered to subscribe as far as the laws of the realm required. At length they petitioned their metropolitan *Grindal*, who though in disgrace licensed them to preach throughout the whole diocese of *Norwich*, *durante bene placito*, provided they did not preach against the established orders of the church, nor move contentions about ceremonies; but still they were deprived of their livings.

The Rev. Mr. *Lawrence*, an admired preacher, and incumbent of a parish in *Suffolk*, was suspended by the same bishop, for not complying with the rites and ceremonies of the church.\* Mr. *Calthrop*, a gentleman of quality in the country, applied to the lord treasurer in his behalf ; and the treasurer wrote to the bishop, requesting him to take off his sequestration ; but his lordship replied, that what he had done was by virtue of the Queen's letter to him, requiring him to allow of no ministers but such as were perfectly conformable. Mr. *Calthrop* replied, and urged the great want the church had of such good men as Mr. *Lawrence*, for whose fitness for his work he would undertake the chief gentlemen of credit in the county should certify ; but his sequestration was still continued. The like severities were used in most other dioceses.

The bishop of *London*‡ came not behind the chief of his

† Strype's Ann. ii. 284. § MS. p. 286. \* Strype's Ann. p. 285.

‡ " This," bishop *Warburton* censures as " an unfair charge which runs through the history. The exacting conformity of the ministry of any church by the governors of that church is no persecution." This is a strange sentiment to come from the pen of a protestant prelate. There was no persecution then in the reign of Queen *Mary*. It was no persecution, when the Jewish Sanhedrim agreed, " that if any man did confess that Jesus was the Christ, he should be put out of the Synagogue." It was no persecution, when the parliament imposed the *Scots* covenant. ED.



brethren the bishops, in his persecuting zeal against the puritans ; he gave out orders for apparitors and other officers to go from church to church in time of divine service, to observe the conformity of the minister, and to make report to her majesty's commissioners. As *this prelate* had no compassion in his nature, he had little or no regard to the laws of his country, or the cries of the people *after the word of God.*§

Great was the scarcity of preachers about *England* at this time ; in the large and populous town of *Northampton* there was not one, nor had been for a considerable time, though the people applied to the bishop of the diocese by most humble supplication for the *bread of life*. In the county of *Cornwall* there were 140 clergymen, not one of which was capable of preaching a sermon, and most of them were pluralists and non-residents. Even the *city of London* was in a lamentable case, as appears by their petition to the parliament which met this winter, in which are these words ;  
 “ — May it please you therefore, for the tender mercies of  
 ‘ God, to understand the woful estate of many thousands of  
 ‘ souls dwelling in deep darkness, and in the shadow of  
 ‘ death, in this famous and populous *city of London* ; a place,  
 ‘ in respect of others, accounted as the morning star, or  
 ‘ rather as the sun in its brightness, because of the gospel,  
 ‘ supposed to shine gloriously and abundantly in the same ;  
 ‘ but being near looked into, will be found sorely eclipsed  
 ‘ and darkened through the dim cloud of unlearned min-  
 ‘ isters, whereof there be no small number. There are in  
 ‘ this city a great number of churches, but the one half of  
 ‘ them at the least are utterly unfurnished of preaching min-  
 ‘ isters, and are pestered with *candlesticks* not of gold but  
 ‘ of clay, unworthy to have the Lord's light set in them,  
 ‘ with watchmen that have no eyes, and clouds that  
 ‘ have no water ;—in the other half, partly by means  
 ‘ of non-residents, which are very many ; partly through  
 ‘ the poverty of many meanly qualified, there is scarce-  
 ‘ ly the *tenth* man that makes conscience to wait upon  
 ‘ his charge, whereby the Lord's sabbath is oft-times

§ He declared, that he would surely and severely punish those who would not comply with the act of uniformity : or “ I will lie,” said he. “ in the dust for it.” *Strype. Ep.*

‘ wholly neglected, and for the most part miserably  
 ‘ mangled ; ignorance increaseth, and wickedness comes  
 ‘ upon us like an armed man.—As sheep therefore  
 ‘ going astray, we humbly on our knees beseech this  
 ‘ honorable assembly, in the bowels and blood of Jesus  
 ‘ Christ, to become humble suitors to her majesty, that we  
 ‘ may have guides ; as hungry men bound to abide by our  
 ‘ empty rackstaves, we do beg of you to be means, that the  
 ‘ bread of life may be brought home to us ; that the sower  
 ‘ may come into the fallow ground ; that the pipes of water  
 ‘ may be brought into our assemblies ; that there may be  
 ‘ food and refreshing for us, our poor wives and forlorn chil-  
 ‘ dren : so shall the Lord have his due honor ; you shall  
 ‘ discharge good duty to her majesty ; many languishing  
 ‘ souls shall be comforted ; atheism and heresy banished ;  
 ‘ her majesty have more faithful subjects ; and you more  
 ‘ hearty prayers for your prosperity in this life, and full hap-  
 ‘ piness in the life to come, through Jesus Christ our alone  
 ‘ Saviour. *Amen.*”\*

In the supplication of the people of *Cornwall*, it is said,†  
 ‘ We are above the number of four-score and ten thousand  
 ‘ souls, which for want of the word of God are in extreme  
 ‘ misery and ready to perish, and this neither for want of  
 ‘ maintenance nor place ; for besides the appropriations in  
 ‘ our shire, we allow yearly above nine thousand two hun-  
 ‘ dred pounds, and have about 160 churches, the greatest  
 ‘ part of which are supplied by men who are guilty of the  
 ‘ grossest sins ; some fornicators, some adulterers, some  
 ‘ felons, bearing the marks in their hands for the said of-  
 ‘ fence ; some drunkards, gamesters on the sabbath day, &c.  
 ‘ We have many non-residents, who preach but once a  
 ‘ quarter ; so that between meal and meal the silly sheep  
 ‘ may starve. We have some ministers who labor painfully  
 ‘ and faithfully in the Lord’s husbandry ; but these men  
 ‘ are not suffered to attend their callings, because the mouths  
 ‘ of papists, infidels, and filthy livers, are open against them,  
 ‘ and the ears of those who are called *lords* over them, are  
 ‘ sooner open to their accusations, though it be but for cer-  
 ‘ emonies, than to the others answers. Nor is it safe for

\* MS. p. 302.

† MS. p. 300.

‘ us to go and hear them ; for though our own fountains  
 ‘ are dried up, yet if we seek for the waters of life elsewhere,  
 ‘ we are cited into the spiritual courts, reviled and threat-  
 ‘ ened with excommunication. Therefore from far we  
 ‘ come, beseeching this honorable house to dispossess these  
 ‘ *dumb dogs and ravenous wolves*, and appoint us faithful  
 ‘ ministers, who may peaceably preach the word of God,  
 ‘ and not be disquieted by every apparator, register, official,  
 ‘ commissioner, chancellor, &c. upon every light occa-  
 ‘ sion——.”

The ground of this scarcity was no other than the severity of the high commission, and the narrow terms of conformity. Most of the old incumbents, says Dr. *Keltridge*,\* are disguised papists, fitter to sport with the timbrel and pipe, than to take into their hands the book of the Lord ; and yet there was a rising generation of valuable preachers ready for the ministry, if they might have been encouraged ; for in a supplication of some of the students at *Cambridge* to the parliament about this time, they acknowledge, that there were plenty of able and well-furnished men among them, but that they could not get into places upon equal conditions ; but unlearned men, nay the scum of the people, were preferred before them ; so that in this great want of laborers, we (say they) stand idle in the market-place all the day, being urged with subscriptions before the bishops, to *approve the Romish hierarchy, and all the effects of that government to be agreeable to the word of God*, which with no safety of conscience we can accord unto. They then offer a conference or disputation, as the Queen and parliament shall agree, to put an amicable end to these differences, that the church may recover some discipline, that *simony* and *perjury* may be banished, and that all that are willing to promote the salvation of souls may be employed ; but the Queen and bishops were against it.

All the public conversation at this time ran upon the Queen’s marriage with the duke of *Anjou*, a *French* papist, which was thought to be as good as concluded ; the protestant part of the nation were displeased with it, and some

\* Life of Aylmer, p. 32.

warm divines expressed their dark apprehensions in the pulpit. The puritans in general made a loud protest against the match, as dreading the consequences of a *protestant body being under a popish head*. Mr. *John Stubbs*, a student of *Lincoln's-Inn*, whose sister Mr. *Cartwright* had married, a gentleman of excellent parts, published a treatise this summer, entitled *THE GAPING GULPH, wherein England will be swallowed up with the French marriage*; wherewith the Queen was so incensed, that she immediately issued out a proclamation to suppress the book, and to apprehend the author and printer. At the same time the lords of the council wrote circular letters to the clergy, to remove all surmises about the danger of the reformation, in case the match should take place, assuring them the Queen would suffer no alterations in religion by any treaty with the *duke*, and forbidding them in their sermons or discourses to meddle with such high matters. Mr. *Stubbs* the author, *Singleton* the printer, and *Page* the disperser of the above mentioned book, were apprehended, and sentenced to have *their right hands cut off*, by virtue of a law made in Queen *Mary's* reign against the authors and dispersers of seditious writings: the printer was pardoned, but Mr. *Stubbs* and *Page* were brought to a scaffold, erected in the market-place at *Westminster*, where with a terrible formality their right hands were cut off, by driving a cleaver through the wrist with a mallet;\* but I remember (says *Cambden*, being present) that as soon as *Stubb's right hand* was cut off, he pulled off his hat with his *left*, and said with a loud voice, *God save the Queen*, to the amazement of the spectators, who stood silent, either out of horror of the punishment, or pity to the man, or hatred of the match. Mr. *Stubbs* proved afterwards a faithful subject to her majesty, and a valiant commander in the wars of *Ireland*.

At the beginning of the next sessions of parliament, which was Jan. 10, 1580, the commons voted, "That as many of their members as conveniently could, should, on the Sunday fortnight, assemble and meet together in the *Temple*

\* This, "says bishop *Warburton*, was infinitely more cruel than all the ears under *Charles I.* whether we consider the punishment, the crime, or the man." En.

‘ church, there to have preaching, and to join together in  
 ‘ prayer, with humiliation and fasting, for the assistance of  
 ‘ God’s spirit in all their consultations, during this parlia-  
 ‘ ment ; and for the preservation of the Queen’s majesty and  
 ‘ her realms.’\* The house was so cautious as not to name  
 their preachers, for fear they might be thought *puritanical*,  
 but referred it to such of her majesty’s privy council as  
 were members of the house. There was nothing in this  
 vote contrary to law, or unbecoming the wisdom of parlia-  
 ment ; but the Queen was no sooner acquainted with it, than  
 she sent word by Sir *Christopher Hatton*, her vice-cham-  
 berlain, that “ She did much admire at so great a rashness  
 ‘ in that house, as to put in execution such an innovation,  
 ‘ without her privy and pleasure first made known to  
 ‘ them.” Upon which it was moved by the courtiers, that  
 ‘ the house should acknowledge their offence and con-  
 ‘ tempt, and humbly crave forgiveness, with a full purpose  
 ‘ to forbear committing the like for the future ;” which was  
 voted accordingly. A mean and abject spirit in the repre-  
 sentative body of the nation !

Her majesty having forbid her parliament to appoint times  
 for fasting and prayer, took hold of the opportunity, and  
 gave the like injunctions to her clergy ; some of whom, af-  
 ter the putting down of the PROPHECYINGS, had ventured to  
 agree upon days of private fasting and prayer for the Queen  
 and church, and for exhorting the people to repentance and  
 reformation of life, at such times and places where they  
 could obtain a pulpit. All the puritans, and the more de-  
 vout part of the conforming clergy, fell in with these ap-  
 pointments ; sometimes there was one at *Leicester* ; some-  
 times at *Coventry* and at *Stamford*, and in other places ;  
 where six or seven neighboring ministers joined together  
 in these exercises ; but as soon as the Queen was acquaint-  
 ed with them, she sent a warm message to the archbishop  
 to suppress them, as being set up by private persons, without  
 authority, in defiance of the laws, and of her prerogative.†

Mr. *Proud*, the puritan minister of *Burton upon Dunmore*,  
 complains, in a melancholy letter to Lord *Burleigh*, of the  
 sad state of religion, by suppressing the exercises ; and by

\* Heylin, p. 287.

† Heylin’s *Aerius Redivivus*, p. 286.

forbidding the meeting of a few ministers and christians, to pray for the preservation of the protestant religion, in this dangerous crisis of *the Queen's marrying with a papist*. He doubted whether his lordship dealt so plainly with her majesty as his knowledge of these things required, and begs him to interpose. But the Queen was determined against all *prayers*, except what herself should appoint.

We have already taken notice of the petitions and supplications to parliament from *London, Cornwall*, and some other places, for redress of grievances; but the house was so intimidated by the Queen's spirited behavior, that they durst not interpose, any further than in conjunction with some of the bishops, to petition her majesty as *head of the church*, to redress them. The Queen promised to take order about it, with all convenient speed; putting them in mind at the same time, that *all motions for reformation in religion ought to arise from none but herself*.

But her majesty's sentiments differed from the parliament's; her greatest grief was the increase of *puritans* and *non-conformists*, and therefore, instead of easing them, she girt the laws closer about them, in order to bring them to an exact conformity. Information being given, that some who had livings in the church, and preached weekly, did not administer the sacrament to their parishioners in their own persons, her majesty commanded her bishops in their visitations, to enquire after such HALF CONFORMISTS as disjoined one part of their function from the other, and to compel them by ecclesiastical censures to perform the whole at least twice a year. The puritan ministers being dissatisfied with the promiscuous access of all persons to the communion, and with several passages in the *office for the Lord's supper*, some of them used to provide qualified clergymen to administer the *ordinance* in their room; but this was now made a handle for their ejection: Inquisition was made, and those who after admonition would not conform to the Queen's pleasure were sent for before the commissioners, and deprived.

Though the springs of discipline moved but slowly in the diocese of *Canterbury*, because the *metropolitan*, who is the first mover in ecclesiastical causes under the Queen, was suspended and in disgrace; yet the sufferings of the puri-



tans were not lessened; the other bishops, who were in the *high commission*, doubled their diligence; the Rev. Mr. *Nash* was in the *Marshalsea*, Mr. *Drewet* in *Newgate*, and several others were shut up in the prisons in and about *London*. Those that were at liberty had nothing to do, for they might not preach in public without full conformity; nor assemble in private to mourn over their own and the nation's sins, without the danger of a prison.

This exasperated their spirits, and put them upon writing satirical pamphlets\* against their adversaries; in some of which there are severe expressions against the unpreaching clergy, calling them (in the language of scripture) *dumb dogs*, because they took no pains for the instruction of their parishioners; the authors glanced at the severity of the laws, at the pride and ambition of the bishops, at the illegal proceedings of the high commission, and at the unjustifiable rigors of the Queen's government; which her majesty being informed of, procured a statute this very parliament,† [1580] by which it is enacted, that "If any person or persons, 40  
' days after the end of this session, shall devise, or write,  
' or print, or set forth any manner of *book, rhyme, ballad,*  
' *letter, or writing,* containing any false, seditious, or slan-  
' derous matter, to the defamation of the Queen's majesty,  
' or to the encouraging, stirring, or moving of any insur-  
' rection or rebellion within this realm, or any of the domin-  
' ions to the same belonging: or if any person or persons  
' shall procure such *books, rhymes, or ballads,* to be written,  
' printed, or published, (the said offence not being within  
' the compass of treason, by virtue of any former statute)  
' that then the said offenders, upon sufficient proof by two  
' witnesses, shall *suffer death and loss of goods,* as in case of  
' *felony.*" This statute was to continue in force only during the life of the present Queen; but within that compass of time, sundry of the puritans were put to death by virtue of it.

In the same session of parliament, another severe law was made, which like a two-edged sword cut down both papists

\* Bishop *Warburton* censures Mr. *Neal* for not speaking in much severer terms of these pamphlets. But he should have adverted to our author's grave censure of them, in chap. viii. and have recollected that "the writers on the church side came not behind their adversaries in buffoonery and ridicule." These were the weapons of the age. † 28 Eliz. cap. 2.



and puritans; it was entitled, *An act to retain the Queen's subjects in their due obedience*.\* “By which it is made treason, for any priest or jesuit to seduce any of the Queen's subjects, from the *established* to the *Romish* religion. If any shall reconcile themselves to that religion, they shall be guilty of treason: And to harbor such above twenty days, is misprision of treason. If any one shall say *mass*, he shall forfeit 200 *marks* and suffer a year's imprisonment; and they that are present at hearing *mass* shall forfeit 100 marks, and a year's imprisonment.” But that the act might be more extensive, and comprehend protestant non-conformists as well as *papists*, it is further enacted, “That all persons that do not come to church or chapel, or other place where *common prayer* is said, according to the act of uniformity, shall forfeit twenty pounds *per* month to the Queen, being thereof lawfully convicted, and suffer imprisonment till paid. Those that are absent for twelve months shall, upon certificate made thereof into the *King's Bench*, besides their former fine, be bound with two sufficient sureties in a bond of two hundred pounds, for their good behavior. Every *school-master* that does not come to *common-prayer*, shall forfeit ten pounds a month, be disabled from teaching school, and suffer a year's imprisonment.” This was making merchandize of the souls of men (says a reverend author;)<sup>†</sup> for it is a sad case to sell men a licence to do that which the receivers of their money conceive to be unlawful. Besides, the fine was unmerciful; by the act of uniformity, it was twelve pence a Sunday for not coming to church, but now twenty pounds a month; so that the meaner people had nothing to expect but to rot in jails, which made the officers unwilling to apprehend them. Thus the Queen and her parliament tacked the puritans to the papists, and subjected them to the same penal laws, as if they had been equal enemies to her person and government, and to the protestant religion. A precedent followed by several parliaments in the succeeding reigns.

The convocation did nothing but present an humble petition to the Queen, to take off the archbishop's sequestration, which her majesty was not pleased to grant.

\* 23 Eliz. cap. 1.

† Fuller, b. ix. p. 181.

This summer *Aylmer* bishop of *London*, held a visitation of his clergy, at the *convocation house* of *St. Paul's*, and obliged them to subscribe the following articles; 1. Exactly to keep to the book of *common prayer* and *sacraments*. 2. To wear the surplice in all their ministrations. 3. Not add or diminish any thing in reading divine service.—He then made the following enquiries, 1. Whether all that had cure of souls administered the sacraments in person? 2. Whether they observed the ceremonies to be used in baptism and marriage? 3. Whether the youth were catechised? 4. Whether their ministers read the homilies? 5. Whether any of them called others that did not *preach* by ill names, as *dumb dogs*? Those who did not subscribe, and answer the interrogatories to his lordship's satisfaction, were immediately suspended and silenced.

But these violent measures, instead of reconciling the puritans to the church, drove them further from it. Men who act upon principles\* will not be easily beaten from them with the artillery of canons, injunctions, subscriptions, fines, imprisonments, &c. much less will they esteem a church that fights with such weapons. Multitudes were by these methods carried off to a total separation, and so far prejudiced, as not to allow the church of *England* to be a true church, nor her ministers true ministers; they renounced all communion with her, not only in the prayers and ceremonies, but in hearing the word and the sacraments. These were the people called BROWNISTS,§ from one *Robert Brown*, a preacher in the diocese of *Norwich*, descended of an ancient and honorable family in *Rutlandshire*, and nearly related to the lord treasurer *Cecil*; he was educated in *Corpus Christi*

\* To do so is highly virtuous and praise-worthy. It is the support of integrity, and constitutes excellence of character: Yet, in this instance, bishop *Warburton* could allow himself to degrade and make a jest of it. “It is just the same (says he) with men who act upon passion and prejudice, for the poet says truly,

“Obstinaey's near so stiff

“As when 'tis in a wrong belief.” ED.

§ With them commenced the third period of puritanism. The increasing severity of the bishops inflamed, instead of subduing, the spirits of the non-conformists, and drove them to a greater distance from the establishment. ED.

college, *Cambridge*, and preached sometimes in *Bene't* church, where the vehemence of his delivery gained him reputation with the people. He was first a school-master, then a lecturer at *Islington*; but being a fiery, hot-headed young man, he went about the countries, inveighing against the *discipline and ceremonies* of the church, and exhorting the people by no means to comply with them. He was first taken notice of by the bishop of *Norwich*, who committed him to the custody of the sheriff of the county in the year 1580, but upon acknowledgment of his offence he was released. In the year 1582, he published a book, called *the life and manners of true christians*; to which is prefixed, *a treatise of reformation without tarrying for any; and of the wickedness of those preachers who will not reform themselves and their charge, because they will tarry till the magistrate command and compel them*. For this he was sent for again into custody, and upon examination confessed himself the author, but denied that he was acquainted with the publication of the book; whereupon he was dismissed a second time at the intercession of the lord treasurer, and sent home to his father, with whom he continued four years; after which he travelled up and down the countries in company with his assistant *Richard Harrison*, preaching against *bishops, ceremonies, ecclesiastical courts, ordaining of ministers, &c.* for which, as he afterwards boasted, he had been committed to thirty-two prisons, in some of which he could not see his hand at noon-day. At length he gathered a separate congregation of his own principles, but the Queen and her bishops watching them narrowly, they were quickly forced to leave the kingdom. Several of his friends embarked with their effects for *Holland*; and having obtained leave of the magistrates to worship God in their own way, settled at *Middleburgh* in *Zealand*. Here Mr. *Brown* formed a church according to his own model; but when this handful of people were delivered from the bishops their oppressors, they crumbled into parties among themselves, insomuch that *Brown*, being weary of his office, returned into *England* in the year 1589, and having renounced his principles of separation, became rector of *Achurch* in *North-*

\* B. x. p. 268.

*amptonshire* : Here he lived an idle and dissolute life, (according to *Fuller*\*) far from that sabbatarian strictness that his followers aspired after. He had a wife, with whom he did not live for many years, and a church in which he never preached ; at length, being poor and proud, and very passionate, he struck the constable of his parish for demanding a rate of him ; and being beloved by no body, the officer summoned him before sir *Roland St. John*, a neighboring justice of peace, who committed him to *Northampton* gaol ; the decrepid old man, not being able to walk, was carried thither upon a feather-bed in a cart, where he fell sick and died, in the year 1630, and in the 81st year of his age.

The revolt of Mr. *Brown* broke up his congregation at *Middleburgh*, but was far from destroying the seeds of separation that he had sown in several parts of *England* ; his followers increased, and made a considerable figure towards the latter end of this reign ; and because some of his principles were adopted and improved by a considerable body of *puritans* in the next age, I shall here give an account of them.

The BROWNISTS did not differ from the church of *England* in any articles of faith ; but were very rigid and narrow in points of discipline. They denied the church of *England* to be a true church, and her ministers to be rightly ordained. They maintained the discipline of the church of *England* to be popish and antichristian, and all her ordinances and sacraments invalid. Hence they forbade their people to join with them in prayer, in hearing, or in any part of public worship ; nay, they not only renounced communion with the church of *England*, but with all other reformed churches, except such as should be of their own model.

They apprehended, according to scripture, that every church ought to be confined within the limits of a single congregation ; and that the government should be DEMOCRATICAL. When a church was to be gathered, such as desired to be members made a confession of their faith in the presence of each other, and signed a COVENANT, obliging themselves to walk together in the order of the gospel, according to certain rules and agreements therein contained.

The whole power of admitting and excluding members, with the deciding of all controversies, was in the *brother-*

\* B. x. p. 268.

*hood*. Their *church officers* for preaching the word, and taking care of the poor, were chosen from among themselves, and separated to their several offices by fasting and prayer, and imposition of the hands of some of the *brethren*. They did not allow the *priesthood* to be a distinct *order*, or to give a man an indelible character ; but as the vote of the brotherhood made him an officer, and gave him authority to preach and administer the sacraments among them ; so the same power could discharge him from his office, and reduce him to the state of a private member.

When the number of communicants was larger than could meet in one place, the church divided, and chose new officers from among themselves as before, living together as sister churches, and giving each other the right hand of fellowship, or the privilege of communion with either. One church might not exercise jurisdiction or authority over another, but each might give the other counsel, advice, or admonition, if they walked disorderly, or abandoned the capital truths of religion ; and if the offending church did not receive the admonition, the others were to withdraw, and publicly disown them as a church of Christ. The powers of their church officers were confined within the narrow limits of their own society ; the pastor of one church might not administer the sacrament of baptism or the Lord's supper to any but those of his own communion and their immediate children. They declared against all prescribed forms of prayer. Any lay-brother had the liberty of prophesying, or giving a word of exhortation, in their church assemblies ; and it was usual after sermon, for some of the members to ask questions, and confer with each other upon the doctrines that had been delivered ; but as for church censures, they were for an entire separation of the ecclesiastical and civil sword. In short, every church, or society of christians meeting in one place, was, according to the BROWNISTS, a *body corporate*, having full power within itself to admit and exclude members, to choose and ordain officers ; and, when the good of the society required it, to depose them, without being accountable to classes, convocations, synods, councils, or any jurisdiction whatsoever.

Some of their reasons for withdrawing from the church are not easily answered : They alledged, that the laws of

the realm, and the Queen's injunctions, had made several unwarrantable additions to the institutions of Christ. That there were several gross errors in the *church service*. That these additions and errors were imposed and made necessary to communion. That if persecution for conscience sake was the mark of a false church, they could not believe the church of *England* to be a true one. They apprehended further, that the constitution of the hierarchy was too bad to be mended; that the very pillars of it were rotten, and that the structure must be begun anew. Since therefore all Christians are obliged to preserve the ordinances of Christ pure and undefiled, they resolved to lay a new foundation, and keep as near as they could to the primitive pattern, though it were with the hazard of all that was dear to them in the world.

This scheme of the *Brownists* seems to be formed upon the practice of the apostolical churches, before the gifts of *inspiration* and *prophecy* were ceased, and is therefore hardly practicable in these latter ages, wherein the infirmities and passions of private persons too often take place of their gifts and graces. Accordingly they were involved in frequent quarrels and divisions; but their chief crime was their *uncharitableness*, in unchurching the whole christian world, and breaking off all manner of communion in hearing the word, in public prayer, and in the administration of the sacraments, not only with the church of *England*, but with all foreign reformed churches, which, though less pure, ought certainly to be owned as churches of Christ.

The heads of the *Brownists* were, Mr. *Brown* himself and his companion Mr. *Harrison*, together with Mr. *Tyler*, *Copping*, *Thacker*, and others, who were now in prison for spreading his books; the two last being afterwards put to death for it. The bishop of *Norwich* used them cruelly, and was highly displeased with those that shewed them any countenance. When the prisoner above-mentioned, with Mr. *Handson* and some others, complained to the justices at their quarter sessions of their long and illegal imprisonment, their *worships* were pleased to move the bishops in their favor; with which his lordship was so dissatisfied, that he drew up twelve articles of impeachment against the *justices themselves*, and caused them to be summoned before the



Queen and council to answer for their misdemeanors.\* In the articles they are charged with countenancing *Copping*, *Tyler*, and other disorderly clergymen. They are accused of contempt of his lordship's jurisdiction, in refusing to admit divers ministers whom he had ordained, because they were ignorant, and could only read ; and for removing one *Wood* from his living on the same account. Sir *Robert Jermin*, and sir *John Higham*, knights, and *Robert Ashfield* and *Thomas Badley*, esquires, gentlemen of *Suffolk* and *Norfolk*, and of the number of the aforesaid justices, gave in their answer to the bishop's articles in the name of the rest ; in which, after asserting their own conformity to the rites and ceremonies of the church, they very justly tax his lordship with cruelty, in keeping men so many years in prison, without bringing them to a trial, according to law ; and are ashamed that a bishop of the church of *England* should be a patron of ignorance, and an enemy to the preaching the word of God. Upon this the justices were dismissed. But though the *lord Treasurer*, lord *North*, sir *Robert Jermin*, and others wrote to the bishop, that Mr. *Handson*, who was a learned and useful preacher, might have a licence granted him, the angry prelate declared peremptorily, that he never should have one unless he would acknowledge his fault, and enter into bonds for his good behavior for the future.

While the bishops were driving the *puritans* out of the pulpits, the nobility and gentry received them into their houses as chaplains and tutors to their children, not merely out of compassion, but from a sense of their real worth and usefulness ; for they were men of undissembled piety and devotion ; mighty in the scriptures ; zealous for the protestant religion ; of exemplary lives ; far remote from the liberties and fashionable vices of the times ; and indefatigably diligent in instructing those committed to their care. Here they were covered from their oppressors ; they preached in the family, and catechised the children ; which, without all question, had a considerable influence upon the next generation.

The papists were now very active all over the country ; swarms of jesuits came over from the seminaries abroad, in

\* *Strype's Ann.* vol. iii. p. 20.



defiance of the law ;\* and spread their books of devotion and controversy among the common people ; they had their private conventicles almost in every market-town in *England* ; in the northern counties they were more numerous than the protestants. This put the government upon enquiring after their priests ; many of whom were apprehended, and three were executed, viz. *Edmund Campion*, a learned and subtle jesuit, educated in *Cambridge*. where he continued till the year 1569, when he travelled to *Rome*, and entered himself into the society of *Jesus*, 1573. Some years after he came into *England*, and travelled the countries to propagate the catholic faith. Being apprehended he was put on the rack to discover the gentlemen who harbored him, and afterwards was hanged, drawn, and quartered, when he was but forty-one years of age. The other two that suffered with him, were *Ralph Sherwin* and *Alexander Bryant*. These were executed for an example, but the rest were spared, because the Queen's match with the duke of *Anjou* was still depending. However, the protestants in the *Netherlands* being in distress, the Queen assisted them with men and money, for which they delivered into her majesty's hands the most important fortresses of their country, which she garrisoned with *English*. She also sent relief to the *French* protestants, who were at war with their natural prince ; and ordered a collection all over *England*, for the relief of the city of *Geneva*, besieged by the duke of *Savoy* : measures which were hardly consistent with her own principles of government ; but, as *Rapin* observes,† Queen *Elizabeth's* zeal for the protestant religion was always subordinate to her private interest.

About this time [1582] the Queen granted a *commission of concealments*, to some of her hungry courtiers, by which

\* Bishop *Warburton* asks here, " Were the jesuits more faulty in acting in defiance of the laws, than the puritans ?" and replies, " I think not. They had both the same plea, Conscience, and both the same provocation, Persecution." This is candid and pertinent, as far as it applies to the religious principles of each ; but certainly the spirit and views of these parties were very different ; the former was engaged, once and again, in plots against the life and government of the Queen ; the loyalty of the other was notwithstanding all their sufferings, unimpeached. Ed.

† Vol. viii. p. 475.

they were empowered to enquire into the titles of church lands and livings; all forfeitures, concealments, or lands for which the parish could not produce a legal title, were given to them: The articles of enquiry seem to be levelled against the *puritans*, but, through *their* sides, they must have made sad havoc with the patrimony of the church.† They were such as these, What right have you to your parsonage? How came you into it? Who ordained you? And at what age were you ordained? Have you a licence? Were you married under the hands of two justices of the peace? Do you read the whole *service*? Do you use all the rites, ceremonies and ornaments appointed by the Queen's injunctions? Have you publicly read the articles and subscribed them? The church-wardens of every parish had also twenty-four interrogatories administered to them upon oath, concerning their parson, and their church lands; all with a design to sequester them into the hands of the Queen's gentlemen pensioners. This awakened the bishops, who fell upon their knees before the Queen, and intreated her majesty, if she had any regard for the church, to supersede the commission; which she did, though, it is well enough known, the Queen had no scruple of conscience about plundering the church of its revenues.

To return to the puritans. The Rev. Mr. *Robert Wright*, domestic chaplain to the late lord *Rich*, of *Rochford* in *Essex*, fell into the hands of the bishop of *London* last year,\* [1581;] he was a learned man, and had lived 14 years in the university of *Cambridge*; but being dissatisfied with episcopal ordination, went over to *Antwerp*, and was ordained by the laying on of the hands of the presbytery of that place. Upon his return home, lord *Rich* took him into his family, at *Rochford* in the *hundreds* of *Essex*, where he preached constantly in his lordship's chapel, and no where else, because he could obtain no licence from the bishop. He was an admired preacher, and universally beloved by the clergy of the county, for his great seriousness and piety. While his lordship was alive he protected him from danger, but his noble patron was no sooner dead, than the bishop of *London* laid hands on him, and confined him in

† *Strype's Ann.* vol iii. p. 114.

\* *Ibid*, p. 123.

the *Gate-house*, for saying, that to keep the *Queen's birth-day* as an *HOLIDAY* was to make her an idol. When the good man had been shut up from his family and friends several months, he petitioned the bishop to be brought to his trial, or admitted to bail. But all the answer his lordship returned was, that *he deserved to lie in prison seven years*. This usage, together with Mr. *Wright's* open and undisguised honesty and piety, moved the compassion of his keeper, in so much that his poor wife being in child-bed and distress, he gave him leave, with the private allowance of the secretary of state, to make her a visit at *Rochford* upon his *parole* ; but it happened that Dr. *Ford* the civilian, meeting him upon the road, acquainted the bishop with his escape, who thereupon fell into a violent passion, and sending immediately for the keeper, demanded to see his prisoner. The keeper pleaded the great compassion of the case; but the bishop threatened to complain of him to the Queen, and have him turned out. Mr. *Wright* being informed of the keeper's danger, returned immediately to his prison, and wrote to the *lord treasurer* on his behalf. "Oh! my lord, (says he) I most humbly crave your lordship's favour that I may be delivered from such unpitiful minds; and especially that your lordship will stand a good lord to my *keeper*, that he may not be discouraged from favouring those that profess true religion." Upon this the keeper was pardoned.

But the bishop resolved to take full satisfaction of the prisoner; accordingly he sent for him before the commissioners, and examined him upon articles concerning the book of *common prayer*; concerning rites and ceremonies; concerning praying for the Queen and the church; and concerning the established form of ordaining ministers. He was charged with preaching without a licence, and with being no better than a mere *layman*. To which he made the following answers; That he thought the book of *common prayer*, in the main, *good and godly*, but could not answer for every particular. That as to rites and ceremonies, he thought his resorting to churches where they were used, was a sufficient proof that he allowed them. That he prayed for the Queen, and for all ministers of God's word, and consequently for archbishops and bishops, &c.—

That he was but a private chaplain, and knew no law that required a licence for such a place. But he could not yield himself to be a mere *layman*, having preached seven years in the university with licence; and since that time having been regularly ordained, by the laying on of the hands of the presbyters at *Antwerp*. The bishop having charged him with saying, that the election of ministers ought to be by their flocks, he owned it, and supposed it not to be an error; and added further, that in his opinion, every minister was a *bishop*, though not a *lord* bishop; and that his lordship of *London* must be of the same opinion, because when he rebuked Mr. *White* for striking one of his parishioners, he alledged that text, *that a bishop must be no striker*: which had been impertinent, if Mr. *White*, being only a minister, had not been a *bishop*. When his lordship charged him with saying, there were no lawful ministers in the church of *England*, he replied,\* “I will be content to be condemned, if I bring not two hundred witnesses for my discharge of this accusation. *I do as certainly believe; that there are lawful ministers in England, as that there is a sun in the sky.* In *Essex*, I can bring twenty godly ministers, all preachers, who will testify that they love me, and have cause to think that I love and reverence them. I preached seven years in the university of *Cambridge* with approbation, and have a testimonial to produce under the hands and seals of the master and fellows of *Christ* college, being all ministers at that time, of my good behavior.” However, all he could say was to no purpose, the bishop would not allow his *orders*, and therefore pronounced him a *layman*, and incapable of holding any living in the church.

The lord *Rich* and divers honorable knights and gentlemen in *Essex*. had petitioned the bishop of *London* for a licence, that Mr. *Wright* might preach publicly in any place within his diocese; but his lordship always refused it, *because he was no minister*, that is, had only been ordained among the foreign churches. But this was certainly contrary to law; for the statute 13 *Eliz. cap. 12*, admits the ministrations of those who had only been ordained ac-

\* *Strype's Ann.* vol. iii. Appendix, No. 23, 24.

according to the manner of the *Scots*, or other foreign churches : There were some scores, if not hundreds of them, now in the church ; and the archbishop of *Canterbury* at this very time commanded Dr. *Aubrey*, his vicar general, to license Mr. *John Morrison*, a *Scots* divine, who had had no other ordination than what he received from a *Scots presbytery*, to preach over his whole province. The words of the licence are as follow : “ Since you the aforesaid *John Morrison*, about five years past, in the town of *Garrat*, in the county of *Lothian*, of the kingdom of *Scotland*, were admitted and ordained to sacred orders and the holy ministry, by the imposition of hands, according to the laudable form and rite of the reformed church of *Scotland* : And since the congregation of that county of *Lothian* is conformable to the orthodox faith, and sincere religion now received in this realm of *England*, and established by public authority : We therefore as much as lies in us, and as by right we may, APPROVING AND RATIFYING THE FORM OF YOUR ORDINATION AND PREFERMENT DONE IN SUCH MANNER AFORESAID, grant unto you a licence and faculty, with the consent and express command of the most reverend father in Christ, the lord EDMUND by the divine providence archbishop of *Canterbury*, to us signified, That in such orders by you taken, you may, and have power in any convenient places in and throughout the whole province of *Canterbury*, to celebrate divine offices, to minister the sacraments, &c. as much as in us lies ; and we may de jure, and as far as the laws of the kingdom do allow.” This licence was dated April 6, 1582, and is as full a testimonial to the validity of presbyterial ordination, as can be desired. But the other notion was growing into fashion ; all orders of men are for assuming some peculiar characters and powers to themselves ; the bishops will be a distinct and superior order to presbyters ; and no man must be a minister of Christ, but on whom they lay their hands.\*

The behavior of the bishop of *London* towards the pu-

\* Here bishop *Warburton* remarks, “the puritans were even with them ; and to the jus divinum of *episcopacy*, opposed the jus divinum of *presbytery*, which was the making each other antichristian.” His lordship goes into this conclusion too hastily, and applies it without, nay against,

ritans, moved the compassion of some of the conforming clergy; the Rev. Mr. *Wilkin*, rector of *Danbury* in *Essex*, in a letter to the lord treasurer, writes thus:—"As some  
 ' might be thought over-earnest about trifles, so on the  
 ' other hand, there had been too severe and sharp punish-  
 ' ment for the same. Though I myself think reverently of  
 ' the book of *common prayer*, yet surely it is a reverence  
 ' due only to the sacred writings of holy scripture, to say  
 ' *the authors of them erred in nothing*, and to none other  
 ' books of men, of what learning soever. I have seen the  
 ' letters of the bishops to *Bullinger* and *Gualter*, when I  
 ' was at *Zurich* in the year 1567, in which they declare,  
 ' that they had no hand in passing the *book*, and had no other  
 ' choice, but to leave their places to papists, or accept them  
 ' as they were; but they professed and promised never to  
 ' urge their brethren to those things; and also, when op-  
 ' portunity should serve, to seek reformation." How dif-  
 ferent was the practice of these prelates from their former  
 professions!

But not only the clergy, but the whole country also ex-  
 claimed against the bishops for their high proceedings; the  
 justices of peace of the county of *Suffolk* were so moved,  
 that, notwithstanding his lordship's late citation of them be-  
 fore the council, they wrote again to *their honors*, praying  
 them to interpose in behalf of the injuries that were offered  
 to divers godly ministers. The words of their supplication  
 are worth remembering, because they discover the cruelty  
 of the commissioners, who made no distinction between the  
 vilest of criminals, and conscientious ministers. "The pain-  
 ' ful ministers of the word (say they) are marshalled with  
 ' the worst malefactors, presented, indicted, arraigned, and  
 ' condemned, for matters, as we presume, of very slender  
 ' moment: some for leaving the holidays *unbidden*; some  
 ' for singing the psalm *Nunc Dimittis* in the morning; some  
 ' for turning the questions in baptism concerning faith, from

authority, to the puritans: they never required such as had been epis-  
 copally ordained to be re-ordained; but, in the height of their power,  
 declared, "We hold ordination by a *bishop* to be for substance valid and  
 "not to be disclaimed by any that have received it." See our author  
 vol. iii. ED.



‘ the infants to the godfathers, which is but *you* for *thou* ;  
 ‘ some for leaving out the *cross in baptism* ; some for leaving  
 ‘ out *the ring in marriage*. A most pitiful thing it is, to  
 ‘ see the back of the law turned to the adversary [the pa-  
 ‘ pists] and the edge with all the sharpness laid upon the  
 ‘ sound and true-hearted subject.†

“ We grant *order* to be the rule of the spirit of God, and  
 ‘ desire uniformity in all the duties of the church, accord-  
 ‘ ing to *the proportion of faith* ; but if these weak ceremo-  
 ‘ nies are so indifferent, as to be left to the discretion of  
 ‘ ministers, we think it (under correction) very hard to have  
 ‘ them go under so hard handling, to the utter discredit of  
 ‘ their whole ministry, and the profession of truth.”

“ We serve her majesty and the country [as magistrates  
 ‘ and justices of the peace] according to law ; we reverence  
 ‘ the law and law-maker ; when the law speaks, we keep  
 ‘ silence ; when it commandeth we obey. By law we pro-  
 ‘ ceed against all offenders ; we touch none that the law  
 ‘ spareth, and spare none that the law toucheth ; we allow  
 ‘ not of *papists* ; of the *family of love* ; of *anabaptists*, or  
 ‘ *brownists*. No, we punish all these.‡

“ And yet we are christened with the odious name of *pu-  
 ‘ ritans* ; a term compounded of the heresies above men-  
 ‘ tioned, which we disclaim. The *papists* pretend to be pure  
 ‘ and immaculate ; the *family of love* cannot sin, they being  
 ‘ deified (as they say) in God. But we groan under the bur-  
 ‘ then of our sins, and confess them to God ; and at the same  
 ‘ time we labor to keep ourselves and our profession un-  
 ‘ blameable ; this is our *puritanism* ; a name given to such  
 ‘ magistrates and ministers, and others that have a strict  
 ‘ eye upon their juggling.

“ We think ourselves bound in duty to unfold these mat-

† Strype's Ann. vol. iii. p. 183, 4.

‡ Bishop Maddox observes, the expressions in *Strype* are stronger.—  
 “ We allow not of the papists their subtilties and hypocrisies : we al-  
 “ low not of the family of love, an egg of the same nest : we allow not  
 “ of the anabaptists, and their communion : we allow not of *Brown*, the  
 “ overthrower of church and commonwealth ! we abhor all these ; no  
 “ (we) punish all these.” This, we must own with his lordship, was not  
 the language of real and consistent friends to liberty of conscience. Ed.



to your lordships; and if you shall please to call us, the proof of them, it is the thing we most desire."

His supplication produced a letter from the council to the judges of the assize, commanding them not to give ear to malicious informers against peaceful and faithful ministers, nor to match them at the bar with rogues, felons, or rebels; but to put a difference in the face of the world, between those of another faith, and they who differ only in ceremonies, and yet diligently and soundly preach religion. The judges were struck with this letter, and the bishop of London, with his attendants, returned from his visitation full of discontent. Indeed his lordship had so many enemies, that he grew weary of his office, and petitioned the Queen to exchange it for that of a private citizen, that he might retire and be out of the way; or rather that he might kindle a new flame in those parts; but her majesty refused his request.

Notwithstanding these slight appearances in favor of the Puritans, two ministers of the Brownist persuasion were condemned, and put to death this summer for non-conformity. viz. Mr. *Elias Thacker*, hanged at *St. Edmundsbury*, 4th, and Mr. *John Copping* two days after, June 6th. Their indictments were for spreading certain books maliciously penned by *Robert Brown* against the book of common prayer established by the laws of this realm. The offence charged upon *Brown's* book was, that it subverted the constitution of the church, and acknowledged her majesty's supremacy civilly, but not otherwise, as appears by the report which the judges sent to court, viz. That the ministers instead of acknowledging her majesty's supremacy in all causes, would allow it only in civil.\* This the judges took hold of to aggravate their offence to the queen, after they had passed sentence upon them, on the statute of the 23d *Elix. against spreading seditious*, and for refusing the oath of supremacy. Mr. *Copping* had suffered a long and illegal imprisonment from the bishop of his diocese; his wife being brought to bed while he was under confinement, he was charged with not

\* Strype's Annals, vol. iii. p. 186.

suffering his child to be baptised ; to which he answered, that his conscience could not admit it to be done with *god-fathers* and *godmothers*, and he could get no preacher to do it without. He was accused further with saying, the Queen was perjured, because she had sworn to set forth God's glory *directly as by the scriptures are appointed*, and did not; but these were only circumstances, to support the grand charge of *sedition* in spreading *Brown's* book. However, it seemed a little hard to hang men for spreading a seditious book, at a time when the author of that very book [*Brown*] was pardoned and set at liberty. Both the prisoners died by their principles ; for though Dr. *Still* the archbishop's chaplain, and others, travailed and conferred with them, yet at the very hour of their death they remained immoveable : They were both sound in the doctrinal articles of the church of *England*, and of unblemished lives.\* One *Wilsford* a layman should have suffered with them, but upon conference with secretary *Wilson*, who told him the Queen's supremacy might be understood only of her majesty's civil power over ecclesiastical persons, he took the oath and was discharged.

While the bishops were thus harrassing honest and conscientious *ministers*, for scrupling the ceremonies of the church, practical religion was at a very low ebb; the fashionable vices of the times were, *profane swearing, drunkenness, revelling, gaming, and profanation of the Lord's day* ; yet there was no *discipline* for these offenders, nor do I find any such, cited into the spiritual courts, or shut up in prisons. If men came to their parish churches, and approved of the *habits* and *ceremonies*, other offences were overlooked, and

§ Bishop *Warburton* imputes it to party and prejudice in Mr. *Neal*, that he doth not point out the difference in this case ; which his lordship states to be the same as between “ the dispensers of poison hanged for going on obstinately in mischief, and of him who compounded the poison, but was on his repentance pardoned.” But no such distinction existed, and his lordship lost sight of the real state of the case.—*Brown* did not renounce his principles till seven years after he was committed to prison for publishing his book, and was dismissed not on his repentance, but at the intercession of the lord treasurer. So far from repenting, he went up and down inveighing against bishops, &c. and gathered a separate congregation on his own principles. See our Author, p. 329, 30.

\* *Strype's Annals*, vol. ii. p. 532, 3.

the court was easy. At *Paris Gardens*, in *Southwark*, there were public sports on the *Lord's day* for the entertainment of great numbers of people who resorted thither ; but on the 13th of January being *Sunday*, it happened that one of the scaffolds, being crowded with people, fell down, by which accident some were killed, and a great many wounded. This was thought to be a judgment from Heaven ; for the lord-mayor, in the account he gives of it to the treasurer, says, “ That it gives great occasion to acknowledge the hand of God for such abuse of his sabbath day, and moveth me in conscience to give order for redress of such contempt of God's service ; adding, that for this purpose he had treated with some justices of peace in *Surry*, who expressed a very good zeal, but alledged want of commission, which he referred to the consideration of his lordship.”\* But the court paid no regard to such remonstrances ; and the Queen had her ends, in encouraging the *sports, pastimes, and revellings* of the people on *Sundays* and holidays.

This year died the famous northern apostle Mr. *Bernard Gilpin*, minister of *Houghton* in the bishopric of *Durham*. He was born at *Kentmire* in *Westmoreland*, 1517, of an ancient and honorable family, and was entered into *Queen's college, Oxford*, in the year 1533. He continued a papist all the reign of King *Henry VIII.* but was converted by the lectures of *Peter Martyr*, in the beginning of the reign of *Edward VI.* He was remarkably honest, and open to conviction, but did not separate from the *Romish* communion till he was persuaded the pope was antichrist. *Cuthbert Tonsal*, bishop of *Durham*, was his uncle by the mother's side, by whose encouragement he travelled to *Paris, Lovain*, and other parts, being still for the real presence of Christ in the sacrament, though not for transubstantiation. Returning home in the days of Queen *Mary*, his uncle placed him first in the rectory of *Essington*, and afterwards at *Houghton*, a large parish containing fourteen villages ; here he labored in the work of the ministry, and was often exposed to danger, but constantly preserved by his uncle bishop *Tonsal*, who was averse to burning men for religion. Mis-

\* Strype's Annals, vol. ii. p. 532, 3.

erable and heathenish was the condition of these northern counties at this time, with respect to religion ! Mr. *Gilpin* beheld it with tears of compassion, and resolved at his own expence to visit the desolate churches of *Northumberland*, and the parts adjoining, called *Riddesdale* and *Tindale*, once every year, to preach the gospel, and distribute to the necessities of the poor, which he continued till his death ; this gained him the veneration of all ranks of people in those parts ; but though he had such a powerful skreen as bishop *Tonstal*, yet the fame of his doctrine, which was *Lutheran*, reaching the ears of *Bonner*, he sent for him to *London* ; the reverend man ordered his servant to prepare him a long shirt, expecting to be burnt, but before he came to *London* Queen *Mary* died. Upon the accession of Queen *Elizabeth*, Mr. *Gilpin*, having a fair estate of his own, erected a grammar-school, and allowed maintenance for a master and usher ; himself choosing out of the school such as he liked best for his own private instruction. Many learned men, who afterwards adorned the church by their labors and uprightness of life, were educated by him in his domestic academy. Many gentlemen's sons resorted to him, some of whom were boarded in the town, and others in his own house ; besides, he took many poor men's sons under his care, giving them meat, drink, clothes, and education.

In the year 1560, he was offered the bishopric of *Carlisle*, and was urged to accept it by the earl of *Bedford*, bishop *Sandys*, and others, with the most powerful motives ; but he desired to be excused, and in that resolution remained unmoveable : His reasons were taken from the largeness of the dioceses, which were too great for the inspection of one person ; for he was so strongly possessed of the duty of *bishops*, and of the charge of souls that was committed to them, that he could never be persuaded to keep two livings, over both of which he could not have a personal inspection, and perform all the offices of a *pastor* ; he added further, that he had so many friends and relations in those parts to gratify or connive at, that he could not continue an honest man and be their *bishop*. But though Mr. *Gilpin* would not be a *bishop*, he supplied the place of one, by preaching.

by hospitality, by erecting schools, by taking care of the poor, and providing for destitute churches ; in all which he was countenanced and encouraged, by the learned and reverend *James Pilkington*, then bishop of *Durham*, by whom he was excused from *subscriptions, habits*, and a strict observance of *ceremonies*, it being his fixed opinion, that *no human invention should take place in the church, instead of a divine institution*. After bishop *Pilkington's* death *Dr. Barnes* was chosen his successor, who was disgusted at *Mr. Gilpin's* popularity, and gave him trouble : Once when he was setting out upon his annual visitation to *Riddesdale* and *Tindal*, the bishop summoned him to preach before him, which he excused in the handsomest manner he could, and went his progress ; but upon his return, he found himself suspended for contempt, from all ecclesiastical employments. The bishop afterwards sent for him again on a sudden, and commanded him to preach, but then he pleaded his suspension, and his not being provided ; the bishop immediately took off his suspension, and would not excuse his preaching, upon which he went into the pulpit, and discoursed upon the high charge of a christian bishop ; and having exposed the corruptions of the clergy, he boldly addressed himself to his lordship in these words ; “ Let not  
‘ your lordship say, these crimes have been committed with-  
‘ out my knowledge, for whatsoever you yourself do in per-  
‘ son, or suffer through your connivance to be done by oth-  
‘ ers, is wholly your own ; therefore, in the presence of God,  
‘ angels and men, I pronounce your *fatherhood* to be the  
‘ author of all these evils ; and I and this whole congrega-  
‘ tion will be a witness in the day of judgment, that these  
‘ things have come to your ears.” All men thought the bishop would have deprived *Mr. Gilpin* for this freedom, as soon as he came out of the pulpit, but by the good providence of God, it had a quite different effect ; the bishop thanked him for his faithful reproof, and after this suffered him to go on with his annual progress, giving him no further disturbance. At length his lean body being quite worn out with labor and travail, and feeling the approaches of death, he commanded the poor to be called together, and took a solemn leave of them ; afterwards he did the

like by his relations and friends; then giving himself up to God, he took his bed about the end of February, and died March 4, 1588, in the 66th year of his age. He was a heavenly man, endued with a large and generous soul, of a tall stature of body, with a Roman nose; his clothes were neat and plain; for he was frugal in his own dress, though very bountiful to others. His doors were always open for the entertainment of strangers. He boarded in his own house twenty-four scholars, most of whom were upon charity. He kept a table for the poor every Lord's day, from *Michaelmas* to *Easter*, and expended 500 pounds for a free school for their children. Upon the whole, he was a pious, devout, and open-hearted divine; a conscientious non-conformist, but against *separation*. He was accounted a *saint* by his very enemies, if he had any such, being full of faith and good works; and was at last put into his grave as a shock of corn fully ripe.†

The same year died EDMUND GRINDAL, archbishop of *Canterbury*, born at *Copland* in the county of *Cumberland*, in the year 1519, and educated in *Cambridge*. He was a famous preacher in King *Edward's* days, and was nominated by him to a bishopric, when he was only thirty-three years of age; but that King dying soon after, he went into exile, and imbibed the principles of a further reformation than had as yet obtained in *England*. Upon Queen *Elizabeth's* accession he returned to *England*, and was advanced first to the see of *London*, and then to *York* and *Canterbury*, though he could hardly persuade himself for some time to wear the habits, and comply with the ceremonies of the church; nor did he ever heartily approve them, yet thought it better to support the reformation on that foot, than hazard it back into the hands of the papists.† He was of a mild and moderate temper, easy of access, and affable even in his highest exaltation. He is blamed by some, for his gentle usage of the puritans, though he used them worse than he would have done, if he had been left

† "The worth and labors of this excellent man," it was observed (in the *New Annual Register* for 1789) have been amply displayed in the present century, by the elegant pen of one of his own name and family."

[20.]

† Grindal's Life, p. 295.



to himself. About a year or two after his promotion to the see of *Canterbury*, he lost the Queen's favor on account of the *prophesyings*, and was suspended for some years, during which time many puritan ministers took shelter in the counties of *Kent* and *Surry*, &c. which made more work for his successor. The good old archbishop being blind and broken-hearted, the Queen took off his sequestration about a year before his death, and sent to acquaint him, that if he would resign, he should have her favor, and an honorable pension; which he promised to accept within six months; but *Whitgift* who was designed for his successor, refusing to enter upon the see while *Grindal* lived, he made a shift to hold it till his death, which happened July 6th, 1583, in the 63d year of his age. *Camden* calls him a religious and grave divine. *Hollingshead* says, he was so studious that *his book was his bride, and his study his bride-chamber, in which he spent his eye-sight, his strength, and his health.* He was certainly a learned and venerable prelate, and had a high esteem for the name and doctrines of *Calvin*, with whom, and with the *German* divines, he held a constant correspondence. His high stations did not make him proud; but if we may believe his successor in the see of *York*, archbishop *Sandys*, he must be tainted with avarice (as most of the Queen's bishops were) because, within two months after he was translated to *Canterbury*, he gave to his kinsmen and servants, and sold for round sums of money to himself, six-score leases and patents, even then when they were thought not to be good in law.\* But upon the whole, he was one of the best of Queen *Elizabeth's* bishops. He lies buried in the chancel of the church at *Croydon*, where his effigies is to be seen at length in his doctor's robes, and in a praying posture.†

\* *Strype's Ann.* vol. ult. suppl. p. 21.

† This prelate is the *Algrind* of *Spencer*, which is the anagram of his name. The *French* protestants were very much indebted to his influence and activity in obtaining for them a settlement in *England*, in their own method of worship. This was the beginning of the *Walloon* church, situated in *Threadneedle-street*, *London*; which has ever since been appropriated to the use of the *French* nation.

*British Biography*, vol. iii. p. 161. *Granger's Biographical History*, vol. ii. p. 204, note 8vo. Ed.



## CHAP. VII.

*From the death of Archbishop GRINDAL, to the Spanish Invasion in 1588.*

**UPON** the death of GRINDAL, Dr. JOHN WHITGIFT, bishop of *Worcester*, was translated to the see of *Canterbury*, and confirmed September 23d, 1583. He had distinguished himself in the controversy against the *puritans*, and was therefore thought the most proper person to reduce their numbers. Upon his advancement the Queen charged him ‘to restore the discipline of the church, and the uniformity established by law, which, (says her majesty) through the connivance of some *prelates*, the obstinacy of the *puritans*, and the power of some noblemen, is run out of square.” Accordingly the very first week, his *grace* published the following articles, and sent them to the bishops of his province, for their direction in the government of their several dioceses :—

“That all preaching, catechising, and praying in any private family, where any are present besides the family, be utterly extinguished.\* That none do preach or catechise except also he will read the whole service, and administer the sacraments four times a year. That all preachers, and others in ecclesiastical orders, do at all times wear the *habits* prescribed. That none be admitted to preach unless he be ordained according to the manner of the church of *England*. That none be admitted to preach or execute any part of the ecclesiastical function, unless he subscribe the three following articles : 1st, *To the Queen’s SUPREMACY over all persons, and in all causes ecclesiastical and civil within her majesty’s dominions.* 2dly, *To the book of common-prayer, and of the ordination of priests and deacons, as containing nothing contrary to the word of GOD ; and that they will use it in all their public ministra-*

\* Life of Whitgift, p. 118.

*tions, and no other. 8dly, To the thirty-nine articles of the church of England, agreed upon in the synod of 1562, and afterwards confirmed by parliament.*” And with what severity his grace enforced these articles, will be seen presently.

It is easy to observe, that they were all levelled at the puritans ; but the most disinterested *civil lawyers* of these times were of opinion, that his grace had no legal authority to impose those, or any other articles, upon the clergy, without the *broad seal* ; and that all his proceedings upon them were an abuse of the royal prerogative, contrary to the laws of the land, and consequently so many acts of oppression upon the subject. Their reasons were ;

1. Because the statute of the 25th *Henry VIIIth.* chap. 20, expressly prohibits “ the whole body of the clergy, or any one of them, to put in use any constitutions, or canons already made, or hereafter to be made, except they be made in convocation assembled by the King’s writ, his royal assent being also had thereunto, on pain of fine and imprisonment.

2. Because, by the statute of 1st *Eliz.* chap. 3, “ All such jurisdictions, privileges, superiorities, pre-eminencies spiritual or ecclesiastical power and authority, which hath heretofore been, or may lawfully be executed or used for the visitation of the ecclesiastical state and persons, and for reformation of the same, and of all manner of errors, heresies, schisms, abuses, contempts, and enormities, are for ever united to the imperial crown of these realms” — Whence it follows, that all power is taken from the *bishops*, except that of governing their dioceses according to the laws of the land, or according to any further injunctions they may receive from the crown under the *broad seal*.

3. Because some of the *archbishop’s* articles were directly contrary to the statute laws of the realm, which the Queen herself has not power to alter or dispense with. By the 13th *Eliz.* chap. 12, the subscription of the clergy is limited to those articles of the church, which relate to the *doctrines of faith, and administration of the sacraments ONLY* ;

whereas the bishop enjoined them to subscribe the whole thirty-nine. And by the preamble of the same statute, all ordinations in the times of popery, or after the manner of foreign reformed churches, are admitted to be valid, so that such may enjoy any ecclesiastical preferment in the church : but the archbishop says, [*Art 4th*] *That none shall be admitted to preach, unless he be ordained according to the manner of the church of England.* Upon these accounts if the Queen had fallen out with him, he might have incurred the guilt of a *præmunire*.

To these arguments it was replied by his grace's lawyers,

1. *That by the canon law, the archbishop has power to make laws for the well-government of the church, so far as they do not encounter the peace of the church, and quietness of the realm.* To which it was answered, this might be true in times of popery, but the case was very much altered since the reformation, because now the archbishops and bishop's authority is derived from the person of the Queen only ; for the late Queen *Mary*, having surrendered back all ecclesiastical jurisdiction into the hands of the pope, the present Queen upon her accession had no jurisdiction resident in her person, till the statute of recognition, *Elix. 1st*, by which the archbishops and bishops of this realm, being exempted from the jurisdiction of the pope, are made subject to the Queen, to govern her people in ecclesiastical causes, as her other subjects govern the same (according to their places) in civil causes ;\* so that the clergy are no more to be called the *archbishops* or *bishop's children*, but the Queen's liege people, and are to be governed by them, according to the laws, which laws are such *canons, constitutions, and synodals provincial*, as were in force before 25 *Henry VIII.* and are not contrary, nor repugnant to the laws and customs of the realm, nor derogatory to her majesty's prerogative royal ; and therefore all canons made before 25 *Henry VIII.* giving to the archbishops or bishops an unlimited power over the clergy, as derived from the *see of Rome*, are utterly void, such *canons* being directly against the laws and customs of the realm, which do not admit of any subject executing a law but by authority from the prince ;

\* MS. p. 661.

and they are derogatory to her majesty's *prerogative royal*, because hereby some of her subjects might claim an unlimited power over her other subjects, independent of the crown, and by their private authority command or forbid what they please. Since then the archbishop's articles were framed by his own private authority, they cannot be justified by any of the canons now in force. And *as for the peace of the church and quiet of the realm*, they were so far from promoting them, that they were like to throw both into confusion.

2. It was said that *the Queen, as head of the church, had power to publish articles and injunctions for reducing the clergy to uniformity; and that the archbishop had the Queen's licence and consent for what he did*. But the Queen herself had no authority to publish articles and injunctions in opposition to the laws; and as for her majesty's *permission and consent*, it could be no warrant to the archbishop, except it had been under the *great seal*. And if the archbishop had no legal authority to command, the clergy were not obliged to obey; the oath of canonical obedience does not bind in this case, because it is limited to *licitis et honestis, things lawful and honest*; whereas the present articles being against law, they were enforced by no legal authority, and were such as the ministers could not *honestly* consent to.

Notwithstanding these objections, the archbishop, in his primary metropolitical visitation, insisted peremptorily, that all who enjoyed any office or benefice in the church should subscribe the *three articles* above-mentioned; the second of which he knew the puritans would refuse: Accordingly there were suspended for not subscribing,

In the county of <i>Norfolk</i>	-	-	-	64	Ministers.
<i>Suffolk</i>	-	-	-	60	
<i>Sussex, about</i>	-	-	-	30	
<i>Essex</i>	-	-	-	38	
<i>Kent</i>	-	-	19 or 20		
<i>Lincolnshire</i>	-	-	21		

---

In all 233

All whose names are now before me; besides great numbers in the diocese of *Peterborough*, in the city of *London*, and

proportionable in other counties ; some of whom were dignitaries in the church, and most of them graduates in the university ; of these some were allowed time, but forty-nine were absolutely deprived at once.\*

Among the *suspended ministers* his grace shewed some particular favor to those of *Sussex*, at the intercession of some great persons ; for after a long dispute and many arguments before himself at *Lambeth*, he accepted of the subscription of 6 or 7, with their own explication of the *rubrics*, and with a declaration that their subscription was not to be understood in any other sense, than *as far as the books were agreeable to the word of God, and to the substance of religion established in the church of England, and to the analogy of faith ; and that it did not extend to any thing not expressed in the said books.*† Of all which the archbishop allowed them an authentic copy in writing, dated Dec. 6th, 1583, and ordered his chancellor to send letters to *Chichester*, that the rest of the suspended ministers in that county might be indulged the same favor.

Many good and pious men strained their consciences on this occasion ; some subscribed the articles with this protestation in open court, *as far as they are agreeable to the word of God ;* and others *dempto secundo*, that is, *taking away the second.* Many, upon better consideration, repented their subscribing in this manner, and would have rased out their names, but it was not permitted. Some, who were allured to subscribe with the promises of favor and better preferment, were neglected and forgotten, and troubled in the *commissaries court* as much as before.§ The court took no notice of their *protestations* or *reserves* ; they wanted nothing but their *hands*, and when they had got them, they were all listed under the same colors, and published to the world as *absolute subscribers*.

The body of the inferior clergy wished and prayed for some amendments in the *service book*, to make their brethren easy. “I am sure (says a learned divine of these times) that ‘this good would come of it. (1.) It would please Almighty God. (2.) The learned ministers would be more

\* MS. p. 436. † MS. p. 323, 405. Life of Whitgift, p. 129.

§ Fenner’s Answer to Dr. Bridges, p. 119, 120.

mly united against the papists. (3.) The good ministers  
d good subjects, whereof many are now at *Weeping-*  
*cross*, would be cheered ; and many able students encour-  
ed to take upon them the ministry. And, (4.) Hereby  
e *papists*, and more careless sort of professors, would be  
ore easily won to religion. If any object, that excellent  
en were publishers of the BOOK OF PRAYER, and that it  
ould be some disgrace to the church to alter it, I answer,  
t. That though worthy men are to be accounted of, yet  
eir oversights in matters of religion are not to be hon-  
ed by subscriptions. 2dly. The reformation of the *ser-*  
*vice book* can be no disgrace to us nor them, for men's  
cond thoughts are wiser than their first ; and the papists  
the late times of *Pius V.* reformed our *Lady's Psalter*.  
o conclude, if amendments to the book be inconvenient,  
must be either in regard of protestants or papists ; it  
nnot be in regard of *protestants*, for very great numbers  
them pray heartily to God for it. And if it be in re-  
rd of the *papists*, we are not to mind them ; for they  
ose *captains* say, that we have neither church, nor sa-  
ments, nor ministers, nor Queen, in *England*, are not  
eatly to be regarded of us."\*

but *Whitgift* was to be influenced by no such arguments;  
was against all alterations in the liturgy, for this gener-  
eason, *Lest the church should be thought to have main-*  
*ed an error*: which is surprising to come from the mouth  
protestant bishop, who had so lately separated from  
*infallible church of Rome*. His grace's arguments for  
scription to his articles are no less remarkable. 1st.  
ou do not subscribe to the *book of common prayer*, you  
n effect say there is no true service of God, nor admin-  
tion of sacraments in the land. 2dly. If you do not  
scribe the *book of ordination of priests*, &c. then our  
ing must be unlawful, and we have no true ministry  
church in *England*. 3dly. If you do not subscribe  
*book of the thirty-nine articles*, you deny true doctrine  
e established among us, which is the main note of a  
church.† Could an honest man, and a great scholar,  
earnest with this reasoning? Might not the puritans

\* MS. p. 156.

† Life of Whitgift, p. 125.

dislike some things in the service book without invalidating the whole? Did not *his grace* know, that they offered to subscribe to the use of the *service book*, as far as they could apprehend it consonant to truth, though they could not give it under their hands, that *there was nothing in it contrary to the word of God*, nor promise to use the whole without the least variation, in their public ministry? But according to the archbishop's logic, the church must be *infallible* or no church at all. The liturgy must be *perfect in every phrase and sentence*, or it is no true service of God; and every article of the church must be *agreeable to scripture*, or they contain no true doctrine at all. He told the ministers, that all who did not subscribe his articles were *schismatics*; that they had separated themselves from the church; and declared peremptorily, that they should be turned out of it.

This conduct of the archbishop was exposed in a pamphlet, entitled the *Practice of Prelates*;† which says, that none ever used good ministers so severely since the reformation as he; that his severe proceedings were against the judgment of many of his brethren the bishops, and that the devil, the common enemy of mankind, had certainly a hand in it.—For who of the ministers (says this writer) have been tumultuous or unpeaceable? Have they not striven for peace in their ministry, in their writings, and by their example; and sought for their discipline only by lawful and dutiful means? Why then should the archbishop tyrannize over his fellow ministers, and starve many thousand souls, by depriving all who refuse subscription? Why should he lay such stress upon popish opinions, and upon an hierarchy that never obtained till the approach of antichrist?

Loud were the cries of these poor sufferers and their distressed families to *Heaven* for mercy, as well as to their *superiors on earth*! Their temptations were strong; for as men, they were moved with compassion for their *wives and little ones*; and as faithful ministers of Christ, they were desirous to be useful, and to preserve the *testimony of a good conscience*. Some through frailty were overcome and submitted, but most of them cast themselves and families upon the providence of God; having written to the Queen, to the

† Life of Whitgift, p. 122.



archbishop, and to the lords of the council; and after some time to the parliament, for a friendly conference, or a public disputation, when and where, and before whom they pleased; though without success.\*

The supplication of the *Norfolk ministers* to the lords of the council, signed with twenty hands; the supplication of the *Lincolnshire ministers* with twenty-one hands; the supplication of the *Essex ministers* with twenty-seven hands; the supplication of the *Oxfordshire ministers* with — hands; the supplication of the *ministers of Kent* with seventeen hands, are now before me; besides the supplication of the *London ministers*, and of those of the *diocese of Ely and Cambridgeshire*; representing in most moving language their unhappy circumstances, “We commend, ‘ they say, to your honors compassion, our *poor families*, ‘ but much more do we commend *our doubtful, fearful and* ‘ *distressed consciences*, together with the cries of our poor ‘ people, who are hungering after the word, and are now ‘ as sheep having no shepherd. We have applied to the ‘ archbishop, but can get no relief, we therefore humbly beg ‘ it at your honors hands.”—† They declare their readiness to subscribe the doctrinal articles of the church, according to the *Stat. 13 Eliz. cap. 12.* and to the other articles, *as far as they are not repugnant to the word of God.* And they promise further, if they may be dispensed with as to *subscription*, that they will make no disturbance in the church, nor separate from it.

The *Kentish ministers*, in their supplication to the lords of the council, professed their reverence for the established church,‡ and their esteem for the book of *common prayer*,

\* In the year 1583, one *John Lewis*, for denying the deity of Christ, was burnt at *Norwich*. Many of the popish persuasion, under the charge of treason, were executed in different places. But, notwithstanding these severities, “her majesty (says *Fuller*) was most merciful unto many popish malefactors, whose lives stood forfeited to the law, in the rigor thereof. Seventy, who had been condemned, by one act of grace were pardoned and sent beyond sea.” *Church History*, b. ix. p. 169, 170. ED. † MS. p. 328, 330, &c.

‡ This has been considered, by bishop *Warburton*, as inconsistent with calling the “*established church* an hierarchy, that never obtained till the approach of antichrist.” But the charge of inconsistency

so far as that they saw no necessity of separating from the unity of the church on that account: That they believed the word preached, and the sacraments administered according to *authority*, touching the substance, to be lawful. They promised to shew themselves obedient to the Queen, in all causes *ecclesiastical and civil*; but then they added, that *there were many things that needed reformation, which therefore they could not honestly set their hands to.\** They conclude with praying for indulgence, and subscribe themselves *their honors' daily and faithful orators, the ministers of Kent suspended from the execution of their ministry.*

The *London ministers* applied to the convocation, and 15 of them offered to subscribe to the Queen's *supremacy*, to the use of the *common prayer book*, and to the doctrinal articles of the church, if they might be restored; but then add, "*We dare not say there is nothing in the three books repugnant to the word of God, till we are otherwise enlightened*; and therefore humbly pray our brethren in convocation, to be a means to the Queen and parliament, that we may not be pressed to an *absolute subscription*, but be suffered to go on in the quiet discharge of the duties of our calling, as we have done heretofore, to the honor of Almighty God, and the edification of his church. We protest, before God and our Savior Jesus Christ, that if by any means, by doing that which is not wicked, we might continue still our labors in the gospel, we would gladly and willingly do any thing that might procure that blessing, esteeming it more than all the riches in the world; but if we cannot be suffered to continue in our places and callings, we beseech the Lord to shew greater mercy to those by whom this affliction shall be brought upon us, and upon the people committed to our charge, for whom we will not cease to pray, that the *good work* which the Lord has begun by our labors may still be advanced, to that day when the Lord shall give them and us comfort one in another, and in his presence everlasting

does not lie against the *Kentish* ministers who speak above, unless it be proved that they were the authors of the pamphlet, entitled the *Practice of Prelates*, which contains the other sentiments. Ed.

\* MS. p. 326.

‘happiness and eternal glory.’\* This petition was presented to the convocation, in the first sessions of the next parliament, in the name of *the ministers of London that had refused to subscribe the articles lately enforced upon them*; with an humble request to have their doubts satisfied by conference, or any other way.

Among the suspended ministers of *London*, was the learned and virtuous Mr. *Barber*, who preached four times a week at *Bow Church*: His parishioners, to the number of 120, signed a petition to the lord-mayor and court of aldermen for his release, but that court could not obtain it.† March 4, 1584, the learned Mr. *Field* and Mr. *Egerton* were suspended. Mr. *Field* had been often in *bonds* for non-conformity; he was minister of *Aldermary*, and had admitted an assembly of ministers at his house, among whom were some *Scots* divines, who being disaffected to the hierarchy, the assembly was declared an unlawful conventicle, and Mr. *Field* was suspended from his ministry for entertaining them; but the rest were deprived for not subscribing.

Many gentlemen of reputation both in city and country appeared for the *suspended ministers*, as well out of regard to their poor families, as for the sake of religion, it being impossible to supply so many vacancies as were made in the church upon this occasion. The gentlemen of *Norfolk*, *Cambridgeshire*, and *Kent*, interceded with the archbishop, alledging that it was very hard to deal with men so severely for a few rites and ceremonies, when they were neither *heretics* nor *schismatics*, and when the country wanted their useful preaching. The parishioners of the several places from whence the ministers were ejected, signed petitions to the lord treasurer, and others of the Queen’s council, beseeching them, in the *bowels of Jesus Christ*, that their ministers being of an upright and holy conversation, and diligent preachers of the word of God, might be restored, or otherwise (their livings being only of small value) their souls would be in danger of perishing for lack of knowledge.‡

The inhabitants of *Malden* in *Essex* sent up a complaint

\* MS. p. 595, 623.

† MS. p. 460, 568, &c.

‡ MS. p. 457.

to the council, “ That since their ministers had been taken  
 ‘ from them, *for not subscribing to certain articles neither*  
 ‘ *confirmed by the law of God, nor of the land* ; they had  
 ‘ none left but such as they could prove unfit for that office,  
 ‘ being altogether ignorant, having been either *popish*  
 ‘ *priests* or *shiftless men*, thrust in upon the ministry when  
 ‘ they knew not else how to live ; *men of occupation, ser-*  
 ‘ *ving men*, and the basest of all sorts ; and which is most  
 ‘ lamentable, as they are men of no gifts, so they are of no  
 ‘ common honesty, but *rioters, dicers, drunkards, &c.* and  
 ‘ of offensive lives. These are the men (say they) that are  
 ‘ supported, whose reports and suggestions against others  
 ‘ are readily received and admitted, by reason of which,  
 ‘ multitudes of *papists, heretics, and other enemies to God*  
 ‘ *and the Queen* are increased, and we ourselves in danger  
 ‘ of being insulted. We therefore humbly beseech your  
 ‘ honors in the *bowels of Jesus Christ*, to be a means of re-  
 ‘ storing our godly and faithful ministers ; so shall we and  
 ‘ many thousands of her majesty’s subjects, continue our  
 ‘ daily supplications to Almighty God, &c.”

The petition of the inhabitants of *Norwich*, signed with  
 176 hands, and many letters and supplications from the most  
 populous towns in *England*, to the same purpose, are now  
 before me. But these appeals of the puritans and their  
 friends did them no service ; for the watchful archbishop,  
 whose eyes were about him, wrote to the council to put  
 them in mind, “ That the cause of the puritans did not lie  
 ‘ before them : That he wondered at the presumption of the  
 ‘ *ministers*, to bring his doings in question before their *lord-*  
 ‘ *ships* ; and at their proud spirit, to dare to offer to dispute  
 ‘ before so great a body against the religion established by  
 ‘ law, and against a book so painfully penned, and confirm-  
 ‘ ed by the highest authority.” He then adds, “ That it  
 ‘ was not for him to sit in his place, if every curate in  
 ‘ his diocese must dispute with him ; nor could he do his  
 ‘ duty to the Queen, if he might not proceed without in-  
 ‘ terruption ; but if they would help him he should soon  
 ‘ bring them to comply.”\* As to the gentlemen who

\* Life of Whitgift, p. 127.

petitioned for their ministers, he told them to their faces, that he would not suffer their *factionous ministers*, unless they would subscribe : that no church ought to suffer its *laudable rites* to be neglected : that though the ministers were not *heretics*, they were *schismatics*, because they raised a contention in the church, about things not necessary to salvation. And as for lack of preaching, if the gentlemen or parishioners would let him dispose of their livings, he would take care to provide them with able men. Thus this great prelate who had complied with the popish religion,\* and kept his place in the university through all the reign of Queen *Mary*, was resolved to bear down all opposition, and to display his sovereign power against those whose consciences were not as flexible as his own.

But not content with his *episcopal* jurisdiction, his *grace* solicited the Queen for a new ECCLESIASTICAL COMMISSION, and gave her majesty these weighty reasons for it, among others. Because the *puritans* contemn the ecclesiastical censures. Because the *commission* may order a search for *seditious books*, and examine the writers or publishers upon oath, which a bishop cannot. Because the *ecclesiastical commission* can punish by *fines*, which are very commodious to the government ; or by *imprisonment*, which will strike more terror into the puritans. Because a notorious fault cannot be *notoriously* punished, but by the *commission*.—Because the whole ecclesiastical law is but a *carcase* without a *soul*, unless it be quickened by the *commission*.†

The Queen, who was already disposed to methods of severity, easily gave way to the archbishop's arguments, and

\*Bishop *Maddox* here censures Mr. *Neal*, and says that the reverse was true. The fact, from all his biographers, appears to be, that on the expectation of a visitation of the university, in Queen *Mary's* reign to suppress heresy, and to oblige such as were qualified to take the first tonsure ; *Whitgift*, foreseeing his danger, and fearing not only an expulsion but for his life, particularly because he *could not comply with this requisition*, would have gone abroad : but Dr. *Pearn* encouraged and persuaded him to stay, bidding him to keep his own counsel, and not utter his opinion, and engaging to conceal him without incurring any danger to his conscience in this visitation. He continued, therefore, in the college throughout this reign. But it is not to be conceived but that he must have preserved an outward conformity to the public and usual services of the church. Ed.

† Life of *Whitgift*, p. 124.

ordered a new *high commission* to be prepared which she put the *great seal* to, in the month of December, 1583, and the 26th year of her reign.\*

\* There had been five *high commissions* before this, in most of which the *powers* of the commissioners had been enlarged ; but forasmuch as the court was now almost at its height, I will give the reader an abstract of their commission from an attested copy, under the hand and seal of *Abraham Hartwell*, a notary public, at the special request and command of the archbishop himself, dated January 7th, 1583-4.

The preamble recites the act of the first of the Queen, commonly called the act for *restoring to the crown the antient jurisdiction of the state ecclesiastical and civil, and the abolishing all foreign power repugnant to the same* : and another of the same year, for *uniformity of common prayer and service of the church and administration of the sacraments* : and a third of the 5th of the Queen, entitled *an act of assurance of the Queen's powers over all states, &c.* and a fourth of the 13 Eliz. entitled *an act for reforming certain disorders touching ministers of the church* : as the foundation of her ecclesiastical jurisdiction and power. Her majesty then names forty-four commissioners, whereof twelve were bishops ; some were privy counsellors, lawyers, and officers of state, as sir *Francis Knollys*, treasurer of the houshold, sir *Francis Walsingham*, secretary of state, sir *Walter Mildmay*, chancellor of the Exchequer, sir *Ralph Sadlier*, chancellor of the dutchy of Lancaster, sir *Gilbert Gerard*, master of the Rolls, sir *Robert Manhood*, lord chief baron of the Exchequer, sir *Owen Hopton*, lieutenant of the Tower of London, *John Popham*, Esq. attorney-general, *Thomas Egerton*, Esq. solicitor-general ; the rest were deans, archdeacons, and civilians. Her majesty then proceeds :

“ WE, earnestly minding to have the above-mentioned laws put in execution, and putting special trust and confidence in your wisdoms and discretions, have authorised and appointed you to be our commissioners : and do give full power and authority to you, or any three of you, whereof the *archbishop of Canterbury*, or one of the bishops mentioned in the commission, or sir *Francis Walsingham*, sir *Gilbert Gerard*, or some of the civilians, to be one, to enquire from time to time during our pleasure, as well by the *oaths* of twelve good and lawful men, as also by witnesses, and all other means and ways you can devise ; of all offences, contempts and misdemeanors, &c. done and committed contrary to the tenor of the said several acts and statutes ; and also to enquire of all *heretical opinions, seditious books, contempts, conspiracies, false rumors or talks, slanderous words and sayings, &c.* contrary to the aforesaid laws, or any others, ordained for the maintenance of religion in this realm, together with their abettors, counsellors, or coadjutors.

“ And further we do give full power to you, or any three of you, whereof the *archbishop of Canterbury*, or one of the bishops mentioned in the commission, to be one, to hear and determine concerning the premises, and to order, correct, reform, and punish all persons dwelling in places exempt or not exempt, that wilfully and obstinately absent from church,



The court of HIGH COMMISSION was so called, because it claimed a larger jurisdiction, and higher powers than the ordinary courts of the bishops; its jurisdiction extended over the whole kingdom, and was the same in a manner with that which had been vested in the single person of lord Cromwel, vicar-general to King Henry VIII. though

‘ or divine service established by law, by the censures of the church, or  
 ‘ any other lawful ways and means. by the act of uniformity, or any  
 ‘ laws ecclesiastical of this realm limited and appointed; and to take  
 ‘ order, of your discretions, that the penalties and forfeitures limited  
 ‘ by the said act of uniformity against the offenders in that behalf may  
 ‘ be duly levied, according to the forms prescribed in the said act, to  
 ‘ the use of us and the poor, upon the goods, lands and tenements of  
 ‘ such offenders, by way of distress, according to the true meaning and  
 ‘ limitation of the statute.

“ And we do further empower you, or any three of you, during our pleasure, to visit and reform all errors, heresies, schisms, &c. which may lawfully be reformed or restrained by censures ecclesiastical, deprivation or otherwise, according to the power and authority limited and appointed by the laws, ordinances and statutes of this realm.

“ And we do hereby further empower you, or any three of you, to call before you such persons as have ecclesiastical livings, and to deprive such of them as wilfully and advisedly maintain any doctrine contrary to such articles of religion of the synod of 1562, which only concern the confession of the true faith and doctrine of the sacraments, and will not revoke the same.

“ And we do further empower you, or any three of you, to punish all incests, adulteries, fornications, outrages, misbehaviors and disorders in marriage; and all grievous offences punishable by the ecclesiastical laws, according to the tenor of the laws in that behalf, and according to your wisdoms, consciences, and discretions, commanding you, or any three of you, to devise all such lawful ways and means for the searching out the premises, as by you shall be thought necessary: And upon due proof thereof had, by confession of the party, or lawful witnesses, or by any other due means, to order and award such punishment by fine, imprisonment, censures of the church, or by all or any of the said ways, as to your wisdom and discretions shall appear most meet and convenient.

“ And further we do empower you, or any three of you, to call before you all persons suspected of any of the premises, and to proceed against them, as the quality of the offence and suspicion shall require, to examine them on their corporal oaths, for the better trial and opening of the truth; and if any persons are obstinate and disobedient, either in not appearing at your command, or not obeying your orders and decrees, then to punish them by excommunication, or other censures ecclesiastical, or by fine according to your discretions; or to commit the said offenders to ward, there to remain, till he or they shall be by you, or three of you, enlarged or delivered; and shall pay such costs and ex-



now put into commission. The court was erected upon the authority of the acts mentioned in the preamble, and therefore its powers must be limited by those statutes; but the council for Mr. *Caudrey*, whose case was argued before all the judges in *Trinity term* 1591, questioned whether the court had any foundation at all in law; it being doubtful whether the Queen could delegate her ecclesiastical authority, or the *commissaries* act by virtue of such delegation.

But admitting the court to be legal, it will appear that both the Queen and her commissioners exceeded the powers granted them by law; for it was not the intendment of the act of *supremacy*, to vest any new powers in the crown, but only to restore those which were supposed to be its ancient and natural right. Nor do the acts above recited authorize the Queen to dispense with the laws of the realm, or act contrary to them; or to set aside the ordinary legal course of proceeding in other courts of judicature, by indictments, witnesses, and a jury of twelve men; nor do they empower her to levy fines, and inflict what corporal punishments she pleases upon offenders; but in all criminal cases, where

‘ pences of suit as the cause shall require, and you in justice shall think  
‘ reasonable.

‘ And further we give full power and authority to you, or *three* of  
‘ you as aforesaid. to command all our sheriffs, justices, and other offi-  
‘ cers, by your letters, to apprehend, or cause to be apprehended, such  
‘ persons as you shall think meet to be convened before you; and to  
‘ take such bond as you shall think fit, for their personal appearance;  
‘ and in case of refusal, to commit them to safe custody, till you shall  
‘ give order for their enlargement: And further, to take such securities  
‘ for their performance of your decrees as you shall think reasonable.  
‘ And further, you shall keep a register of your decrees, and of your  
‘ fines, and appoint receivers, messengers, and other officers, with such  
‘ salaries as you shall think fit; the receiver to certify into the *Exche-*  
‘ *quer*, every *Easter and Michaelmas term*, an account of the fines taxed  
‘ and received, under the hands of three of the commissioners.

‘ And we do further empower you, or any *six* of you, whereof *some*  
‘ to be *bishops*. to examine, alter, review, and amend the statutes of  
‘ colleges, cathedrals, grammar-schools, and other public foundations,  
‘ and to present them to us to be confirmed.

‘ And we do further empower you, to tender the oath of *supremacy* to  
‘ all ministers, and others compellable by act of parliament, and to cer-  
‘ tify the names of such as refuse it into the *King’s-Bench*.

‘ And lastly, we do appoint a *seal* for your office, having a *crown*  
‘ and a *rose* over it, and the letter *E* before, and *R* after the same; and  
‘ round about the seal these words, *Sigil. commiss. regie maj. ad causas*  
‘ *ecclesiasticas.*”

the precise punishment is not determined by the *statute*, her commissioners were to be directed and governed by the common law of the land.

Yet contrary to the proceedings in other courts, and to the essential freedom of the *English* constitution, the Queen empowered her commissioners, to *enquire into all misdemeanors, not only by the oaths of twelve men, and witnesses, but by ALL OTHER MEANS AND WAYS THEY COULD DEVISE*; that is, by inquisition, by the rack, by torture, or by any ways and means, that forty-four sovereign judges should devise. Surely this should have been limited to *ways and means* warranted by the laws and customs of the realm.

Further, her majesty empowers her *commissioners, to examine such persons as they suspected upon their CORPORAL OATHS, for the better trial and opening of the truth, and to punish those that refused the oath, by fine or imprisonment, ACCORDING TO THEIR DISCRETION.* This refers to the oath *ex officio mero*, and was not in the five first commissions.

It was said in behalf of this *oath*, by Dr. *Aubrey*,§ that though it was not warrantable by the letter of the statute of the 1st of *Elizabeth*, yet the *canon law* being in force, before the making of that statute, and the commission warranting the commissioners to proceed according to the *law ecclesiastical*, they might lawfully administer it *according to ancient custom.\** To which it was answered, That such an *oath* was never allowed by any canon of the church, or general council, for a thousand years after Christ; that when it was used against the primitive christians, the *pagan emperors* countermanded it; that it was against the pope's law in the decretals, which admits of such an inquisition ONLY in cases of heresy; nor was it ever used in *England*, till the reign of King *Henry IVth*, and then it was enforced as law, only by a haughty archbishop, without consent of the commons of *England*, till the 25th of *Henry the VIIIth*, when it was utterly abrogated. This pretended law was again revived by Queen *Mary*, but repealed again by the 1st of Queen *Elizabeth*, and so remained.†

§ And nine others, learned civilians, and most of them, *Strype* says, judges in the civil and ecclesiastical courts. Ed.

\* Life of Whitgift, p. 340.

† Ibid, p. 393, 394.

Besides, as this purging men *by oath* has no foundation in the law of the land, it is undoubtedly contrary to the law of nature and nations, where this is a received maxim, *Nemo tenetur seipsum accusare* : *No man is bound to accuse himself*. The Queen therefore had no power to authorize her commissioners to set up an *inquisition*, and administer an oath to the suspected person, to answer all questions the court should put to him, and to convict him upon those answers ; or if they could confront his declarations, to punish him as perjured.

*If any persons disobeyed the orders and decrees of the court, by not appearing at their summons, &c. the commissioners, were empowered to punish them by FINE OR IMPRISONMENT, AT THEIR DISCRETIONS.* This also was contrary to law, for the body of a subject is to be dealt with *secundum legem terræ*, according to the law of the land, as *Magna Charta* and the law saith. The clerk felon in the bishop's prison is the King's prisoner, and not the bishop's, and therefore by the 1st of *Henry the VIIth*, cap. 4, "The bishop of the diocese is empowered to imprison such priests, or other religious persons within his jurisdiction, as shall by examination, and other lawful proofs requisite by the law of the church, be convicted of fornication, incest, or any fleshly incontinency, and there to detain them for such time as shall be thought by their discretions convenient, according to the quality of the offence ; and that none of the said archbishops or bishops shall be chargeable with an action of false imprisonment for so doing."\* Which plainly implies, that a bishop cannot by law commit a man to prison, except in the cases above-mentioned ; and that in all others, the law remains in force as before. If then the Queen, by her ecclesiastical commission, could not dispense with the laws of the land, it is evident that the long and arbitrary imprisonments of the puritan clergy, before they had been legally convicted, and all their confinements afterwards, beyond the time limited by the statutes, were so many acts of oppression ; and every acting bishop or commissioner, was liable to be sued in an action of *false imprisonment*.

\* Life of Aylmer, p. 145,

The law says, no man shall be fined *ultra tenementum*, beyond his estate or ability. But the fines raised by this court, in the two next reigns, were so exorbitant, that no man was secure in his property or estate; though, according to lord *Clarendon*, their power of levying any fines at all was very doubtful. Some for speaking an unmannerly word, or writing what the court was pleased to construe a *libel*, were fined from five hundred to ten thousand pounds, and perpetual imprisonment; some had their ears cut off and their noses slit, after they had been exposed several days in the pillory; and many families were driven into banishment; till in process of time the court became such a general nuisance, that it was dissolved by parliament, with a clause that no such court should be erected for the future.

Further, the *commission* gives no authority to the court to *frame articles, and oblige the clergy to subscribe them*. It empowers them to reform all errors, heresies and schisms, which may lawfully be reformed, *according to the power and authority, limited and appointed by the laws and statutes of the realm*. But there never was a clause in any of the commissions, empowering them to enforce subscription to articles of their own devising.\* Therefore their doing this, without a special ratification under the *great seal*, was no doubt an usurpation of the *supremacy*, and brought them within the compass of a *præmunire*, according to the statutes of the 25th of *Henry VIII. cap. 20*, and 1 *Eliz. cap. 3*.

*Lastly*, Though all spiritual courts (and consequently the high commission) are and ought to be subject to prohibitions from the supreme courts of law, yet the commissioners would seldom or never admit them, and at length terrified the judges from granting them: So that, upon the whole, their proceedings were for the most part contrary to the act of *submission of the clergy*, contrary to the *statute laws of the realm*, and no better than a *spiritual inquisition*.†

\* MS. p. 573.

† In this view it was considered by the Lord Treasurer *Burleigh*.—“According to my simple judgment,” says he, in a letter to the archbishop, “this kind of proceeding is too much savoring the Romish inquisition, and is rather a device to seek for offenders, than reform any.” Fuller’s *Church History*, b. ix. p. 155. Mr. *Hume* stigmatizes this court not only as a real INQUISITION; but attended with all the INIQUITIES, as well as cruelties, inseparable from that horrid tribunal. ED.

If a clergyman omitted any of the ceremonies of the church in his public ministrations, or if a parishioner bore an ill-will to his minister, he might inform the commissioners by letter, that he was a *suspected person* ; upon which a pursuivant or messenger was sent to his house with a citation.\*

The *pursuivant* who brought them up, had thirty-three shillings and four-pence for forty-one miles, being about nine or ten-pence a mile. Upon their appearing before the commissioners, they were committed prisoners to the *Clink* prison seven weeks, before they were called to their trial. When the prisoners were brought to the bar, the court immediately tendered them the *oath*, to answer all questions to the best of their knowledge ; by which they were obliged not only to accuse themselves, but frequently to bring their relations and friends into trouble. The party to be examined, was not to be acquainted with the *interrogatories* beforehand, nor to have a copy of his answers, which were lodged with the secretary of the court, against the day of his trial. If the commissioners could not convict him upon his own confession, then they examined their witnesses, but never cleared him upon his own oath. If they could not reach the prisoner by their ordinary jurisdiction as bishops, they would then sit as *ecclesiastical commissioners*. If they

\* The citation was to the following effect :

“ WE will and command you, and every of you, in her majesty’s name, by virtue of her *high commission for causes ecclesiastical*, to us and others directed, that you, and every of you, do make your personal appearance before us, or others her majesty’s commissioners in that behalf appointed, in the consistory within the cathedral church of St. Paul’s, London, [or at *Lambeth*] the 7th day next after the sight hereof, if we or other our colleagues shall then happen to sit in commission, or else at our next sitting there, then next immediately following : And that after your appearance there made, you, and every of you, shall attend, and not depart without our special licence ; willing and commanding you, to whom these our letters shall first be delivered, to shew the same, and give intimation and knowledge thereof to the others nominated upon the indorsement hereof, as you, and every of you, will answer to the contrary at your perils. Given at London, the 10th of May, 1584.

John Cant.

John London.

Gabriel Goodman.

Indorsed,  
To Ezekias Morley,  
Rob. Pamnet, and } of Ridgwell in Essex.  
William Biggs,

could not convict him upon any *statute*, then they had recourse to their old obsolete *law ecclesiastical*; so that the prisoner seldom knew by what law he was to be tried, or how to prepare for his defence. Sometimes men were obliged to a long attendance, and at other times condemned in haste without any trial. The Rev. Mr. *Brayne*, a *Cambridge* minister, being sent for to *Lambeth*, made his appearance before the archbishop and two other commissioners, on *Saturday* in the afternoon, and being commanded to answer the interrogatories of the court upon oath, he refused, unless he might first see them, and write down his answers with his own hand; which his grace refusing, immediately gave him his canonical admonitions, *once, twice, and thrice*; and caused him to be registered for contempt, and suspended.\*

Let the reader carefully peruse the twenty-four articles themselves, which the archbishop framed for the service of the court; and then judge, whether it were possible for an honest man to answer them upon oath, without exposing himself to the mercy of his adversaries.†

\* Life of Whitgift, p. 168.

† The articles were these that follow:—

1. IMPRIMIS, “*Objicimus, ponimus, and articulamus, i. e. We object, put, and article to you, That you are a deacon or minister, and priest admitted; declare by whom, and what time you were ordered; and likewise, that your ordering was according to the book in that behalf by the law of this land provided. Et objicimus conjunctim de omni & divisim de quolibet, i. e. ‘And we object to you the whole of this article taken together, and every branch of it separately.’*”

2. Item, “*Objicimus, ponimus, & articulamus, That you deem and judge such your ordering, admission and calling into your ministry to be lawful and not repugnant to the word of God. Et objicimus ut supra, i. e. ‘And we object as before.’*”

3. Item, “*Objicimus, ponimus, &c. That you have sworn, as well at the time of your ordering as institution, duty and allegiance to the Queen’s majesty, and canonical obedience to your ordinary and his successors, and to the metropolitan and his successors, or to some of them. Et objicimus ut supra.*”

4. Item, “*Objicimus, &c. That by a statute or act of parliament made in the 1st year of the Queen’s majesty that now is, one virtuous and godly book, entitled, The Book of Common Prayer and Administration of Sacraments, &c. was authorized and established to stand and be from and after the feast of the nativity of St. John Baptist then next ensuing, in full force and effect, according to the said statute, and so yet remaineth. Et obj. ut supra.*”



When the Lord Treasurer *Burleigh* had read them over, and seen the execution they had done upon the clergy, he wrote *his grace* the following letter :—

5. Item, “ *Obj.* That by the said statute all ministers within her majesty’s dominions, ever since the said feast, have been and are bound to say and use, a certain form of morning and evening prayer called in the act *Mattins, even-song, celebration of the Lord’s supper, and administration of each of the sacraments* ; and all other common and open prayer in such order and form is as mentioned in the same book, and none other, nor otherwise. *Et obj. ut supra.* ”

6. Item, *Obj.* “ That in the said statute her majesty, the lords temporal, and all the commons, in that parliament assembled, do in God’s name earnestly charge and require all the archbishops, bishops, and other ordinaries, that they shall endeavor themselves to the uttermost of their knowledge, that the due and true execution of the said act might be had throughout their diocese and charge, as they would answer it before Almighty God. *Et obj. ut supra.* ”

7. Item, “ *Obj. ponimus, &c.* That you deem and judge the said whole book to be a godly and a virtuous book, agreeable, or at least not repugnant to the word of God ; ‘ if not, we require and command you to ‘ declare, wherein, and in what points.’ *Et objicimus ut supra.* ”

8. Item, “ *Obj.* That for the space of these three years, two years, one year, half a year ; three, two, or one month last past, you have at the time of communion, and at all or some other times in your ministration, used and worn only your ordinary apparel, and not the *surplice*, as is required : ‘ declare how long, how often, and for what cause, consideration, or intent, you have so done, or refused so to do.’ *Et obj. ut supra.* ”

9. Item, “ *Obj.* That within the time aforesaid you have baptized divers, or at least one infant, and have not used the sign of the cross in the forehead, with the words prescribed to be used in the said book of *common prayer* ; ‘ declare how many you have so baptized, and for ‘ what cause, consideration, and intent.’ *Et obj. ut supra.* ”

10. Item, “ *Obj. &c.* That within the time aforesaid you have been sent unto, and required divers times, or at least once, to baptize children ; or some one child being weak, and have refused, neglected, or at least so long deferred the same, till the child or children died without the sacrament or baptism : ‘ declare whose child, when, and for what consideration.’ *Et. obj. ut supra.* ”

11. Item, “ *Obj. &c.* That within the time aforesaid you have celebrated *matrimony* otherwise than the book prescribes, and without a ring and have refused at such times to call for the ring, and to use such words in that behalf as the book appoints, and particularly those words, ‘ that ‘ by matrimony is signified the spiritual marriage and unity between ‘ Christ and his church.’—“ Declare the circumstances of time, person, ‘ and place, and for what cause, intent, and consideration.’ *Et obj. ut supra.* ”

12. Item, “ *Obj. &c.* That you have within the time aforesaid neglected, or refused to use the form of thanksgiving for women, or some one woman after child-birth, according to the said book. ‘ Declare the



*“It may please your grace,*

*“I am sorry to trouble you so oft as I do, but I am  
‘more troubled myself, not only with many private peti-  
‘tions of sundry ministers, recommended for persons of  
‘credit, and peaceable in their ministry, who are greatly  
‘like circumstances thereof, and for what intent, cause, or considera-  
‘tion, you have so done, or refused so to do.” Et obj. ut supra.*

13. Item, *“Objicimus, &c. That you within the time aforesaid bap-  
tized divers infants, or at the least one, otherwise and in other manner  
than the said book prescribeth, and not used the interrogatories to the  
godfathers and godmothers in the name of the infant, as the said book  
requireth. ‘Declare the like circumstances thereof, or for what cause,  
intent, or consideration, you have so done, or refused so to do.’ Et  
objicimus ut supra.*

14. Item, *“We do object, That you have within the time aforesaid,  
used any other form of litany, in divers or some points, from the said  
book; or that you have often, or once, wholly refused to use the said  
litany. ‘Declare the like circumstances thereof, or for what cause, in-  
‘tent, or consideration, you have so done, or refused so to do.’*

15. Item, *“We do object, &c. That you have within the time afore-  
said, refused and omitted to read divers lessons prescribed by the said  
book, and have divers times either not read any lessons at all, or read  
others in their places. ‘Declare the like circumstances thereof, and  
‘for what intent, cause, or consideration, you have so done or refused.’  
Et obj. ut supra.*

16. Item, *“Objicimus, That within the time aforesaid you have either  
not used at all, or else used another manner of common prayer or ser-  
vice at burial, from that which the said book prescribeth, and have re-  
fused there to use these words, We commit earth to earth, in sure and  
certain hope of resurrection to eternal life. ‘Declare the like circum-  
‘stances thereof, and for what intent, cause or consideration, you have  
‘so done or refused so to do.’ Et obj. ut supra.*

17. Item, *Objicimus, &c. That within the time aforesaid you have  
advisedly, and of set purpose, not only omitted and refused to use the  
aforesaid parts, or some of them, of the said book, but also some other  
parts of the said book of common prayer, as being persuaded that in  
such points it is repugnant to the word of God. ‘Declare what other  
‘parts of the said book you have refused to use, for what intent, cause,  
‘or consideration.’ Et objic. ut supra.*

18. Item, *Objic. &c. That within the time aforesaid you have at the  
communion, and in other parts of your ministration, advisedly added  
unto, diminished, and taken from, altered and transposed manifoldly at  
your own pleasure, sundry parts of the said book of common prayer.  
‘Declare the circumstances of time and place, and for what intent,  
‘cause, and consideration.’ Et obj. ut supra.*

19. Item, *“Objic. That within the time aforesaid you have advised-  
ly, and of set purpose preached, taught, declared, set down, or publish-  
ed by writing, public or private speech, matter against the said book*

‘troubled by your *grace*, and your colleagues in commis-  
 ‘sion; but I am also daily charged by counsellors and pub-  
 ‘lic persons, with neglect of my duty, in not staying your  
 ‘*grace*’s vehement proceedings against *ministers*, whereby

of *common prayer*, or of some thing therein contained, as being repug-  
 nant to the word of God, or not convenient to be used in the church;  
 or some thing have written or uttered. tending to the depraving, des-  
 pising, or defacing, of some things contained in the said book. ‘De-  
 ‘clare what, and the like circumstances thereof, and for what cause,  
 ‘or cansideration, you have so done.’ *Et objic. ut supra.*

20. Item, “*Objicimus, &c.* That you at this present do continue all,  
 or some of your former opinions against the said book, and have a set-  
 tled purpose to continue hereafter such additions, diminutions, altera-  
 tions, and transpositions, or some of them, as you heretofore unlawfully  
 have used in your public ministration: and that you have used private  
 conferences, and assembled, or been present at conventicles, for the  
 maintenance of their doings herein, and for the animating and encour-  
 aging of others to continue in the like dispoition in this behalf that  
 you are of. ‘Declare the like circumstances, and for what intent,  
 ‘cause, and consideration.’ *Et objic. ut supra.*

21. Item. “*Objicimus, &c.* That you have been heretofore noted,  
 defamed, presented, or detected publicly, to have been faulty in all and  
 singular the premises, and of every, or some of them; and that you have  
 been divers and sundry times, or once at the least, admonished by your  
 ordinary, or other ecclesiastical magistrate, to reform the same, and to  
 observe the form and order of the book of *common prayer*, which you  
 have refused, or defer to do. ‘Declare the like circumstances thereof.’  
*Et objic. ut supra.*

22. Item, “That for the testifications hereafter of your unity with  
 the church of *England*, and your conformity to laws established, you  
 have been required simply and absolutely, to subscribe with your  
 hand, (1.) That her majesty under God hath and ought to have, the  
 sovereignty and rule over all manner of persons born within her realm,  
 dominions, and countries. of what estate either ecclesiastical or tempo-  
 ral soever they be; and that none other foreign power, prelate, state  
 or potentate, hath, or ought to have, any jurisdiction, power, superior-  
 ity, pre-eminence or authority, ecclesiastical or spiritual, within her  
 majesty’s said realms, dominions, or countries. (2.) That the book of  
*common prayer*, and of ordering bishops, priests and deacons, contain-  
 eth in it nothing contrary to the word of God, and that the same may  
 be lawfully used; and that you who do subscribe will use the form in  
 the said book prescribed, in public prayer and administration of the  
 sacraments, and none other. (3.) That you allow the book of articles  
 of religion, agreed upon by the archbishops and bishops of both prov-  
 inces, and the whole clergy in the convocation holden at *London* in the  
 year of our Lord God, 1562, and set forth by her majesty’s authority;  
 and do believe all the articles therein contained to be agreeable to the  
 word of God. ‘Declare by whom, and how often, which hitherto you  
 ‘have advisedly refused to perform, and so yet do persist.’ *Et objic. &c.*

‘ papists are greatly encouraged, and the Queen’s safety  
 ‘ endangered. ||—I have read over your twenty-four arti-  
 ‘ ticles, found in a *Romish style*, of great length and curi-  
 ‘ osity, to examine all manner of ministers in this time,  
 ‘ without distinction of persons, to be executed *ex officio*  
 ‘ *mero*.—And I find them so curiously penned, so full of  
 ‘ branches and circumstances, that I think the inquisition  
 ‘ of *Spain* used not so many questions to comprehend and  
 ‘ to trap their priests. I know your *canonists* can defend  
 ‘ these with all their *particles*; but surely, under correc-  
 ‘ tion, this judicial and canonical sifting poor ministers, is  
 ‘ not to edify or reform. And in charity I think they ought  
 ‘ not to answer to all these nice points, except they were  
 ‘ notorious papists or heretics. I write with the testimony  
 ‘ of a good conscience. I desire the peace and unity of the  
 ‘ church. I favor no sensual and wilful recusant; but I  
 ‘ conclude, according to my simple judgment, *this kind of*  
 ‘ *proceeding is too much savoring of the Romish inquisition*,  
 ‘ and is a device rather to seek for offenders than to reform  
 ‘ any.—It is not charitable to send poor ministers to your  
 ‘ common *register*, to answer upon so many articles at one  
 ‘ instant, without a copy of the articles or their answers.—  
 ‘ I pray your grace bear with this one (perchance) fault,  
 ‘ that I have willed the *ministers* not to answer these ar-  
 ‘ ticles except their consciences may suffer them.

‘ July 15, 1584.

*W. Cecil.*”

This excellent letter was so far from softening the arch-  
 bishop, that, two days after, he returned his lordship a long  
 answer, vindicating his *interrogatories*, from the practice of

23. Item, “That you have taken upon you to preach, read, or ex-  
 pound the scriptures, as well in public places as in private houses, not  
 being licensed by your ordinary, nor any other magistrate having au-  
 thority by the laws of this land so to license you. ‘Declare the like  
 ‘ circumstances hereof.’ *Et objic. ut supra.*

24. Item, “*Quod præmissa omnia & singula, &c. i. e.* ‘That all and  
 ‘ singular the premises, &c.”

Could the wit of man invent any thing more like an inquisition!  
 Here are interrogatories enough to entangle all the honest men in the  
 kingdom, and bring them into danger.

|| Life of Whitgift, b. iv. Rec. No. 4.

the *Star-chamber*, the *Court of Marches*, and other places. The treasurer found it was to no purpose to contend, and therefore replied in a short but smart letter, in which he tells him, “That after reading his *grace's* long answer, he ‘was not satisfied in the point of seeking by examination ‘to have ministers accuse themselves, and then punish ‘them for their own confessions: That he would not call ‘his proceedings *captious*, but they were scarcely *charitable*; his grace might therefore deal with his friend Mr. *Brayne* as he thought fit,—but when by examining him ‘it was meant only to sift him with twenty-four articles, ‘he had cause to pity the poor man.”\*

The archbishop, being desirous to give satisfaction to the treasurer, sent him two papers of reasons, one to justify the *articles*, and the other the manner of proceeding *ex mero officio*. In the former he says, That by the ecclesiastical [or canon] laws, articles of enquiry may be administered, and have been ever since the reformation; and that they ought not to be compared with the inquisition, because the inquisition punished with death, whereas they only punished obstinate offenders with deprivation.† In the *latter* his lordship gives the following reasons, among others, for proceeding *ex mero officio*. If we proceed only by presentment and witnesses, then *papists*, *brownists*, and *family men*, would expect the like measure. It is hard to get witnesses against the *puritans*, because most of the parishioners favor them, and therefore will not present them, nor appear against them. There is great trouble and charge in examining witnesses, and sending for them from distant parts. If archbishops and bishops should be driven to use proofs by *witnesses only*, the execution of the law would be partial, their charges in procuring and producing witnesses would be intolerable; and they should not be able to make quick dispatch enough with the *sectaries*. These were the arguments of a protestant archbishop! I do not wonder that they gave no satisfaction to the wise treasurer; for surely, all who have any regard for the laws of their country, or the civil and religious rights of mankind, must be ashamed of them.

\* Life of Whitgift, p. 160.

† Ibid.

The treasurer having given up the archbishop, the lords of the council took the cause in hand, and wrote to his grace and the bishop of *London*, in favor of the deprived ministers, Sept. 20.\* In their letter they tell their lordships, ‘ That they had heard of sundry complaints out of divers ‘ counties, of proceedings against a great number of eccle- ‘ siastical persons, some *parsons*, some *vicars*, some *curates*, ‘ but all *preachers* ; some deprived, and some suspended ‘ by their lordships’ officers, chancellors, &c. but that they ‘ had taken no notice of these things, hoping their lordships ‘ would have staid their hasty proceedings, especially a- ‘ gainst such as did earnestly instruct the people against po- ‘ pery. But now of late, hearing of great numbers of zeal- ‘ ous and learned preachers suspended from their cures in ‘ the county of *Essex*, and that there is no preaching, pray- ‘ ers or sacraments in most of the vacant places ; that in ‘ some few of them, persons neither of learning nor good ‘ name are appointed ; and that in other places of the coun- ‘ try great numbers of persons that occupy cures, are noto- ‘ riously unfit ; most for lack of learning ; many chargeable ‘ with great and enormous faults, as *drunkenness*, *filthiness* ‘ *of life*, *gaming at cards*, *haunting of ale-houses*, &c. against ‘ whom they [the council] heard of no proceedings, but ‘ that they were quietly suffered.” To fix this charge home on the bishops, they sent with their letter a catalogue of ‘ names; one column of learned ministers deprived; a second of unlearned and vicious persons continued ; “ a matter ve- ‘ ry lamentable, say they, for this time ! ” and a third of *plu-* ‘ *ralists* and *non-residents* ; “ against these latter we [the ‘ council] have heard of no inquisition ; but of great dili- ‘ gence, and extreme usage against those that were known ‘ to be diligent preachers ; we therefore pray your *lordships* ‘ to have some charitable consideration of their causes, that ‘ people may not be deprived of their diligent, learned, and ‘ zealous pastors, for a few points ceremonial, which en- ‘ tangled their consciences.” This letter was dated from *Oatlands*, Sept. 20th, 1584, and signed by lord *Burleigh*, the earls of *Warwick*, *Shrewsbury*, and *Leicester* ; the lord

\* Life of Whitgift, p. 166.

*Charles Howard, Sir James Crofts, Sir Christopher Hatton, and Sir Francis Walsingham* secretary of state.

But this excellent remonstrance had no manner of influence upon our archbishop.\* After this Mr. *Beale*, clerk of the Queen's council, a man of great learning and piety, drew up a treatise, shewing the injustice and unlawfulness of the bishop's proceedings ; and delivered it in manuscript into the archbishop's own hands, which, together with some freedom of speech, inflamed his *grace* to that degree, that he complained of him to the Queen and council, and used all his interest to have him tried in the *Star-Chamber*, and turned out of his place.† Among his misdemeanors, drawn up by the archbishop, were these, That he had printed a book against ecclesiastical oaths: That in the house of commons he had spoke of *ecclesiastical matters*, contrary to the Queen's command: That he had defended his book against the practice of the ecclesiastical courts : That he had disputed against the Queen's having authority, by virtue of the statute of the 1st of *Elizabeth*, to grant power to her ecclesiastical commissioners, to *imprison* whom they please ; to impose *finés* upon offenders ; and to administer the oath *ex officio*, saying they are within the statute of *præmunire* : That he had condemned racking for grievous offenders, as contrary to law and the liberty of the subject ; and advised those in the *marches of Wales*, that execute torture by virtue of instructions under her majesty's hands, to look to it, that their doings are well warranted ; but the court would not prosecute upon this charge.

All that the puritans could obtain, was a kind of conference between the *archbishop of Canterbury* and the bishop of *Winchester* on the one part, and Dr. *Sparke* and Mr. *Travers* on the other, in presence of the right honorable the earl of *Leicester*, the lord *Gray*, and Sir *Francis Walsingham*. The conference was at *Lambeth*, concerning things needful to be reformed in the book of *common prayer*.

The *archbishop* opened it with declaring, “ That my lord of *Leicester*, having requested for his satisfaction, to hear what the *ministers* could reprove, and how their objec-

\* Life of Whitgift, p. 143.

† Ibid. p. 212.



‘ tions were to be answered, he had granted my lord to procure such to come for that purpose, as might seem best to his good lordship ; and now I perceive said he, you are the men, of whom one I never saw or knew before [Dr. Sparke ;] the other I know well. Let us hear what things in the *book of common prayer*, you think ought to be mended : you appear not now judicially before me, nor as called in question by authority for these things, but by way of conference ; for which cause it shall be free for you (speaking in duty) to charge the book with such matters as you suppose to be blame-worthy in it.

Dr. Sparke replied ; “ We give most humble and hearty thanks to Almighty God, and to this *honorable presence*, that after so many years, wherein our cause could never be admitted to an indifferent hearing, it hath pleased God of his gracious goodness so to dispose things, that we have now that equity and favor shewed us, that before such honourable personages, as may be a worthy means to her most excellent majesty for reformation of such things as are to be redressed, it is now lawful for us to declare with freedom, what points ought to be reviewed and reformed which our endeavor is, because it concerns the service of God, and the satisfaction of such as are in authority ; and for that the good issue depends on the favor of God, I desire, that before we enter any further, we may first seek for the gracious direction and blessing of God by prayer.” At which words, framing himself to begin to pray, the archbishop interrupted him, saying, he should make no prayers there, nor turn that place into a conventicle.

Mr. Travers joined with Dr. Sparke, and desired that it might be lawful for them to pray before they proceeded any further ; but the archbishop not yielding thereunto, terming it a conventicle if any such prayer should be offered to be made, my lord of *Leicester* and Sir *Francis Walsingham* desired Dr. Sparke to content himself, seeing they doubted not, but that he had prayed already before his coming thither. Dr. Sparke therefore omitting to use such prayer as he had proposed, made a short address to God in a very few words, though the archbishop continued to interrupt him all the while.



The heads that the ministers insisted upon were, 1st.—Putting the apocryphal writings, (in which were several errors and false doctrines) upon a level with the holy scripture, by reading them publicly in the church, while several parts of the canon were utterly omitted. This they said had been forbidden by *councils*, and particularly that of *Laodicea*. The archbishop denied any errors to be found in the apocrypha; which led the ministers into a long detail of particulars, to the satisfaction (says my author) of the noblemen. 2dly. The second head was upon *baptism*; and here they objected—Against its being done in *private*.—Against its being done by *laymen* or *women*. And, Against the doctrine from whence this practice arises, viz. that *children not baptized are in danger of damnation; and that the outward baptism of water saveth the child that is baptized*. Against the *interrogatories* in the name of the child, which Mr. *Travers* charged with arising from a false principle, viz. that *faith* was necessary in all persons to be baptized; he added, that the interrogatories crept into the church but lately, and took their rise from the *baptism of those that were of age*; from whence very ignorantly they were transferred to infants. Against the *cross*, as a mystical rite and ceremony, and an addition to the sacrament, of human invention: here they argued, that though the foreign divines did not condemn the use of the cross, yet all agreed it ought to be abolished, and *Beza* gives counsel to the ministers, rather to forego their ministry, than subscribe to the allowance of it. After many words upon this head, my lord of *Leicester* said it was a pitiful thing, that so many of the best ministers, and painful in their preaching, should be deprived for these things. 3dly. They objected to *private communion*. 4thly. To the *apparel*; and here they produced the judgment of bishop *Ridley* at his degradation, as reported by Mr. *Fox*, who said, *it was too bad to be put upon a fool in play*. 5thly. They objected to the bishop's allowing of an *insufficient ministry, non-residence, and pluralities*.\*

The conference continued two days, at the close of which neither party being satisfied, the noblemen requested some

\* MS. p. 562, &c.

favor for the ministers. Mr. *Strype* says\* the ministers were convinced and confirmed; but it is evident he knew not the disputants, nor had seen the debate; a copy of which is before me. *Travers* was a non-conformist to his death, and *Sparke* appeared at their head at the *Hampton-Court* conference, the beginning of the next reign. Nor was the archbishop softened, but rather confirmed in his former resolution.

*Aylmer*, bishop of *London*, came not behind his metropolitan in acts of severity. Mr. *Strype* says, he was the chief mover in the ecclesiastical commission, and had as high a spirit as the greatest lord in the land. During *Grindal's* disgrace, he harrassed the *London* clergy with new interrogatories and articles, three or four times a year. He advised the heads of the university of *Cambridge* (with whom he had nothing to do) to call in all their licences, and expel every man who would not wear the *apparel*, saying, *That the folly that is bound up in the heart of a child, is to be expelled with the rod of discipline.*†

Mr. *Carew*, of *Hatfield-Peveril*, was a zealous promoter of the welfare of souls, and mourned over the want of a learned and preaching ministry: He was ordained by the bishop of *Worcester*, and licensed by archbishop *Grindal*

\* Life of Whitgift, p. 170. † Life of Aylmer, p. 84, 94.

In his visitation this summer, [1584] he suspended the following clergymen in *Essex*, &c. Mr. Whiteing of *Panfield*, Mr. Wyresdale and Gifford of *Malden*, Mr. Hawkdon vicar of *Fryan*, Mr. Carre of *Rain*, Mr. Teastal of *Much-Tottam*, Mr. Huckle of *Atrop-Rooding*, Mr. Piggot of *Tilly*, Mr. Cornwall of *Markstay*, Mr. Negus of *Leigh*, Mr. Carew of *Hatfield*, Mr. Ward of *Writtle*, Mr. Dyke afterwards of *St. Albans*, Mr. Rogers of *Weathersfield*, Mr. Northey of *Colchester*, Mr. Newman of *Corall*, Mr. Taye of *Peldon*, Mr. Parker of *Dedham*, Mr. Morley of *Ridwel*, Mr. Nix [or Knight] of *Hampsted*, Mr. Winkfield of *Wicks*, Mr. Wilton of *Aldham*, Mr. Dent of *South-Souberry*, Mr. Pain of *Tolbury*, Mr. Larking of *Little-Waltham*, Mr. Camillus Rusticus pastor of *Tange*, Mr. Seredge of *East-Havingfield*, Mr. Howel of *Pagelsam*, Mr. Chadwick of *Danbury*, Mr. Ferrar of *Langham*, Mr. Serls of *Lexden*, Mr. Lewis of *St. Peter's Colchester*, Mr. Cock of *St. Giles's Colchester*, Mr. Beaumont of *East-Thorp*, Mr. Redridge of *Hutton*, Mr. Chaplain of *Hempsted*, Mr. Culverwel of *Felsted*, Mr. D. Chapman preacher at *Bedham*, and Mr. Knevit of *Mile-End, Colchester*, in all about 38. These (says my author) are the painful ministers of *Essex*, whom the bishop threatens to deprive for the surplice, saying, we shall be white with him, or he will be black with us. MS. p. 584, 741.

and the bishop of *London* himself, who commended his preaching; but being too forward in acquainting his diocesan by letter, that in *Essex*, within the compass of 16 miles, there were 22 non-residents, 30 insufficient ministers, and at the same time 19 preachers silenced for *not subscribing*; his lordship, instead of being pleased with the information, sent for *Carew* before the commissioners, and charged him falsely, without the least evidence, with setting up a presbytery, and with contemning ecclesiastical censures. It was alledged against him further, that he was chosen by the people; that he had defaced the book of *common prayer*, and had put several from the communion, when there was more need to allure them to it, &c. But to make short work, the bishop tendered him the oath *ex officio*, which *Carew* refusing, he was committed to the *Fleet*, and another clergyman sent down to supply his place. Mr. *Allen* the patron, in whom the right of presentation was by inheritance, refusing to admit the bishop's reader, was summoned before his lordship, and committed to prison; because (as the warrant expresses it) he behaved seditiously in withstanding the authority of the court: Nay, the very *Sexton* was reprimanded, and ordered not to meddle with the church any more; and because he asked his lordship simply, whether his meaning was, that *he should not come to church any more?* he committed him for *ridiculous behavior*. Both *Allen* and *Carew* offered bail, which was refused, unless they would admit his lordship's clergyman.† After eight weeks imprisonment, they appealed to the privy council and were released; with which his lordship was so displeased, that he sent the council a very angry letter, calling the prisoners *knaves, rebels, rascals, fools, petty gentlemen, precisians*, &c. and told their honors, that if such men were countenanced, he must yield up his authority: And the bishop never left him, till he had bunted him out of the diocese.

Mr. *Knight* suffered six months imprisonment, for not wearing the apparel, and was fined one hundred marks.—Mr. *Negus* was suspended on the same account: Twenty-eight of his parishioners, who subscribed themselves *his hungry sheep that had no shepherd*, signed a letter, beseech-

† Life of Aylmer, p. 122. MS. p. 652, 653.

ing him to conform ; but he protested he could not do it with a good conscience, and so was deprived.

The Rev. Mr. *Gifford* of *Malden* was a modest man, irreprovable in his life, a great and diligent preacher, (says Mr. *Strype*) and esteemed by many of good rank. He had written learnedly against the *Brownists*, and by his diligence had wrought a wonderful reformation in the town ; but being informed against for preaching up a limited obedience to the magistrate, he was suspended and imprisoned.\* After some time, he was brought to his trial, and his accuser failing in his evidence, he was released. But the bishop of *London* setting his spies upon him, he was imprisoned again for non-conformity.† Upon this he applied to the lord treasurer, who applied to the archbishop in his favor ; but his grace having consulted his brother of *London*, told his lordship that he was a ring-leader of the non-conformists ; that he himself had received complaints against him, and was determined to bring him before the high commission. The parishioners of *Malden* presented a petition in behalf of their minister, signed with fifty-two hands, whereof two were bailiffs of the town, two justices of the peace, four aldermen, fifteen head burgesses, and the vicar : but to put an end to all further application, the archbishop wrote to the treasurer, “ that he had rather die, or live in prison all the days of his life, than relax the rigor of his proceedings, by shewing favor to one, which might give occasion to others to expect the same, and undo all that he had been doing;‡ he therefore beseeches his lordship not to animate this forward people by writing in their favor.” Sir *Francis Knollys* the Queen’s kinsman, and treasurer of her chamber, seconded the treasurer, beseeching his grace to open the mouths of zealous preachers, who were sound in doctrine, though they refused to subscribe to any traditions of men, *not compellable by law* : but all was to no purpose ; for (as *Fuller* observes§) “ This was the constant custom of *Whitgift* : if any lord or lady sued for favor to any non-conformist, he would profess how glad he was to serve them, and gratify their desires, assuring them for his part, that

\* MS. p. 410, 420. † Life of Aylmer, p. 111. ‡ Fuller, b. ix. p. 162.

§ Fuller, b. ix. p. 218.

‘ all possible kindness should be indulged to them, but at the  
 ‘ same time he would remit nothing of his rigor. Thus he  
 ‘ never denied any man’s desire, and yet never granted  
 ‘ it; pleasing them for the present with general prom-  
 ‘ ises, but still kept to his own resolution; whereupon the  
 ‘ nobility, in a little time, ceased making any further appli-  
 ‘ cations to him, as knowing them to be ineffectual.” Some  
 of the ministers were indicted at the assizes,\* for omitting  
 the cross in baptism, and for not wearing the surplice once  
 every month, and at every communion. Most of them were  
 deprived, or, to avoid it, forced to quit their livings and de-  
 part the country.

Among these was the excellent Mr. *Dyke*, preacher first  
 at *Coggeshal* in *Essex*, and afterwards at *St. Albans* in  
*Hertfordshire*, whose character was without blemish, and  
 whose practical writings discover him to be a divine of con-  
 siderable learning and piety; he was suspended, and at last  
 deprived, because he continued a *deacon*, and did not enter  
 into *priest’s* orders, which (as the bishop supposed) he ac-  
 counted popish. He also refused to wear the surplice, and  
 troubled his auditory with notions that thwarted the estab-  
 lished religion. The parishioners being concerned for the  
 loss of their minister, petitioned the lord *Burleigh* to inter-  
 cede for them, setting forth, “ That they had lived without  
 ‘ any ordinary preaching till within these four or five years,  
 ‘ by the want of which they were unacquainted with their  
 ‘ duty to God, their sovereign and their neighbors;† but  
 ‘ that of late it had pleased the LORD to visit them with the  
 ‘ means of salvation, the ordinary ministry of the word, in  
 ‘ the person of Mr. *Dyke*, an authorised minister, who, ac-  
 ‘ cording to his function, had been painful and profitable,  
 ‘ and both in life and doctrine had carried himself peacea-  
 ‘ bly and dutifully among them, so as no man could justly  
 ‘ find fault with him, except of malice. There were some  
 ‘ indeed, that could not abide to hear their faults reprov-  
 ‘ ed, but through his preaching many had been brought from  
 ‘ their ignorance and evil ways to a better life, to be fre-

\* Mr. Beaumont of *East-Thorp*, Mr. Wilton of *Aldbam*, Mr. Hawk-  
 don of *Fryan*, Mr. Seredge of *East-Havingfield*.

† Life of Aylmer, p. 803.

‘quent hearers of God’s word, and their servants were in  
‘better order than heretofore.

“They then give his lordship to understand, that their  
‘minister was suspended, and that they were as *sheep with-*  
‘*out a shepherd*, exposed to manifold dangers, even to re-  
‘turn to their former ignorance and cursed vanities : That  
‘the Lord had spoken it, and therefore it must be true,  
‘that *where there is no vision the people perish*. They  
‘therefore pray his lordship, in the bowels of his compas-  
‘sion, to pity them in their present misery, and become a  
‘means that they may enjoy their preacher again.”

Upon this letter, lord *Burleigh* wrote to the bishop to  
restore him, promising that if he troubled the congregation  
with innovations any more, he would join with the bishop  
against him ; but his lordship excused himself, insinuating  
that he was charged with *incontinence* ; this occasioned a  
farther enquiry into *Dyke’s* character, which was cleared  
up by the woman herself that accused him, who confessed  
her wicked contrivance, and openly asked him forgiveness.  
His lordship therefore insisted upon his being restored,  
forasmuch as the best clergymen in the world might be  
thus slandered ; besides, the people of *St. Albans* had no  
teaching, having no curate but an insufficient doting old  
man. For this favor (says the treasurer) I shall thank  
your lordship, and will not solicit you any more, if here-  
after he should give just cause of public offence against the  
orders of the church established. But all that the treasur-  
er could say was ineffectual ; the bishop of *London* was as  
inexorable as his grace of *Canterbury*.

The inhabitants of *Essex* had a vast esteem for their  
ministers ; they could not part from them without tears :  
When they could not prevail with the bishop, they applied  
to the parliament, and to the lords of the privy council. I  
have before me two or three petitions from the hundreds  
of *Essex*, and one from the county, signed by *Francis Bar-*  
*rington*, esq. at the head of above two hundred gentlemen  
and tradesmen, house-keepers ; complaining in the strong-  
est terms, that the greatest number of their present minis-  
ters were unlearned, idle, or otherwise of scandalous lives ;  
and that those few from whom they reaped knowledge and  
comfort, were molested, threatened, and put to silence, for



small matters in the *common prayer*, though they were men of godly lives and conversations.

The bishop was equally severe in other parts of his diocese. The Rev. Mr. *Barnaby Benison*, a city divine of good learning, had been suspended and kept in prison several years, on pretence of some irregularity in his marriage: The bishop charged him with being married in an afternoon, and in presence of two or three hundred people, by Mr. *Field*, a non-conformist; for this he was committed to the *Gate-house*, where he had lain ever since the year 1579. At length he applied to the Queen and council, and in the state of his case he declares, that he had invited only forty persons to the solemnity, and that of them there were only twenty present; that he was married in a morning, and according to law; that when the bishop sent for him and charged him with *sedition*, he cleared himself to his satisfaction; but that after he was gone home he gave private order under his own hand for his being apprehended and sent to the *Gate-house*; that he was shut up there in a dungeon eight days, without knowing the cause of his imprisonment, though Dr. *Hammond*, and his faithful father *Fox*, who were both at the wedding, and saw the whole proceeding, went to the bishop and assured him, that he was without wickedness or fault in that way he went about to charge him; but his lordship would not release him without such bonds for his good behavior and appearance as the prisoner could not procure. “Thus I continue, says ‘Mr. *Benison*, separated from my wife before I had been ‘married to her two weeks, to the great trouble of her ‘friends and relations, and to the staggering of the patient ‘obedience of my wife; for since my imprisonment his lord- ‘ship has been endeavoring to separate us whom God has ‘joined together in the open presence of his people.— ‘Wherefore I most humbly beseech your godly honors, for ‘the everlasting love of God, and for the pity you take up- ‘on God’s true protestants and his poor people, to be a ‘means that my pitiful cry may be heard, and my just ‘cause with some credit be cleared, to God’s honor and ‘her majesty’s, whose favor I esteem more than all the ‘bishop’s blessings or bitter cursings; and that I now be- ‘ing half dead may recover again to get a poor living with



‘ the little learning that God has sent me, to his glory, to  
 ‘ the discharging some part of my duty, and to the profit of  
 ‘ the land.”

The council were so moved with *Benison's* case, that they sent his lordship the following letter :

“ Whereas *Barnaby Benison*, minister, has given us to  
 ‘ understand, the great hindrance he has received by your  
 ‘ hard dealing with him, and his long imprisonment, for  
 ‘ which if he should bring his action of false imprisonment  
 ‘ he should recover damages, which would touch your lord-  
 ‘ ship's credit ; we therefore have thought fit to require  
 ‘ your lordship to use some consideration towards him, in  
 ‘ giving him some *sum of money* to repay the wrong you have  
 ‘ done him, and in respect of the hindrance he hath incur-  
 ‘ red by your hard dealing towards him.—Therefore pray-  
 ‘ ing your lordship to deal with the poor man, that he may  
 ‘ have occasion to turn his complaint into giving to us a good  
 ‘ report of your charitable dealing, we bid you heartily fare-  
 ‘ well. *Hampton Court, Nov. 14, 1584.* Signed,

*Ambrose Warwick*

*Fr. Bedford*

*Fr. Knollys*

*Rob. Leicester*

*Walter Mildmay*

*Charles Howard*

*Fr. Walsingham*

*James Crofts*

*Wm. Burghley*

*Chr. Hatton.”*

*Bromley, Chan.*

After some time the bishop returned this answer :

“ I beseech your lordships to consider, that it is a rare  
 ‘ example thus to press a bishop for his zealous service to  
 ‘ the Queen and the peace of the church, especially the man  
 ‘ being found worthy to be committed for *non-conformity*, to  
 ‘ say nothing of his contemptuous using of me ; neverthe-  
 ‘ less, since it pleaseth your lordships to require some rea-  
 ‘ sonable sum of money, I pray you to consider my poor es-  
 ‘ tate and great charges otherwise, together with the great  
 ‘ vaunt the man will make of his conquest over a bishop. I  
 ‘ hope therefore your lordships will be favorable to me, and  
 ‘ refer it to myself, either to bestow upon him some small  
 ‘ benefice; or otherwise to help him as opportunity offers.  
 ‘ Or if this shall not satisfy the man, or content your lord-  
 ‘ ships, leave him to the trial of the law, which I hope will

‘not be so plain for him as he taketh it. Surely, my lords, this and the like must greatly discourage me in this poor service of mine in the commission—’

What recompence the poor man had for his long imprisonment I cannot find. But he was too wise to go to law with a bishop of the court of high commission, who had but little conscience or honor, and who, notwithstanding his *poor estate and great charges*, left behind him above 16,000*l.* in money, an immense sum for those times.

His lordship complained that he was hated like a dog, and commonly stiled the *oppressor of the children of God*;<sup>‡</sup> that he was in danger of being mobbed in his progress at *Malden*, and other places; which is not strange, considering his mean appearance, being a very little man, and his high and insulting behavior towards those that were examined by him, attended with ill language and a cruel spirit. This appears in numberless instances: When Mr. *Merbury*, one of the ministers of *Northampton*, was brought before him, he spake thus:—

*B.* Thou speakest of making ministers; the bishop of *Peterborough* was never more overseen in his life, than when he admitted thee to be a preacher in *Northampton*.

*Merbury.* Like enough so, (in some sense) I pray God these scales may fall from his eyes.

*B.* Thou art a very ass; thou art mad; thou courageous! Nay, thou art impudent; by my troth I think he is mad; he careth for no-body.

*M.* Sir, I take exception at *swearing judges*; I praise God I am not mad, but sorry to see you so out of temper.

*B.* Did you ever hear one more impudent?

*M.* It is not, I trust, impudence to answer for myself.

*B.* Nay, I know thou art courageous; thou art fool-hardy.

*M.* Though I fear not you, I fear the Lord.

*Recorder of London.* Is he learned?

*B.* He hath an arrogant spirit; he can scarce construe *Cato*, I think.

*M.* Sir, you do not punish me because I am unlearned; howbeit, I understand both the *Greek* and *Latin* tongues; assay me to prove your disgrace.

‡ *Life of Aylmer*, p. 96.

**B.** Thou takest upon thee to be a preacher, but there is nothing in thee ; thou art a very ass, an ideot, and a fool.

**M.** I humbly beseech you, sir, have patience ; give this people better example ; I am that I am through the Lord ; I submit the trial of my sufficiency to the judgment of the learned ; but this wandering speech is not logical.

There is a great deal more of the same language in this examination ; one thing is remarkable, that he insults poor *Merbury*, because he was for having a minister in every parish. At parting he gave him the salutation of an *overthwart, proud, puritan knave* ; and sent him to the *Marshalsea*, though he had been twice in prison before.\*

How different was this from the apostolical character of a bishop : “ A bishop (saith St. *Paul*) should be blameless, of good behavior, no brawler, nor striker, nor greedy of filthy lucre.—The servant of the Lord must not strive, but be gentle to all men, patient, in meekness instructing those that oppose themselves, that they may recover them out of the snare of the devil.” Nay, how different was this bishop from himself before he put on lawn sleeves ! For in his book entitled the *Harbor for faithful Subjects*, published soon after the Queen’s accession, are these words : “ Come off ye bishops, away with your superfluities, yield up your thousands ; be content with hundreds, as they be in other reformed churches, where be as great learned men as you are. Let your portion be priest-like and not prince-like ; let the Queen have the rest of your temporalities and other lands, to maintain these wars which you procured, and your mistress left her ; and with the rest to build and found schools throughout the realm ; that every parish may have his preacher, every city his superintendant, to live honestly and not pompously ; which will never be, unless your lands be dispersed and bestowed upon many, which now feedeth and fatteth but one ; remember that *Abimelech*, when *David* in his banishment would have dined with him, kept such hospitality that he had no bread in his house to give him but the *shew-bread*. Where was all his superfluity to keep your pretended hospitality ? For that is the cause you pretend why you

\* Part of a Register, p. 382. Pierce’s Vindie. p. 97.

‘ must have thousands, as though you were commanded to  
 ‘ keep hospitality rather with a thousand than with a hun-  
 ‘ dred. I would our countryman *Wickliff’s* book *de Ec-*  
 ‘ *clesia* were in print, there should you see that your  
 ‘ wrinches and cavillations be nothing worth.”\* When  
 the bishop was put in mind of this passage, he made no  
 other reply than that of *St. Paul*, “When I was a child  
 I spake as a child, I thought as a child.”

The case of those clergymen who were sent for up to  
*Lambeth*, from the remotest parts of the kingdom, was yet  
 harder. Mr. *Elliston*, vicar of *Preston*, made seven journ-  
 ies to *Peterborough*, which was thirty-six miles from his  
 house, and ten to *London*, within the compass of two years,  
 besides several to *Leicester* and *Northampton*, at his own  
 cost and charge; and after all was deprived for not sub-  
 scribing. To whom might be added, Mr. *Stephen Turner*,  
 Mr. *William Fleming* of *Beccles*, Mr. *Holden* of *Biddle-*  
*stone*, and others.

Among these, the case of the Rev. Mr. *Eusebius Paget*,  
 minister of the parish church of *Kilkhampton*, in the dio-  
 cese of *Exon*, was very moving; this divine, at the time  
 of his presentation; acquainted his patron and ordinary,  
 that he could not with quietness of conscience use some  
 rites, ceremonies, and orders, appointed in the *service book*;  
 who promised, that if he would take the charge of the said  
 cure, he should not be urged to the precise observation of  
 them; upon which condition he accepted the charge, and  
 was admitted and regularly inducted.† Mr. *Paget* was a  
 lame man, but in the opinion of Mr. *Strype* a learned,  
 peaceable, and quiet divine, who had complied with the  
 customs and devotions of the church, and was indefatiga-  
 ble in his work, travelling up and down the neighboring  
 country, to preach the plain principles of religion; but Mr.  
*Farmér*, curate of *Barnstaple*, envying his popularity,  
 complained of him to the high commission,—Because he  
 did not mention in his prayers the Queen’s supremacy over  
 both estates:—Because he had said that the sacraments  
 were but dumb elements, and did not avail without the  
 word preached:—Because he had preached that Christ did

\* Life of Alymer, p. 269.

† MS. p. 582.

not descend into hell both body and soul :—That the pope might set up the feast of *Jubilee*, as well as the feasts of *Easter* and *Pentecost* :—That holy days and fasting days were but the traditions of men, which we were not obliged to follow :—That he disallowed the use of *organs* in divine service :—That he called ministers that do not preach *dumb dogs* ; and those that have two benefices *knaves* :—That he preached that the late Queen *Mary* was a detestable woman and a wicked *jezebel*.

But when Mr. *Paget* appeared before the commissioners, Jan. 11th, 1584, he was only articulated according to the common form, for *not observing the book of common prayer, and the rites and ceremonies of the church*. To which he made the following answer :

“ I do acknowledge, that by the statute of the 1st of *Eliz.* I am bound to use the said *common prayer* book in such manner and form as is prescribed, or else to abide such pains as by the law are imposed upon me.

“ I have not refused to use the said *common prayer*, or to minister the *sacraments* in such order as the book appoints, though I have not used *all* the rites, ceremonies, and orders set forth in the said book : 1. Partly because to my knowledge there is no *common prayer* book in the church. 2. Because I am informed that *you* before whom I stand, and mine *ordinary*, and the most part of the other *bishops* and *ministers*, do use greater liberty in omitting and altering the said rites, ceremonies, and orders. 3. And especially for that I am not fully resolved in conscience, I may use diverse of them. 4. Because when I took the charge of that church I was promised by my *ordinary*, that I should not be urged to such ceremonies ; which I am informed he might do by law.

“ In these things which I have omitted I have done nothing *obstinately* ; neither have I used any other rite, ceremony, order, form, or manner of administration of the sacraments, or open prayers, than is mentioned in the said book ; although there be some things which I doubt whether I may use or practise.

“ Wherefore I humbly pray, that I may have the liberty

‘ allowed by the said book, to have in some convenient time  
 ‘ a favorable conference either with mine *ordinary*, or with  
 ‘ some other by you to be assigned ; which I seek not for any  
 ‘ desire I have to keep the said living, but only for the  
 ‘ better resolution and satisfaction of my own conscience,  
 ‘ as God knoweth.” Subscribed thus—*By me*

*Lame Eusebius Paget, minister,*

This answer not proving satisfactory, he was immediately suspended ; and venturing to preach after his suspension was deprived ; the principal causes of his deprivation were these two ;

1. Omission of *part of the public prayers, the cross in baptism, and the surplice.*

2. Irregularities incurred *by dealing in the ministry after suspension.*

But in the opinion of the *civilians* neither of these things could warrant the proceedings of the court,\* 1. Because *Mr. Paget* had not time, nor a conference, as he craved, and as the statute in doubtful matters warranteth. 2. Because he had not three several admonitions, nor so much as *one* to do that in time, which the law requires. If this had been done, and upon such respite and admonition he had not conformed, then the law would have deemed him a *recusant*, but not otherwise. 3. If this course had been taken, yet *Mr. Paget's* omissions had so many favorable circumstances (as the parish's not having provided a *book*, and his *ordinary's* promising not to urge him with the precise observance of all the ceremonies) that it was hardly consistent with the prudent consideration and charity of a judge to deprive him at once.

As to his irregularity, by exercising the ministry after *suspension*, the suspension was thought to be void, because it was founded upon a method not within the cognisance of those who gave sentence ; for the ground was refusing to subscribe to articles tendered by the ecclesiastical commissioners, *who had no warrant to offer any such articles at all; for their authority reaches no further than to reform and correct*

\* MS. p. 572.

*facts done contrary to certain statutes expressed in their commission, and contrary to other ecclesiastical laws ; and there was never yet any clause in their commission to offer subscription to articles of their own devising. But suppose the suspension was good, the irregularity was taken away by the Queen's pardon long before his deprivation. Besides, Mr. Paget did not exercise his ministry after suspension, till he had obtained from the archbishop of Canterbury a release from that suspension, which if it was not sufficient, it was apprehended by him to be so, the archbishop being chief in the commission ; and all the canonists allow, that simplicity, and ignorant mistaking of things, being void of wilful contempt, is a lawful excuse to discharge irregularity. But the commissioners avowed their own act, and the patron disposed of the living to another.*

Mr. Paget having a numerous family set up a little school, but the arms of the commissioners reached him there ; for being required to take out a licence, they tendered him the *articles* to subscribe, which he refusing, they shut up his school and sent him a begging. Let us hear his own relation of his case in a letter that he sent to that great sea officer Sir John Hawkins, who had a high esteem for this good man. “ I was never present at any separate assembly  
‘ from the church (says he) but abhorred them. I always  
‘ resorted to my parish church, and was present at service  
‘ and preaching ; and received the sacrament according to  
‘ the book. I thought it my duty not to forsake a church  
‘ because of some blemishes in it ; but while I have en-  
‘ deavored to live in peace, others have prepared themselves  
‘ for war. I am turned out of my living by commandment.  
‘ I afterwards preached without living or a penny stipend ;  
‘ and when I was forbid, I ceased. I then taught a few  
‘ children, to get a little bread for myself and mine to eat ;  
‘ some disliked this, and wished me to forbear, which I have  
‘ done, and am now to go as an idle rogue and vagabond  
‘ from door to door to beg my bread, though I am able in a  
‘ lawful calling to get it.”\* Thus this leared and useful  
divine was silenced till the death of *Whitgift*, after

\* Life of Whitgift, p. 377.



which he was instituted to the living of St. *Anne*, within *Aldersgate*.

The Rev. Mr. *Walter Travers*, B. D. sometime fellow of *Trinity* college, *Cambridge*, already mentioned, came into trouble this year. He had been ordained at *Antwerp*, and being an admired preacher, a fine gentleman, and of great learning, he became domestic chaplain to secretary *Cecil*, and lecturer at the Temple. Dr. *Alvey* the master dying about this time, *Travers* was recommended to succeed him by the doctor on his death-bed, and by the *benchers* of the house, in a petition to the treasurer on his behalf; but the archbishop interposed, and declared peremptorily, that unless he would be re-ordained according to the usage of the church of *England*, and subscribe to *his* articles, he would not admit him. Upon which he was set aside, and Mr. *Hooker* preferred. *Travers* continued lecturer about two years longer, and was then deprived of his lectureship, and deposed from the ministry. The treasurer and others of *Travers's* friends, advised him for peace sake to be re-ordained; but he replied in a letter to his lordship, that this would be to invalidate his former *orders*; and not only so, but as far as in him lay, to invalidate the ordinations of all foreign churches. “As for myself (says he) I had a sufficient title to the ministerial office, having been ordained according to God’s holy word, with prayers and imposition of hands, and according to the order of a church of the same faith and profession with the church of *England*, as appears by my testimonials.” He prayed his lordship to consider further, whether his subscribing the articles of religion, *which only concern the profession of the true christian faith and doctrine of the sacraments, as agreed upon in the convocation of 1562*, which most willingly, and with all his heart he assented to according to the statute, did not qualify him for a minister in the church, as much as if he had been ordained according to the *English* form. But the archbishop was determined to have a strict eye upon the inns of court, and to bring them to the public standard; and the rather, inasmuch as some of them pretended to be exempted from his jurisdiction; for though in all other places the sacrament was received in the posture of kneeling, the

*templers* received it to this very time *sitting*. *Travers* would have introduced the posture of *standing at the side of the table*, but the *benchers* insisted upon their privilege, and would receive it in no other posture than *sitting*.\* The archbishop, in order to put an end to this practice, would admit none but an *high conformist*, that they might be obliged to receive it *kneeling*, or not at all.

The harder the church pressed upon the *puritans*, the more were they disaffected to the national establishment, and the more resolute in their attempts for a *reformation of discipline*. There was a book in high esteem among them at this time, entitled, *Disciplina Ecclesiæ sacra ex Dei verbo descripta*; that is, *The Holy Discipline of the Church described in the word of God*. It was drawn up in *Latin* by Mr. *Travers*, and printed at *Geneva* about the year 1574, but since that time had been diligently reviewed, corrected and perfected, by Mr. *Cartwright*, and other learned ministers at their synods. It was translated into *English* this year, with a preface by Mr. *Cartwright*, and designed to be published for more general use; but as it was printing at *Cambridge* it was seized at the press: The archbishop advised that all the copies should be burnt as factious and seditious, but one was found in Mr. *Cartwright's* study after his death, and reprinted in the year 1644, under this new title, *A Directory of Government anciently contended for, and as far as the time would suffer, practised by the first non-conformists in the days of Queen Elizabeth, found in the study of the most accomplished divine Mr. Thomas Cartwright, after his disease, and reserved to be published for such a time as this. Published by authority*. It contains the substance of those alterations in discipline, which the *puritans* of these times contended for, and was subscribed by the brethren hereafter named, as agreeable to the word of God, and to be promoted by all lawful means, that it may be established by the authority of the magistrate and of the church; and in the mean time to be observed as far as lawfully they may, consistently with the laws of the land, and peace of the church. I have

\* *Strype's Ann.* p. 244.

therefore given it a place in the *appendix*, to which I refer the reader.\*

Another treatise, dispersed privately about this time, against the discipline of the church, was entitled, *An Abstract of certain Acts of Parliament, and of certain of her Majesty's Injunctions and Canons, &c. printed by H. Denham, 1584.* The author's design† was to shew, That the bishops in their ecclesiastical courts had exceeded their power, and broke through the laws and statutes of the realm; which was so notorious, that the *answerer*, instead of confuting the *abstracter*, blames him for exposing their father's nakedness, to the thrusting through of religion, by the sides of the bishops. But who was in fault? Shall the liberties and properties of mankind be trampled upon by a despotic power, and the poor sufferers not be allowed to hold up the laws and statutes of the land, to their oppressors, because of their great names or religious characters?

The affairs of the church were in this ferment when the parliament met Nov. 23, 1584, in which the puritants, despairing of all other relief, resolved to make their utmost efforts for a further reformation of church discipline. *Fuller* says,|| their agents were soliciting at the door of the House of Commons all day, and making interest in the evening at the chambers of parliament men; and if the Queen would have taken the advice of her two houses they had been made easy. Dec. 14th three petitions were offered to the house; one touching liberty for godly preachers; a second to exercise and continue their ministry; and a third for a speedy supply of able men for destitute places.§ The first was brought in by Sir *Thomas Lucy*; the second by Sir *Edward Dymock*; and the third by Mr. *Gates*. Soon after this Dr. *Turner* stood up, and put the house in remembrance of a bill and book which he had heretofore offered to the house; the bill was entitled, *An Act concerning the Subscription of Ministers*, and proposes, “That no other subscription but what is enjoined by the 13th of Queen *Elizabeth*, be required of any minister or preacher

\* Appendix, No. iv.

† Strype's Ann. vol. iii. p. 233, 283.

|| B. ix. p. 173.

§ Life of Whitgift, p. 176, 177.

‘ in the church of *England* ; and that the refusing to subscribe any other articles, shall not be any cause for the archbishops or bishops, or any other persons having ecclesiastical jurisdiction, to refuse any of the said ministers to any ecclesiastical office, function or dignity ; but that the said archbishops, bishops, &c. shall institute, induct, admit and invest, or cause to be instituted, &c. such persons as shall be presented by the lawful patrons, notwithstanding their refusal to subscribe any other articles not set down in the statute 13 *Eliz.* And that no minister for the future shall be suspended, deprived or otherwise molested in body or goods, by virtue of any ecclesiastical jurisdiction, but only in the case of obstinately and wilfully defending any heresies, condemned by the express word of God, or for their dissolute lives, which shall be proved by two credible witnesses, or by their own voluntary confession.” The book consisted of 34 articles of complaint, but by advice of the house, the substance of the petitions was reduced by the ministers into sixteen articles, which he desired might be imparted to the House of lords, and they be requested to join with the Commons in exhibiting them by way of humble suit to the Queen. The five first were against insufficient ministers ; then followed,

6. That all pastors be admitted to cures might be tried and allowed by the parishes.

7. That no oath or subscription might be tendered to any at their entrance into the ministry, but such as is expressly prescribed by the statutes of this realm, except the oath against corrupt entring.\*

8. That ministers may not be troubled for omission of some rites or portions prescribed in the book of *common prayer*.

9. That they may not be called and urged to answer before the *officials* and *commissaries*, but before the bishops themselves.

10. That such as has been suspended or deprived for no other offence, but only for not *subscribing*, might be restored.

11. That the bishops would forbear their excommunica-

\* MS. p. 466. Fuller, b. ix. p. 189, 190.

tion *ex officio mero* of godly and learned preachers, not detected for open offence of life, or apparent error in doctrine; and that they might not be called before the high commission, or out of the diocese where they lived, except for some notable offence.

12. That it might be permitted to them in every arch-deaconry, to have some common *exercises* and *conferences* among themselves, to be limited and prescribed by the *ordinaries*.

13. That the high censure of *excommunication* may not be denounced or executed for small matters.

14. Nor by lay-chancellors, commissaries, or officials, but by the bishops themselves, with the assistance of grave persons.

15, 16. That *non-residence* and *pluralities* may be quite removed out of the church, or at least that according to the Queen's injunctions (*Article 44.*) no non-resident having already a licence or faculty may enjoy it, unless he depute an able curate, who may weekly preach and catechise, as is required in her majesty's injunctions.

This petition was attended with a moving supplication to the Queen and parliament, in the name of thousands of the poor untaught people of *England*, drawn up by Mr. *Sampson*, in which they complain, that in many of their congregations they had none to *break the bread of life*, nor the comfortable preaching of God's holy word :\* That the bishops in their ordinations had no regard to such as were qualified to *preach*, provided they could only read, and did but conform to the ceremonies : That they deprived such as were capable of preaching on account of ceremonies which do not edify, but are rather unprofitable burthens to the church; and that they molest the people that go from their own parish churches to seek the bread of life, when they have no preaching at home. They complain, that there are thousands of parishes destitute of the necessary means of salvation, and therefore pray the Queen and parliament to provide a remedy.

In answer to the petition last mentioned, the bishop of *Winchester*, in the name of his brethren, drew up the following reply.

\* *Strype's Annals*, p. 223.

The five first petitions tend to one thing, that is, the reformation of an unlearned and insufficient ministry; to which we answer, that though there are many such in the church, yet that there was never less reason to complain of them than at present, and that things are mending every day.

To the 6th article they answered, that it savored of popular elections long since abrogated; that it would breed divisions in parishes, and prejudice the patron's right.

To the 7th and four following articles they reply, that if they are granted the whole hierarchy will be unbraced; for the 7th article shakes the ground of all ecclesiastical government, by subverting the oath of canonical obedience to the bishop *in omnibus licitis & honestis*.\* The 8th article requires a dispensation from the civil magistrate, to the subverting *the act for uniformity of common prayer, &c. and confirmation of the rites and ceremonies of the church*.

The 9th desires a dispensation from the jurisdiction of our ecclesiastical courts, as chancellors, officials, &c. which will in the end subvert all episcopal authority. To the 10th they say, that the ministers who have been suspended are heady, rash and contentious; and it is a perilous example, to have sentences revoked that have been given according to law, except they would yield. The 11th petition cutteth off another considerable branch of ecclesiastical jurisdiction, viz. the oath *ex officio*, which is very necessary in some cases, where the parishioners are so perverse, that though the minister varies the service of the church as by law appointed, they will not complain, much less be witnesses against him.

The exercises mentioned in the 12th article are by the Queen's majesty suppressed.

To the 13th and 14th they answer, that they are willing to petition the Queen, that the sentence of excommunication may be pronounced by the bishop, with such assistance as he shall call in, or by some ecclesiastical person commissioned by him.

To the 15th and 16th articles they answer, that the

\* Life of Whitgift, p. 189.

small value of many ecclesiastical livings, made pluralities and non-residencies in a manner necessary.\*

The debates upon this last head running very high, a bill was ordered to be brought in immediately against pluralities and non-residencies, and for appeals from ecclesiastical courts. It was said in favor of the bill, that non-residencies and pluralities were *mala in se*, evil in their own nature; that they answered no valuable purpose, but hindered the industry of the clergy, and were a means to keep the country in ignorance, at a time when there were only 3000 preachers to supply 9000 parishes. The archbishop drew up his reasons against the bill, and prevailed with the convocation to present them in an address to the Queen, wherein they style themselves her majesty's *poor distressed supplicants*, now in danger from the bill depending in the House of Commons against *pluralities* and *non-residencies*; "which (say they) impeacheth your majesty's prerogative; lesseneth the revenues of the crown; overthroweth the study of divinity in both universities; will deprive men of the livings they lawfully possess; will beggar the clergy; will bring in a base and unlearned ministry; lessen the hospitality of cathedrals; be an encouragement to students to go over to foreign seminaries, where they may be better provided for; and in a word, will make way for anarchy and confusion."†

And to give some satisfaction to the public they presented six articles to the Queen, as the sum of all that needed amendment.§ The *first* was, that none should be admitted into holy orders under twenty-four years of age; that they should have presentation to a cure; that they should bring testimonials of their good life; and that the bishop might refuse whom he thought fit, without the danger of a *quare impedit*. The *second* was, to restrain the commutation of penance, except upon great consideration, of which the bishop to be judge. The *third* was, to restrain licences to marry without *banns*. The *fourth* to moderate some excesses about excommunication. The *fifth*, for re-

\* Life of Whitgift, p. 190.

† Life of Whitgift, p. 193.

§ Life of Whitgift, p. 209.



straining pluralities of benefices. The *sixth*, concerning fees to ecclesiastical officers and their servants. But even these articles lay by till the year 1597, when they were confirmed in convocation, and afterwards incorporated among the canons.

In the mean time, the bill against pluralities passed the House of Commons, and was sent up to the lords, where the archbishops of *Canterbury* and *York*, and bishop of *Winchester*, made long speeches, shewing that neither the cathedrals, nor professors in the universities, could subsist without them. To prove this they produced a list of the small value of many ecclesiastical livings, according to the Queen's books. To which it was replied, that there were many suspended preachers would be glad of the smallest of those livings, if they might have them without molestation; however, that it was more proper to go upon ways and means for the augmentation of smaller livings, than to suffer the poor people to perish for lack of knowledge, while the incumbents were indulged in idleness and sloth; but the weight of the bench of bishops, with the court interest, threw out the bill.

This exasperated the commons to that degree, that after the holidays they resumed the debate of the *bill of petitions*, and ordered several other bills to be brought in to clip the wings of the bishops, and lessen the power of the spiritual courts. One was for swearing bishops in the courts of *Chancery* and *King's-Bench*, that they should act nothing against the common law of the land. Another to reduce their fees. A third for liberty to marry at all times of the year. A fourth for the qualification of ministers. And a fifth for restoring of discipline. The act for qualifying ministers, annuls all popish ordinations; and disqualifies such as were not capable of preaching, as well as those who were convicted of profaneness, or any kind of immorality; but obliges the successor to allow the deprived minister a sufficient maintenance at the discretion of the justices of the quarter sessions; and if the *living* be not sufficient, it is to be done by a parish rate. It insists upon a careful examination and trial of the qualifications of candidates for the ministry by the bishop, assisted by twelve

of the laity; and makes the election, or consent of the people, necessary to his induction to the pastoral charge. The bill for discipline is for abolishing the canon law and all the spiritual courts;\* and for bringing the probates of testaments, and all civil business, into the courts of *Westminster-Hall*; it appoints a presbytery or eldership in each parish, which, together with the minister, shall determine the spiritual business of the parish, with an appeal to higher judicatories in cases of complaint.

Mr. *Strype* says,† the bill for the qualification of ministers passed the commons, which put the archbishop into such a fright, that the very next day he wrote the following letter to the Queen :

*“ May it please your Majesty to be advertised,*

*“ THAT notwithstanding the charge of late given by your highness to the lower house of parliament, for dealing in causes of the church ; albeit also, according to your majesty’s good liking, we have sent down order for the admitting of meet men in the ministry hereafter ; yet have they passed a bill in that house yesterday, touching that matter ; which, beside other inconveniencies, (as namely the trial of the minister’s sufficiency by twelve laymen, and such like) hath this also, that if it pass by parliament it cannot hereafter but in parliament be altered, what necessity soever shall urge thereunto : Which I am persuaded in a short time will appear, considering the multitudes of livings, not fit for men so qualified, by reason of the smallness thereof ; whereas if it be but as a canon from us, or by your majesty’s authority, it may be observed or altered at pleasure.*

*“ They have also passed a bill, giving liberty to marry at all times of the year without restraint, contrary to the old canons continually observed among us ; and containing matter which tendeth to the slander of this church, AS HAVING HITHERTO MAINTAINED AN ERROR.*

*“ There is likewise now in hand in the same house, a bill concerning ecclesiastical courts, and visitation by bishops ;*

\* MS. p. 208, 213.

† Life of Whitgift, p. 198.

‘ which may reach to the overthrow of ecclesiastical juris-  
 ‘ diction, and study of the civil laws. The pretence of  
 ‘ the bill is against excessive fees and exactions in eccle-  
 ‘ siastical courts; which fees are none other than have  
 ‘ been of long time accustomed to be taken; the law already  
 ‘ established providing a sharp and severe punishment for  
 ‘ such as shall exact the same; beside an order also which  
 ‘ we have at this time for the better performance thereof.

‘ “I therefore most humbly beseech your majesty, to con-  
 ‘ tinue your gracious goodness towards us, who with all  
 ‘ humility submit ourselves to your highness, and cease not  
 ‘ daily to pray for your happy state, and long and prosper-  
 ‘ ous reign over us. From *Lambeth*, the 24th of March,  
 ‘ 1584.

*Your Majesty's chaplain,*

*and daily orator most bound,*

JO. CANTUAR.”

The Queen was pleased with the archbishop's advice of making alterations by *canon* and not by *statute*, that she might reserve the power in her own hands; and immediately sent a message to the Commons by the lord treasurer, to reprimand them “for encroaching upon her supremacy, and for attempting what she had forbidden, with which she was highly offended; and to command the speaker, in her majesty's name, to see that no bills touching reformation in causes ecclesiastical should be exhibited, and if any such were exhibited, she commands him upon his allegiance not to read them.” The Commons now saw their mistake, in vesting the whole power of reforming the policy of the church in the single person of the Queen, who knew how to act the sovereign, and display her prerogative as well as her father. Had it been reserved to the whole legislature, Queen, Lords and Commons, with advice of the representative body of the clergy, it had been more equitable; but now if the whole nation were dissatisfied, not an insignificant rite or ceremony must be changed, or a bill brought into either house of parliament, without an infringement of the prerogative: No lay-person in the kingdom

must meddle with religion except the Queen ; the hands of lords and commons are tied up, her majesty is absolute in the affairs of the church, and no motion for reformation must arise from any but herself.

The archbishop's reasons against the bill for marrying at any time of the year are very extraordinary ; *it is contrary* (says his grace) *to the old canons*. But many of these are contrary to the canon of scripture ; and they who framed this seem a little to resemble the character which the apostle gives of an apostate from the faith ; 1 *Tim. iv. 3. Forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from meats*. He adds, *It tendeth to the slander of the church, AS HAVING HITHERTO MAINTAINED AN ERROR*. Is it then a slander to the church of *England*, or to any protestant church, to say she is *fallible* and may have maintained an error ? Have not *fathers and councils* erred ? Nay, in the very church of *Rome*, which alone lays claim to INFALLIBILITY, have we not read of one pope and council reversing the decrees of another ? The 21st article of the church of *England*, says, that *general councils may err, and sometimes have erred, even in things pertaining to God*. And if a general council may err, even in things of importance to salvation, surely it can be no slander to say a convocation, a parliament, or single person, may mistake, in *commanding to abstain from meats, and forbidding to marry at certain times of the year*.

While the puritans were attending the parliament, they did not neglect the *convocation* : a petition was presented to them in the name of the ministers who refused to subscribe the archbishop's three articles, wherein they desire to be satisfied in their scruples, which the law admits, but had not hitherto been attempted.\* The convocation rejecting their petition, the ministers printed their *apology to the church, and humble suit to the high court of parliament*, in which they mention several things in the *public service* as repugnant to the word of God ; as, requiring faith in an infant to be baptized ; confounding baptism and regeneration ; adding to the pure and perfect institutions of Christ the cross in baptism, and the ring in marriage ; advancing the

\* MS. p. 595.

writings of the *Apocrypha*, to a level with *holy scripture* by reading them in the church, with many others. They conclude with an earnest supplication to their superiors, to be continued in their callings, considering their being set apart to the ministry, and the obligations they were under to God and their people ; they protest they will do any thing they can without sin, and the rather, because they are apprehensive that the *shepherds being stricken, their flocks will be scattered*.

The puritans' last resort was to the archbishop, who had a prevailing interest in the Queen ; a paper was therefore published, entitled, *Means how to settle a godly and charitable quietness in the church* ; humbly addressed to the archbishop, and containing the following proposals :—

That it would please his grace not to press such subscription as had been of late required, seeing in the parliament that established the articles, the subscription was misliked and put out :\* That he would not oblige men to accuse themselves by the oath *ex officio*, it being contrary to law and the liberty of the subject : That those ministers who have been of late suspended, may be restored upon giving a bond and security not to preach against the dignities of archbishops, bishops, &c. nor to disturb the orders of the church, but to maintain it as far as they can ; and soberly to teach Jesus Christ crucified :† That ministers may not be exposed to the malicious prosecution of their enemies, upon their omission of *any* TITTLE in the *service-book* : That they may not be obliged to read the *Apocrypha*, seeing in the first book printed in her majesty's reign the same was left out, and was afterwards inserted without warrant of law, and contrary to the statute, which allows but three alterations : That the *cross in baptism* may not be enforced, seeing in King *Edward's* 2d book there was a note which left that, and some other rites indifferent ; which note ought

\* Life of Whitgift, p. 196.

† To this proposal the archbishop answered, “ *I do not mislike of the bond* ; but he that shall enter into it, and yet refuse to subscribe, in my opinion is a mere hypocrite, or a very wilful fellow ; for this condition containeth more than doth the subscription.” ED.

Maddox's Vindication, p. 348.

to have been in the Queen's book, it not being among the alterations appointed by statute : They further desire, that in baptism the *godfathers* may answer in their own names, and not in the child's : That midwives and women may not baptize : That the words upon delivery of the *ring* in marriage may be left indifferent : That his grace would not urge the precise wearing of the *gown, cap, tippet* and *surplice*, but only that ministers be obliged to wear *apparel* meet and decent for their callings : That *lecturers* who have not *cure of souls*, but are licenced to preach, behaving themselves well, be not enforced to minister the sacraments, unless they be content so to do.

But the archbishop would abate nothing, nor admit of the least latitude from the national establishment. He framed an answer to the proposals, in which he insists upon a full conformity, telling the petitioners, that it was none of his business to alter the ecclesiastical laws, or dispense with them ; which was all they were to expect from him. What could wise and good men do more in a peaceable way for the liberty of their consciences, or a further reformation in the church ? They petitioned the Queen, applied to both houses of parliament, and addressed the convocation and bishops ; they moved no seditions nor riots, but fasted and prayed for the Queen and church, as long as they were allowed ; and when they could serve them no longer, they patiently submitted to suspensions and deprivations, fines and imprisonments, till it should please God, of his infinite mercy, to open a door for their further usefulness.

The papists made their advantages of these divisions, a plot was discovered this very year [1585] against the Queen's life, for which lord *Paget* and others fled their country ; and one *Parry* was executed, who was to have killed her majesty, as she was riding abroad ; to which (it is said\*) the pope encouraged him, by granting him his blessing, and a plenary indulgence and remission of all his sins ; assuring him that, besides the merit of the action in heaven, his *holiness* would make himself his *debtor* in the best manner he could, and therefore exhorted him to put his *most holy and honorable purposes* in execution ; this was

\* Strype's Ann. vol. ii. p. 249.

written from *Rome*, Jan. the 30th, 1584, and signed by the cardinal of *Como*. MARY Queen of *Scots* was big with expectation of the crown of *England* at this time, from the preparations of foreign popish princes, who were determined to make the strongest efforts to set her upon the throne, and to restore the catholic religion in *England*: but they could not get ready before her head was laid down upon the block.

The parliament which met again in November, being sensible of the importance of the Queen's life, entered into a voluntary association to revenge her death, if that should happen through any violence :\* They also made a severe statute against jesuits and seminary priests, or others who engaged in plots, by virtue of the bull of excommunication of pope *Pius V.* and against any subject of *England* that should go abroad for education in any of the popish seminaries. Yet none of these things could move the Queen or bishops to take any steps towards uniting protestants among themselves.

But to put an effectual stop to the pens of the church's adversaries, his grace applied to the Queen for a further restraint of the press, which he obtained and published by authority of the star-chamber (says Mr. *Strype*†) June 23, 28 *Eliz.* It was framed by the archbishop's head, who prefixed a preface to it: The decree was to this purpose, 'That there should be no printing presses in private places, nor any where but in *London* and the two universities. No new presses were to be set up but by licence from the archbishop, and bishop of *London* for the time being; they to signify the same to the wardens of the stationers' company, who should present such as they chose to be masters of printing presses before the ecclesiastical commissioners for their approbation. No person to print any book unless first allowed according to the Queen's injunctions, and to be seen and perused by the archbishop or bishop of *London*, or their chaplain. No book to be printed against any of the laws in being, nor any of the Queen's injunctions. Persons that should sell or bind up

\* Ibid. p. 293.

† Life of Whitgift, p. 223.



‘such books to suffer three months imprisonment. And it shall be lawful for the wardens of the *stationers’* company to make search after them, and seize them to her majesty’s use; and the printers shall be disabled from exercising their trade for the future, and suffer six months imprisonment, and their presses be broken.” Notwithstanding this edict, the archbishop was far from enjoying a peaceable triumph, the puritans finding ways and means from abroad, to propagate their writings, and expose the severity of their adversaries.

Some faint attempts were made this summer for reviving the exercises called *prophesyings*, in the diocese of *Chester*, where the clergy were very ignorant: Bishop *Chaderton* drew up proper regulations, in imitation of those already mentioned; but the design proved abortive. The bishop of *Litchfield* and *Coventry* also published some articles for his visitation which savored of puritanism, as against non-residents, for making a more strict enquiry into the qualifications of ministers, and for restraining unworthy communicants.\* He also erected a kind of judicatory,§ consisting of four learned divines with himself, to examine such as should be presented for ordination. When the archbishop had read them over he called them the *wellspring of a pernicious platform*, and represented them to the Queen as contrary to law, and to the settled state of the church; the bishop wrote a defence of his articles to the archbishop, shewing their consistency with law, and the great advantage which might arise from them; but *Whitgift* would hear of nothing that looked like a puritanical reformation.†

\* *Strype’s Ann.* vol. iii. p. 328.

§ Here Mr. *Neal* is censured by bishop *Warburton*, as partial, for reckoning the bishop of *Litchfield’s* conduct to be agreeable to law, because in favor of the puritans: and for representing before, p. 348, the archbishop’s publishing articles without the great seal as illegal, because against the puritans. Not to say that the articles in one case are very different from the object of the judicatory in the other, Mr. *Neal*, it will appear on examining, doth not decide on the legality of the measure in either case, but, as an historian, states what was offered on this head by the parties: and this he does, with respect to the archbishop very fully *pro* and *con*. Ed. † MS. p. 515.

The Lord's day was now very much profaned, by the encouraging of plays and sports in the evening, and sometimes in the afternoon. The Rev. Mr. *Smith*, M. A. in his sermon before the university of *Cambridge*, the first Sunday in *Lent*, maintained the unlawfulness of these plays; for which he was summoned before the vice-chancellor, and upon examination offered to prove, that the Christian Sabbath ought to be observed by an abstinence from all worldly business, and spent in works of piety and charity; though he did not apprehend we were bound to the strictness of the *Jewish* precepts.\* The parliament had taken this matter into consideration,† and passed a bill for the better and more reverent observation of the *Sabbath*, which the speaker recommended to the Queen in an elegant speech, but her majesty refused to pass it, under pretence of not suffering the parliament to meddle with matters of religion, which was her prerogative. However, the thing appeared so reasonable, that without the sanction of a law, the religious observation of the sabbath grew into esteem with all sober persons, and after a few years became the distinguishing mark of a *puritan*.

This summer Mr. *Cartwright* returned from abroad, having spent five years in preaching to the *English* congregation at *Antwerp*; he had been seized with an ague, which ended in an hectic, for which the physicians advised him to his native air. Upon this he wrote to the earl of *Leicester* and the lord treasurer for leave to come home; these noblemen made an honorable mention of him in parliament, but he could not obtain their mediation with the Queen for his pardon, so that as soon as it was known he was landed, though in a weak and languishing condition, he was apprehended and thrown into prison; when he appeared before the archbishop, he behaved with that modesty and respect as softened the heart of his great adversary, who, upon promise of his peaceable and quiet behavior, suffered him to go at large; for which the earl of *Leicester* and Mr. *Cartwright* returned his *grace* thanks; but all their interest could not procure him a licence to preach.

\* *Strype's Ann.* p. 341.† *Ibid.* vol. iii. p. 296.

‘ Mr. *Cartwright* (says the archbishop to the earl) shall be  
 ‘ welcome to me at all times, but to grant him a licence to  
 ‘ preach, till I am better satisfied of his conformity, is not  
 ‘ consistent with my duty or conscience.” However, the  
 earl made him governor of an hospital in *Warwick*, where  
 he was connived at for a time, and preached without a li-  
 cence ; his salary was a house, and 100l. per ann.

Mr. *Fenner* and *Wood*, two other suspended ministers,  
 were released after twelve months imprisonment, upon a  
 general subscription to the articles, *as far as the law requir-*  
*ed*, and a promise to use the book of *common prayer*, and  
 no other ; but such was the clamor on all hands, by reason  
 of the three articles to be subscribed by all who had livings  
 already, as well as those that should hereafter take orders,  
 that secretary *Walsingham* went over to *Lambeth*, and told  
 his *grace*, that it would stop in a great measure the com-  
 plaints which were brought to court, if he would require  
 subscription only of such as were hereafter to enter into  
 holy orders, and suffer those already in places to proceed  
 in the discharge of their duty, upon condition of their giv-  
 ing bond to read the *common prayer*, according to the usa-  
 ges and laws prescribing the same ; which the archbishop  
 promised to comply with.\*

But the *non-subscribing* divines, who were unpreferred,  
 might not so much as teach school for a livelihood, for the  
 archbishop would grant no licence without *subscribing* ;  
 and from this time his licences to teach grammar, and even  
 reading and writing, were granted only from year to year :  
 The schoolmasters were to be full conformists ;† they were  
 limited to a particular diocese, and were not authorized to  
 teach elsewhere ; they were to instruct their scholars in  
 nothing but what was agreeable to the laws and statutes of  
 the realm : and all this only *during the bishop's pleasure*.  
 Such was the rigor of these times !

Mr. *Travers* had been lecturer at the *Temple* with Mr.  
*Hooker* the new *master* about two years, but with very little  
 harmony or agreement, one being a strict *Calvinist*, the  
 other a person of larger principles ; the sermon in the

\* Life of Whitgift, p. 226, 7.

† Ibid. p. 246.

morning was very often confuted in the afternoon, and vindicated again the next *Lord's day*. The writer of *Hooker's life*\* reports, that the morning sermon spoke the language of *Canterbury*, the afternoon that of *Geneva*. *Hooker* complaining of this usage, the archbishop took the opportunity to suspend Mr. *Travers* at once, without any warning; for as he was going up into the pulpit to preach on the *Lord's day afternoon* the officer served him with a prohibition upon the pulpit stairs; upon which, instead of a sermon, he acquainted the congregation with his suspension, and dismissed them. The reasons given for it were, 1. That he was not ordained according to the rites of the church of *England*. 2. That he had broken the orders of the 7th of the Queen, *That disputes should not be brought into the pulpit*.

Mr. *Travers* in his own vindication drew up a petition, or *supplication to the council*, in which he complains of being judged and condemned before he was heard; and then goes on to answer the objections alledged against him in the prohibition.

First it is said, *that I am not lawfully called to exercise the office of a minister, nor allowed to preach, according to the laws of the church of England*.

To which I answer, that my call was by such methods as are appointed in the national synods of the foreign reformed churches; testimonials of which I have shewn to my lord archbishop of *Canterbury*; so that if any man be lawfully called to the ministry in those countries, I am.

But *I am not qualified to be a minister in England, because I am not ordained according to the laws of this country*.

I beseech your lordships to weigh my answer: Such is the communion of saints, as that what solemn acts are done in one true church of Christ, *according to his word*, are held lawful in all others: The constituting or making of

\* Bishop Warburton deems it *disingenuous* in Mr. Neal to quote the language of this biographer, as he knew that, so quoted, it would be understood to reflect upon Mr. Hooker as only a tool or creature of the archbishop. But is not bishop Warburton, here, unnecessarily captious? To me it appears, that the opposition lying between *Canterbury* and *Geneva*, is sufficient to screen Mr. Neal's use of the biographer's words from the imputation of such a meaning. ED.

a minister being once lawfully done ought not to be repealed: Pastors and teachers in the New Testament hold the same manner of calling as I had: The repeating ordination makes void the former ordination, and consequently all such acts as were done by virtue of it, as *baptism, confirmation, marriage, &c.* By the same rule people ought to be re-baptized and married over again, when they come in to this country from a foreign.\*

Besides, by the statute 18 *Elizabeth*, those who have been ordained in foreign protestant churches, upon their subscribing the articles therein mentioned, are qualified to enjoy any benefice in the kingdom, equally with them who are ordained according to the laws now in being; which, comprehending all that are *priests according to the order of the church of Rome*, must certainly be as favorable to ministers ordained among foreign protestants. In consequence of this law many *Scots* divines are now in possession of benefices in the church, as was Mr. *Whittingham*, though he was the first who was called in question in this case.

But it is said, *I preached without presentation or licence.*

To which I answer, that the place where I exercised my ministry required no presentation, nor had I a title, or reaped any benefit by law, but only received a voluntary contribution, and was employed in preaching only; and as to a licence, I was recommended to be a minister of that place, by two several letters of the bishop of *London* to the gentlemen of the *Inner Temple*, without which letters that society would not have permitted me to officiate.

Secondly, *I am charged with indiscretion and want of duty to Mr. Hooker, master of the Temple; and with breaking the order to the 7th of the Queen, about bringing disputes into the pulpit.*

As to *want of duty*, I answer, though some have suspected my want of good-will to Mr. *Hooker*, because he succeeded Dr. *Alvey*, in the place I desired for myself; this is a mistake, for I declined the place because I could not subscribe to my lord of *Canterbury's* late articles, which

\* Whitgift's Life, p. 251.

I would not do for the mastership of the *Temple*, or any other place in the church. I was glad the place was given *Mr. Hooker*, as well for the sake of old acquaintance, as to some kind of affinity there is between us, hoping we should live peaceably and amicably together, as becomes brethren ; but when I heard him preach against the doctrine of *assurance*, and *for salvation in the church of Rome, with all their errors and idolatry*, I thought myself obliged to oppose him ; yet when I found it occasioned a pulpit war I declared publicly that I would concern myself no further in that manner, though *Mr. Hooker* went on with the dispute.

But it is said, *I should then have complained of him to the high commission.*

To which I answer, it was not out of contempt or neglect of lawful authority, but because I was against all methods of severity, and had declared my resolution to trouble the pulpit with those debates no more.

Upon the whole, I hope it will appear to your *lordships*, that my behavior has not deserved so severe a punishment as has been inflicted upon me ; and therefore I humbly pray, that your lordships would please to restore me to my ministry, by such means as your *wisdoms* shall think fit ; which will lay me under farther obligations to pray for your temporal and eternal happiness. But if your lordships cannot procure me this favor, I recommend myself to your lordships' protection, under her majesty, in a private life, and the church to Almighty God, who in justice will punish the wicked, and in mercy reward the righteous with an happy immortality.

*Mr. Hooker* wrote an answer to *Mr. Travers's supplication*, in a letter to his patron the archbishop of *Canterbury*, in which he takes no notice of *Travers's* ordination, but confines himself to his objections against his doctrine ; some of which he undertakes to refute, and in other places complains of misrepresentation. But let all be granted that he would have, (says *Mr. Hooker*) what will it advantage him? He ought to have complained to the *high commissioners*, and not have confuted me in the pulpit ; for schisms and disturbances will arise in the church, if all men may be tol-

erated to think as they please, and publicly speak what they think. Therefore by a decree agreed upon by the bishops, and confirmed by her majesty, it was ordered that if erroneous doctrine should be taught publicly, it should not be publicly refuted, but complained of to such persons as her majesty should appoint to hear and determine such causes; for breach of which order he is charged with want of duty; and all the faults he alledges against me can signify nothing in his own defence. Mr. *Hooker* concludes with his unfeigned desires, that both Mr. *Travers's* and his papers may be burnt, and all animosities buried in oblivion, and that there may be no strife among them but this, who shall pursue peace, unity, and piety, with the greatest vigor and diligence.

But the council interfered not in the affair. *Travers* was left to the mercy of the archbishop, who could never be prevailed with to take off his suspension, or license him to preach in any part of *England*; upon which he accepted an invitation into *Ireland*, and became provost of *Trinity* college in the university of *Dublin*; here he was tutor to the famous Dr. *Usher*, afterwards archbishop of *Armagh*, who always had him in high esteem; but being driven from thence by the wars, he returned after some years into *England*, and spent the remainder of his days in silence, obscurity, and great poverty; he was a learned man, a polite preacher, an admirable orator, and one of the worthiest divines of his age. But all these qualifications put together, could not atone for the single crime of non-conformity.

Mr. *Cartwright* being forbid preaching, had been encouraged by the earl of *Leicester* and secretary *Walsingham* to answer the *Rhemist translation of the New Testament*, published with annotations in favor of popery; divers doctors and heads of houses of the university of *Cambridge*, solicited him to the same work, as appears by their epistle prefixed to the book; the like encouragement he received from sundry ministers in *London* and *Suffolk*, none being thought so equal to the task as himself; and because *Cartwright* was poor, the secretary of state sent him 100l. with assurance of such further assistance as should be necessa-



ry;† this was about the year 1583. *Cartwright* accordingly applied himself to the work, but the archbishop by his sovereign authority forbade him to proceed, being afraid that his writings would do the *hierarchy* more damage than they would do service to the protestant cause : The book therefore was left unfinished, and not published till the year 1648, to the great regret of the learned world, and reproach of the archbishop.

The sufferings of Mr. *Gardiner*, the deprived minister of *Malden* in *Essex*, would have moved compassion in any except the bishop of *London*. I will represent them in his own words, as they were sent to him in form of a supplication, dated Sept. 7th, 1586.\*

To the right reverend father in God the Lord Bishop of *London*.

“ *My duty in humble-wise remembered, my lord,*

“ I AM cast into prison by your lordship, for a matter  
 ‘ which about seven years past was slanderously raised up  
 ‘ against me ; I was by course of law cleared, and the  
 ‘ Lord God which searcheth the hearts, before whom both  
 ‘ you and I shall shortly appear, doth know, and him I call  
 ‘ to witness, that I was and am falsely accused. I have  
 ‘ been extremely sick in prison ; I thank God I am amend-  
 ‘ ed, but yet so that the physicians say my infection from  
 ‘ the prison will be very dangerous. I have a poor wife  
 ‘ and five children, which are in lamentable case : I had six  
 ‘ children at the beginning of my imprisonment ; but by  
 ‘ reason of my sickness in prison, my wife being constrain-  
 ‘ ed to attend upon me, one of my children, for want of  
 ‘ somebody to oversee them, was drowned in a tub of wort,  
 ‘ being two years and a half old. If your lordship have no  
 ‘ compassion on me, yet take pity upon the widow and fa-  
 ‘ therless, (for in that state are now my wife and poor in-  
 ‘ fants) whose tears are before the Lord. I crave no  
 ‘ more but this, to be bailed ; and if I am found guilty of  
 ‘ any breach of law, let me have extremity without any  
 ‘ favor.

“ *Your lordship’s to command in Christ,*

“ JOHN GARDINER.”

† Life of Whitgift, p. 253.

\* MS. p. 752.

Mr. *Giles Wiggington*, M.A. minister of *Sedburgh*, having been deprived at *Lambeth* for non-conformity, and another inducted into his living, went home, and being denied entrance into the church, preached a kind of farewell sermon to his parishioners in the church-yard, and administered the sacrament, having no peace in his mind till he had done it, though his brethren in the ministry would have dissuaded him; after this he retired with his wife and children to *Burrough-Bridge*, but was arrested in his journey by a pursuivant from the archbishop of *York*, and sent to *Lancaster gaol*, 50 miles distant from the place where he was arrested, in a hard and cold winter; there he was shut up among felons and condemned prisoners, and worse used than they, or than the recusant papist. From hence he sent up his case to Sir *Walter Mildmay*, one of the privy council, but with little success; for he was a warm non-conformist, and a bold preacher against the lordly proceedings of the bishops, for which, and for refusing the oath *ex officio*, he suffered a long imprisonment.\* He was afterwards apprehended again, upon suspicion of his being one of the authors of *Martin Mar-Prelate*, which he denied, but confessing he did not dislike the book, he was therefore confined in the *Compter* and the *Gate-house*, till (I believe) he consented to leave the realm.

In the parliament that met this year, Oct. 29, 1586, and 28 *Elix.* the *puritan ministers* made another effort for parliamentary relief, for which purpose they presented an humble supplication to the house of commons; in which they say, “It pierces our hearts with grief to hear the cries of the  
 ‘country people for the word of God. The bishops either  
 ‘preach not at all, or very seldom; neither can they for their  
 ‘manifold business, their dioceses being too large for their  
 ‘personal inspection; besides, they are incumbered with  
 ‘civil affairs, not only in their own ecclesiastical courts, in  
 ‘causes testamentary, &c. but as lord barons, justices of  
 ‘peace, members of the star-chamber, council table, and ex-  
 ‘clesiastical commission; all which is contrary to the words  
 ‘of Christ, who says, his kingdom is not of this world;

\* MS. p. 754, 843, &c.

‘ and contrary to the practice of all other reformed churches.  
‘ And whereas the scriptures say, that ministers of the  
‘ gospel should be such as are able to teach sound doc-  
‘ trine and convince gainsayers, yet the bishops have made  
‘ priests of the basest of the people, not only for their oc-  
‘ cupations and trades whence they have taken them, as  
‘ *shoe-makers, barbers, taylors, water-bearers, shepherds,*  
‘ *and horse-keepers*; but also for their want of good learn-  
‘ ing and honesty. How true this our complaint is, may  
‘ appear by the SURVEY of some *shires* and *counties* here-  
‘ unto annexed, even some of the best, whereby the rest  
‘ may be estimated.

‘ We do acknowledge, that there are a number of men  
‘ within the ministry, who have good and acceptable gifts,  
‘ and are able to preach the word of God to edification;  
‘ of which number there are two sorts: There are a great  
‘ number that live not upon the place where they are bene-  
‘ ficed, but abandon their flocks, directly contrary to the  
‘ charge of Christ to *Peter*, saying, *Feed my sheep*; and of  
‘ the apostle *Paul* to the elders at *Ephesus*, *Take heed to*  
‘ *yourselves, and the flock over which the Holy Ghost has*  
‘ *made you overseers, to feed the church of God*. Of this  
‘ sort are sundry bishops, who have benefices *in commen-*  
‘ *dam*; university men, and chaplains at court; others get  
‘ two or three benefices into their hands, to serve them for  
‘ winter and summer houses; which *pluralities* and *non-*  
‘ *residencies* are the more grievous because they are toler-  
‘ ated by law. There are indeed several that reside upon  
‘ their benefices, but content themselves with just satisfy-  
‘ ing the law; that is, to have divine service read, and four  
‘ sermons a year.

‘ But great numbers of the best qualified for preaching,  
‘ and of the greatest industry and application to their spir-  
‘ itual functions, are not suffered quietly to discharge their  
‘ duties, but are followed with innumerable vexations, not-  
‘ withstanding they are neither *heretics* nor *scismatics*, but  
‘ keep within the pale of the church, and persuade others  
‘ to do so, who would otherwise have departed from it.  
‘ They fast and pray for the Queen and the church, though  
‘ they have been rebuked for it, and diversly punished by

ings of the ecclesiastical commissioners *according to their own discretions*, without regard to law : 3. The small number of commissioners, viz. THREE, who may decide the most weighty causes : 4. The not allowing an appeal to any other court : 5. The double character of the bishops, who sit on the bench both as *bishops* and as *commissioners*. 6. The oath *ex officio*, in which this is always one of their interrogatories, *Do you wholly keep, observe, and read in your church, all the parts of the book of common prayer, and wear the habits ?*

The SURVEY mentioned in the supplication, by which the miserable state of the church for want of an able and sufficient ministry appears, is too large to be inserted ; it was taken in the years 1585 and 1586, by some persons employed for that purpose against the meeting of the parliament ;\* it is divided into eight columns :

The first, contains the name of the benefice.

The second, the yearly value.

The third, the number of souls.

The fourth, the name of the incumbent, and whether a preacher or not.

The fifth, what other benefices he has, and what curates do serve him.

The sixth, his character and conversation.

The seventh, who made him minister. And,

The eighth, the patron of the living ; according to the following plan.

\* MS. p. 684, & seq.

THE COUNTY OF CORNWALL. DEANRY OF PENDOR, &c.

<i>Names of the benefice.</i>	<i>Yearly Value.</i>	<i>Num-ber of souls.</i>	<i>Name of the Incumbent, and whether a preacher.</i>	<i>What benefices he has more, and what curates do serve them.</i>	<i>His conversation.</i>	<i>Who ordained, or made him Minister.</i>	<i>The Patron.</i>
V. Lan- Leverie.	l. 80	200	Mr. Batten, no preacher.	No more.	He liveth as a pot-companion.	Bp. Alley.	Walter Kendal.
V. Treword- reth.	Marks. 100	300	Mr. Kendal, no preacher.	No more.	A simple man.	Bp. Bradbridge.	Ld. Chancellor.
V. Esey.	l. 30	60	J. Bernard, no preacher.	No more.	A common di- cer, burnt in the hand for felony, and full of all iniquity.	Bp. Bradbridge.	Canons of Ex- on.
R. de Breage.	l. 120	700	Fitz. Jeffery, a preacher, but non-resident.	He hath Buck- ennock.	Covetous; his curate Robert Doway, an ig- norant man.	Bp. Bradbridge.	The Queen.

Upon casting up the survey, the state of the following counties stands thus :

	Churches or livings.	Preachers.	No preachers but readers.	Double beneficed and non-residents.
In Cornwall are about	160	29	140	25
In Lincolnshire - -	590	121	455	154
In Oxfordshire - -	127	29	95	20
In Buckinghamshire, parsonages, vicarages, and curates serving	210	30	120	160
In Berkshire		29	51	48
In Surrey	140	24	125	8
In sixteen of the Hun- dreds of Essex	335	12	173	71
In Warwickshire	188	41	120	27
In Middlesex about	60	14	48	16
In London; within and without the walls, about	123	97	46	41

It must be uncommon diligence and application, as well as a very great expense, to collect so many names and characters of men ; the exact valuation of so many *livings* ; the number of *non-resident ministers* ; of such as had been *mass-priests* ; and of *mechanics* and *tradesmen* : But such was the zeal of these pious men ! The *survey* of *Lincolnshire* was signed by the justices of the peace of that county, and the others are attested by some of the principal clergymen of those parts ; and are so particular in all circumstances, as leave little room to doubt of their truth in general, though there may be some few mistakes in characters and numbers : Upon the whole, the *SURVEY* takes notice, that after 28 years establishment of the church of *England*, there were only 2000 preachers to serve near 10,000 parish churches, so that there were almost 8000 parishes without preaching ministers.\* To this account agrees that of Mr. *Fenner*, who lived in these times; and says, that a third part of the ministers of *England*, were covered with a cloud of

\* MS. p. 206.

suspensions ;\* that if persons would hear a sermon, they must go in some places, 5, 7, 12, yea in some counties 20 miles, and at the same time be fined 12*d.* a sabbath for being absent from their own parish church, though it be proved, they were hearing a sermon elsewhere, because they had none at home. Nor is it at all strange it should be thus in the country, when the bishop of *London* enjoined his clergy in his visitation this very year, 1. That every parson should have a bible in *Latin* and *English*. 2. That they should have *Bullinger's Decads*. 3. That they should have a paper book, and write in it the quantity of a sermon every week. 4. That such as could not preach themselves, should be taxed at four purchased sermons a year.† What a miserable state of things was this ! when many hundreds of pious and conscientious preachers were excluded the church, and starving with their families for want of employment.

With the *supplication* and *survey* abovementioned, a bill‡ was offered to the House of Commons for a further refor-

\* Answer to Dr. Bridges, p. 48.

† Life of Aylmer, p. 128.

‡ Bishop *Warburton* condemns “the offering of this bill to the House “as such a mutinous action in the puritan ministers,” that he wonders a writer of Mr. *Neal's* “good sense could mention them without censuring, much more that he should do it with commendation.” It is not easy to see where his lordship found Mr. *Neal's* commendation of this bill ; the Editor can discern a bare state of the proceedings only. And by what law or by what principle of the constitution is the offering of a bill and a representation of grievances to the house, an act of mutiny ? The bill of the puritans undoubtedly went to new model the establishment, but only by enlarging the terms of communion ; not by substituting new ceremonies in the room of those which were burthensome to themselves. It went, it is true, to introduce a new discipline, but not to abolish episcopacy. And was not the spiritual jurisdiction then exercised, oppressive ? Were not the proceedings of the bishops arbitrary ? If so, how was it “insufferable insolence” to seek a parliamentary reform ? It would have been, as his lordship grants, just and reasonable, if the puritans had moved for toleration only. This would have been more consistent in those who sought only their own liberty. But his lordship did not allow for the very different ideas we may have on the measures that should have been pursued, who view these transactions at this distance of time and many years after a toleration act has passed. from what those had whose minds, in the infancy of a separation from the church, felt all the attachments to it produced by education and habit, and were naturally averse to a total and final secession from



mation ; wherein, after a recital of their grievances, they pray that the book hereunto annexed, entitled, *a book of the form of Common Prayer, &c.* and every thing therein contained, may be from henceforth authorized and put in use and practice, throughout all her majesty's dominions, any former law, custom, or statute to the contrary, in any wise notwithstanding. The book contained prayers before and after sermon, but left a liberty for *variation*, if it was thought proper.\* The minister was to pray and give thanks in the words there prescribed, *or such like*. In the creed it leaves the article of *Christ's descent into hell* more at large. It omits three of the thirty-nine articles, viz. the 34th, 35th, and 36th. It takes the jurisdiction of the church out of the hands of the spiritual courts, and places it in an assembly of ministers and elders in every shire, who shall have power to examine, approve, and present ministers to the several parishes for their election, and even to depose them, with the consent of the bishop, upon their misbehavior.

At the same time a pamphlet was dispersed without doors, entitled, *a request of all true christians to the honorable house of parliament*. It prays, "That every parish church ' may have its preacher, and every city its superintendant, ' to live honestly but not pompously." And to provide for this, it prays, "That all cathedral churches may be put ' down, where the service of God is grievously abused by ' *piping with organs, singing, ringing and trowling of* ' *psalms from one side of the choir to another, with the* ' *squeaking of chanting choristers, disguised (as are all the* ' *rest) in white surplices ; some in corner caps and filthy*

it. He considers the House of Commons in a temper to have passed "a bill for toleration." But he forgets, that the success of such a bill, or of any bill, did not depend on the temper of the House, but on the pleasure of the Queen. Besides, for the first twelve or fourteen years of her Majesty's reign the prayer of the petitions presented by the puritans was, if not for a toleration in a separation from the church, yet only for a dispensation for the use of the habits and three or four ceremonies, and a redress of a few notorious abuses. As the Queen and bishops continued unyielding, and grew more vigorous, new questions were started, and new burthens were felt, and new demands arose. See Mr. Neal's Review. ED.

\* Life of Whitgift, p. 258.

‘ *cofes, imitating the fashion and manner of antichrist the*  
‘ *pope, that man of sin, and child of perdition, with his oth-*  
‘ *er rabble of miscreants and shavelings.* These unprofit-  
‘ able drones, or rather caterpillars of the world, consume  
‘ yearly some two thousand five hundred pounds, some  
‘ three thousand pounds, some more, some less, whereof no  
‘ profit cometh to the church of God. They are the dens  
‘ of idle loitering lubbards; the harbors of time-serving  
‘ hypocrites, whose prebends and livings belong some to  
‘ gentlemen, some to boys, and some to serving-men and  
‘ others. If the revenues of these houses were applied to  
‘ augment the maintenance of poor, diligent, preaching par-  
‘ ish-ministers, or erecting schools, religion would then  
‘ flourish in the land.”\*

Some bold speeches were made in parliament against the arbitrary proceedings of the bishops, by Mr. *Wentworth* and others for which those members were sent to the *Tower*; at which the house was so intimidated, that they would not suffer the bill to be read. Besides the Queen sent both for the bill and petition out of the house, and ordered the speaker to acquaint them, “That she was already settled  
‘ in her religion, and would not begin again; that chan-  
‘ ges in religion were dangerous; that it was not reasona-  
‘ ble for them to call in question the established religion,  
‘ while others were endeavoring to overthrow it; that she  
‘ had considered the objections, and looked upon them as  
‘ frivolous; and that the *platform* itself was most prejudi-  
‘ cial to her crown, and to the peace of her government.”†  
Nay, so incensed was the Queen with these attempts of the puritans, that in drawing up a general pardon to be passed in parliament, she ordered an exception to be made of such as committed any offence against the act of uniformity, or were publishers of seditious books or pamphlets.‡

The *convocation*, contrary to all custom and usage, continued sitting after the parliament, and gave the Queen a subsidy or benevolence. This precedent archbishop *Laud* made use of in the year 1640, to prove the lawfulness of a convocation sitting without a parliament. All they did

\* MS. p. 814.

† Life of Whitgift, p. 259.

‡ Heyl. Aer. p. 269.

further, was to address the Queen with an offer to maintain by disputation, that the platform of the *puritans* was absurd in divinity, and dangerous to the state; which the non-conformists would willingly have debated, but the others knew the Queen and council would not admit it.

The *press* was in the hands of the archbishop, who took all possible care to stifle the writings of the *puritans*, while he gave licence† to *Ascanio* an *Italian* merchant, and bookseller in *London*, to import what popish books he thought fit, upon this very odd pretence, *that the adversaries arguments being better known by learned men, might be more easily confuted.\** But was it not a shorter way to confute them in the *high commission*? Or might not the same reason have served for licensing the books of the *puritans*? But his grace seems to have been in no fear of popery, though this very year another assassination plot was discovered, for which *Ballard* a priest, and about 12 or 14 more, were executed.‡ Remarkable are the words of this *Ballard*, who declared upon examination to Sir *Francis Knollys*, treasurer of the Queen's household, and a privy counsellor, “That he would desire no better books to prove ‘his doctrine of popery, than the archbishop's writings against *Cartwright*, and his injunctions set forth in her majesty's name. That if any men among the protestants ‘lived virtuously, they were the *puritans*, who renounced ‘their ceremonies, and would not be corrupted with pluralities. That unlearned and reading ministers were rather ‘a furtherance than a hindrance to the catholic cause. That ‘though the bishops owned her majesty to be supreme governor in causes ecclesiastical, yet they did not keep their

† This licence was not absolute and unlimited, but restrained the importation to a few copies of every such sort of books, and on this condition only, that any of them be not *shewed or dispersed abroad*: but a delivery of them was to be made to one of the privy council, or to such only as they or some of them should judge meet to have the perusal of them. *Ascanio* was obliged to enter into strict bonds to perform these conditions. This method of licensing popish books was not so inconsistent with the restraint laid on the liberty of the press, and on the circulation of the books of the *puritans*, as our author represents it, and appears to have conceived of it. *Maddox's Vindication*, p. 350. Ed.

\* *Life of Whitgift*, p. 268.

‡ *Ibid.* p. 267.

‘ courts in her majesty’s name : and that though the names  
 ‘ and authority of archbishops and bishops, &c. were in use  
 ‘ in the primitive church, they forgot that they were then  
 ‘ lords or magistrates of order only, made by the prince,  
 ‘ and not lords of absolute power, ruling without appeal.”  
 This was written by Mr. *Treasurer* himself, Oct. 15, 1586,  
 upon which Sir *Francis* advised in council, “ That special  
 ‘ care should be taken of popish recusants ; and that the  
 ‘ absolute authority of private bishops, without appeal,  
 ‘ should be restrained ; that they might not condemn zeal-  
 ‘ ous preachers against the pope’s supremacy, for refusing  
 ‘ to subscribe unlawful articles, nor without the assembly  
 ‘ of a synodical council of preachers, forasmuch as the ab-  
 ‘ solute authority of the bishops, and their ambition and  
 ‘ covetousness, had a tendency to lead people back to po-  
 ‘ pery.” But how much truth soever there was in these  
 observations, the Queen and archbishop were not to be  
 convinced.

The puritans being wearied out with repeated applica-  
 tions to their superiors for relief, began to despair, and in  
 one of their *assemblies* came to this conclusion ; *that since*  
*the magistrate could not be induced to reform the discipline*  
*of the church, by so many petitions and supplications,*  
*(which we all confess in the liturgy is to be wished) that*  
*therefore, after so many years waiting, it was lawful to act*  
*without him, and introduce a reformation in the best man-*  
*ner they could.* We have mentioned their private classes  
 in *Essex, Warwickshire, Northamptonshire*, and other  
 parts, in which their book, entitled, *The holy discipline of*  
*the church, described in the word of God*, being revised,  
 was subscribed by the several members in these words, ac-  
 cording to Mr. *Strype*, which are something different from  
 the form at the end of the book in the *appendix*. “ We  
 ‘ acknowledge and confess *the same*, agreeable to God’s  
 ‘ most holy word, so far as we are able to judge or dis-  
 ‘ cern of it, excepting some few points, [which they sent  
 ‘ to their reverend brethren in some assembly of them, for  
 ‘ their further resolution] and we affirm it to be the same  
 ‘ which we desire to be established in this church, by dai-  
 ‘ ly prayer to God, which we profess (as God shall offer  
 ‘ opportunity, and gives us to discern it so expedient)

able suit to her majesty's most honorable privy council and parliament, and by all other lawful means to maintain and advance, so far as the law and peace of the present state of our church will suffer it, and not to entertain the contrary. We promise to guide ourselves according to it, and follow the directions set down in the *Order of the office of the ministers of the word*. We desire to frequent our appointed assemblies, that is, every six weeks classical conferences, every half year provincial assemblies, and general assemblies every year."†

Among those that subscribed or declared their approbation of the discipline, were the reverend

Cartwright	Dr. Sparkes	Mr. Perkins
Travers	Mr. Ward	Mr. Allen
Newstubs	Mr. Stone	Mr. Edmunds
Marke	Mr. Warkton	Mr. Gillibrand
Waggon	Mr. Larke	Mr. Bradshaw
Arnolds	Mr. Fletcher	Mr. Harrison
Fieldner	Mr. Lord	Mr. Massie
Field	Mr. Farmer	Mr. Hildersham
Travers	Mr. Rushbrook	Mr. Dod
Field	Mr. Littleton	Mr. Brightman
Waggon	Mr. Oxenbridge	Mr. Cawdrey
Waggon	Mr. Seyntclere	Mr. Rogers
Field	Mr. Standen	Mr. Udall
Field	Mr. Wilcox	Mr. Dyke
Field	Dr. Whitaker	Mr. Wight
Field	Mr. Chadderton	Mr. Paget,

There were, to the number of above 500, all beneficed in the church of England, useful preachers, of unspotted lives and characters, and members of the university of Cambridge, where they had a strong and powerful interest.

In *Maddox* triumphs in the representation of Mr. Neal that 500 who subscribed the holy discipline were *all beneficed* in the church, as if of the lenity of government. Mr. Neal, in his reply, adds, "there were more than twice five hundred clergymen who made a vow to keep their places in the church." But, when at the same time, we continually exposed to suffer from the rigor of government;

Dr. Bridges declared, *a third part of the ministers of England were covered with a cloud of suspensions*;—when many smarted severely attempting a reformation, for which they all wished and—when Cartwright, Travers, Field, Johnson, Cawdrey, Udall, and other leaders of the puritans, were suspended, imprisoned, and frequently in trouble, not to say dying under the hand of power; the reader will judge with what propriety his lordship exults over our author. Neal's Review, p. 872, 873. ED.

Besides the puritans already mentioned, as suffering this year, the learned Dr. *John Walward*, divinity professor at *Oxford*, was enjoined a public recantation, and suspended till he had done it, for teaching, that *the order of the Jewish Synagogue and eldership, was adopted by Christ and his apostles into the christian church, and designed as a perpetual model of church government.*\* He was also bound in a recognizance of 100l. for his good behavior.—Mr. *Harsnet*, of *Pembroke hall*, was imprisoned at the same time for not wearing the surplice.—Mr. *Edward Gillibrand*, fellow of *Magdalen college, Cambridge*, was forbid preaching, and bound in a recognizance of 100l. to revoke his errors in such words as the commissioners should appoint. His crime was speaking against the *hierarchy*, and against the swelling titles of archbishops and bishops; for which *Whitgift* told him, he deserved not only to be imprisoned and suspended, but to be banished the university.—Mr. *Farrar*, minister of *Langham* in *Essex*, was charged with rebellion against the ecclesiastical laws, and suspended for not wearing the habits. Bishop *Aylmer* told him,† that except he and his companions, would be conformable, *in good faith* he and his brethren the bishops would, in one quarter of a year, turn them all out of the church.—Sept. 11th, Mr. *Udall*, of *Kingston upon Thames*, was suspended and imprisoned, for keeping a private fast in his parish.—In the month of January Mr. *Wilson*, Mr. *More*, and two other ministers, were imprisoned, and obliged to give bond for their good behavior.

In the month of May the Rev. Mr. *Settle* was summoned before the archbishop at *Lambeth*, and charged with denying the article, *Of the descent of our Saviour's soul into hell*, or the place of the damned. Mr. *Settle* confessed it was his opinion, that Christ did not descend locally into hell, and that *Calvin* and *Beza* were of his mind; which put the archbishop into such a passion, that he called him *ass, dolt, fool*. Mr. *Settle* said, he ought not to rail at him, being a minister of the gospel. What, said the archbishop, dost thou think much to be called *ass* and *dolt*? I

\* MS. p. 798.

† Ibid. p. 800, 805.



have called many of thy betters so. True, said Mr. *Settle*; but the question is, how lawfully you have done so? Then said the archbishop, thou shalt preach no more in my diocese. Mr. *Settle* answered, I am called to preach the gospel, and I will not cease to do it. The archbishop replied with a stern countenance, Neither you, nor any one in *England*, shall preach without my leave. He then charged Mr. *Settle* with not observing the order of the *service-book*; with not using the cross in baptism; with disallowing the baptism of midwives; and not using the words in marriage, *With this ring I thee wed*. The dean of *Winchester* asked him, if he had subscribed. *Settle* answered yes, as far as the law required; that is, to the doctrines of faith and the sacraments, but as touching other rites and ceremonies, he neither could nor would. Then said the archbishop, thou shalt be subject to the ecclesiastical authority. Mr. *Settle* replied, I thank God you can use no violence but upon my poor body. So *his grace* committed him to the *Gate-house*, there to be kept close prisoner.\*

*Sandys* archbishop of *York* was no less active in his province; I have many of his examinations before me; he was a severe governor, hasty and passionate; but it was said in excuse for him and some others, that the *civilians* by their emissaries and spies turned informers, and then pushed the bishops forward, to bring business into the spiritual courts.

About this time Dr. *Bridges*, afterwards bishop of *Oxford*, wrote against the *puritans*, and maintained that *they were not grievously afflicted, unless it were caused by their own deserts*. The doctor was answered by Mr. *Fenner*, who appealed to the world in these words: "Is it no grievous affliction, by suspension to be hung up between hope and despair for a year or two, and in the mean time to see the wages of our laborers eaten up by loiterers? Nay, our righteous souls are vexed with seeing and hearing the ignorance, the profane speeches, and evil examples, of those thrust upon our charges, while we ourselves are defamed, reproached, scoffed at, and called seditious and rebellious; cited, accused, and indicted, and yet no redress

\* MS. p. 798.



' to be found. All this we have patiently bore, though we  
 ' come daily to the congregations to prayers, to baptisms,  
 ' and to the sacrament, and by our examples and admoni-  
 ' tions have kept away many from excesses whereunto  
 ' rashness of zeal would have carried them. And though to  
 ' such as you who swarm with *deanries*, with *double benefi-*  
 ' *ces*, *pensions*, *advowsons*, *reversions*, &c. these molesta-  
 ' tions seem light; yet surely, upon every irreligious man's  
 ' complaint in such things as many times are incredible, to  
 ' be sent for by *pursuivants*, to pay two-pence for every  
 ' mile, to find messengers, to defray our own charges, and  
 ' this by such as can hardly with what they have, clothe  
 ' and feed themselves and their families, it is not only griev-  
 ' ous, but as far as well can be a very heart-burning. It  
 ' is grievous to a freeman, and to a free-minister, for a  
 ' light cause, *as*, for an humble supplication to her majesty  
 ' and the whole parliament, and to the *fathers* of the church,  
 ' to be shut in close prison; or upon every trifling com-  
 ' plaint, to be brought into a slavish subjection to a *commis-*  
 ' *sary*, so as at his pleasure to be summoned into the spirit-  
 ' ual courts, and coming thither, to be sent home again at  
 ' least with unnecessary expences, masterlike answers, yea,  
 ' and sometimes with open revilings. We will not justify  
 ' ourselves (says Mr. *Fenner*\*) in all things, but acknow-  
 ' ledge, that when coming by dozens and scores before the  
 ' bishop, after half a day's disorderly reasoning, some not  
 ' being heard to the full, some railed on and miscalled, none  
 ' with lenity satisfied, but all suspended from our office,  
 ' because we would not subscribe his two last articles, there  
 ' might pass from us some infirmities afterwards; this and  
 ' many other things we are willing to impute to ourselves." But after all it may be questioned, whether the history of former ages can furnish an example of so many severities against *divines* of one and the same faith, for a few trifling ceremonies; or of a more peaceable and christian behavior under sufferings.

*Camden* indeed complains of their dispersing pamphlets against the church and prelates, in a time of common dan-

\* Answer to Dr. Bridges, p. 45, 46.

ger, when the nation was in arms against the *Spanish* invasion ; but these pamphlets were only to shew, that the danger of the return of popery (which all men were now apprehensive of) arose from stopping the mouths of those ministers, who were most zealous against it. It had been easy at this time to have distressed the government and the hierarchy, for the cry of the people was against the bishops ; but the puritans both *here* and in *Scotland* were more afraid of the return of popery than their adversaries : Those in *Scotland* entered into an association, to assemble in arms at what time and place their King should require, to assist the Queen of *England* against the *Spaniards* ; and their brethren in *London* took the opportunity to petition the Queen for the liberty of their preachers.\* “ That the people might be better instructed in the duties of obedience to their civil governors, and not be left a prey to priests and jesuits, who were no better than traitors to her majesty and the kingdom. They assure her majesty, that the people will give their ministers a good maintenance ; that they [the people] will always pray for her majesty’s safety, and be ready to part with their goods, and pour out their blood like water for her preservation, if they may but have the gospel.” But the Queen gave them no answer ; the whole reformation must be hazarded rather than the puritans relieved.

After this, *they* applied to the lord-mayor and court of aldermen, beseeching them to address the Queen, to make some better provision for the *city* ; and to enforce their petition, they laid before them a *new survey* of the ministry of *London*, taken this very year, with the names of every parish priest and curate set down against his living and curacy, which is now before me ;† and it appears at the foot of the account that there were,

Double beneficed men within the city	-	-	18
Double beneficed men without	-	-	27
Simple preachers (as the survey calls them)	-	-	40
Dumb, or unpreaching ministers	-	-	17
Resident preachers, abiding in <i>London</i> , only	-	-	49

\* MS. p. 838.

† MS. p. 482.

With the *survey* they offered divers reasons to prevail with the court to appear for them ; as, Because the laws of the realm have provided very well for a learned preaching ministry ; whereas by the account above, it appears that many are pluralists and non-residents, others illiterate, being brought up to trades and not to learning, and others of no very good character in life : Because divers of the principal preachers of this land have of late been put to silence : Because of the prevailing ignorance and impiety that is among the common people for want of better instruction : And because we now pay our money and dues to them that do little or nothing for it :——But the aldermen were afraid to interpose.\*

Such was the scarcity of preachers, and the thirst of the people after knowledge, that the suspended ministers of *Essex* petitioned the parliament, March 8th, 1587, for some remedy. “ Such (say they) is the cry of the people to us  
 ‘ day and night for the bread of life, that our bowels yearn  
 ‘ within us ; and remembering the solemn denunciation of  
 ‘ the apostle, *Woe be to us if we preach not the gospel*, we  
 ‘ begin to think it our duty to preach to our people as we  
 ‘ have opportunity, notwithstanding our *suspension*, and to  
 ‘ commit our lives and whole estates to Almighty God as  
 ‘ to a faithful creator ; and under God to the gracious  
 ‘ clemency of the Queen, and of this honorable house.”——  
 Many suspended preachers came out of the countries, and took shelter in the city. But to prevent as much as possible their getting into any of the pulpits of *London*, the following commission was sent to all the ministers and churchwardens of the city.

“ WHEREAS sundry preachers have lately come in-  
 ‘ to the city of *London* and suburbs of the same ; some of  
 ‘ them not being ministers, others such as have no sufficient  
 ‘ warrant for their calling, and others such as have been  
 ‘ detected in other countries, and have notwithstanding in  
 ‘ the city taken upon them to preach publicly, to the in-  
 ‘ famy of their calling ; others have in their preaching

\* MS. p. 889.

‘ rather stirred up the people to *innovation*, than sought the  
 ‘ peace of the church. These are therefore in her majes-  
 ‘ ty’s name, by virtue of her high commission for causes  
 ‘ ecclesiastical to us and others directed, straightly to en-  
 ‘ join, command, and charge all parsons, vicars, curates  
 ‘ and church-wardens, of all churches in the city of *London*,  
 ‘ and the suburbs thereof, as well in places exempt as not  
 ‘ exempt, that they nor any of them do suffer any to preach  
 ‘ in their churches, or to read any lectures, they not being  
 ‘ in their own cures, but only such whose licences they shall  
 ‘ first have seen and read, and whom they shall find to be  
 ‘ licensed thereto, either by the Queen’s majesty, or by one  
 ‘ of the universities of *Cambridge* or *Oxford*, or by the lord  
 ‘ archbishop of *Canterbury*, or the bishop of *London* for  
 ‘ the time being, under seal.

“ And that this may be published and take the better  
 ‘ effect, we will that a true copy thereof shall be taken and  
 ‘ delivered to every curate and church-warden of every of  
 ‘ the churches aforesaid. The 16th day of August, 1587.”

Subscribed,

*John Canterbury,*  
*John London.*

*Val. Dale,*  
*Edward Stanhope,*  
*Rich. Cozin,*

Under all these discouragements the *puritans* kept close together, hoping one time or other that providence would make way for their relief. They maintained their *classes* and *associations*, wherein they agreed upon certain general rules for their behavior: One was, that they should endeavor in their preaching and conversation to wipe off the calumny of *schism*, forasmuch as the *brethren* communicated with the church in the word and sacraments, and in all other things, except their corruptions; and that they assumed no authority to themselves, § of compelling others

. || MS. p. 835.

§ There was, as bishop *Warburton* hints, an impropriety in disclaiming the use of authority, when being a small and oppressed party, no authority from the state was invested in them. *Ed.*

to observe their decrees. In their provincial synod held at *Warwick*, June 4th, 1588, it was agreed, that it was not lawful to baptize in private; nor sufficient for a minister to read homilies in churches; nor lawful to use the cross in baptism. They agreed further, that they were not obliged to rest in the bishops' deprivation, nor to appear in their courts, without a protestation of their unlawfulness. In another synod it was determined, that no man should take upon him a vague or wandering ministry; that they who take upon them a cure of souls should be called by the church whom they are to serve, and be approved by the classes, or some greater assembly; and if by them they are found meet, they are to be recommended to the bishop for ordination, if it might be obtained without subscribing the book of *common prayer*.† It was further agreed, how much of the *common prayer* might be lawfully read for the preserving their ministry; and how far they might exercise their discipline without the civil magistrate. In another provincial synod about *Michaelmas*, it was agreed, that the oppressions offered to others, and especially to the ministers, by the bishops and their officials in their spiritual courts, should be collected and registered: If this had been preserved entire, more of the sufferings of these great and good men would have appeared, and many works of darkness, oppression, and cruelty, would have been brought to light, which now must be concealed till the day of judgment.

The danger with which the nation was threatened from a foreign invasion, gave a little check to the zeal of the bishops against the puritans for the present; however, this year Mr. *Cawdery*, minister of *South Luffingham*, was suspended, imprisoned, and deprived by the bishop of *London*;§ he had a wife and seven children, which were cast upon providence; but this divine gave his lordship some farther trouble, as will be seen hereafter.—Mr. *Wilson*, who had been suspended some time before, moved for a release in the bishop's court; but because he refused to subscribe, his suspension was continued, and himself treated by the *civilians* with great inhumanity.

Mr. *Arthur Hildersham*, whom Mr. *Fuller* represents as

† *Life of Whitgift*, p. 294.

§ MS. p. 825.

a heavenly divine, being at this time fellow of *Trinity* college, *Cambridge*, was suspended by the *commissioners*, for preaching occasionally before he had taken orders, and obliged to sign the following recantation;\* “I confess that  
 ‘ I have rashly and indiscreetly taken upon me to preach, not  
 ‘ being licensed, nor admitted into holy orders, contrary to  
 ‘ the orders of the church of *England*, contrary to the ex-  
 ‘ ample of all antiquity, and contrary to the direction of the  
 ‘ apostle in the *Acts*; whereby I have given great and just  
 ‘ offence to many; and the more, because I have uttered in  
 ‘ my sermons certain impertinent, and very unfit speeches  
 ‘ for the auditory, as moving their minds to discontent with  
 ‘ the state, rather than tending to godly edification: for  
 ‘ which my presumption and indiscretion I am very hearti-  
 ‘ ly sorry, and desire you to bear witness of this my con-  
 ‘ fession, and acknowledging my said offences.” This re-  
 cantation was by the archbishop’s appointment to be uttered  
 in *Trinity-hall* chapel, before *Easter*. In the mean while  
 he was suspended from the profits of his fellowship, and  
 stood bound to appear before the commissioners the first  
 court-day of *Easter* term, if he did not before that time re-  
 cant. Whether Mr. *Hildersham* recanted I am not certain,  
 but Sept. 14, 1587, he left the university, and settled at  
*Ashby de la Zouch* in *Leicestershire*, where he continued a  
 deep sufferer for non-conformity forty-three years, having  
 been suspended and put to silence by the high commission  
 no less than four times, and continued under that hardship  
 almost twenty years.

This year put an end to the life of the famous martyr-  
 ologist JOHN FOX, a person of indefatigable labor and in-  
 dustry, and an exile for religion in Queen *Mary’s* days; he  
 spent all his time abroad in compiling the acts and monu-  
 ments of the church of *England*, which were published first  
 in *latin*, and afterwards, when he returned to his native  
 country, in *English*, with enlargements; vast was the pains  
 he took in searching records, and collecting materials for  
 this work; and such was its esteem, that it was ordered to  
 be set up in all the parish churches in *England*. Mr. *Fox*  
 was born at *Boston* in *Lincolnshire*, 1517, educated in *Bra-*

\* Fuller, b. ix. p. 642.

zen *Nose* college, *Oxon*, where he proceeded *M.A.* in the year 1543. He was afterwards tutor to the duke of *Norfolk's* children, who in the days of Queen *Mary* conveyed him privately out of the kingdom. He was a most learned, pious, and judicious divine, of a catholic spirit, and against all methods of severity in religion. But he was shamefully neglected for some years, because he was a *non-conformist*, and refused to subscribe the canons and ceremonies ; nor did he get any higher preferment in the church than a *prebend* of *Salisbury*, though the Queen used to call him *father*, and professed a high veneration for him ; as indeed he deserved. He died in *London* in the 70th year of his age, and lies buried in *Cripplegate* church, where his monument is still to be seen, against the south wall of the chancel, with a flat marble stone over his remains.

It has been observed, that our first reformers admitted only two orders of church officers to be of *divine appointment*, viz. *bishops* and *deacons*, a presbyter and bishop according to them being two names for the same office ; but Dr. *Bancroft* the archbishop's chaplain, in a sermon at *Paul's Cross*, Jan. 12, 1588, maintained, that the *bishops* of *England* were a distinct order from *priests*, and had *superiority over them* JURE DIVINO, and directly from God. He affirmed this to be God's own appointment, though not by express words, yet by necessary consequence ; and that the denial of it was *heresy*. The doctor confessed, that *Aerius* had maintained, there was no difference between a *priest* and a *bishop* ; but that *Epiphanius* had pronounced his assertion full of folly ; and that it had been condemned as heresy by the general council of the church ; that *Martin* and his companions had maintained the same opinion ; but that St. *Hierom* and *Calvin* had confessed, that bishops have had superiority over presbyters, ever since the times of St. *Mark* the evangelist. This was new and strange doctrine to the churchmen of these times. It had been always said, that the superiority of the order of *bishops* above *presbyters* had been a politic human appointment, for the more orderly government of the church, begun about the third or fourth century ; but *Bancroft* was one of the first, who by the archbishop's directions advanced it into a di-



VINE RIGHT.\* His sermon gave offence to many of the clergy and to all the friends of the puritans about the court, who would have brought the preacher into a *præmunire*, for saying, that any subject of this realm hath superiority over the persons of the clergy, otherwise than from and by her majesty's authority. But the doctor retorted this argument upon the *disciplinarians*, and added, that it was no better than a sophism, because the prince's authority may, and very often does confirm and corroborate that which is primarily from the laws of God. Sir Francis Knollys, who had this affair at heart, told the archbishop that Bancroft's assertion was contrary to the command of Christ, who condemned all superiority among the apostles. "I do not deny (says he) that bishops may have *lordly authority and dignity*, provided they claim it not from an higher authority than her majesty's grant. If the bishops are not under-governors to her majesty of the clergy, but superior-governors over their brethren by God's ordinance, [i. e. *Jure Divino*] it will then follow that her majesty is not *supreme governor* over her clergy." The same gentleman, not relying upon his own judgment, wrote to the learned Dr. Reynolds of Oxford, for his opinion of Bancroft's doctrine, which he gave him in a letter now before me.†

\* Life of Whitgift, p. 292.

† The letter is to this effect :—

—"Though Epiphanius says, that Aerius' assertion is full of folly, he does not disprove his reasons from scripture; nay, his arguments are so weak, that even Bellarmine confesses they are not agreeable to the text. As for the general consent of the church, which, the doctor says, condemned Aerius' opinion for heresy, what proof does he bring for it? It appears (he says) in Epiphanius; but I say it does not; and the contrary appears by St. Jerom, and sundry others who lived about the same time. I grant that St. Austin, in his book of heresies ascribes this to Aerius for one; that he said *there ought to be no difference between a priest and a bishop*, because this was to condemn the church's order, and to make a schism therein. But it is a quite different thing to say, *that by the word of God there is a difference between them*, and to say that it is *by the order and custom of the church*; which is all that St. Austin maintains. When Harding the papist alledged these very witnesses, to prove the opinion of bishops and priests being of the same order to be *heresy*; our learned bishop Jewel cited to the contrary Chrysostom, Jerom, Ambrose, and St. Austin himself, and concluded his answer with these words: *All these and*

We shall meet with this controversy again hereafter.—  
*Whitgift* said, the doctor's sermon had done much good, though he himself rather wished than believed it to be true: It was new doctrine at this time. Most of the clergy who approved the superiority of the episcopal order, were against the *divine right*; but the bishops in the next age

‘ other more holy fathers, together with the apostle *PAUL*, for thus saying, by *HARDING*'s advice, must be held for heretics. *Michael Medina*, a man of great account in the council of *Trent*, adds to the fore-mentioned testimonies, *Theodorus, Primarius, Sedulius, Theophylact*, with whom agree *Oecumenius* the Greek scholiast, *Anselm* archbishop of *Canterbury*, *Gregory*, and *Gratian*; and after them how many? being once enrolled in the canon law for catholic doctrine, and thereupon taught by learned men.

“ Besides, all that have labored in reforming the church for 500 years have taught, that all pastors, be they entitled bishops or priests, have equal authority and power by *God's word*; as first the *Waldenses*, next *Marsilius Patavinus*, then *Wickliffe* and his scholars, afterwards *Husse* and the *Hussites*; and last of all, *Luther, Calvin, Brethius, Bullinger*, and *Musculus*. Among ourselves we have bishops, the *Queen's professors of divinity* in our universities, and other learned men consenting herein, as *Bradford, Lambert, Jewel, Pilkington, Humphreys, Fulke*, &c. But what do I speak of particular persons? It is the common judgment of the reformed churches of *Helvetia, Savoy, France, Scotland, Germany, Hungary, Poland, the Low Countries*, and our own. I hope *Dr. Bancroft* will not say, that all these have approved that for sound doctrine which was condemned by the general consent of the whole church for heresy, in a most flourishing time; I hope he will acknowledge that he was overseen, when he avouched the superiority which bishops have among us over the clergy to be *GOD'S OWN ORDINANCE*.

“ As for the doctor's saying that *St. Jerom*, and *Calvin* from him, confessed that bishops have had the same superiority ever since the time of *St. Mark*, the evangelist, I think him mistaken, because neither *Jerom* says it, nor does *Calvin* seem to confess it on his report; for bishops among us may do sundry other things, besides ordaining and laying on of hands, which inferior ministers or priests may not; whereas *St. Jerom* says, *What does a bishop except ordination which a priest does not?* meaning, that in his time bishops had only that power above priests; which *Chrysostom* also witnesses in *Homily xi. on 1 Timothy*. Nor had they this privilege alone in all places, for in the council of *Carthage* it is said, that the priests laid their hands together with the bishop's on those who were ordained. And at *St. Jerom* having proved by scripture, that in the apostles time bishops and priests were all one, yet granteth that afterwards bishops had that peculiar to themselves somewhere, but nothing else; so that *St. Jerom* does not say concerning the superiority in question, that bishops have had it even since *St. Mark's* time.

revived the debate, and carried their pretensions so high, as to subvert the very foundations upon which they built.

The *Queen* having suffered *Mary Queen of Scots* to be beheaded at *Fotheringay* castle, Feb. 1587-8, all the *Roman* catholic princes were alarmed, and threatened revenge; among others, the *Spaniards* hasted their *invincible armada*, to reduce *England* to the catholic faith, which had been three years preparing at a prodigious expense: The fleet was well manned, and furnished with strange instruments of torture for the *English* heretics; they came through the channel like so many floating castles, being to take in a land army from the *Low Countries*; but partly by storms, and partly by the valor and wise conduct of the *Queen's* admirals and sea captains, the whole fleet was burnt and destroyed, so that not a *Spaniard* set foot upon *English* ground; nor was there a ship left entire to carry the news back to *Spain*. The *Queen* ordered the coasts to be well guarded, and raised a land army, which she animated by appearing at the head of them. A terror was spread through the whole nation by reports of the engines of cruelty that were aboard the fleet; their barbarous usage of the poor protestants in the *Low Countries* under the duke *D'Alva* was remembered, as well as their bloody massacres of the poor *Indians* in *America*: But the storm blew over; and by the blessing of God upon the *Queen's* arms the nation was soon restored to its former tranquillity.

The following winter the *Queen* summoned a parliament

“Nor does *Calvin* confess it; he says, that in old time ministers chose one out of their company in every city, to whom they gave the title of *bishops*; yet the bishop was not above them in honor and dignity, but, as consuls in the senate, propose matters, ask their opinions, direct others by giving advice, by admonishing, by exhorting and so guide the whole action, and by their authority see that performed which was agreed on by common consent; the same charge had the *bishop* in the assembly of ministers; and having shewed from *St. Jerom*, that this was brought in by consent of men, he adds, that it was an ancient order of the church even from *St. Mark*; from whence it is apparent, that the order of the church he mentions, has relation to that above described, in which he affirms, that *the bishop was not so above the rest in honor as to have rule over them*. It follows therefore, that *Calvin* does not so much as seem to confess of *St. Jerom's* report, that ever since *St. Mark's* time bishops have had a ruling superiority over the clergy.”

to meet [Feb. 4th, 1588] in order to defray the extraordinary expences of the year, and make some new laws against the papists. The puritans having expressed their zeal for the Queen and the protestant religion, by listing in her army and navy, thought it adviseable once more to address the houses for some favor in point of *subscription*. Upon the delivery of the petition, one of the members stood up and moved, that an enquiry might be made, how far the bishops had exceeded the laws in the prosecution of her majesty's protestant subjects. Another moved, for reviving the bill against pluralities and non-residents, which was brought in, and having passed the commons was sent up to the lords.—This alarmed the convocation, who addressed the Queen *to protect the church*; and having flattered her with the title of a *goddess*, *O dea certe!* they tell her, “That the passing of the bill will be attended with  
 ‘the decay of learning, and the spoiling of their livings;  
 ‘that it will take away the set forms of prayer in the church,  
 ‘and bring in confusion and barbarism. They put her in  
 ‘mind, how dangerous innovations are in a settled state;  
 ‘and add, that all the reformed churches in *Europe* can-  
 ‘not compare with *England* in the number of learned min-  
 ‘isters. We therefore, (say they) not as directors, but as  
 ‘humble remembraucers, beseech your highness's favor-  
 ‘able beholding of our present state, and not to suffer the  
 ‘bill against pluralities to pass.”† Hereupon the Queen forbad the House of Lords to proceed, and sent for those members of the House of Commons into custody who had dared to break through her orders, of not meddling with affairs of religion without her special allowance; which put an end to all expectations of relief for the present.

This year died the reverend and learned Mr. *Thomas Sampson*, of whom mention has been made already; he was born about the year 1517, and educated at *Oxford*; he afterwards studied at the *Temple*, and was a means of converting the famous martyr *John Bradford* to the protestant religion; he took orders from archbishop *Cranmer* and *Ridley* in the year 1549, (who dispensed with the habits at his request) and became rector of *Allhallows, Bread-street*: He was a

† Life of Whitgift, p. 280.

famous preacher in the reign of King *Edward* ; but upon the accession of Queen *Mary* he fled to *Strasburgh*,\* and was highly esteemed by the learned *Tremelius*. When Queen *Elizabeth* came to the crown she offered him the bishopric of *Norwich*, which he refused for no other reason, but because he could not conform to the habits and ceremonies. In the year 1561, he was installed dean of *Christ church, Oxon* ; but soon after, in the year 1564, was deprived by sentence of archbishop *Parker* for non conformity. He afterwards contented himself with the mastership of an *hospital* in *Leicester*, where he spent the remainder of his days in peace. He was seized with the dead palsy on one side many years before he died ; but continued preaching and writing to the last, and was in high esteem over all *England* for his learning, piety, and zeal for the protestant religion. He died at his hospital with great tranquillity and comfort in his non-conformity, the latter end of March or the beginning of April 1588-9, in the 72d year of his age.†

Soon after him died the very learned Dr. *Lawrence Humphreys*, a great friend and companion of *Sampson's* ; he was born at *Newport-Pagnel* in *Buckinghamshire*, and educated in *Magdalen college, Oxon*, of which he was perpetual fellow. In the reign of Queen *Mary* he obtained leave to travel, and continued at *Zurich* till Queen *Elizabeth's* accession, when he was made Queen's professor in divinity ; he was afterwards president of *Magdalen college*, and dean of *Glocester*, which was the highest preferment he could obtain, because he was a non-conformist from the ceremonies of the church. The *Oxford* historian says, he was a moderate and conscientious non-conformist, and stocked his college with a generation of that sort of men that could not be rooted out in many years : He was certainly a strict *calvinist*, and a bitter enemy of the papists ; he was a great and general scholar, an able linguist, and a deeper divine than most of his age : He published many learned works,

\* The particular cause of his leaving the kingdom was a discovery, that he was concerned with *Richard*, a zealous protestant, in collecting money in the city of *London*, for the use of poor scholars in the universities who had imbibed the reformed doctrines. *British Biography*, vol. iii. p. 20. the note. Ed. † *Wood's Ath. Ox.* vol. i. p. 192.

and at length died in his college, in the 63d year of his age, 1589, having had the honor to see many of his pupils bishops, while he who was every way their superior was denied preferment for his puritanical principles.

To these we may add the venerable *Edwin Sandys*, archbishop of *York*, an excellent and frequent preacher in his younger days, and an exile for religion in Queen *Mary's* reign. He was afterwards successively bishop of *Worcester*, *London* and *York*, and a zealous defender of the laws against non-conformists of all sorts; when arguments failed he would earnestly implore the secular arm; though he had no great opinion either of the discipline or ceremonies of the church, as appears by his last will and testament, in which are these remarkable expressions: "I am persuaded that the *rites and ceremonies* by political institution appointed in the church, are not ungodly nor unlawful, but may for order and obedience sake be used by a good christian—*But I am now, and ever have been persuaded, that some of these rites and ceremonies are not expedient for this church now; but that in the church reformed, and in all this time of the gospel, they may better be disused by little and little, than more and more urged.*"\* Such a testimony, from the dying lips of one who had been a severe persecutor of honest men, for things which he always thought had better be disused than urged, deserves to be remembered. He died† in the month of July, 1588, in the 69th year of his age, and was buried in the collegiate church of *Southwell*, where there is a monument erected to his memory, with his own effigies on the top, and a great number of his children kneeling round the sides of it.

\* Life of Whitgift, p. 287.

† Bishop *Sandys* was one of the translators of the Bible in this reign, and the author of a volume of sermons esteemed superior to any of his contemporaries. The words of his last will, quoted above, agree with his former declaration to bishop *Parker*, produced by our author, p. 172. But his treatment of the puritans was a contradiction to both; and is one proof amongst the several instances furnished by these times, of the influence of preferment and prosperity in corrupting the human mind, or blinding the judgment. For, in the same will, he entered his serious protest against the platforms offered by the puritans. See *Madox's Vindication*, p. 352. ED.



## CHAP. VIII.

*From the SPANISH INVASION to the Death of Queen  
ELIZABETH.*

**W**HILE there was any hopes of compromising matters between the church and puritans, the controversy was carried on with some decency ; but when all hopes of accommodation were at an end, the contending parties loaded each other with the heaviest reproaches. The public printing presses being shut against the *puritans*, some of them purchased a private one, and carried it from one country to another to prevent discovery : It was first set up at *Mouldsey* in *Surrey*, near *Kingston on Thames* ; from thence it was conveyed to *Fawsley* in *Northamptonshire* ; from thence to *Norton*, from thence to *Coventry*, from *Coventry* to *Woolston* in *Warwickshire*, and from thence to *Manchester* in *Lancashire*, where it was discovered. Sundry satirical pamphlets were printed by this press, and dispersed all over the kingdom ; as,

*Martin Mar-Prelate* ; written, as is supposed, by a club of separatists, for the authors were never discovered : It is a violent satire against the hierarchy and all its supporters ; it calls the lord bishops *petty antichrists, petty popes, proud prelates, enemies to the gospel, and most covetous wretched priests*.—It says, “ That the Lord has given many of our  
‘ bishops over to a reprobate sense, because they wilfully  
‘ oppose and persecute the truth ; and supposes them to  
‘ have committed the unpardonable sin, because they have  
‘ manifested in their public writings, &c. most blasphemous  
‘ and damnable doctrines.” The author then addresses himself to the clergy who had subscribed, and who were for pressing subscription upon others in such punning language as this, “ Right puissant and terrible priests, my clergy masters of the *confocation* or *conspiration* house, whether *fickers* [vicars] *paltripolitans*, or others of the holy



‘ league of subscription. Right poisoned, persecuting and  
 ‘ terrible priests ; my *horned* masters, your government is  
 ‘ antichristian, your cause is desperate, your grounds are  
 ‘ ridiculous—*Martin* understands all your knavery ; you  
 ‘ are intolerable withstanders of reformation, enemies of the  
 ‘ gospel, and most covetous, wretched, and popish priests,  
 ‘ &c.”\* There are a great many sad truths in the book,  
 but delivered in rude and unbecoming language, and with  
 a bitter angry spirit.

The titles of the rest were,

*Theses Martinianæ* ; i. e. certain demonstrative conclusions set down and collected by *Martin Mar-Prelate the great*, serving as a manifest and sufficient confutation of all that ever the college of *Cater Caps*, with their whole band of *clergy priests*, have or can bring for the defence of their ambitious and antichristian prelacy. Published by *Martin junior*, 1589, in octavo, and dedicated to *John Kankerbury* [i. e. *Canterbury*.] The author of this tells the bishops, that he would plant *young martins* in every diocese and parish, who should watch the behavior of the clergy, that when any thing was done amiss it might be made public.

*Protestation of Martin Mar-Prelate* ; wherein, notwithstanding the surprising of the *printer*, he maketh it known to the world, that he feareth neither proud priest, antichristian pope, tyrannous prelate, nor *godless cater cap*, &c. Printed 1589. Octavo.

*His appellation to the high court of parliament from the bad and injurious dealing of the archbishop of Canterbury, and other his colleagues of the high commission, &c.*†—Printed 1589. Octavo.

*Dialogue, wherein is plainly laid open the tyrannical dealings of the lords bishops against God’s children.* Printed 1589. Quarto.

*A treatise, wherein is manifestly proved, that reformation, and those that sincerely favor the same, are unjustly charged to be enemies to her majesty, and the state.* Printed 1590. Quarto.

*Ha’ ye any work for the Cooper?* This was written

\* Life of Whitgift, p. 296.

† Ath. Oxon. vol. i. p. 251.

against Dr. *Thomas Cooper* bishop of *Winchester* ; and is said to be printed in *Europe*, not far from some of the bouncing priests, 1590.

*Epitome of the first book of Dr. John Bridges, against the Puritans* ; with this expression in the title-page, Oh ! read over Dr. *John Bridges*, for it is a worthy work. Printed over sea in *Europe*, within two furlongs of a bouncing priest, at the cost and charges of *Martin Mar-Prelate*, gent. in quarto.

*The Cobler's book*,† which denies the church of *England* to be a true church, and charges her with maintaining idolatry under the name of decency, in the habits, fonts, baptism by women, gang-days, saints eves, bishoping of children, organs, wafer-cakes, &c.

*Ha' ye any more work for the Cooper?*§ In printing of which the press was discovered and seized, with several pamphlets unfinished ; as,

*Episto [Episco] Mastix,*  
*Paradoxes,*  
*Dialogues,*  
*Miscellanea,*  
*Variae Lectiones,*

*Martin's Dream,*  
*The Lives and Doings of*  
*English Popes,*  
*Itinerarium, or Visitations,*  
*Lambethisms.*

The two last of these were imperfect ; but to complete the *itinerarium*, the author threatens to survey all the clergy of *England*, and note their intolerable pranks : And for his *lambethisms* he would have a *Martin* at *Lambeth*. Other books were published of the same nature ; as, *A Demonstration of Discipline* ; the *Counter-Poison*, &c.

The writers on the church-side came not behind their adversaries in buffoonery and ridicule, as appears by the following pamphlets printed at this time.

*Pappe with an Hatchet*, alias, *A Fig for my Godson* : or, Crack me this nut, that is, a sound box of the ear for the idiot *Martin* to hold his peace. Written by one that dares call a dog a dog. Imprinted by *John Anoke*, and are to be sold at the sign of the *Crab-tree Cudgel*, in *Thwack-Coat-Lane*.‡

† Life of Whitgift, p. 296. § Ibid. p. 288. ‡ Ath. Oxon. vi. 280.

*Pasquil's Apology.* In the first part whereof he renders a reason of his long silence, and gallops the field with the treatise of reformation. Printed where I was, and where I shall be ready, by the help of God and my muse, to send you a may-game of *Martinism*. Anno 1593. Quarto.

*An Almond for a Parrot: or, An Alms for Martin Mar-Prelate, &c.* By Cuthbert Curry-Knare. Quarto.

*The return of the renowned Cavaliero Pasquil to England, and his meeting with Marforius at London, upon the Royal Exchange, London, 1589, against Martin and Martinism.*

*A Counter Cuff given to Martin junior, by the Pasquil of England, Cavaliero.* 1589. Octavo.

It is sad, when a controversy about serious matters runs these dregs: Ridicule and personal reflection may expose an adversary and make him ashamed, but will never convince or reconcile; it carries with it a contempt which sticks in the heart and is hardly ever to be removed; nor do I remember any cause that has been served by such methods. Dr. Bridges answered *Martin* in a ludicrous stile; but Cooper bishop of *Winchester* did more service by his grave and sober reply, with the assistance of the archbishop of *Canterbury*, who being miserably aspersed, furnished the bishop with replies to the particular charges brought against him. The book is entitled, *an Advertisment to the people of England; wherein the slanders of Martin Mar-Prelate the libeller are distinctly answered.* But after all, it was impossible for the bishops to wipe off from themselves the charge of persecution and violation of the laws.

To put a stop to these pamphlets the Queen sent a letter to the archbishop, commanding him to make diligent enquiry after the printing press, and issued out her royal proclamation, dated Feb. 13th, 1589, “For the bringing in  
‘all seditious and schismatical books, whether printed or  
‘written, to the ordinary, or to one of the privy council, as  
‘tending to bring in a monstrous and dangerous innovation  
‘of all manner of ecclesiastical government now in use, and  
‘with a rash and malicious purpose to dissolve the state of  
‘the prelacy, being one of the three ancient estates of this

‘ realm under her highness, whereof her majesty mindeth  
 ‘ to have a reverend regard ; she therefore prohibits any of  
 ‘ her subjects from keeping any books in their custody a-  
 ‘ gainst the order of the church, or the rites and ceremonies  
 ‘ of it, her majesty being minded to have the laws severe-  
 ‘ ly executed against the authors and abettors of them, as  
 ‘ soon as they shall be apprehended.’\*

As soon as the printing press was discovered, *his grace* wrote to the treasurer to prosecute the persons with whom it was found ; but, like an able politician, wishes it might be done by the lords of the council, rather than by the *ecclesiastical commissioners*, because *they* had already suffered for supporting the government, which was wounded through their sides.† Accordingly Sir *Richard Knightly*, Sir — *Wigston*, who had entertained the *press*, together with the *printer*, and *Humphry Newman* the disperser, were deeply fined in the *star-chamber* ; and others were put to death.‡

The archbishop being now in his visitation had framed twenty-two articles of enquiry, upon which the *church-wardens* of every parish were to be examined upon oath. By these articles they were to swear, that their minister was exactly conformable to the *orders* of the church, or else to impeach him ; and to declare further, whether they knew of any of their neighbors or fellow-parishioners, that were  
 ‘ common swearers, drunkards, usurers, witches, conjurers,  
 ‘ heretics ; any man that had two wives ; or women that had  
 ‘ two husbands : whether they knew any that went to con-

\* Life of Whitgift, in Rec. b. iii. No. 41.

† Life of Whitgift, p. 314. Fuller, b. ix. p. 194.

‡ Fuller adds, archbishop *Whitgift* improved his interest with the Queen, till, though she was at first angry with his solicitations, they were delivered out of prison and eased of their fines. Bishop *Maddox* censures Mr. *Neal* for passing this over in silence ; but he himself omits the construction put on this, apparently, kind conduct of the prelate ;  
 ‘ which, while some highly commended, so others,” says Fuller, “ im-  
 ‘ puted it to the declining of envy, gaining of applause and remorse of  
 ‘ conscience for over rigorous proceedings : it being no charity to cure  
 ‘ the wound he had caused, and solicit the remitting those fines which  
 ‘ he had procured to be imposed.”—Our author proceeds ; “ Thus im-  
 ‘ possible is it to please forward spirits, and to make them like the best  
 ‘ deed, who dislike the doer.” ED.

‘venticles or meetings for saying prayers in private houses; any that were of age, and did not receive the sacrament at church three times a year:’\* with others, calculated to dissolve all friendship in country towns, and set a whole diocese in a flame. When Sir *Francis Knollys* had read the articles he sent them to the treasurer, calling them by their proper name, *articles of inquisition, highly prejudicial to the royal prerogative*; But there was no stopping *his grace’s* career.

Among the divines that suffered death† for the libels above-mentioned, were the Rev. Mr. UDAL, whose case being peculiarly hard, I shall give the reader an abstract of it. He had been minister of *Kingston-upon-Thames*; where, having been silenced by the official Dr. *Hone*, he lay by for half a year, having no farther prospect of usefulness in the church. At length the people of *Newcastle-upon-Tyne* wanting a minister, prevailed with the earl of *Huntingdon* to send him to them; when he had been there about a year he was sent for up to *London*, by the lord *Hunsdon* and the lord chamberlain, in the name of the whole privy council: Mr. *Udal* set out December 29th, 1589, and on the 13th of January, 1590, appeared at lord *Cobham’s* house before the commissioners, lord *Cobham*, lord *Buckhurst*, lord chief justice *Anderson*, Dr. *John Young* bishop of *Rochester*, Mr. *Fortescue*, Mr. *Egerton* the Queen’s solicitor, Dr. *Aubrey*, and Dr. *Lewin*. The bishop began the examination in this manner:—*Bishop*. Have you the allowance of the bishop of the diocese to preach at *Newcastle*? *Udal*. There was neither bishop of the diocese, nor archbishop of *Fork* at that time. *Fortescue*. By what law then

\* Life of Whitgift, p. 309, 311. Pierce’s Viudic. p. 128.

† Bishop *Warburton* is very severe in his censure of Mr. *Neal* for using this language; “which, he says, in common *English* means dying by the hand of the executioner;” whereas Mr. *Udal* died in prison. But, when he died quite heart-broken with sorrow and grief through imprisonment and the severe treatment he met with on account of the libels, his death was as much the consequence of the prosecution commenced against him, as if it had been inflicted by the executioner. At most there was only an inaccuracy in the expression, which it was very unworthy the bishop to censure as “unworthy a candid historian, or an honest man.” ED.

did you preach at *Newcastle*, being silenced at *Kingston*?

*Udal*. I know no law against it, seeing I was silenced only by the *official*, whose authority reaches not beyond his archdeaconry. *L. C. J. Anderson*. You are called to answer concerning certain books thought to be of your writing.

*Udal*. If it be any of *Martin's* books I have disowned them a year and a half ago at *Lambeth*. *L. C. J. Anderson*.—

Who was the author of the *Demonstration*, or the *Dialogue*? *Udal*. I shall not answer. *Anderson*. Why will you clear yourself of *Martin*, and not of these? *Udal*. Be-

cause I would not be thought to handle the cause of discipline as *Martin* did; but I think otherwise of the other books, and care not though they should be fathered upon me; I think the author did well, and therefore would not discover him if I knew him; but would hinder it all I could.

*L. C. J. Anderson*. Why dare you not confess if you be the author? *Udal*. I have said I liked of the books, and the matter handled in them; but whether I made them or no,

I will not answer, for by the law I am not obliged to it.

*Anderson*. That is true, if it concerned the loss of your life [and yet the judges tried and condemned him for his life.]

*Udal*. I pray your lordship, does not the law say, *No man shall be put to answer without presentment before justices on matters of record, or by due proofs and writ original, &c.*

*A. 42 Edw. III. cap. 3.* *Anderson*. That is law if it be not repealed. *Bishop of Rochester*. Pray let me ask you

a question concerning your book. But *Udal* was upon his guard, and said, it is not yet proved to be mine. *Mr. So-*

*licitor*. I am sorry, Mr. *Udal*, you will not answer nor take an oath, which by law you ought to do; but he did not say by what law. *Udal*. Sir, if I have a liberty by law, there

is no reason why I should not challenge it: shew me by what law I am obliged to accuse myself. *Dr. Lewin*. You have taken the oath heretofore, why should you not take it now?

*Udal*. I then voluntarily confessed certain things concerning my preaching of the points of discipline, which could never have been proved; and when my friends labored to have me restored to my ministry, the archbishop answered, there was sufficient matter against me by my own confession why I should not be restored; whereupon I



covenanted with my own heart never to be my own accuser again.

At length the bishop told him his sentence for that time was to be sent to the *Gate-house*: take it in his own words  
 ‘ I was carried to the *Gate-house* by a messenger, who delivered me with a warrant to be kept close prisoner, and not be suffered to have pen, ink, or paper, or any body to speak with me. Thus I remained half a year, in all which time my wife could not get leave to come to me, saving only that in the hearing of the keeper she might speak to me, and I to her, of such things as she should think meet.—All which time my chamber-fellows were *seminary priests, traitors, and professed papists*. At the end of the half year I was removed to the *White Lion* in *Southwark*, and so carried to the assizes at *Croydon*.”

On the 23d of July Mr. *Udal* was brought to *Croydon* with fetters on his legs, and indicted upon the statute 23 *Eliz. cap. 2*, before Baron *Clarke*, and Mr. Serjeant *Puckering*, for writing a wicked, scandalous and seditious libel, called a *Demonstration of Discipline*, dedicated to the supposed governors of the church of *England*,\* in which is this passage; “ Who can without blushing deny you [the bishops] to be the cause of all ungodliness? forasmuch as your government gives liberty for a man to be any thing but a sound christian; it is more free in these days to be a papist or a wicked man than what we should be; I could live twenty years as such in *England*, and it may be in a bishop’s house, and not be molested: So true is it, that you care for nothing but the maintenance of your dignities, be it to the damnation of your own souls, and infinite millions more.” These are the words of the indictment. To which Mr. *Udal* pleaded *not guilty*, and put himself upon the trial of his country. In opening the cause, Mr. *Daulton* the Queen’s council made a long invective against the new *discipline*, which he affirmed was not to be found in the word of God. To whom *Udal* replied, this being a controversy among learned divines, he thought Mr. *Daulton* might have suspended his judgment, since he had formerly shewed some liking to the cause. Upon which

\* Life of Whitgift, p. 343.



the judge said, *sirrah ! sirrah !* answer to the matter. **Mr. Daulton**, go on to the proof of the points in the indictment, which were these three :

1. That *Udal* was the author of the book.
2. That he had a malicious intent in making it.
3. That the matters in the indictment were felony by the statute 23 *Eliz. cap. 2*.

The first point was to prove *Udal* to be the author of the book ; and here it is observable, that the witnesses were not brought into court, but only their examinations, which the register swore to. And, first, *Stephen Chatfield's* articles were produced, which contained a report of certain papers he had seen in *Udal's* study. Upon seeing them, he asked, whose writings they were ? *Udal* answered, a friend's. *Chatfield* then desired him to rid his hands of them, for he doubted they concerned the state. He added, that *Udal* told him another time, that *if they put him to silence, he would give the bishops such a blow as they never had*. *Chatfield* was called to witness these things, but appeared not. *Daulton* said he went out of the way on purpose. The judge said, **Mr. Udal**, you are glad of that. **Mr. Udal** answered, My lord, I wish heartily he were here ; for as I am sure he could never say any thing against me to prove this point ; so I am able to prove it to be true, that he is very sorry that he ever made any complaint against me, confessing he did it in anger when *Martin* came first out, and by their suggestions, whom he had proved since to be very bad men. **Mr. Udal** added, that the book was published before this conversation with *Chatfield*.

The examination of *Nicolas Tomkins* before the commissioners was next produced. This *Tomkins* was now beyond sea, but the paper said, that *Udal* had told him, he was the author. But *Tomkins* himself sent word, that *he would not for 1000*l.* affirm any more, than that he had heard Udal say, that he would not doubt but set his name to the book if he had indifferent judges*. And when *Udal* offered to produce his witnesses, the judge said, that *because the witnesses were against the Queen's majesty they could not be heard*.

The confession of *Henry Sharp* of *Northampton* was then read, who upon oath before the lord chancellor had declared, *That he heard Mr. Penry say, that Mr. Udal was the author of the DEMONSTRATION.*

This was the whole evidence of the fact upon which he was convicted, not a single living witness being produced in court; so that the prisoner had no opportunity to ask any questions, or refute the evidence. And what methods were used to extort these confessions may easily be imagined from the *confessors* flying their country, and then testifying their sorrow for what they had said.

To prove the sedition, and bring it within the statute, the council insisted upon his *threatening the bishops*, who being the Queen's officers, it was construed a threatening of the Queen herself. The prisoner desired liberty to explain the passage, and his council insisted, that an offence against the bishops was not *sedition* against the Queen; but the judge gave it for law, that *they who spake against the Queen's government in causes ecclesiastical, or her laws, proceedings, and ecclesiastical officers, defamed the Queen herself.* Upon this the jury were directed to find him guilty of the *fact*, and the judges took upon them the point of law and condemned him as a felon. Mr. *Fuller* confesses,\* that the proof against him was not pregnant, for it was generally believed he wrote not the book, but only the preface. They might as well have condemned him without the form of a trial, for the statute was undoubtedly strained beyond the intent of it, to reach his life. He behaved modestly and discreetly at the bar; and having said as much for himself as must have satisfied any equitable persons, he submitted to the judgment of the court.

Mr. *Udal* was convicted in the summer assizes, 1590, but did not receive sentence till the lent assize, in the mean time he was offered his pardon, if he would sign the following submission:—†

“ I *John Udal* have been heretofore, by due course of law convicted of felony, for penning or setting forth a

\* B. ix. p. 223.

† Strype's Ann. vol. ult. p. 26.

‘ certain book, called, *the Demonstration of Discipline*,  
 ‘ wherein false, slanderous, and seditious matters are con-  
 ‘ tained against her majesty’s prerogative royal, her crown  
 ‘ and dignity, and against the laws and government eccle-  
 ‘ siastical and temporal by law established under her high-  
 ‘ ness, and tending to the erecting a new form of govern-  
 ‘ ment, contrary to her said laws; all which points I do  
 ‘ now perceive, by the grace of God, to be very dangerous  
 ‘ to the peace of this realm and church, seditious in the com-  
 ‘ monwealth, and infinitely offensive to the Queen’s most  
 ‘ excellent majesty; so as thereby I, now seeing the griev-  
 ‘ ousness of my offence, do most humbly on my knees, be-  
 ‘ fore, and in this presence, submit myself to the mercy of  
 ‘ her highness, being most sorry that I have so deeply and  
 ‘ worthily incurred her majesty’s indignation against me;  
 ‘ promising, if it shall please God to move her royal heart  
 ‘ to have compassion on me a most sorrowful convicted per-  
 ‘ son, that I will for ever hereafter forsake all such unduti-  
 ‘ ful and dangerous courses, and demean myself dutifully  
 ‘ and peaceably; for I do acknowledge her laws to be both  
 ‘ lawful and godly, and to be obeyed by every subject.—  
 ‘ Feb. 1590-1.”

No arguments or threatnings of the judges could prevail with *Udal* to sign this submission; but the day before sentence was to be passed, he offered the following, drawn up by himself:—

“ CONCERNING the book whereof I was by due  
 ‘ course of law convicted, by referring myself to the trial  
 ‘ of the law, and for that by the verdict of twelve men, I  
 ‘ am found to be the author of it, for which cause an hum-  
 ‘ ble submission is worthily required and offered of me:  
 ‘ Although I cannot disavow the cause and substance of the  
 ‘ doctrine debated in it, which I must needs acknowledge  
 ‘ to be holy, and (so far as I conceive it) agreeable to the  
 ‘ word of God; yet I confess, the manner of writing it is  
 ‘ such in some part as may worthily be blamed, and might  
 ‘ provoke her majesty’s just indignation therein. Where-  
 ‘ of the trial of the law imputing to me all such defaults as  
 ‘ are in that book, and laying the punishment of the same in

‘ most grievous manner upon me ; as my most humble suit  
 ‘ to her most excellent majesty is, that her mercy and gra-  
 ‘ cious pardon may free me from the guilt and offence  
 ‘ which the said trial of the law hath cast upon me, and  
 ‘ further of her great clemency, to restore me to the com-  
 ‘ fort of my life and liberty, so do I promise, in all humble  
 ‘ submission to God and her majesty, to carry myself in the  
 ‘ whole course of my life, in such humble and dutiful obe-  
 ‘ dience, as shall besit a minister of the gospel and dutiful  
 ‘ subject, fervently and continually praying for a good pre-  
 ‘ servation of her highness’s precious life, and happy gov-  
 ‘ ernment, to the honor of God, and comfort of her loyal  
 ‘ and dutiful subjects. Feb. 19. 1590-1.”

Mr. *Udal* had often, and with great earnestness, petitioned his judges for their mediation with the Queen : In his letter of Nov. 11, he says, “ I pray you call to mind my tedious state of imprisonment, whereby myself, my wife and children, are reduced to beggary ; pray call to mind by what course this misery is brought upon me, and if you find by due consideration, that I am worthy to receive the punishment from the sentence of upright justice, I pray you to hasten the execution of the same, for it were better for me to die than to live in this case ; but if it appear to your consciences (as I hope it will) that no malice against her majesty can possibly be in me, then do I humbly and heartily desire you to be a means that I may be released ; then I shall not only forget that hard opinion conceived of your courses against me, but pray heartily to God to bury the same, with the rest of your sins, in the grave of his son Jesus Christ.” Mr. *Udal* wrote again Nov. 18, and 25th, in most humble and dutiful language ; but the court would do nothing till he had signed their submission.

At the close of the lent assizes, being called to the bar with the rest of the felons, and asked what he had to say, why judgment should not be given against him according to the verdict, he gave in a paper consisting of nine reasons ; of which these are the principal :

1. “ Because the jury were directed only to find the fact, whether I was author of the book ; and were expressly

‘ freed by your lordship from inquiring into the intent, without which there is no felony.

2. “ The jury were not left to their own consciences, but were wrought upon partly by *promises*, assuring them it should be no further danger to me but tend to my good ; and partly by *fear* as appears, in that it has been a grief to some of them ever since.

3. “ The statute in the true meaning of it, is thought not to reach my case, there being nothing in the book spoken of her majesty’s person, but in duty and honor ; I beseech you therefore to consider, whether the drawing of it from her royal person to the bishops, as being part of her body politic, be not a violent depraving and wresting of the statute.

4. “ But if the statute be taken as it is urged, the felony must consist in the *malicious intent* ; wherein I appeal first to God, and then to all men who have known the course of my life, and to your lordships’ own consciences, whether you can find me guilty of any act in all my life that savored of any malice or malicious intent against her majesty ; of which, if your consciences must clear me before God, I hope you will not proceed to judgment.

5. “ By the laws of God, and I trust also by the laws of the land, the witnesses ought to be produced face to face against me ; but I have none such, nor any other things, but papers and reports of depositions taken by ecclesiastical commissioners and others. This kind of evidence is not allowed in case of lands, and therefore much less ought it to be allowed in case of life.

6. “ None of the depositions prove me directly to be the author of the book in question ; and the author of the chief testimony is so grieved that he is ashamed to come where he is known.

7. “ Supposing me to be the author of the book, let it be considered that the said book, for substance contains nothing but what is taught and believed by the best reformed churches in *Europe*, so that in condemning me you condemn all such nations and churches as hold the same doctrine. If the punishment be for the *manner* of writing, this may be thought by some worthy of an *admonition* or

‘ *fine, or some short imprisonment ;\** but *death* for an error  
‘ of such a kind, as terms and words not altogether dutiful  
‘ of certain bishops, cannot but be extreme cruelty, against  
‘ one that has endeavored to shew himself a dutiful subject,  
‘ and faithful minister of the gospel.

‘ If all this prevail not, yet my Redeemer liveth, to whom  
‘ I commend myself, and say as sometime *Jeremiah* said in  
‘ a case not much unlike, *Behold, I am in your hands to do*  
‘ *with me whatsoever seemeth good unto you ; but know you*  
‘ *this, that if you put me to death you shall bring innocent*  
‘ *blood upon your own heads, and upon the land.* As the  
‘ blood of *Abel*, so the blood of *Udal* will cry to God with a  
‘ loud voice, and the righteous Judge of the land will re-  
‘ quire it at the hands of all that shall be guilty of it.”

But nothing would avail, unless he would sign the submission the court had drawn up for him ; which his conscience not suffering him to do, sentence of death was passed upon him Feb. 20th, and execution openly awarded ; but next morning the judges, by direction from court, gave private orders to respite it till her majesty’s pleasure was further known. The Dean of *St. Paul’s* and Dr. *Andress* were sent to persuade him to sign the submission ; which he peremptorily refused. But because the Queen had been misinformed of his belief, he sent her majesty a short confession of his faith in these words :

“ I believe, and have often preached, that the church of  
‘ *England* is a part of the true visible church, the word  
‘ and sacraments being truly dispensed ; for which reason I  
‘ have communicated with it several years at *Kingston*, and  
‘ a year at *Newcastle on Tyne* ; and do still desire to be a  
‘ preacher in the same church ; therefore I utterly renounce  
‘ the schism and separation of the *Brownists* :—I do allow  
‘ the articles of religion as far as they contain the doctrine  
‘ of faith and sacraments, according to law :—I believe the  
‘ Queen’s majesty hath, and ought to have, supreme au-  
‘ thority over all persons, in all causes ecclesiastical and  
‘ civil. And if the *prince* commands any thing contra-  
‘ ry to the word of God, it is not lawful for subjects

\* *Strype’s Ann.* vol. iv. p. 23.

‘ to rebel or resist, but with patience and humility to bear  
 ‘ the punishment laid upon them :—I believe the church  
 ‘ rightly reformed ought to be governed ecclesiastically by  
 ‘ ministers, assisted by elders, as in the foreign reformed  
 ‘ churches :—I believe the censures of the church ought  
 ‘ merely to concern the soul, and may not impeach any  
 ‘ subject, much less any prince, in liberty of body, goods,  
 ‘ dominion, or any earthly privilege ; nor do I believe that  
 ‘ a christian prince ought otherwise to be subject to church  
 ‘ censures, than our gracious Queen professes herself to be  
 ‘ to the preaching of the word and the administration of  
 ‘ the sacraments.’\*

With this declaration of his faith he sent an humble request, that if her majesty would not graciously be pleased to pardon him, she would change his sentence into *banishment*, that the land might not be charged with his blood. || King *James of Scotland*, wrote to the Queen, requesting most earnestly, that for the *sake of his intercession*, *Udal* might be relieved of his present strait, promising to do the like for her majesty in any matter she should recommend to him. The *Turkey* merchants also offered to send him as chaplain to one of their factories abroad, if he might have his life and liberty ; which *Udal* consented to, as appears by his letter to the lord treasurer, in which he says, “ Lamentable is my case, having been three years in duration, which makes me humbly desire your lordship’s favor, that I may be released from my imprisonment, the *Turkey* merchants having my consent to go into *Syria* or *Guinea*, there to remain two years with their factors, if my liberty may be obtained.” The writer of archbishop *Whitgift’s* life says the archbishop yielded to this petition ; that the lord keeper promised to further it ; and that the Earl of *Essex* had a draught of a pardon ready prepared, with this condition annexed, that he should never return without the Queen’s licence ; but her majesty never signed it, and the *Turkey* ships going away without him, poor unhappy *Udal* died a few months after in the *Marshalsea* prison, quite heart-broken with sorrow and grief, about

\* Life of Whitgift, p. 376.

|| Fuller, b. ix. p. 203.



the end of the year 1592. Mr. *Fuller*\* says, he was a learned man, and of a blameless life, powerful in prayer, and no less profitable than painful in preaching. He was decently interred in the church-yard of St. *George, Southwark*, nor far from the grave of bishop *Bonner*, being honored with the attendance of great numbers of the *London* ministers, who visited him in prison, and now wept over the remains of a man, who, after a long and severe trial of his faith and patience, died for the testimony of a good conscience, and stands upon record as a monument of the oppression and cruelty of the government under which he suffered.

Though the moderate puritans publicly disowned the *libels* above-mentioned, and condemned the *spirit* with which they were written, they were nevertheless brought into trouble for their *associations*. Among others, the Rev. Mr. *Cartwright*, father of the puritans, and master of the new hospital at *Warwick*, was suspended by his diocesan, and summoned before the high commissioners, who committed him to the *Fleet* with his brethren, Mr. *Egerton, Fen, Wight, Farmer, Lord, Snape, King, Rushbrooke, Wiggins, Littleton, Field, Royde, Payne, Proudlove, and Jewel*. At their first appearance the commissioners asked them, where they held their *associations* or *assemblies*, and how often? Who were present, and what matters were treated of? Who corrected or set forth the *book of discipline*, and who had subscribed or submitted to it? Whether in a christian monarchy the King is supreme governor of the church? or, Whether he is under the government of pastors, doctors, and such like? Whether it be lawful for a sovereign prince to ordain ceremonies, and make orders for the church? Whether the ecclesiastical government established in *England* be lawful, and allowed by the word of God? Whether the sacraments ministered according to the book of *common prayer*, are godly and rightly ministered? &c.

Mr. *Cartwright's* answer to these interrogatories was said by the civilians to be sufficient; upon which they exhibited thirty-one articles against him, *September 1st, 1590*, and required him to answer them upon oath.

\* B. ix. p. 222.

† Life of Whitgift, p. 873.

The first twenty-four articles charge him with renouncing his episcopal orders, by being re-ordained beyond sea, with interrupting the peace, and breaking the orders of the church since he came home; and with knowing the authors or printers of *Martin Mar-Prelate*.

*Art. 25.* Charges him with penning, or procuring to be penned, the *book of discipline*; and with recommending the practice of it.

*Art. 26.* Charges him with being present at sundry pretended synods, classes or conferences of ministers in divers counties.

*Art. 27.*—That at such synods they subscribed the *book of discipline*, and promised to govern themselves by it as far as they could.

*Art. 28.* Charges him with setting up particular conferences in several shires, which were to receive the *determinations* of the general assembly, and put them in practice.

*Art. 29, 30, and 31.* Mention some rules and orders of their synods; as, that the members should bring testimonials from their several classes; that they should subscribe the *book of discipline*; that no books should be printed but by consent; that they should be subject to the censures of the brethren both for doctrine and life; and that if any should be sent abroad upon public service at the meeting of parliament, their charges should be bore, &c.

Mr. *Cartwright* offered to clear himself of some of these articles upon *oath*, and to give his reasons for not answering the rest, but if this would not satisfy, he was determined to submit to the punishment the *commissioners* should award,\* [which was imprisonment in the Fleet;] praying the lord treasurer to make some provision for the poor people of *Warwick* who had no minister. The rest of *Cartwright's* brethren refusing the OATH for the same reasons, viz. *Because they would not accuse themselves, nor bring their friends into trouble*, were committed to divers prisons. But the archbishop, by advice of the *treasurer*, was not present at the commitment of his old adversary.

On the 13th of *May*, 1591, they were brought before the *star-chamber*,† which was a court made up of certain

\* Life of Whitgift, p. 338.

† Life of Whitgift, p. 361.

*noblemen, bishops, judges, and counsellors*, of the Queen's nomination, to the number of twenty or thirty, with her majesty at their head, who is the sole judge when present, the other members being only to give their opinion to their sovereign by way of advice, which he [or she] disallows at their pleasure; but in the absence of the *sovereign* the determination is by a majority, the lord *chancellor* or *keeper* having a casting vote. The determinations of this court (says Mr. *Rushworth*) were not by the verdict of a jury, nor according to any statute law of the land, but according to the King [or Queen's] royal will and pleasure, and yet they were made as binding to the subject as an act of parliament. In the reign of King *Henry VII.* the practice of that court was thought to intrench upon the *common law*, though it seldom did any business; but in the latter end of this, and during the two next reigns, the court sat constantly, and was so unmerciful in its censures and punishments, that the whole nation cried aloud against it as a mark of the vilest slavery. Lord *Clarendon* says,\* “There were  
‘ very few persons of quality in those times that had not  
‘ suffered, or been perplexed by the weight and fear of its  
‘ censures and judgments; for having extended their juris-  
‘ diction from riots, perjuries, and the most notorious mis-  
‘ demeanors, to an asserting of all proclamations, and or-  
‘ ders of state, to the vindicating illegal commissioners and  
‘ grants of monopolies, no man could hope to be any longer  
‘ free from the inquisition of that court, than he resolved  
‘ to submit to those and the like extraordinary courses.”

When *Cartwright* and his brethren appeared before the court, Mr. *Attorney General* inveighed bitterly against them for refusing the *oath*, and when Mr. *Fuller*, counsel for the prisoners, stood up to answer, he was commanded silence, and told, that far less crimes than theirs had been punished with the *gallies* or perpetual *banishment*, which latter he thought proper for them, provided it was in some remote place from whence they might not return.† From the *Star-chamber* they were remitted back to the *high commission*,

\* Hist. Gr. Rebellion, vol. i. 8v. p. 68, &c.

† Life of Whitgift, p. 360.

where *Bancroft* had a long argument with *Cartwright* about the oath ; from thence they were returned again to the *Star-chamber*, and a bill was exhibited against them with twenty articles ;\* in answer to which they maintain. that their associations were very useful, and not forbidden by any law of the realm ; that they exercised no jurisdiction, nor moved any sedition, nor transacted any affairs in them, but with a due regard to their duty to their prince, and to the peace of the church ; that they had agreed upon some regulations to render their ministry more edifying, but all was voluntary, and in breach of no law ; and as for the *oath*, they refused it not in contempt of the court, but as contrary to the laws of God and nature.

But this answer not being satisfactory, they were remanded to prison, where they continued two years without any further process, or being admitted to bail ; in the mean time King *James* of *Scotland* interceded for them, in a letter to the Queen, dated June 12th, 1591, in which he requests her majesty to shew favor to Mr. *Cartwright* and his brethren, because of their great learning and faithful travels in the gospel.† *Cartwright* himself petitioned for his liberty,‡ as being afflicted with excessive pains of the *gout* and *sciatica*, which were much increased by lying in a cold prison ; he wrote a most humble and pious letter to the Lady *Russel*, and another to the lord treasurer, beseeching them to procure his enlargement with the Queen, though it were upon *bond*, expressing a very great concern that her majesty should be so highly offended with him, since he had printed no books for thirteen years past, that could give the least uneasiness ; since he had declared his dislike of *Martin Mar-Prelate* ; and that he never had a finger in any of the books under that name, nor in any other satyrical pamphlets ; and further, that in the course of his ministry for five years past at *Warwick* he had avoided all controversy. Dr. *Goad*, Dr. *Whitaker*, and two others of the university, wrote an excellent letter§ to the treasurer in favor of the prisoners, beseeching his lordship that they might not be

\* Ibid. b. iv. rec. 4.

† Life of Aylmer, p. 321.

‡ Fuller, b. ix. p. 203.

§ Life of Whitgift, p. 370.

more hardly dealt with than papists; but this not prevailing, after six months they petitioned the lords of the council [Dec. 4th, 1591] to be enlarged upon bail, and wrote to the treasurer to second it, assuring his lordship of their loyalty to the Queen, and peaceable behavior in the church. “We  
 ‘doubt not (say they) but your lordship is sensible, that a  
 ‘year’s imprisonment and more which we have suffered,  
 ‘must strike deeper into our healths, considering our edu-  
 ‘cation, than a number of years to men of a different occu-  
 ‘pation. Your lordship knows, that many papists who deny  
 ‘the Queen’s supremacy have been enlarged, whereas we  
 ‘have all sworn to it; and if the government require, are  
 ‘ready to take the oath again.” This was signed by

<i>Tho. Cartwright,</i>	<i>Edward Lord,</i>
<i>Hump. Fen,</i>	<i>Edmund Snape,</i>
<i>Andrew King,</i>	<i>Wm. Proudlove,</i>
<i>Dan. Wight,</i>	<i>Melanchton Jewel.</i>
<i>John Payne,</i>	

They also applied to the archbishop, who refused to consent to their enlargement, unless they would under their hands declare the church of *England* to be a true church, and the whole order of public prayers, &c. consonant to the word of God, and renounce for the future all their assemblies, classes and synods; which they declined. These applications proving ineffectual, they resolved at last to address the Queen herself, for which purpose they drew up a declaration, containing a full answer to the several charges brought against them.\*

It was not till some time after this that Mr. *Cartwright* was released,† upon promise of his quiet and peaceable behavior, and restored to his hospital in *Warwick*, where he continued without further disturbance the rest of his days; but many of his brethren continued under suspension

\* See the Appendix, No. V.

† It should be observed here, that Mr. *Cartwright* was indebted for his liberty to the services of archbishop *Whitgift*, who had been his old acquaintance at *Trinity* college, and had a respect for his abilities, and it was also said, “feared the success in so tough a conflict.”

Fuller’s Church History, b. ix. p. 204.

while their families were starving, as the Rev. Mr. *Fenner* of *Cranbrook* suspended seven years, Mr. *Leverwood* of *Manchelsea* seven years, Mr. *Percival Wyburne* of *Rochester* five years, Mr. *Rockeray* prebendary of *Rochester* four years, Mr. *Barber* of *Bow-Church, London*, two years six months, Mr. *Field* of *Aldermary, London*, Mr. *Smith* lecturer of *St. Clements*, whose printed sermons were a family book all over *England* many years;\* Mr. *Travers* of the *Temple*, Mr. *Colset* of *Easton on the Hill*, Mr. *Settle* of *Buxstead, Suffolk*, Mr. *Gellibrand, Dyke, Fleming, Mr. Kendal, Mr. Hubbock* of *Oxford*, with many others whose names are before me. Mr. *Hubbock* was an excellent divine, and was called before the commission for saying, that a great nobleman (meaning the archbishop) had kneeled down to her majesty for staying and hindering her intent to reform religion. But his grace not being willing to insist upon this, commanded him to subscribe, and in case of refusal to enter into bonds not to preach any more, nor to come within ten miles of *Oxford*; which Mr. *Hubbock* declined, saying, “He had rather go to prison than consent to be silent from preaching, unless he was convinced that he had taught false doctrine, or committed any fault worthy of bonds.”† Sir *Francis Knollys* and the Treasurer interceded for him but to no purpose; upon which Sir *Francis* wrote back to the treasurer in these words; “You know how greatly, yea, and tyrannously the archbishop hath urged subscription to his own articles without law—and that he has claimed in the right of all the bishops a superiority over the inferior clergy from God’s own ordinance, in prejudice to her majesty’s supreme government, though at present he says he does not claim it, therefore in my opinion he ought openly to retract it.”

These high proceedings of the commissioners brought their powers under examination; most were of opinion that they exceeded the law, but some thought the very court itself was illegal, imagining the Queen could not delegate her supremacy to others. Mr. *Cawdery*, late minister of *Luffingham* in *Suffolk*, had been suspended by the bishop of

\* MS. p. 584.

† Life of Whitgift, p. 341, 342.



*London* for refusing the oath *ex officio* ; but not acquiescing in his lordship's sentence, the bishop summoned him before the high commissioners, who deprived him *for non-conformity and lack of learning*, and gave away his living to another, though Mr. *Cawdery* was one of the most learned clergymen, and best preachers in the country, and offered to give proof of his learning before his judges. When this would not be accepted he pleaded with tears his wife and eight poor children that had no maintenance ; but the hearts of the commissioners not being mollified, Mr. *Cawdery* was advised to appeal to the *court of exchequer*, and proceed against the chaplain that had possession of his living ; on this occasion the jurisdiction of the court was argued before all the judges in *Hilary term, 1591.\** Dr. *Aubrey* the civilian confessed, that their proceedings were not warrantable by the letter of the statute 1st *Eliz.* but were built upon the old canon law still in force ; though it has been shewn that their proceeding by way of *inquisition* was warranted by no law at all ; but the *judges* confirmed the proceedings of the court, and left Mr. *Cawdery* with his large family to starve as a *layman*. The suit cost Mr. *Cawdery's* friends a round sum of money, besides two and twenty journies which he made to *London*. But it was a brave stand for the rights of the subject, and staggered the archbishop so much, that he declined the business of the *commission* afterwards, and sent most of his prisoners to the *Star-chamber*.

While these causes were depending, sundry books were written for and against the oath *ex officio* ; among others Mr. *Morrice*, attorney of the court of wards, and member of parliament, published a learned treatise, to prove that no prelates, or ecclesiastical judges, have authority to compel any subject of the land to an *oath*, except in causes testamentary or matrimonial ; and he gives these reasons for it, Because it is against the word of God :—It was never allowed by any general council for a thousand years after Christ :—It was forbidden by the pagan emperors against the christians :—It is against the pope's decretals except in cases of heresy, and where there is danger to the accuser,

\* Heyl. Hist. Presb. p. 348.



and not otherwise :—It is against the laws of the realm ;—and, Because it is against the Queen's prerogative.† *Morrice's* book was answered by Dr. *Cosins* a civilian, in his *apology for the ecclesiastical proceedings* ; to which *Morrice* had prepared a reply, but the archbishop hearing of it, sent for him, and forbade the publication. The *attorney* complained of this usage to the treasurer in these words ; “ *Cosins* ‘ may write at his pleasure of ecclesiastical courts without ‘ check or controlment, though never so erroneously ; but I ‘ poor man, such is my ill hap, may not maintain the right ‘ cause of justice without some blot or blemish.” But this was his grace's shortest way of ending controversies.

Though Mr. *Cartwright* and his brethren above-mentioned had the resolution to lie in gaol for two years, rather than take the oath *ex officio*, others out of weakness, or some other principle, yielded to it, and discovered their *classes*, with the names of those that were present at them :|| Among these were Mr. *Stone*, rector of *Warkton* in *Northamptonshire* ; Mr. *Henry Alvey*, fellow of *St. John's*, *Cambridge* ; Mr. *Thomas Edmunds*, Mr. *William Perkins*, Mr. *Littleton*, *Johnson*, *Barber*, *Cleavelly*, and *Nutter*. These divines confessed upon examination, that they had several meetings with their brethren in *London*, at the houses of Mr. *Travers*, *Egerton*, *Gardner*, and *Barber*, that there had been assemblies of ministers in *Cambridge*, *Northamptonshire* and *Warwickshire* ; that at these meetings there were usually between twelve and twenty ministers present ; that they had a moderator ; that they began and ended with prayer ; and that their usual debates were how far they might comply with the establishment rather than forego their ministry ; here they revised their *book of discipline*, and consulted of *peaceable methods in subordination to the laws* for promoting a reformation in the church, and how far they might exercise their own *platform* in the mean time : but the worst part of their confession was their discovering the names of the brethren that were present, which brought them into trouble. The reasons they gave for taking the oath were :—Because it was administered by a lawful magistrate :—Because the magistrate had a

† Life of Whitgift, p. 840.      || Life of Whitgift, p. 871.

an apology for himself and his brethren against aspersions of Dr. *Sutcliff*, in which he declares, he had never seen *Hacket* nor *Arthington*, nor ever had any conference with them by letter or message. Had there been any ground for this vile charge, we should no doubt have found it among their articles of impeachment.

At the opening of the new parliament, Feb. 19th, the Queen signified her pleasure to the house, that they might redress such popular grievances as were complained of in their several counties, *but should leave all matters of state to herself and the council; and all matters relating to the church to herself and the bishops.* What an insignificant thing is a representative body of the nation, that must not meddle with matters of church or state! But her majesty was resolved to let them see she would be obeyed, for when Mr. *Wentworth* and *Bromley* moved the house to address the Queen to name her successor, she sent for them, together with Mr. *Welsh* and *Stevens*, and committed them to prison, where *Wentworth* remained many years.† When it was moved in the house to address the Queen for the release of their members, it was answered by those privy counsellors that were of the house, *That her majesty had committed them for causes best known to herself; that the house must not call the Queen to account for what she did of her royal authority; that the causes of their restraint might be high and dangerous; that her majesty did not like such questions, nor did it become the house to deal in such matters.*

After this it was a bold adventure of Mr. *Attorney Morrice*,‖ and for which he paid very dear, to move the house, to enquire into the proceedings of the bishops in their *spiritual courts*,§ and how far they could justify their *inquisition*, their *subscriptions*, their *binding the Queen's subjects to their good behavior contrary to the laws of God and of the realm; their compelling men to take oaths to accuse them-*

† Heyl. Hist. Presb. p. 319.

‖ 'This step of Mr. *Attorney Morrice* is described in more proper and happy language by Dr. *Warner*: who calls it "a noble attempt in favor of religious liberty." Ed.

§ Life of Whitgift, p. 386-7.

selves, and upon their refusal to degrade, deprive, and imprison them at pleasure, and not to release them till they had complied. At the same time he offered two bills to the house; one against the oath *ex officio*, and the other against their illegal imprisonments; which last he prayed might be read presently. Sir *Francis Knollys* seconded the attorney, and said, "That in his opinion these abuses ought to be reformed; and that if the prelates had acted against law they were in a *præmunire*." He added, that after the reformation of King *Henry VIII.* no bishop practised superiority over his brethren; that in King *Edward VIth's* time a statute was made, that bishops should keep their courts in the King's name; and that though this statute was repealed by Queen *Mary*, and not since revived, yet it was doubtful what authority bishops had to keep courts in *their own name*, because it was manifestly against the prerogative that any subject should hold a court, without express warrant from the crown. If it was said, they kept their courts by prescription, or by the statute of King *Henry VIII.* which gives bishops the same rule under the King as they had under the pope, he answered, that there was a clause in the act which restrains them from offending against the King's prerogative, and the laws and customs of the realm; and according to the laws and customs of the realm, no subject can hold a court but by special warrant from the crown." Mr. *Beal* spoke upon the same side, and added, "That the bishops had incurred a *præmunire*, because the statute of 13 *Eliz.* requires subscription to articles of faith only; that this limitation was made by the lords after the bill had passed the commons; and that no councils nor canons gave authority to the bishops to frame articles, and require subscription at their pleasure." For which speech the Queen forbid him the court, and commanded him to absent from parliament.

These debates awakened the civilians in the house, and particularly Mr. *Daulton*, who opposed the reading of the bill, because the Queen had often forbid them to meddle with the reformation of the church; which sir *Robert Cecil*, one of her majesty's secretaries confirmed.

§ Life of Whitgift, p. 388.

As soon as the Queen was acquainted with the proceedings of the house she sent for the speaker *Coke*,\* and commanded him to tell the house, “That it was wholly in her power to call, to determine, to assent or dissent, to any thing done in parliament; that the calling of *this* was only, that such as neglected the service of the church might be compelled to it with some sharp laws; and that the safety of her majesty’s person and the realm might be provided for; that it was not meant that they should meddle with matters of state or causes ecclesiastical; that she wondered they should attempt a thing so contrary to her commandment; that she was highly offended at it; and that it was her royal pleasure, that no bill, touching any matters of state and causes ecclesiastical, should be there exhibited.”† At the same time Mr. *Attorney Morrice* was seized on in the house by a serjeant at arms, discharged from his office in the court of the dutchy of *Lancaster*, disabled from any practice in his profession as a barrister at law, and kept for some years prisoner in *Tutbury Castle*.

If there had been a just spirit of *English liberty* in the house of commons they would not have submitted so tamely to the insults of an arbitrary court, which arrested their members for liberty of speech, and committed them to prison; which forbade their redressing the grievances of church or state, and sent for their bills out of the house and cancelled them. These were such acts of sovereign power as none of her majesty’s predecessors had dared to assume, and which cost one of her successors his crown and life.

But this parliament, instead of asserting their own and the people’s liberties, stands upon record for one of the severest acts of oppression and cruelty that ever was passed by the representatives of a protestant nation, and a free people. It is entitled, *An act for the punishment of persons obstinately refusing to come to church, and persuading others to impugn the Queen’s authority in ecclesiastical*

\* Heyl. Hist. Presb. p. 320.

† This, says Dr. *Warner* “was the message of a Queen to the house of commons, whose reign affords such subjects of panegyric to those who would be thought patriots, and patrons of liberty, in the present age.” *Ecclesiastical History*, vol. iii. p. 464. Ed.

*causes.* It is therein enacted, “That if any person above  
‘ the age of sixteen shall obstinately refuse to repair to some  
‘ church, chapel, or usual place of common prayer, to hear  
‘ divine service, for the space of *one month*, without lawful  
‘ cause ; or shall at any time, forty days after the end of  
‘ this session, by printing, writing, or express words, go  
‘ about to persuade any of her majesty’s subjects to deny,  
‘ withstand, or impugn her majesty’s power or authority in  
‘ causes ecclesiastical ; or shall dissuade them from coming  
‘ to church, to hear divine service, or receive the commun-  
‘ ion according as the law directs ; or shall be present at  
‘ any unlawful assembly, conventicle, or meeting, under  
‘ color or pretence of any exercise of religion ; that every  
‘ person so offending, and lawfully convicted, shall be com-  
‘ mitted to prison without bail, till they shall conform and  
‘ yield themselves to come to church, and make the follow-  
‘ ing declaration of their conformity :

“ I *A. B.* do humbly confess and acknowledge, that  
‘ I have grievously offended God, in contemning her majes-  
‘ ty’s godly and lawful government and authority, by ab-  
‘ senting myself from church, and from hearing divine ser-  
‘ vice, contrary to the godly laws and statutes of the realm,  
‘ and in frequenting disorderly and unlawful conventicles.  
‘ under pretence and color of exercise of religion ; and I  
‘ am heartily sorry for the same, and do acknowledge and  
‘ testify in my conscience, that no other person has or ought  
‘ to have any power or authority over her majesty. And  
‘ I do promise and protest, without any dissimulation, or  
‘ color of dispensation, that from henceforth I will obey her  
‘ majesty’s statutes and laws in repairing to church and  
‘ hearing divine service ; and to my utmost endeavor will  
‘ maintain and defend the same.”

“ But in case the offenders against this statute, being law-  
‘ fully convicted, shall not submit and sign the declaration  
‘ within three months, then they shall **ABJURE THE REALM**  
‘ **AND GO INTO PERPETUAL BANISHMENT.\*** And if they

\* It is remarkable, that there is a proviso in this statute, that no RO-  
PISH REOUSANT shall be *compelled or bound to abjure by virtue of this*  
*act.*—Such was her majesty’s tenderness for the papists, while she was  
crushing protestant dissenters. Neal’s Review. Ed.

‘ do not depart within the time limited by the quarter  
 ‘ sessions, or justices of the peace ; or if they return at any  
 ‘ time afterwards without the Queen’s licence, they shall  
 ‘ SUFFER DEATH WITHOUT BENEFIT OF CLERGY.” So that  
 as the lord chancellor *King* observed at the trial of Dr.  
*Sacheverel*, the case of the non-conformists by this act was  
 worse than that of felons at common law, for these were  
 allowed the benefit of the clergy, but the others were not.  
 This statute was levelled against the laity as well as the  
 clergy ; and the severe execution of it with that of the 23d  
 of *Eliz.* in this and the following reigns,\* brought infinite  
 mischiefs upon the kingdom ; many families being forced  
 into banishment ; some put to death, as in cases of *treason* ;  
 and others as *the authors of seditious pamphlets.*†

The moderate *puritans* made a shift to evade the force  
 of this law, by coming to church when *common prayer* was  
 almost over, and by receiving the sacrament in some church-  
 es where it was administered with some latitude ; but the  
 weight of it fell upon the *separatists*, who renounced all  
 communion with the church in the word and sacraments as  
 well as in the common prayer and ceremonies ; these were  
 called *Brownists* or *Barrowists*, from one *Barrow* a gen-  
 tleman of the *Temple*, who was now at their head. We

\* “ These laws are still put in execution ; and about three years ago  
 in *Cornwall*, a poor fellow, a dissenter, was libelled in the spiritual court  
 for not attending divine worship at his parish church on Sunday. He  
 had not taken the oaths required by the toleration act ; but it being a  
 sufficient defence to take them at any time during the prosecution, he  
 applied to the magistrates of the county at their quarter-sessions, who  
 illegally *refused to administer them* : The consequence was, that he was  
 excommunicated. Upon a representation of the committee in *London*  
 for taking care of the civil concerns of the dissenters, the chairman of  
 the sessions acknowledged the error of the justices, and the man took  
 the oaths at the ensuing sessions ; but it was then *too late.*” High  
 Church Politics, p. 69. Ed.

† Dr. Warner remarks on this statute, “ That thus in some measure  
 ‘ were renewed the days of Henry VIII ; when it was a crime against  
 ‘ the state to depart ever so little from the religion of the sovereign :  
 ‘ but in some part of this act, she exceeded her father’s tyranny. For  
 ‘ absolute as he was, he contented himself with punishing such as op-  
 ‘ posed the established religion by some overt act. But by this new  
 ‘ statute the subjects were obliged to make an open profession by a con-  
 ‘ stant attendance on the established service.” *Eccls. History*, vol. ii.  
 p. 465. Ed.



have given an account of their distinguishing principles in the year 1580, since which time their numbers were prodigiously increased, though the bishops pursued them, and shut them up in prison without bail, or troubling themselves to bring them to a trial. Sir *Walter Raleigh* declared in the parliament house that they were not less than 20,000, divided into several congregations in *Norfolk*, in *Essex*, and in the parts about *London*: there were several considerable men now at their head, as the Reverend Mr. *Smith*, Mr. *Jacob*, the learned Mr. *Ainsworth*, the *rabbi* of his age, and others.

The congregation about *London*, being pretty numerous, formed themselves into a church, Mr. *Francis Johnson* being chosen pastor by the suffrage of the brotherhood, Mr. *Greenhood* doctor, [or teacher] Mr. *Bowman* and *Lee* deacons, Mr. *Studley* and *Kinaston* elders, all in one day, at the house of Mr. *Fox*, in *Nicholas-lane* in the year 1592,\* seven persons were baptized at the same time without god-fathers or godmothers, Mr. *Johnson* only washing their faces with water, and pronouncing the form, *I baptize thee in the name, &c.* The Lord's Supper was also administered in this manner; five white loaves being set upon the table, the pastor blessed them by prayer, after which having broken the bread, he delivered it to some, and the deacons to the rest, some standing and others sitting about the table, using the words of the apostle, 1 Cor. xi. 24. *Take, eat, this is the body of the Lord Jesus, which was broken for you: This do in remembrance of him.* In like manner he gave the cup, using the like words of the apostle, *This cup is the New Testament in his blood; this do ye, as oft as ye drink it, in remembrance of him.* In the close they sung a hymn, and made a collection for the poor. When any person came first into the church he made this protestation or promise, that *He would walk with them so long as they did walk in the way of the Lord, and as far as might be warranted by the word of God.*

The congregation being obliged to meet in different places to cover themselves from the bishop's officers, was at length discovered on a Lord's day at *Islington*, in the very

\* *Strype's Annals*, vol. iv. p. 174,



same place where the protestant congregation met in Queen *Mary's* reign; about fifty-six were taken prisoners, and sent two by two to the gaols about *London*, where several of their friends had been confined for a considerable time.

At their examination they confessed, that for some years they had met in the fields in the summer time at five o'clock in the morning of the *Lord's day*, and in the winter at private houses;† that they continued all day in prayer and expounding the scriptures; that they dined together, and after dinner made a collection for their diet, and sent the remainder of the money to their brethren in prison; that they did not use the *Lord's Prayer*, apprehending it not to be intended by our blessed Savior to be used as a *form* after the sending down of the spirit at *Pentecost*. Their adversaries charged them with several extravagancies about *baptism, marriage, lay-preaching, &c.* from which they vindicated themselves in a very solid and judicious reply, shewing how far they disowned, and with what limitations they acknowledged the charge.||

But the bishops observing no measures with this people, they ventured to lay their case before the lords of the council in an humble petition.§ But the privy council dropt the

† *Strype's Ann.* vol. iii. p. 579.

|| *MS.* p. 650.

§ In this petition they say, that “ Upon a careful examination of the holy scriptures, we find the *English Hierarchy* to be dissonant from Christ's institution, and to be derived from Antichrist, being the same the pope left in this land, to which we dare not subject ourselves.—We farther find, that God has commanded all that believe the gospel to walk in that holy faith and order which he has appointed in his church; wherefore in the reverend fear of his name we have joined ourselves together, and subjected our souls and bodies to those laws and ordinances; and have chosen to ourselves such a ministry of *pastor, teacher, elders and deacons*, as Christ has given to his church on earth to the world's end, hoping for the promised assistance of his grace in our attendance upon him; notwithstanding any prohibition of men, or what by men can be done unto us.—We are ready to prove our church order to be warranted by the word of God, allowable by her majesty's laws, and no ways prejudicial to her sovereign power; and to *disprove* the public hierarchy, worship and government, by such evidence of scripture, as our adversaries shall not be able to withstand; protesting, if we fail herein, not only willingly to sustain such deserved punishment as shall be inflicted upon us, but to become conformable for the future; if we overthrow not our adversaries, we will not say if our adversaries overcome us.

petition, being afraid to move in an affair that lay more immediately before the *high commission*.

Mr. *Smith*, one of their ministers, after he had been in prison twelve months, was called before the commissioners, and being asked *whether he would go to church ?* answered,

“ But the prelates of this land have for a long time dealt most injuriously, unlawfully, and outrageously with us, by the great power and high authority they have gotten in their hands, and usurped above all the public courts, judges, laws and charters of this land, persecuting, imprisoning and detaining at their pleasure our poor bodies, without any trial, release or bail; and hitherto without any cause either for error or crime directly objected.—Some of us they have kept in close prison four or five years with miserable usage, as *Henry Barrowe* and *John Greenwood* now in the *Fleet*; others they have cast into *Newgate*, and laden with as many irons as they could bear; others into dangerous and loathsome gaols, among the most facinorous and vile persons, where it is lamentable to relate how many of these innocents have perished within these five years; aged widows, aged men, and young maidens, &c. where, so many as the infection hath spared, lie in woful distress, like to follow their fellows, if speedy redress be not had; others of us have been grievously beaten with cudgels in *Bridewell*, and cast into a place called *Little Ease*, for refusing to come to their chapel service; in which prison several have ended their lives; but upon none of our companions thus committed by them, and dying in their prison, is any search or inquest suffered to pass, as by law in like case is provided.

“ Their manner of pursuing and apprehending us is with no less violence and outrage; their *pursuevants*, with their assistants, break into our houses at all times of the night, where they break open, ransack, and rifle at their pleasure, under pretence of searching for seditious and unlawful books. The husbands in the deep of the night they have plucked out of their beds from their wives, and haled them to prison.—Some time since their *pursuevants*, late in the night, entered in the Queen’s name, into an honest citizen’s house upon *Ludgate-Hill*, where, after they had at their pleasure searched and ransacked all places, chests, &c. of the house, they apprehended two of our ministers, Mr. *Francis Johnson* and *John Greenwood*, without any warrant at all, both whom, between one and two of the clock after midnight, they with bills and staves led to the counter of *Wood-street*, taking assurance of Mr. *Boys*, the master of the house, to be prisoner in his house till next day; at which time the archbishop, with certain doctors his associates, committed them to close prison, two to the *Clink*, and the third to the *Fleet*, where they now remain in distress. Since this they have cast into prison *Thomas Settle*, *Daniel Studley* and *Nicolas Lane*, taken upon a Lord’s day in our assembly, and shut them up in the *Gate-house*; others of our friends they are in continual pursuit of; so that there is no safety for them in any one place.

that he should dissemble and play the hypocrite if he should do it to avoid trouble, for he thought it utterly unlawful; to which one of the commissioners answered, *Come to church and obey the Queen's laws, and be a dissembler, be a hypocrite, or a devil, if thou wilt.\** Upon his refusal he was remanded to the *Clink*, and his brethren to the *Fleet*, where by order of Mr. Justice *Young*, one of the commissioners, they were shut up in close rooms, not being allowed the liberty of the prison; here they died like rotten sheep, some of the diseases of the prison, some for want, and others of infectious distempers. “These bloody men [the ecclesiastical commissioners] (says Mr. *Barrowe* in his supplication) will allow us neither meat, drink, fire, lodging, nor suffer any whose hearts the Lord would stir up for our relief, to have any access to us, by which means 17 or 18 have perished in the noisome gaols within these six years;† some of us had not one penny about us when we were sent to prison, nor any thing to procure a maintenance for ourselves and families, but our handy labor and trades, by which means not only we ourselves, but our families and children, are undone and starved. Their unbridled slander; their lawless privy searches; their violent breaking open houses; their taking away whatever they think meet; and their barbarous usage of women, children, &c. we are forced to omit lest we be tedious. That which we crave for us all, is the liberty to die openly, or live openly in the land of our nativity; if we deserve death let us not be

“We therefore humbly pray, in the name of *God*, and our sovereign the *Queen*, that we may have the benefit of the laws. and of the public charter of the land, namely, that we may be received to bail till we be by order of law convicted of some crime deserving bonds. We plight unto your honors our faith unto *God*, and our allegiance to her Majesty, that we will not commit any thing unworthy the gospel of *Christ*, or to the disturbance of the common peace and good order of the land, and that we will be forthcoming at such reasonable warning as your lordships shall command. Oh! let us not perish before trial and judgment, especially imploring and crying out to you for the same. —However, we here take the Lord of heaven and earth, and his angels, together with your own consciences, and all persons in all ages, to whom this our supplication may come, to witness that we have here truly advertised your honors of our case and usage, and have in all humility offered our cause to christian trial.”

\* *Strype's Ann.* vol. ult. p. 134.

† *Strype's Ann.* vol. ult. p. 133.

‘ closely murdered, yea, starved to death with hunger and  
 ‘ cold, and stifled in loathsome dungeons—” Among those  
 who perished in prison was one *Mr. Roger Rippon*; who  
 dying in *Newgate*, his fellow prisoners put this inscription  
 upon his coffin :—

“ This is the corps of *Roger Rippon*, a servant of Christ,  
 ‘ and her majesty’s faithful subject; who is the last of six-  
 ‘ teen or seventeen which that great enemy of God, the arch-  
 ‘ bishop of Canterbury with his high commissioners have  
 ‘ murdered in *Newgate* within these *five years*, manifestly  
 ‘ for the testimony of Jesus Christ; his soul is now with  
 ‘ the Lord, and his blood cried for speedy vengeance against  
 ‘ that great enemy of the saints, and against *Mr. Richard*  
 ‘ *Young*, [a justice of peace in *London*] who in this and  
 ‘ many the like points hath abused his power for the up-  
 ‘ holding of the *Romish* antichrist, prelacy and priesthood.  
 ‘ He died *A. D. 1592.*”†

Many copies of this inscription were dispersed among  
 friends, for which some were apprehended and confined.

The privy council taking no notice of the above-men-  
 tioned supplications, the prisoners in the several gaols about  
*London*, joined in the petition\* given below, to the lord  
 treasurer *Burleigh*, to which they subscribed their names.

† Strype’s Annals, vol. ult. p. 91.

\* *The humble petition of many poor christians, imprisoned by the bishops  
 in sundry prisons in and about London, to the lord treasurer.*

“ WE humbly beseech your honor, either to grant us a speedy tri-  
 ‘ al together, or some free christian conference, or else in the mean  
 ‘ while, that we may be bailed according to law; or else put into *Bride-*  
 ‘ *well*, or some other convenient place, where we may be together for  
 ‘ our mutual help and comfort; or if your honor will not yourself alone  
 ‘ grant this our request, that then it may please you to be a mean for  
 ‘ our speedy relief, unto the rest of her majesty’s most honorable privy  
 ‘ council.

“ The Almighty God, that hath preserved your lordship unto these  
 ‘ honorable years in so high service to our sovereign prince, and to the  
 ‘ unspeakable comfort of this whole land, give your honorable heart so  
 ‘ tender compassion and careful consideration in equity, of the poor af-  
 ‘ flicted servants of Christ, and that (before the Lord plead against this  
 ‘ land for *Abel’s* innocent blood that is shed in the several prisons) your  
 ‘ honor may open your mouth for the dumb in the cause of the children  
 ‘ of [devoted to] destruction, [that] you may open your mouth and judge  
 ‘ righteously, and judge the cause of the afflicted; as the people of *Ire-*

Among the names subscribed to this petition is Mr. *Henry Barrowe*, an ingenious and learned man, but of too warm a spirit, as appears by his book, entitled, *A brief discovery of false churches*, printed 1590, and reprinted 1707. This gentleman having been several years in prison, sent another supplication to the *attorney general* and *privy council*

‘*el* when they went to war first made peace with God, and removed all  
 ‘occasion whereby his wrath might be incensed, lest he should fight a-  
 ‘gainst them in battle. For if this suppression of the truth, and oppres-  
 ‘sion of Christ in his members, contrary to all law and justice, be with-  
 ‘out restraint prosecuted by the enemy in the land; then not only the  
 ‘persecuted shall daily cry from under the altar for redress, but God’s  
 ‘wrath be so kindled for the shedding the innocent blood of men, even  
 ‘the blood of his own servants (of whom he has said, *Touch not mine*  
 ‘*anointed,*) that if *Noah*, *Daniel* and *Job*, should pray for this people,  
 ‘yet should they not deliver them.

“Pleaseth it then your lordship to understand, that we her majesty’s  
 ‘loyal, dutiful, and true-hearted subjects, to the number of threescore  
 ‘persons and upwards, have, contrary to all law and equity, been im-  
 ‘prisoned, separated from our trades, wives, children, and families;  
 ‘yea, shut up close prisoners from all comfort, many of us the space of  
 ‘*two years and a half*, upon the bishop’s sole commandment, in great pen-  
 ‘ury and noisomeness of the prisons; many ending their lives, never  
 ‘called to trial; some haled forth to the sessions: some cast in irons  
 ‘and dungeons; some in hunger and famine; all of us debarred from  
 ‘any lawful audience before our honorable governors and magistrates,  
 ‘and from all benefit and help of the laws; daily defamed and falsely  
 ‘accused by published pamphlets, by private suggestions, open preach-  
 ‘ing, slanders, and accusations of heresy, sedition, schism, and what not.  
 ‘And above all, which most utterly toucheth our salvation, they keep  
 ‘us from all spiritual comfort and edifying by doctrine, prayer, or mu-  
 ‘tual conference, &c.

“And seeing for our conscience only we are deprived of all comfort,  
 ‘we most humbly beseech your good lordship, that some more mitigate  
 ‘and peaceable course might be taken therein, that some free and chris-  
 ‘tian conference publicly or privately before your honor, or before whom  
 ‘it would please you, where our adversaries may not be our judges  
 ‘[might be had;] that our case, with the reason and proof on both sides,  
 ‘might be recorded by indifferent notaries and faithful witnesses: and  
 ‘if any thing be found in us worthy of death or bonds, let us be made  
 ‘an example to all posterity; if not, we intreat for some compassion to  
 ‘be shewn in equity according to law for our relief; [and] that in the  
 ‘mean time we may be bailed to do her majesty’s service, walk in our  
 ‘callings, to provide things needful for ourselves, our poor wives, dis-  
 ‘consolate children and families lying upon us, or else that we might  
 ‘be prisoners together in *Bridewell*, or any other convenient place at  
 ‘your honor’s appointment, where we might provide such relief by our

for a conference with the bishops, or that *their ministers* might be conferred with in their hearing, without taunts or railings, for searching out the truth in love; “If it be objected [says *Barrowe*] that none of our side are worthy to be thus disputed with, we think we should prove the contrary; for there are three or four of them in the diligence and labors as might preserve life, to the comfort both of our souls and bodies.”

*Signed by your poor supplicants in the following prisons:*

*In the Gate-House.*

John Gualter,  
John Nicolas,  
John Barnes,  
John Crawford,  
Thomas Conadyne,  
Thomas Reeve,  
William Dodshawe,  
Father Debnam,  
Edmund Thompson,  
Thomas Freeman.

*In the Fleet.*

Henry Barrowe,  
John Greenwood,  
Daniel Studley,  
Robert Badkyne,  
Walter Lane.

*In Newgate,*

William Deptford,  
Widow Borrough,  
Roger Waterer.

*In Bridewell.*

William Broomal,  
James Forrester,  
Antony Claxton,  
Nicholas Lee,  
John Francis.  
William Forester,  
John Clarke,  
John Fisher,  
John Bucer,  
Roger Rippon,  
Robert Andrews,  
Richard Skarlet,  
Luke Hayes,

Richard Maltusse.  
Richard UMBERFIELD,  
William Fowler,  
William Burt,  
William Hutton.

*In the Clink.*

George Collier,  
John Sparrow.  
Edmund Nicolson,  
Christopher Browne,  
Thomas Mitchel,  
Andrew Smith,  
William Blackborrow,  
Thomas Lemare,  
Christopher Raper,  
Quintin Smith.

*In the White-Lion.*

Thomas Legat,  
Edmund Marsh,  
Antony Johnes,  
—— Cook,  
—— Anger.

*Wood-street, Compter.*

George Snells,  
Christopher Bowman,  
Robert Jackson.

*In the Poultry Compter.*

Rowlet Skipwith,  
George Kingston,  
Thomas Eyneworth,  
Richard Hayward,  
John Lancaster.

In all 59.

‘ city of *London*, and more elsewhere, who have been zealous preachers in the parish assemblies, and are not ignorant of the *Latin*, *Greek*, and *Hebrew tongues*, nor otherwise unlearned, and generally confessed to be of honest conversation. If this motion takes effect, the controversy will soon end with most of us, for by this means we poor wretches shall perceive, whether as simple souls we are led aside; or whether, as the dear children of God, we are *first* trusted with the view of, and standing up for the cause of holiness and righteousness. But let us not perish secretly in prison, or openly by execution, for want of that help that lies in your power to afford; when we protest in the sight of God, we do not separate from the establishment out of pride or obstinacy, but from the constraints of conscience.”

But all these petitions were rejected by the bishops and privy council for the following reasons, if they deserve that name; “ Because a disputation had been denied to papists: To call the ministry of the church of *England* into question, is to call all other churches into question, against whom their exceptions extend:† The church of *England* has submitted to disputation three times in King *Edward’s*, Queen *Mary’s* and Queen *Elizabeth’s* time: These men’s errors have been condemned by the writings of learned men: It is not reasonable that a religion established by parliament should be examined by an inferior authority: It is not reasonable to condemn those foreign churches that have acknowledged *ours* for a true church: Their principal errors have been confuted by St. *Austin*: This will strengthen the hands of the papists: It has

*Prisoners deceased.*

*Out of the Poultry Compter.*  
John Chaundler.

*Out of Wood street Compter.*  
George Dinghtie.

*Out of the Clink.*  
Henry Thompson,  
Jerom Studley.

*Out of Newgate.*

Richard Jackson,  
Widow Mainard,  
Widow Row,  
Nicholas Crane,  
Thomas Stephens.

*Out of Bridewell.*  
John Pardy.

In all 10.

† Strype’s Annals, vol. ult. p. 172.



‘ been the manner of heretics to require disputations with  
‘ clamor and importunity : The cause has been already de-  
‘ cided by written books which they may consult : They  
‘ will not stand to the judgment of the civil magistrate : If  
‘ the church should satisfy every sect that riseth, there  
‘ would be no end of disputations.” Thus these pious and  
conscientious persons, after a long and illegal imprison-  
ment, were abandoned to the severity of an unrighteous  
law ; some of them being publicly executed as *felons*, and  
others proscribed and sent into banishment.

Among the former were, Mr. *Barrowe*, gent. of *Gray's Inn*, Mr. *Greenwood* and *Penry* ministers ; the two first had been in prison some years, and several times before the *commissioners* ; their examinations written by themselves are now before me. *Barrowe* was apprehended at the *Clink* prison in *Southwark*, where he went to visit his brother *Greenwood* ; he was carried immediately to *Lambeth*, where the archbishop would have examined him upon the oath *ex officio*, but he refused to take it, or to swear at all upon the Bible ; but (says he) by God's grace I will answer nothing but the truth. So the archbishop took a paper of interrogatories into his hand, and asked him, 1. *Whether the Lord's prayer might be used in the church ?* He answered, that in his opinion it was rather a summary than a form, and not finding it used by the apostles, he thought it should not be constantly used by us. 2. *Whether forms of prayer may be used in the church ?* He answered, that none such ought to be imposed. 3. *Whether the Common Prayer be idolatrous or superstitious ?* He answered, that in his opinion it was so. 4. *Whether the sacraments of the church are true sacraments and seals of the favor of God ?* He answered, he thought as they were publicly administered they were not. 5. *Whether the laws of the church are good ?* He answered, that many of them were unlawful and antichristian. 6. *Whether the church of England is a true church ?* He answered, that as it was now formed it was not ; yet there are many excellent good christians of it. 7. *Whether the Queen be supreme governor of the church, and may make laws for it ?* He answered, that the Queen was supreme governor of the church, but might not make laws other than Christ had

left in his word. 8. *Whether a private person may reform if the prince neglects it ?* He answered, that no private persons might reform the state, but they are to abstain from any unlawful thing commanded by the prince. 9. *Whether every particular church ought to have a presbytery ?* He answered in the affirmative. After this examination he was remanded to close prison, and denied a copy of his answers, though he earnestly desired it.

His next examination was before the archbishop, the lord Chancellor, lord Treasurer, lord Buckhurst, and the bishop of London, at Whitehall, where he found twelve of his brethren in the same circumstances with himself, but was not admitted to speak to them. Being called into another room, and kneeling down at the end of the table, the lord treasurer spoke to him thus. *Treas.* Why are you in prison ? *Barrowe.* Upon the statute against recusants.—*Treas.* Why will you not go to church ? *Barrowe.* Because I think the church of *England* as established by law not a church of Christ, nor their manner of worship lawful. After a long debate on this head the treasurer said, You complain of injustice, where have you wrong ? *Barr.* In being kept in prison without due trial ; and in the misery we suffer by a close imprisonment contrary to law.—The archbishop said, he had matter to call him before him for an heretic. *Barr.* replied, That you shall never do, *I may err, but heretic by the grace of God I will never be.* It being observed that he did not pay such reverence to the archbishop and bishop of London as to the temporal lords, the chancellor asked him, if he did not know those two men, pointing to the bishops. To which he answered, that he had cause to know them, but did not own them for lord bishops. Being then asked by what name he would call the archbishop ; he replied, that he was a monster, a persecutor, a compound of he knew not what, neither ecclesiastical nor civil, like the second beast spoken of in the Revelations : Upon which the archbishop rose out of his place, and with a severe countenance said, *My lords, will you suffer him ?* So he was plucked off his knees, and carried away.

Mr. Greenwood the minister was examined after the same manner before the archbishop of Canterbury, the bishops of London and Winchester, the lords chief justices, the lord

*chief baron*, and the *master of the rolls*: He had interrogatories put to him as *Barrowe* had, but refused to swear, and made much the same answer with the other. At length on the 21st of March 1592, they, together with *Saxio Bellot*, gent. *Daniel Studley*, girdler, and *Robert Bowlle*, fishmonger were indicted at the sessions-house in the *Old-Bailey*, upon the statute of 23 *Eliz.* for writing and publishing sundry seditious books and pamphlets, tending to the slander of the Queen and government; when they had only written against the church; but this was the archbishop's artful contrivance, to throw off the odium of their death from himself to the civil magistrate; for as the reverend and learned Mr. *Hugh Broughton* observes, "though Mr. *Barrowe* and *Greenwood* were condemned for disturbance of the state; yet this would have been pardoned, and their lives spared, if they would have promised to come to church."\* Upon their trial they behaved with constancy and resolution, shewing no token of recognition, (says the attorney) nor prayer for mercy: they protested their inviolable loyalty to the Queen, and obedience to her government; that they never wrote, nor so much as intended anything against her highness, but only against the bishops and the hierarchy of the church; which was apparent enough. However the jury brought them all in guilty.†—*Bellot* desired a conference, and with tears confessing his sorrow for what he had done, was pardoned. *Bowlle* and *Studley* being looked upon only as accessaries, though they continued firm, declaring their unshaken loyalty to the Queen, and refusing to ask for mercy, were reprieved, and sent back to prison; but *Barrowe* and *Greenwood* were to be made examples. Sentence of death being passed upon them March 23, sundry divines were appointed to persuade them to recant; who not succeeding, they were brought in a cart to Tyburn on the last of March, and exposed under the gallows for some time to the people, to see if the terrors of death would affright them; but remaining constant, they were brought back to *Newgate*, and on the sixth of April 1593, carried a second time to Tyburn and executed. At the place of execution they gave such testimonies of their

\* *Broughton's Works*, p. 731.

† *Heyl. Hist. Pr.* p. 321.

unfeigned piety towards God, and loyalty to the Queen, praying so earnestly for her long and prosperous reign, that when Dr. *Reynolds*, who attended them, reported their behavior to her majesty, she repented that she had yielded to their death.

They had been in close prison ever since the year 1590, exposed to all the severities of cold, hunger and nakedness, which Mr. *Barrowe* represented in a supplication to the Queen, already mentioned, concluding with an earnest desire of deliverance from the present miseries, though it were by death; but the archbishop intercepted the paper, and endeavored to prevent the knowledge of their condition from coming to the Queen's ear: upon this Mr. *Barrowe* exposed his *grace's* behavior towards miserable men, in a letter to one Mr. *Fisher*, wherein he charges him  
' with abusing the Queen's clemency by false informations  
' and suggestions; and with artful disingenuity, in committing so many innocent men to *Bridewell*, the *Compter*,  
' *Newgate*, the *White-Lyon*, and the *Fleet*, and then posting them to the civil magistrate to take off the clamor of  
' the people from himself. He says, that he had destined  
' *himself* and his brother *Greenwood*, to death, and others  
' to be kept in close prison; their poor wives and children  
' to be cast out of the city, and their goods to be confiscated.  
' Is not this a christian bishop? (says he) Are these the  
' virtues of him who takes upon him the care and government of all the churches of the land, to tear and devour  
' God's poor sheep, and to rend off the flesh and break their  
' bones, and chop them in pieces as flesh to the cauldron? \*  
' Will he thus instruct and convince gainsayers? Surely  
' he will persuade but few that fear God, to his religion,  
' by his dealing and evil. Does he consult his own credit,  
' or the honor of his prince by this tyrannous havoc? For  
' our parts, our lives are not dear to us, so that we may finish our testimony with joy: we are always ready, through  
' God's grace, to be offered up upon the testimony of the  
' faith that we have made."

Thus fell these two unhappy gentlemen, a sacrifice to the resentments of an angry prelate.

\* Life of Whitgift, p. 416.

About six weeks after this, the Rev. Mr. *John Penry* or *Ap-Henry*, a *Welsh* divine, was executed for the same crime, in a cruel and inhuman manner. He was a pious and learned man, well disposed to religion, (says Mr. *Strype*) but mistaken in his principles, and hot in his temper; a zealous platformer, and a declared enemy of the archbishop. He was born in the county of *Brecknock*, and educated first at *Cambridge*, and afterwards in *St. Alban's-Hall, Oxford*, where he proceeded *M. A.* 1586, and entered into holy orders, being well acquainted with arts and languages. He preached in both universities with applause, and afterwards travelling into *Wales*, was the first, as he said, that preached the gospel publicly to the *Welsh*, and sowed the good seed among his countrymen. In the year 1588, he published a *View of such public wants and disorders as are in her majesty's country of Wales, with a humble petition to the high court of parliament for their redress*: wherein is shewed not only the necessity of reforming the state of religion among that people, but also the only way in regard of substance to bring that reformation to pass. He also published an *Exhortation to the governors and people of her majesty's country of Wales, to labor earnestly to have the preaching of the gospel planted among them*. Printed 1588.

When *Martin Mar-Prelate*, and the other satirical pamphlets against the bishops were published, a special warrant was issued from the privy council 1590, under several of their hands, whereof the archbishop's was one, to seize and apprehend Mr. *Penry*, as an enemy of the state; and that all the Queen's good subjects should take him so to be. To avoid being taken he retired into *Scotland*, where he continued till this present year 1593. Here he made many observations of things relating to religion, for his own private use; and at length prepared the heads of a petition,\*

\* The heads of the petition taken upon him, were as follow: "The  
' last days of your reign are turned rather against Jesus Christ and his  
' gospel, than to the maintenance of the same.

"I have great cause and complaint, madam; nay, the Lord and his  
' church have cause to complain of your government, because we your  
' subjects, this day, are not permitted to serve our God under your gov-  
' ernment according to his word, but are sold to be bond-slaves, not

or an address to the Queen, to shew her majesty the true state of religion, and how ignorant she was of many abuses in the church of *England*, especially in the management of ecclesiastical matters; and likewise to intercede for so much favor, that he might, by her authority, have liberty to go into *Wales*, his native country, to preach the gospel. || With this petition he came from *Scotland*, resolving to finish and deliver it with his own hand, as he should find opportunity; but upon his arrival he was seized with his papers in *Stepney* parish, by the information of the *vicar*, in the month of May, and arraigned, condemned, and executed hastily, the very same month.

|| Life of Whitgift, p. 409.

‘ only to our affections, to do what we will, so that we keep ourselves  
 ‘ within the compass of established civil laws, but also to be servants  
 ‘ to the *man of sin* [the pope] and his ordinances.

“ It is not the force that we seem to fear that will come upon us  
 ‘ (for the Lord may destroy both you for denying, and us for slack  
 ‘ seeking of his will) by strangers: I come unto you with it: If you  
 ‘ will hear it, our cause may be eased; if not, that posterity may know  
 ‘ that you have been dealt with, and that this age may know that there  
 ‘ is no expectation to be looked for at your hands.

“ Among the rest of the princes under the gospel, that have been  
 ‘ drawn to oppose it, you must think yourself to be one; for until you  
 ‘ see this, *madam*, you see not yourself, and they are but sycophants  
 ‘ and flatterers whoever tell you otherwise: Your standing is and has  
 ‘ been by the gospel. It is little beholden to you for any thing that  
 ‘ appears. The practice of your government shews, that if you could  
 ‘ have ruled without the gospel, it would have been doubtful whether  
 ‘ the gospel should be established or not; for now that you are estab-  
 ‘ lished in your throne by the gospel, you suffer it to reach no further  
 ‘ than the end of your sceptre limiteth unto it.

“ If we had had Queen *Mary*’s days, I think that we should have  
 ‘ had as flourishing a church this day as ever any; for it is well known  
 ‘ that there was then in *London*, under the burthen, and elsewhere in  
 ‘ exile, more flourishing churches than any now tolerated by your au-  
 ‘ thority.

“ Now whereas we should have your help both to join ourselves  
 ‘ with the true church, and reject the false, and all the ordinances  
 ‘ thereof; we are in your kingdom permitted to do nothing, but account-  
 ‘ ed *sedition* if we affirm either the one or the other of the former  
 ‘ points; and therefore, *madam*, you are not so much an adversary to  
 ‘ us poor men, as unto Christ Jesus and the wealth of his kingdom.

“ If we cannot have your favor, but by omitting our duty to God,  
 ‘ we are unworthy of it, and by God’s grace we mean not to purchase it  
 ‘ so dear.



It appears by this petition, as well as by his letter sent to the congregation of *separatists* in *London*, that *Mr. Perry* was a *Brownist*. His book of observations was also seized, out of which were drawn articles of accusation against him. He was indicted upon the statute of 23 *Eliz.* chap. 2d, for *sedition words and rumors uttered against the Queen's*

“ But, *madam*, thus much we must needs say, that in all likelihood, if the days of your sister Queen *Mary*, and her persecution, had continued unto this day, that the church of God in *England* had been far more flourishing than at this day it is: For then, *madam*, the church of God within this land, and elsewhere, being strangers, enjoyed the ordinances of God's holy word, as far as then they saw.

“ But since *your majesty* came unto your crown, we have had whole Christ Jesus, God and man; but we must serve him only in heart.

“ And if those days had continued to this time, and those lights risen therein, which by the mercy of God have since shined in *England*, it is not to be doubted but the church of *England*, even in *England*, had far surpassed all the reformed churches in the world.

“ Then, *madam*, any of our brethren durst not have been seen within the tents of antichrist; now they are ready to defend them to be the Lord's, and that he has no other tabernacle upon earth but them. Our brethren then durst not temporize in the cause of God, because the Lord ruled himself in his church, by his own laws, in a good measure; but now, behold! they may do what they will, for any sword that the church has to draw against them, if they contain themselves within your laws.

“ This peace, under these conditions, we cannot enjoy; and therefore, for any thing I can see, Queen *Mary's* days will be set up again, or we must needs temporize. The whole truth we must not speak; the whole truth we must not profess. Your state must have a stroke above the truth of God.

“ Now, *madam*, your majesty may consider what good the church of God hath taken at your hands, even outward peace with the absence of Jesus Christ in his ordinance; otherwise as great troubles are likely to come as ever were in the days of your sister.

“ As for the council and clergy, if we bring any such suit unto them, we have no other answer but that which *Pharaoh* gives to the Lord's messengers, touching the state of the church under his government.

“ For when any are called for this cause before your council, or the judges of the land, they must take this for granted, once for all, that the uprightness of their cause will profit them nothing, if the law of the land be against them; for your council and judges have so well profited in religion, that they will not stick to say, that they come not to consult whether the matter be with or against the word or not, but their purpose is to take the penalty of the transgressions against your laws.

“ If your council were wise, they would not kindle your wrath against us; but, *madam*, if you give ear to their words, no marvel though you have no better counsellors.”



*most excellent majesty, tending to the stirring up of rebellion among her subjects ; and was convicted of felony, May 21, in the King's-bench, before the lord chief justice Popham. He received sentence of death May 25, and was executed on the 29th of the same month. It was designed to indict him for the books published in his name ; but by the advice of counsel, Mr. Penry drew up a paper, entitled, Mr. Penry's declaration, May 16, 1593, That he is not in danger of the law for the books published in his name. Here he observes, that the statute was not intended against such as wrote only against the hierarchy of the church ; for then it must condemn many of the most learned protestants both at home and abroad ; but relates to such as defame her majesty's royal person : whereas he had always written most dutifully of her person and government, having never encouraged sedition, or insurrection against her majesty, but the contrary ; nor had he ever been at any assembly or conventicle, where any, under or above the number of twelve, were assembled with force of arms, or otherwise, to alter any thing established by law : nor was it his opinion that private persons should of their own authority, attempt any such thing ; for he had always written and spoke to the contrary. But however, if all this had been true, he ought to have been accused within one month of the crime, upon the oath of two witnesses, and have been indicted within one year ; otherwise the statute itself clears him in express words.*

The court, apprehending this declaration might occasion an argument at law, set aside his printed books, and convicted him upon the *petition and private observations* above-mentioned, which was still harder, as he represented it himself in the following letter to the lord treasurer, with a protestation inclosed, immediately after his condemnation.—  
“ Vouchsafe, I beseech your lordship (right honorable) to  
‘ read the inclosed writing. My days, I see, are drawing  
‘ to an end, and I thank God an undeserved end, except  
‘ the Lord stir up your *honor* to acquaint her majesty with  
‘ my guiltless state.

“ The cause is most lamentable, *That the private obser-*

\* Life of Whitgift, p. 412.

‘ ever an end of my days comes (as I look not to live this  
 ‘ week to an end) I shall die Queen *Elizabeth*’s most faith-  
 ‘ ful subject, even in the consciences of mine enemies, if  
 ‘ they will be beholders thereof.\*

‘ I never took myself for a rebuker, much less for a re-  
 ‘ former of states and kingdoms ; far was that from me ; yet  
 ‘ in the discharge of my conscience all the world must bear  
 ‘ with me, if I prefer my testimony to the truth of Jesus  
 ‘ Christ before the favor of any creature. An enemy to  
 ‘ good order and policy either in the church or common-  
 ‘ wealth was I never. I never did any thing in this cause  
 ‘ (Lord ! thou art witness) for contention, vain-glory, or to  
 ‘ draw disciples after me.—Great things in this life I nev-  
 ‘ er sought for ; sufficiency I have had with great outward  
 ‘ trouble ; but most content I was with my lot ; and content  
 ‘ I am and shall be with my untimely death, though I leave  
 ‘ behind me a friendless widow and four infants, the eldest  
 ‘ of which is not above four years old. I do from my  
 ‘ heart forgive all that seek my life ; and if my death can  
 ‘ procure any quietness to the church of God or the state, I  
 ‘ shall rejoice. May my prince have many such subjects,  
 ‘ but may none of them meet with such a reward ! My  
 ‘ earnest request is, that her majesty may be acquainted  
 ‘ with these things before my death, or at least after my  
 ‘ departure.

“ Subscribed with the heart and hand that never devised,  
 ‘ or wrote any thing to the discredit or defamation of my  
 ‘ sovereign Queen *Elizabeth* : I take it on my death as I  
 ‘ hope to have a life after this, by me

“ *John Penry.*”

It was never known before this time, that a minister and a scholar was condemned to death for private papers found in his study ; nor do I remember more than once since that time, in whose case it was given for law, that *scribere est agere*, that to write has been construed an overt act ; but *Penry* must die right or wrong : the *archbishop* was the first man who signed the warrant for his execution, and after him *Puckering* and *Popham*. The warrant was sent im-

\* Life of Whitgift, in Rec. p. 176.

mediately to the sheriff, who the very same day erected a gallows at *St. Thomas Waterings*; and while the prisoner was at dinner sent his officers to bid him make ready, for he must die that afternoon; accordingly he was carried in a cart to the place of execution; when he came thither the sheriff would not suffer him to speak to the people, nor make any profession of his faith towards God, or his loyalty to the Queen, but ordered him to be turned off in a hurry about five of the clock in the evening, May 29th, 1593, in the 34th year of his age.

The court being struck with this behavior of the *Brownists* began to be ashamed of hanging men for sedition against the state, who died with such strong professions of loyalty to the Queen and government, and therefore could suffer only for the cause of religion. This raised an odium against the bishops and the *high commissioners*, who, all men knew, were at the bottom of these proceedings. It is said the Queen herself was displeased with them when she heard of the devotion and loyalty of the sufferers. It was therefore resolved to proceed for the future on the late statute of the 31st *Eliz.* to retain the *Queen's subjects in their obedience*; and instead of putting the *Brownists* to death, to send them into banishment. Upon this statute, Mr. *Johnston* pastor of the *Brownist* church was convicted, and all the goals were cleared for the present; though the commissioners took care within the compass of another year to fill them again.

The papists were distressed by this statute, and that of 23 *Eliz.* as much as the *Brownists*, though they met with much more favor from the ecclesiastical courts; the Queen either loved or feared them, and would often say, she would never ransack their consciences if they would be quiet; but they were always libelling her majesty, and in continual plots against her government. While the Queen of Scots was alive, they supported her pretensions to the crown, and after her death they maintained in print the title of the *Infanta of Spain*: they were concerned with the *Spaniards* in the invasion of 1588, which obliged the Queen to confine some of their chiefs in *Wisbech Castle*, and other places of safety, but she was tender of their lives. In the

first eleven years of her reign, not one *Roman* catholic was prosecuted capitally for religion; in the next ten years, when the pope had excommunicated the Queen and the whole kingdom, and there had been dangerous rebellions in the north, there were only twelve priests executed, and most of them for matters against the state. In the ten following years, when swarms of priests and jesuits came over from foreign seminaries, to invite the catholics to join with the *Spaniards*, the laws were girt closer upon them, fifty priests being executed, and fifty-five banished; but as soon as the danger was over, the laws were relaxed, and, by reason of the ignorance and laziness of the beneficed clergy, the missionaries gained over such numbers of proselytes in the latter end of this reign, as endangered the whole government and reformation in the beginning of the next.

The last and finishing hand was put to the presbyterian discipline in *Scotland* this year, [1544.] That kingdom had been governed by different factions during the minority of King *James*, which prevented a full settlement of religion. The *general assembly* in the year 1566, had approved of the *Geneva* discipline; but the parliament did not confirm the votes of the assembly, nor formally deprive the bishops of their power, though all church affairs from that time were managed by *presbyteries* and *general assemblies*. In the year 1574, they voted the bishops to be only pastors of one parish; and to shew their power, they deposed the bishop of *Dunkeld*, and deposed the bishop of *Glasgow*. In the year 1577, they ordained that all bishops be called by their *own names*; and the next year voted the very name of a *bishop* a grievance. In the year 1580, the general assembly with one voice declared diocesan episcopacy to be unscriptural and unlawful. The same year King *James* with his family, and the whole nation, subscribed a confession of faith, with a solemn league and covenant annexed, obliging themselves to maintain and defend the protestant doctrine and the presbyterian government. After this in the year, 1584, the *bishops* were restored by parliament to some parts of their ancient dignity;\*

\* Heyl. Hist. Presb. p. 231.

‘ be duly preached, and the sacraments rightly adminis-  
 ‘ tered, and discipline entertained; they are to cause the or-  
 ‘ dinances made by the provincial, national and general as-  
 ‘ semblies to be put in execution; to make or abolish con-  
 ‘ stitutions which concern *decent order* in their kirks, pro-  
 ‘ vided they alter no rules made by the superior assemblies,  
 ‘ and communicate their constitutions to the provincial as-  
 ‘ sembly; they have power to excommunicate the obstinate  
 ‘ after due process. Concerning particular kirks, if they  
 ‘ are lawfully ruled by sufficient ministers and session, they  
 ‘ have power and jurisdiction in their own congregation in  
 ‘ matters ecclesiastical.”

This act, for the greater solemnity, was confirmed again in the year 1593, and again this present year 1594, so that from this time, to the year 1612, presbytery was undoubtedly the *legal* establishment of the kirk of *Scotland*, as it had been in *fact* ever since the reformation.

To return to *England*. Several champions appeared about this time for the cause of episcopacy, as Dr. *Bilson*, *Bancroft*, *Bridges*, *Cosins*, *Soam*, and Dr. *Adrian Saravia*, a *Spaniard*, but beneficed in the church of *England*: This last was answered by *Beza*; *Bridges* was answered by *Fenner*, *Cosins* by *Morrice*, and *Bilson* by *Bradshaw*, though the press was shut against the puritans.

But the most celebrated performance, and of greatest note, was Mr. *Hooker's ecclesiastical polity*, in eight books; the four first of which were published this year; the fifth in the year 1597, and the three last not till many years after his death, for which reason some have suspected them to be interpolated, though they were deposited in the hands of archbishop *Abbot*, from whose copy they were printed, about the beginning of the civil wars.\* This is esteemed the most learned defence of the church of *England*, wherein all that would be acquainted with its constitution (says a learned prelate) may see upon what foundation it is built. Mr. *Hooker* began his work while *master of the Temple*, but meeting with some trouble, and many interruptions in that place, the archbishop, at his request, removed him to *Boscum* in the diocese of *Salisbury*, and gave him a *minor*

\* Life of Whitgift, p. 421.

men allow, that human societies may form themselves after any model, and make what laws they please for their well-being; and that the christian church has some things in common with all *societies* as such, as the appointing time and place, and the order of public worship, &c. but it must be remembered, that the christian church is not a mere *voluntary society*, but a community formed and constituted by Christ the *sole king and law-giver of it*, who has made sufficient provision for its *well-being* to the end of the world. It does not appear in the New Testament, that the church is empowered to mend or alter the constitution of Christ, by creating new officers, or making new laws, though the christian world has ventured upon it. Christ gave his church *prophets, evangelists, pastors, and teachers*, for the perfecting the saints, and edifying his body; but the successors of the apostles in the government of the church, apprehending these not sufficient, have added *patriarchs, cardinals, deans, archdeacons, canons*, and other *officials*. The church is represented in scripture as a *spiritual body*; her ordinances, privileges, and censures, being purely such; but later ages have wrought the civil powers into her constitution, and kept men within her pale, by all the terrors of this world, as *fines, imprisonments, banishments, fire and sword*. It is the peculiar excellence of the gospel worship to be *plain and simple*, free from the yoke of *jewish* ceremonies; but the antichristian powers, thinking this a defect, have loaded it with numberless ceremonies of their own invention; and though there are laws in scripture sufficient for the direction of the church, as constituted by Christ and his apostles, they have thought fit to add so many volumes of ecclesiastical laws, canons, and injunctions, as have confounded, if not subverted, the laws of Christ.

Whereas if men considered the church as a *spiritual body*, constituted by Christ its sole law-giver for *spiritual purposes*, they would then see that it had no concern with their civil rights, properties and estates, nor any power to force men to be of its communion, by the pains and penalties of this world. The laws of the New Testament would appear sufficient for the well-being of such a society; and in cases where there are no particular rules and injunctions,



This year died Dr. *John Aylmer*, bishop of *London*, whose character has been sufficiently drawn in this history; he was born in *Norfolk*, educated in *Cambridge*, and in Queen *Mary's* reign an exile for religion; he was such a little man, that *Fuller*\* says, when the searchers were clearing the ship in which he made his escape, the merchant put him into a great wine butt that had a partition in the middle, so that Mr. *Aylmer* sat inclosed in the hinder part, while the searchers drank of the wine which they saw drawn out of the head on the other part; he was of an active busy spirit, quick in his language, and, after his advancement, of a stout and imperious behavior: in his younger days he was inclined to *puritanism*, but when he was made a bishop he became a resolute champion of the hierarchy, and a bitter persecutor of his former friends. In his latter days he was very covetous, and a little too lax in his morals: He usually played at bowls on *Sundays* in the afternoons; and used such language at his game, as justly exposed his character to reproach; but with all these blemishes, the writer of his life (Mr. *Strype*) will leave him a learned, pious, and humble bishop. He died at *Fulham*, June 3, 1594, in the 74th year of his age. ||

our religious establishment, till it be proved that its ceremonies and laws were fixed by the church. In whatever sense the word church is used; this is not the fact. Whether you understand by it, "a congregation of faithful men," or "all ecclesiastical persons," or "an order of men who are set apart by christianity, and dedicated to this very purpose of public instruction"—in neither sense were the forms and opinions of our established religion settled by the church. They originated with royal pleasure: they have changed as the will of our princes hath changed; they have been settled by acts of parliaments, formed illegally, corrupted by pensions, and overawed by prerogative, and they constitute part of the statute law of the land.

See my Letters to the Rev. Dr. Sturges. 1782, p. 15—28. Ed.

\* Fuller's Worthies, b. ii. p. 248.

|| This prelate had been preceptor to Lady *Jane Grey*. During his residence in *Switzerland*, he assisted *John Fox*, in translating his *Martyrology* into Latin. It was usual with him, when he observed his audience to be inattentive, to take an Hebrew bible out of his pocket and read them a few verses, and then resume his discourse. It is related, as an instance of his courage, that he had a tooth drawn to encourage the Queen to submit to the like operation. But it is more to the honor of his judgment and patriotism, that notwithstanding his



*Aylmer* was succeeded by Dr. *Fletcher* bishop of *Worcester*, who in his primary visitation gave out twenty-seven articles of enquiry to the church-wardens concerning their *preachers*: as, whether they prayed for the Queen as supreme head over all persons and causes within her dominions, ecclesiastical and temporal?—Whether they were learned—or frequented conventicles—or taught innovations—or commended the new discipline—or spoke in derogation of any part of the *common prayer*—or did not administer the sacrament in their own persons at certain times of the year? &c. By these, and such-like enquiries, the prisons which had been lately cleared, were filled again; for by an account sent to the Queen from the ecclesiastical commissioners towards the close of this year, it appears that in the *Marshalsea*, *Newgate*, the *Gate-House*, *Bridewell*, the *Fleet*, the *Compters*, the *White-Lion*, and the *King's-Bench*, there were eighty-nine prisoners for religion; some popish recusants, and the rest protestant non-conformists; of whom twenty-four had been committed by the ecclesiastical commission, and the rest by the council and the bishops, courts. But his *lordship's* proceedings were quickly interrupted, by his falling under her majesty's displeasure a few months after his translation, for marrying a second wife, which the Queen looked upon as indecent in an elderly clergyman; for this she banished him the court, and commanded the archbishop to suspend him from his bishopric; but after six months, her majesty being a little pacified, ordered his suspension to be taken off, though she would never admit him into her presence, which had such an influence upon his great spirit, as was thought to hasten his death, which happened the next year, as he was sitting in his chair smoaking a pipe of tobacco. The

rigor and cruelty in ecclesiastical matters, he had avowed just sentiments concerning the constitution of the *English* government, and the power of parliaments: of whom he said, that “if they used their privileges the King can do nothing without them: If he do, it is his fault in usurping it, and their folly in permitting it. Wherefore, in my judgment, those that in King *Henry's* days would not grant him, that proclamation should have the force of a statute, were good fathers of the country and worthy commendation in defending their liberty.”

Strype as quoted in *British Biogr.* vol. iii. p. 240, 241.  
and *Granger's Biog. Hist.* vol. i. p. 208-9. Ed.

year following he was succeeded by Dr. *Bancroft*, the great adversary of the puritans.

These violent proceedings of the bishops drove great numbers of the *Brownists* into *Holland*, where their leaders Mr. *Johnson*, Mr. *Smith*, Mr. *Ainsworth*, Mr. *Robinson*, Mr. *Jacob*, and others were gone before-hand, and with the leave of the states were erecting churches after their own model at *Amsterdam*, *Arnheim*, *Middleburgh*, *Leyden*, and other places. The church at *Amsterdam* had like to have been torn in pieces at first by intestine divisions, but afterwards flourished under a succession of pastors for above a hundred years. Mr. *Robinson*, pastor of the church at *Leyden*, first struck out the *congregational* or *independent* form of church government, and at length part of this church, transplanting themselves into *America*, laid the foundation of the noble colony of *New-England*, as will be seen hereafter.

Hitherto the controversy between the church and puritans had been chiefly about *habits* and *ceremonies*, and *church-discipline*, but now it began to open upon points of doctrine; for this year Dr. *Bound* published his treatise of *the sabbath*, wherein he maintains the morality of a seventh part of time for the worship of God; that christians are bound to rest on the *Lord's day* as much as the *Jews* on the *Mosaical* sabbath, the commandment of *rest* being moral and perpetual; that therefore it was not lawful to follow our studies or worldly business on that day; nor to use such recreations and pleasures as were lawful on other days, as *shooting*, *fencing* and *bowling*, &c. This book had a wonderful spread among the people, and wrought a mighty reformation; so that the *Lord's day* which used to be profaned by *interludes*, *may-games*, *morrice-dances*, and other *sports* and *recreations*, began to be kept more precisely, especially in corporations. All the *puritans* fell in with this doctrine, and distinguished themselves by spending that part of sacred time in public, family, and private acts of devotion.\* But the governing clergy exclaimed against it, as a restraint of christian liberty, as putting an unequal lustre on the *Sunday*, and tending to eclipse the authority of

\* Fuller, b. ix. p. 227.

the church in appointing *other festivals*. Mr. Rogers, author of a commentary on the thirty nine articles, writes in his preface, *That it was the comfort of his soul and would be to his dying day, that he had been the man, and the means that the sabbatarian errors were brought to the light and knowledge of the state*. But I should have thought this clergyman might have had as much comfort upon a dying bed, if he had spent his zeal in recommending the religious observation of that *sacred day*. Dr. Bound might carry his doctrine too high if he advanced it to a level with the *Jesuit* rigors; but it was certainly unworthy the character of *divines* to encourage men in *shooting, fencing, and other diversions on the Lord's day*, which they are forward enough to give way to, without the countenance and example of their *spiritual guides*. Archbishop Whitgift called in all the copies of Dr. Bound's book by his letters and officers at synods and visitations, and forbade it to be reprinted; and the lord chief justice Popham did the same; both of them declaring, that the *sabbath doctrine* agreed neither with the doctrine of our church, nor with the laws and orders of this kingdom;\* that it disturbed the peace of the commonwealth and church, and tended to *schism* in the one, and *sedition* in the other; but notwithstanding all this caution, the book was read privately more than ever. "The more liberty people were offered (says Mr. Fuller) the less they used, refusing to take the freedom authority tendered them, as being jealous of a design to blow up their civil liberties." The archbishop's head was no sooner laid, but Dr. Bound prepared his book for the press a second time, and published it with large additions in 1606; and such was its reputation, that scarce any comment or catechism was published by the stricter divines for many years, in which the *morality of the sabbath* was not strongly recommended and urged: but this controversy will return again in the next reign.

All the protestant divines in the church, whether puritans or others, seemed of one mind hitherto about the *doctrines of faith*, but now there arose a party which were first for softening, and then for overthrowing the received opinions

\* Life of Whitgift, p. 531.

about *predestination, perseverance, freewill, effectual grace, and the extent of our Saviour's redemption*. The articles of the church of *England* were thought by all men hitherto to favor the explication of *Calvin*; but these divines would make them stand neuter, and leave a latitude for the *subscriber* to take either side of the question. All the puritans to a man maintained the articles of the church to be calvinistical, and inconsistent with any other interpretation, and so did far the greatest number of the conforming clergy; but as the new explications of *Arminius* grew into repute, the Calvinists were reckoned old-fashioned divines,† and at length branded with the character of DOCTRINAL PURITANS.

The debate began in the university of *Cambridge*, where one Mr. *Barret*, fellow of *Gonville* and *Caius* college, in his sermon *ad clerum*, declared himself against *Calvin's* doctrine about *predestination and falling from grace*; reflecting with some sharpness upon that *great divine*, and advising his hearers not to read him. For this he was summoned before the vice-chancellor and heads of colleges, and obliged to retract in *St. Mary's* church, according to a form prescribed by his superiors; which he read after a manner that shewed he did it only to save his place in the university. This was so offensive to the scholars, that forty or fifty graduates of the several colleges signed a petition, dated May 26, 1595, desiring some further course might be taken with him, that the great names which he had reproached, as *P. Martyr, Calvin, Beza, Zunchius, &c.* might receive some reparation.† Both parties appealed to the archbishop, who blamed the university for their too hasty proceedings, and seemed to take part with *Barret*; but the heads of colleges in a second letter vindicated their proceedings, desiring his *grace* not to encourage such a bold, corrupt, and unlearned young fellow, and insisted on the rights and prerogatives of the university. At length Mr. *Barret* was sent for to *Lambeth*, and having been examined before the archbishop and some other divines, they agreed that he had maintained some errors, and enjoined him in an humble manner to confess his ignorance and mis-

† While they in return looked on the others as little better than Novellists. Warner. Ed. † Life of Whitgift, p. 437.

take, and not to teach the like doctrines for the future ; but he chose rather to quit the university.\* 'This *Barret* was a conceited youth, who did not treat his superiors with decency ; in one of his letters he calls the grave and learned Mr. *Perkins*, *homuncio quidam*, a little contemptible fellow : but at last he turned papist. The fire was no sooner kindled, than it was observed that *Barret* and his friends were countenanced by the high conformists and *Roman* catholics, and that his adversaries took part with the *puritans*, which was like to produce a new division in the church.†

To put an end to these disputes, the heads of the university sent Dr. *Whitaker* and Dr. *Tyndal* to *Lambeth*, to consult with the archbishop, and some other learned divines, upon these points ; who at length, November 20, concluded upon the following nine propositions, commonly called the *Lambeth articles*, which the scholars in the university were strictly enjoined to conform their judgments unto, and not to vary from. The articles were as follow :

“That God from eternity has predestinated some persons to life, and reprobated others to death :—The moving or efficient cause of predestination to life, is not foreseen, faith or good works, or any other commendable quality in the persons predestinated, but the good will and pleasure of God :—The number of the predestinate is fixed, and cannot be lessened or increased :—They who are not predestinated to salvation, shall be necessarily condemned for their sins :—A true, lively, and justifying faith, and the sanctifying influence of the spirit, is not extinguished, nor does it fail, or go off either finally or totally :—A justified person has a full assurance and certainty of the remission of his sins, and his everlasting salvation by Christ :—Saving grace is not communicated to all men ; neither have all men such a measure of divine assistance, that they may be saved if they will :—No person can come to Christ unless it be given him, and unless the Father draw him ; and all men are not drawn by the Father that they may come to Christ :—It is not in every one's will and power to be saved.”

These high propositions were drawn up, and consented

\*Heyl. Hist. Pr. p. 343. †Hickman's quinq. Hist. against Heyl. p. 210.

to by archbishop *Whitgift*, Dr. *Fletcher* bishop of *London*, Dr. *Vaughan* elect of *Bangor*, and some others ; they were sent to Dr. *Hutton* archbishop of *York*, and Dr. *Young* of *Rochester*, who subscribed them only wishing that the word [*necessarily*] in the fourth article, and those words in the seventh article [*if they will*] might be omitted. The archbishop in his letter which he sent to the university with the *articles*, say they are to look upon them not as new laws, and decrees, but only as an explication of certain points which they apprehend to be true, and *corresponding to the doctrine professed in the church of England, and already established by the laws of the land*. But forasmuch as they had not the Queen's sanction, he desires they may not become a *public act*, but used privately and with discretion.\* He adds, that her majesty was fully persuaded of the truth of them ; which is strange, when she commanded Sir *Robert Cecil* to signify to the archbishop by letter, “ That she mis-  
‘ liked much that any allowance had been given by his *grace*  
‘ and his brethren for any such points *to be disputed*, being  
‘ a matter tender and dangerous to weak, ignorant minds :  
‘ And thereupon commanded him to suspend the urging  
‘ them publicly, or suffering them to be debated in the  
‘ pulpit.”

The Queen's design was to stifle the controversy in its birth ; for if she was dissatisfied with the archbishop's private determinations, she was downright angry with Dr. *Baro* a *Frenchman*, and one of the divinity professors at *Cambridge*, for continuing the debate. She said, that being an *alien*, and humanely harbored and infranchised both himself and family, he ought to have carried himself more quietly and peaceably. His case was this ; in his sermon before the university preached Jan. 12, he asserted, “ That  
‘ God created all men according to his own likeness in  
‘ *Adam*, and consequently to eternal life, from which he re-  
‘ jects no man but on the account of his sins :—That Christ  
‘ died for all mankind, and was a propitiation for the sins  
‘ of the whole world, original and actual ; the remedy pro-  
‘ vided by him being as extensive as the ruins of the fall :  
‘ That the promises of eternal life made to us in Christ, are  
‘ to be generally and universally taken and understood, be-

\* Life of Whitgift, p. 462-3.



‘ing made as much to *Judas* as to *Peter*.” For these propositions he was summoned before the vice-chancellor, and heads of colleges, who examined him by several interrogatories and commanded him peremptorily to abstain from those controversies in his lectures and sermons for the future.

They acquainted secretary *Cecil* by letter with their proceedings, in which they call all doctrines *popish*, and say, that for fourteen or fifteen years he has taught in his lectures, and preached in his sermons, divers points of doctrine contrary to those which have been taught and read ever since her majesty’s reign, and agreeable to the errors of popery, by which means they fear the whole body of that religion will break in upon them; they therefore pray his lordship’s assistance for the suppressing them. *Camb.* March 8th, 1595.\*

On the other hand *Baro* wrote to the archbishop to keep him in his place, promising obedience to his *grace*’s commands, and to keep the peace of the university by dropping the controversy in silence.† He also wrote to secretary *Cecil* to put a stop to the proceedings of the vice-chancellor, which he together with the archbishop accomplished; but the university not being satisfied with him, he was obliged next year to quit his professorship and retire to *London*, where he died two or three years after, having been *Lady Margaret*’s professor at *Cambridge* about 25 years.‡ He left a large posterity behind him, and was buried in *St. Olave’s Heart-street*, his pall being supported by six doctors

\* Signed by Roger Goad, *pro-can.*

R. Some,  
Tho. Legge,  
John Jegon,  
Tho. Nevyle.

Tho. Preston,  
Humph. Tindal,  
James Montague,  
Edm. Barrel,  
Lawr. Chadderton.

† Strype’s Ann. vol. ult. p. 230.

‡ “Hence,” remarks an able writer, “it appears what little latitude was then allowed to the freedom of thinking and debate, on subjects the most innocent, and with regard to doctrines the truth of which is now generally maintained by the clergy, and especially by those of them who stand the highest in dignity, reputation and learning. We must be sensible how narrow was the spirit, and how confined the true theological knowledge of the times, when the gloomy dogmas of calvinism were maintained with such pertinacity by the governors of the church, and to call them in question was looked upon as a crime.

.History of Knowledge in the New Annual Register for 1789, p. 9.



of divinity, by order from the bishop of *London*. The chancellor in his letter to the university was very angry, because they sifted *Baro* with interrogatories, “as if, says he, ‘he was a thief; this seems done of stomach among you.’” How sad then was the case of the puritans!

The divines of *Oxford*, and indeed all the first reformers, were in the same sentiments with those of *Cambridge* about the disputed points; *Calvin’s institutions* being read publicly in the schools by appointment of the convocation, though perhaps they might not go the full length of the *Lambeth* articles, nor express themselves with the exactness of those who lived afterwards, when those doctrines were publicly opposed by *Arminius* and his followers.

The article of *our Savior’s local descent into hell* began to be questioned at this time. It had been the received doctrine of the church of *England*, that the soul of Christ, being separated from his body, descended locally into hell, that he might there triumph over satan, as before he had over death and sin.\* But the learned Mr. *Hugh Broughton*, the *rabbi* of his age, whom King *James* would have courted into *Scotland*, convinced the world that the word *hades*, used by the *Greek* fathers for the place into which Christ went after his crucifixion, did not mean *hell*, or the place of the damned, but only the state of the dead, or the invisible world. It was further debated, whether Christ underwent in his soul the wrath of God, and the pains of hell, and finished all his sufferings upon the cross before he died.† This was *Calvin’s* sentiment, and with him agreed all the puritan divines, who preached it in their sermons, and inserted it in their catechisms. On the other hand, bishop *Bilson* in his sermons at *Paul’s Cross* maintained, that *no text of scripture asserted the death of Christ’s soul, or the pains of the damned to be requisite in the person of Christ before he could be our ransom, and the Savior of the world.*‡ But still he maintained the local descent of Christ into hell, or the territory of the damned; and that by the course of the creed the article must refer not to Christ

\* Life of Whitgift, p. 473.

Heyl. Hist. Presb. p. 340.

† Life of Whitgift, p. 482.

‡ Heyl. Hist. Presb. p. 350.

he was importuned by one of the ministers, and several inhabitants of the town of *Nottingham*, to visit one *William Somers*, a boy that had such convulsive agonies, as were thought to be preternatural, insomuch that when *Mr. Darrel* had seen them, he concluded with the *rest* of the spectators that he was *possessed*, and advised his friends to desire the help of godly and learned ministers to endeavor his recovery, but excused himself from being concerned, lest if the devil should be dispossessed, the common people should attribute to him some special gift of *casting out devils*; but upon a second request from the mayor of *Nottingham*, he agreed with *Mr. Aldridge* and two other ministers, with about one hundred and fifty neighboring christians, to set apart a day for fasting and prayer, to intreat the Lord to cast out *Satan*, and deliver the young man from his torments; and after some time the Lord they say was intreated, and they blessed God for the same; this was November 1597. A few days after, the *mayor* and some of the aldermen began to suspect that *Somers* was a cheat, and to make him confess, they took him from his parents, and committed him to the custody of two men, who with threatnings prevailed with him to acknowledge, that he had dissembled and counterfeited all he did. Upon this he was carried before the *commission*, where at first he owned himself a counterfeit, and then presently denied it again; but being thoroughly frightened, he fell into fits before the commissioners, which put an end to his examination for the present. After some time, being still in custody, he returned to his *confessing*, and charged *Mr. Darrel* with training him up in the art for four years. Upon this *Mr. Darrel* was summoned before the commissioners, and brought witnesses with him to prove, that *Somers* had declared in a very solemn manner that he had not dissembled; upon which he was dismissed, and the *commission* dissolved; but the affair making a great noise in the country, *Mr. Darrel* was sent for to *Lambeth*, and after a long hearing before the archbishop, and others of the high commission, he was deposed from his ministry, and committed close prisoner to the *Gate-house*, for being accessory to a vile imposture, where he continued many years.

While Mr. *Darrel* was in the prison, he wrote an apology, to shew that *people in these latter days may be possessed with devils ; and that by prayer and fasting the unclean spirit may be cast out.* In the end of which he makes this protestation ; “ If what I am accused of be true, (viz. ‘ that I have been accessory to a vile imposture, with a design to impose on mankind) let me be registered to my ‘ perpetual infamy, not only for a notorious deceiver, but ‘ such an hypocrite as never trod on the earth before ; yea, ‘ Lord ! for to thee I convert my speech, who knowest all ‘ things, if I have confederated more or less with *Somers*, ‘ *Darling*, or any of the rest ; if ever I set eye on them before they were *possessed*, then let me not only be made a ‘ laughing-stock, and a *by-word* to all men, but rase my ‘ name also out of the book of life, and let me have my ‘ portion with hypocrites.”

It has been observed, that the bishops had now wisely transferred the prosecution of the *puritans* from themselves to the temporal courts, so that, instead of being summoned before the *high commission*, they were indicted at the *assizes*, and tried at common law ; this being thought more adviseable, to take off the odium from the church. Judge *Anderson* discovered his zeal against them this summer in an extraordinary manner, for in his charge to the jury at *Lincoln* he told them, that the country was infested with *Brownists*, with *disciplinarians* and *erectors* of *presbyteries* ; which he spoke with so much wrath, with so many oaths, and such reviling language, as offended the gentlemen upon the bench. He called the preachers *knaves*, saying, that they would start up into the pulpit and speak against every body.† He was for extending the statute of recusancy to such who went at any time to hear sermons from their own parish churches, though they usually attended in their places, and heard divine service dutifully.—When lord *Clinton*, and the deputy lieutenants, and justices of those parts, obtained the bishop’s allowance for a day of fasting and prayer at *Lowth*, upon an extraordinary occasion, his lordship urged the jury to find a bill against them, upon the statute of conventicles.

† *Strype’s Ann.* vol. ult. p. 264.

Mr. *Allen* minister of that parish, being indicted by means of a revengeful justice of peace, for not reading all the prayers at once, (he using sometimes to omit part of them for the sermon) was obliged to hold up his hand at the bar, when judge *Anderson* standing up, spoke to him with a fierce countenance; and having insinuated some grievous faults against the man (though he named none) called him oftentimes *knave*, *rebellious knave*, with more such opprobrious language, though it was known all over the country that Mr. *Allen* was a good preacher; that he had subscribed; was esteemed by the bishop; was conformable in his affections; and behaved upon this occasion with all humility and submission. But his lordship had said in his charge, that he would hunt all the *puritans* out of his circuit. One thing was remarkable in Mr. *Allen's* arraignment, that when upon some point wherein *judgment in divinity* was required, Mr. *Allen* referred himself to the bishop (his ordinary then sitting upon the bench) the judge took him up with marvellous indignation, and said, *he was both his ordinary and bishop in that place.*

Thus the puritan clergy were put upon a level with rogues and felons, and made to hold up their hands at the bar among the vilest criminals; there was hardly an *assize* in any county in *England*, but one or more ministers, through the resentments of some of their parishioners, appeared in this condition, to the disgrace of their order, and the loss of their reputation and usefulness; besides being exposed to the insults of the rude multitude. “But I would  
' to God (says my author) that they which judge in reli-  
' gious causes, though in the name of civil affairs, would  
' either get some more knowledge in religion and God's  
' word than my lord *Anderson* hath, or call in the assist-  
' ance of those that have.”\*

Archbishop *Whitgift* was busy this summer about elections for the ensuing parliament, which was to meet Oct. 24, 1597. Mr. *Strype* says, his grace took what care he

\* *Strype's Ann.* vol. ult. p. 267.

These are not the words of Mr. *Strype* himself, as they may appear by the manner of quotation, but are part of a letter “from a person  
' unknown of the clergy to a person of quality” on judge *Anderson's* proceedings. Ed.

could to prevent such as were disaffected to the constitution of the church, that is, all *puritans*, from coming into the house ; but some thought it a little out of character for an archbishop to appear so publicly in the choice of the people's representatives. § The house being thus modelled, did not meddle with the foundations of *discipline*, or *form of public worship* ; but several bills were brought in to regulate abuses in spiritual courts, as against licences to marry without bands, against excessive fees, frivolous citations *ex officio*, and excommunications for little matters, as *two pence* or *three pence*. These and all other bills of this nature were, according to custom, quashed by a message from the Queen, forbidding them to touch her prerogative ; and assuring them, that she would take the aforesaid grievances into her princely consideration. Accordingly her majesty referred these matters to the convocation ; it being her steady maxim, not to proceed in matters of the church by *statutes*, which the parliament alone could repeal, but rather by *canons*, which she could confirm or dispense with at pleasure. The convocation drew up some regulations upon these and other heads, relating to ecclesiastical courts, which the Queen confirmed by her letters patent January 18th, in the 40th year of her reign. They were printed the same year by her authority, and may be seen in bishop *Sparrow's* collection of articles, injunctions, &c.

But still the *ecclesiastical courts* were an insufferable grievance : the oppressions which people underwent from the bottomless deep of the *canon law*, put them upon removing their causes into *Westminster-hall*, by getting *prohibitions* to stay proceedings in the bishops courts, or in the *high commission*. This awakened the archbishop, who, in order to support the *civilians*, drew up certain *queries* to be considered by the lords and judges of the land touching *prohibitions* ; of which this was the principal, “ That seeing ecclesiastical authority is as truly vested in the crown as temporal, whether the Queen's *temporal authority* should any more restrain her *ecclesiastical*, than her *ecclesiastical* should her *temporal* ? And seeing so many, and

§ Life of Whitgift, p. 508.

‘ so great personages with some others, are trusted to do her  
‘ majesty service in her *ecclesiastical commission*, whether it  
‘ be convenient, that an offender, ready to be censured, should  
‘ obtain, and publicly throw into court a *prohibition*, to the de-  
‘ lay of justice, and to the disgrace and disparagement of  
‘ those who serve freely, without all fee therein.” The  
archbishop caused a list to be made of divers cases, wherein  
the *christian court*, as he called it, had been interrupted by  
the *temporal jurisdiction*; and of many causes that had  
been taken out of the hands of the *bishops courts*, the *high  
commission*, and the *court of delegates*; the former author-  
ized by immediate commission from the Queen, and the lat-  
ter by a special commission upon an appeal to her court of  
*Chancery*.\* But notwithstanding all these efforts of *Whit-  
gift* and his successor *Bancroft*, the number of *prohibitions*  
increased every year; the nobility, gentry, and judges, be-  
ing too wise to subject their estates and liberties to a number  
of artful civilians, versed in a *codex* or body of laws, of most  
uncertain authority, and strangers to the common and sta-  
tute laws, without the check of a prohibition; when it was  
notorious, that the *canon law had been always since the re-  
formation controled by the laws and statutes of the realm*.  
Thus the *civilians* sunk in their business under the two  
next archbishops, till LAUD governed the church, who ter-  
rifying the *judges* from granting *prohibitions*, the *Spiritual  
courts*, *Star-chamber*, *Council table*, and *high commission-  
ers* rode triumphant, fining, imprisoning, and banishing men  
at their pleasure, till they became as terrible as the *Span-  
ish inquisition*, and brought upon the nation all the confu-  
sions and desolations of a civil war.

From this time to the Queen’s death, there was a kind of  
cessation of arms between the church and puritans; the  
combatants were out of breath, or willing to wait for better  
times. Some apprehended that the puritans were vanquish-  
ed, and their numbers lessened by the severe execution of  
the penal laws; whereas it will appear, by a *survey* in the  
beginning of the next reign, that the non-conforming clergy  
were about fifteen hundred. But the true reason was this,  
the Queen was advanced in years, and could not live long in

\* Life of Whitgift, p. 537.



a course of nature, and the next heir to the crown being a presbyterian, the bishops were cautious of acting against a party for whom his majesty had declared, not knowing what revenge he might take, when he was fixed on the throne; and the puritans were quiet, in hopes of great matters to be done for them upon the expected change.

Notwithstanding all former repulses from court, the Queen's last parliament, which sat in the year 1601, renewed their attacks upon the ecclesiastical courts; a bill being brought in to examine into bishops leases, and to disable them from taking fines; another against *pluralities* and *non-residents*; and another against *commissaries* and *archdeacons courts*. Multitudes of complaints came to the house against the proceedings of the ordinaries *ex mero officio*, without due presentments preceding, and against the frequent keeping their courts, so that the church-wardens were sometimes cited to two or three spiritual courts at once;\* complaint was made of their charging the country with quarterly bills; of the great number of *apparitors*, and *petty summoners*, who seized upon people for trifling offences; of the admission of curates by *officials* and *commissaries*, without the bishop's knowledge, and without testimonials of their conversation; of scandalous commutations of penance, and divers abuses of the like kind; but the Queen would not suffer the house to debate them, referring them to the archbishop, who wrote to his brethren the bishops, to endeavor as much as possible to reform the above-mentioned grievances, which, says he,† have produced multitudes of complaints in parliament; and had they not been prevented by great circumspection, and promise of careful reformation, there might, perhaps, have ensued the taking away of the whole, or most of those courts. "So prudently diligent was the archbishop (says Mr. *Strype*) to keep up the jurisdiction of the bishops courts, and the wealthy estate of the clergy, by preserving *non-residencies* to them."

There was another bill brought into the house, to punish voluntary absence from church; the forfeiture was to be *twelve pence each Sunday*, to be levied by distress, by a war-

\* Life of Whitgift, p. 546, 547.

† Life of Whitgift, p. 547, 548.



rant from a justice of peace ; but the bill was opposed, because there was a severe law already against recusants, of *twenty pounds per month* ; and because, if this bill should pass, a justice of peace's house would, like a quarter-sessions, be crowded with a multitude of informers : It was likewise against *magna charta*, which entitles every man to be tried by his peers, whereas by this act, two witnesses before a justice of peace were sufficient.\* The bill however was engrossed, and being put to the question, the *Noes* carried it by a single voice ; upon which the *Yeas* said the speaker was with them, which made the number even. The question was then put whether the speaker had a voice, which being carried in the negative, the bill miscarried.

The *convocation* did nothing but give the Queen four subsidies to be collected in four years, and receive an exhortation from the archbishop to observe the canons passed in the last convocation. They met October the 18th, and were dissolved with the parliament December 19th following.

This year [1602] died the rev'd and learned Mr. *Wm. Perkins*, born at *Marston* in *Warwickshire* in the first year of Queen *Elizabeth*, and educated in *Christ's* college, *Cambridge*, of which he was fellow : He was one of the most famous practical writers and preachers of his age ; and being a strict *Calvinist*, he published several treatises in favor of those doctrines, which involved him in a controversy with *Arminius* then professor of divinity at *Leyden*, that continued to his death. He was a puritan non-conformist, and a favorer of the discipline, for which he was once or twice before the *high commission* ; but his peaceable behavior, and great fame in the learned world, procured him a dispensation from the persecutions of his brethren. Mr. *Perkins* was a little man, and wrote with his left hand, being lame of his right. His works, which were printed in three vols. fol. shew him to have been a most pious, holy, and industrious divine, considering he lived only 44 years.†

\* Collier's Eccl. Hist. p. 667.

† Many of his works were translated into *Dutch*, *Spanish*, *French*, and *Italian*, and are still in estimation in *Germany*. Mr. *Orton*, who by his mother's side descended in a direct line from Mr. *Perkins*' elder brother, speaks of him as an excellent writer, clear and judicious ; and re-

To sum up the state of religion throughout this long reign. It is evident that the parliament, the people, and great numbers of the inferior clergy, were for carrying the reformation further than the present establishment. The first bishops came into it with this view; they declared against the *popish habits and ceremonies*, and promised to use all their interest with the Queen for their removal; but how soon they forgot themselves, when they were warm in their *chairs*, the foregoing history has discovered.\* Most of the first reformers were of *Erastian* principles, looking upon the church as a mere creature of the state: They gave up every thing to the crown, and yielded to the supreme magistrate the absolute direction of the consciences, or at least of the religious profession of all his subjects. They acknowledged only two orders of clergy of *divine institution*, viz. *bishops or priests, and deacons*. They admitted the ordinations of foreign churches by mere presbyters, till towards the middle of this reign, when their validity began to be disputed and denied. *Whitgift* was the first who defended the hierarchy, from the practice of the *third, fourth and fifth centuries*, when the *Roman* empire became christian; but *Bancroft* divided off the bishops from the priesthood, and advanced them into a superior order by *divine right*, with the sole power of ordination, and the keys of discipline; so that from his time there were reckoned three orders of clergy in the *English* hierarchy, viz. *bishops, priests, and deacons*. Thus the church advanced in her claims, and removed by degrees to a greater distance from the foreign protestants.

The controversy with the puritans had only a small beginning, viz. *the imposing of the popish habits and a few indifferent ceremonies*; but it opened by degrees into a reformation of *discipline*, which all confessed was wanting; and

commends his works to *all* ministers, especially *young* ones, as affording large materials for composition.

Orton's Letters to a Young Clergyman, p. 39, 40. Ed.

\* Bishop Warburton informs us, from *Selden de Synedriis*, that *Erastus'* famous book *de Excommunicatione* was purchased by *Whitgift* of *Erastus'* widow in *Germany*, and put by him to the press in *London*, under fictitious names of the place and printer.

Supplemental Volume to Warburton's Works, p. 473. Ed.

at last the *doctrinal articles* were debated. The Queen and the later bishops would not part with a *pin* out of the hierarchy, nor leave a latitude in the most trifling ceremonies, but insisted upon an exact uniformity both in doctrine and ceremonies, that all might unite in the public standard. The *puritans*, in their writings and conferences, attempted to shew the defects of the establishment from scripture, and from the earliest ages of the church; and what they suffered for it has been in part related; the *suspensions* and *deprivations* of this long reign amounting to several thousands; but when it appeared that nothing would be abated, and that penal laws were multiplied and rigorously executed, they endeavored to erect a sort of voluntary discipline within the church, for the ease and satisfaction of their own consciences, being unwilling to separate; till at length the violence of persecution drove some of them into the extremes of *brownism*, which divided the *puritans*, and gave rise to a new controversy, concerning the *necessity of a separation from the established church*, of which we shall hear more hereafter; but under all their hardships their loyalty to the Queen was untainted, and their behavior peaceable; they addressed the Queen and parliament, and bishops for relief, at sundry times; and remonstrated against the arbitrary proceedings of the spiritual courts, making use of no other weapons but prayers and tears, attended with scripture and argument.

The chief principles of the *puritans* have been already related: They were no enemies to the name or function of a *bishop*, provided he was no more than *proestost*, or a stated president of the *college of presbyters* in his diocese, and managed the affairs of it with *their* concurrence and assistance. They did not object against *prescribed forms of prayer*, provided a latitude was indulged the minister to alter or vary some expressions; and to make use of a prayer of his own conception before and after sermon: nor had they an aversion to any *decent and distinct habits* for the clergy that were not derived from popery. But upon the whole they were the most resolved protestants in the nation, zealous *Calvinists*, warm and affectionate preachers, and determined enemies to popery, and to every thing that had a tendency towards it.

It is not pretended, that the PURITANS were without their failings; no, they were men of like passions and infirmities with their adversaries; and while they endeavored to avoid one extreme, they might fall into another; their zeal for their *platform of discipline* would, I fear, have betrayed them into the imposition of it upon others, if it had been established by law. Their notions of the civil and religious rights of mankind were narrow and confused, and derived too much from the *theocracy* of the *Jews*, which was now at an end. Their behavior was severe and rigid, far removed from the fashionable freedoms and vices of the age; and possibly they might be too censorious, in not making those distinctions between youth and age, grandeur and mere decency, as the nature and circumstances of things would admit; but with all their faults, they were the most pious and devout people in the land; *men of prayer*, both in secret and public, as well as in their families; their *manner* of devotion was fervent and solemn, depending on the assistance of the divine spirit, not only to teach them *how* to pray, but *what* to pray for as they ought. They had a profound reverence for the *holy name of God*, and were great enemies not only to profane swearing, but to foolish talking and jesting, which are not convenient; they were strict observers of the *christian sabbath* or *Lord's day*, spending the whole of it in acts of public and private devotion and charity. It was the distinguishing mark of a puritan in these times, to see him going to church twice a day with his Bible under his arm: And while others were at *plays* and *interludes*, at *revels*, or *walking in the fields*, or at the *diversions of bowling, fencing, &c.* on the evening of the sabbath, *these* with their families were employed in reading the scriptures, singing psalms, catechising their children, repeating sermons, and prayer: Nor was this only the work of the *Lord's day*, but they had their hours of family devotion on the week days, esteeming it their duty to take care of the *souls* as well as the *bodies* of their servants. They were circumspect as to all the excesses of eating, drinking, apparel, and lawful diversions, being frugal in house-keeping, industrious in their particular callings, honest and exact in their dealings, and solicitous to give to every one his own. These were the

people who were branded with the name of *precisians*, *puritans*, *schismatics*, *enemies to God and their country*, and throughout the course of this reign underwent cruel mockings, bonds, and imprisonment.

Sir *Francis Walsingham* has given a summary account, of the Queen's policy towards them, in a letter to Monsieur *Cretoy*, which I shall transcribe in his own words.\*

“—— I find, says Sir *Francis*, that the Queen's proceedings both against papists and puritans are grounded upon these two principles:—

“The one, that consciences are not to be forced but to be won, and reduced by force of truth, with the aid of time and use of all good means of instruction and persuasion.

“The other, that causes of conscience, when they exceed their bounds, and grow to be matter of *faction*, lose their nature; and that sovereign princes ought distinctly to punish their practices and contempt, though colored with the pretence of conscience and religion.

“According to these principles her majesty behaved towards the papists with great mildness, not liking to make a window in their hearts, except the abundance of them overflowed into overt-acts of disobedience, in impugning her supremacy. When the *pope* excommunicated her, she only defended herself against his bulls; but when she was threatened with an invasion, and the papists were altered from being papists in conscience to being papists in faction, she was then obliged to provide severer laws for the security of her people.

“For the other party which have been offensive to the state, though in another degree, and which call themselves *reformers*, and we commonly call *puritans*, this hath been

\* Mr. *Neal*, in his Review, observes, that Sir *Francis* wrote this letter as *secretary of state* and as the Queen's servant, endeavoring to vindicate her behavior towards non-conformists to a foreign court; he must be allowed therefore to put the most favorable construction on his royal mistress' conduct, and acquit her in the best manner he is able. It also deserves to be remarked, that Sir *Francis*, dying April 1590, did not see the severities of the last thirteen years of Queen *Elizabeth's* reign, which were by much the sharpest and most cruel. *Neal's Review*, 4to edition, p. 875. Ed. † Burnet's Hist. Ref. vol. iii. p. 419.

‘ by the proceeding towards them : A great while, when  
‘ they inveighed against such abuses in the church, as *plu-*  
‘ *ralities, non-residents*, and the like, their zeal was not  
‘ condemned, only their violence was sometimes censured.  
‘ When they refused the use of some *ceremonies* and *rites*  
‘ as superstitious, they were tolerated with much connivance  
‘ and gentleness ; yea, when they called in question the su-  
‘ periority of bishops, and pretended to a *democracy* in the  
‘ church, their propositions were considered, and by con-  
‘ trary writings debated and discussed ; yet all this while it  
‘ was perceived that their course was dangerous and very  
‘ popular as because *papistry* was odious, therefore it was  
‘ ever in their mouths, that they sought to purge the church  
‘ from the reliques of papistry, a thing acceptable to the peo-  
‘ ple, who love ever to run from one extreme to another.

‘ “ Because multitudes of rogues and poverty was an eye-  
‘ sore, and a dislike to every man, therefore they put into  
‘ people’s heads, that if *discipline* were planted, there would  
‘ be no vagabonds, no beggars, a thing very plausible : and  
‘ in like manner they promised the people many of the im-  
‘ possible wonders of their discipline ; besides they opened  
‘ to the people a way to government by their consistories  
‘ and presbyteries, a thing though in consequence no less  
‘ prejudicial to the liberties of private men than to the sov-  
‘ ereignty of princes, yet in first shew very popular ; nev-  
‘ ertheless this, except it were in some few that entered  
‘ into extreme contempt, was borne with, because they pre-  
‘ tended in dutiful manner to make propositions, and to  
‘ leave it to the providence of God and the authority of the  
‘ magistrate.

‘ “ But now of late years, when there issued from them,  
‘ that affirmed *the consent of the magistrate was not to be*  
‘ *attended* ; when under pretence of a confession to avoid  
‘ slander and imputations, they combined themselves by  
‘ *classes* and *subscriptions* ; when they descended into that  
‘ vile and base means of defacing of the church by ridicu-  
‘ lous *pasquils* ; when they began to make many sub-  
‘ jects in doubt to take oaths, which is one of the fun-  
‘ damental parts of justice in this land, and in all pla-  
‘ ces ; when they began both to vaunt of their strength,



‘ and number of their partizans and followers, and to use  
‘ comminations, that their cause would prevail through up-  
‘ roar and violence, then it appeared to be no more zeal,  
‘ no more conscience, but mere faction and division ; and  
‘ therefore, though the state were compelled to hold some-  
‘ what a harder hand to restrain them than before, yet was  
‘ it with as great moderation as the peace of the state or  
‘ church could permit. Thus her majesty has always ob-  
‘ served the two rules before-mentioned, in dealing tender-  
‘ ly with consciences, and yet in discovering faction from  
‘ conscience, and softness from singularity.”

The false colorings of this letter are easily discerned : It admits that the *consciences of men ought not to be forced but when they grow into faction* ; that is, to an inconsistency with the peace and safety of the civil government ; and was there any thing like this in the petitions, addresses, and submissive behavior of the puritans ? But they did *not attend the consent of the magistrate*. Let the reader judge by the foregoing history, whether they did not attend and apply for it several years ; and if, after all, the *consent of the magistrate* must be waited for, before we follow the dictates of our consciences, it is easy to see there would have been no reformation in the protestant world. But the Queen’s worst maxim was, that *while she pretended not to force the consciences of her subjects, she obliged them under the severest penalties to come to church, and make an outward profession of that way of worship which they inwardly disallowed*. This was to establish hypocrisy by a law, and to force men to deal falsely with God, and their own consciences, in matters of the most solemn importance.

Practical religion was all this reign at a very low ebb ; the greatest part of the clergy being barely capable of reading prayers and an homily. In the remoter countries and villages the people were either papists, or no better than heathens. “ If any among the clergy or laity were remarkably pious, strict observers of the sabbath, and declared enemies of prophaneness, and popery, (says Mr. Osburn) they were either real puritans, or branded with that invidious name ; and great numbers of the inferior clergy and people in cities and corporations, were of this number :” The conforming clergy lost ground ; and the order



of bishops, by spending their zeal more about the external forms of worship, than in painful preaching and encouraging practical religion, grew into contempt; popery gained ground in the country, by the diligence of the *missionaries*, and the ignorance and laziness of the established clergy; whilst puritanism prevailed in cities and corporations: so that, as archbishop *Parker* observed, the Queen was the only friend of the church; and supported it by a vigorous execution of the penal laws, and by resolving to admit of no motion for reformation, but what should arise from herself.

Thus things continued to the QUEEN's death: her majesty was grown old and infirm, and under a visible decay of natural spirits, some say for the loss of the Earl of *Essex*, whom she had lately beheaded; but others, from a just indignation to see herself neglected by those who were too ready to worship the rising sun. This threw her into a melancholy, attended with a drowsiness, and heaviness in all her limbs; which was followed with a loss of appetite, and all the marks of an approaching dissolution: Upon this she retired to *Richmond*; and having caused her inauguration ring, which was grown into the flesh, and become painful, to be filed off, she languished till the 24th of March, and then died, in the 70th year of her age, and 45th of her reign.

Queen *Elizabeth* was a great and successful princess at home, and the support of the protestant interest abroad, while it was in its infancy; for without her assistance, neither the *Hugonots* in *France* nor the *Dutch-reformers* could have stood their ground: she assisted the protestants of *Scotland* against their popish Queen, and the princes of *Germany* against the Emperor; whilst at the same time she demanded an absolute submission from her own subjects; and would not tolerate that religion at home, which she countenanced and supported abroad. As to her own religion, she affected a middle way between *popery* and *puritanism*, though her majesty was more inclined to the former; disliking the secular pretensions of the court of *Rome* over foreign states, though she was in love with the pomp and splendor of their worship: On the other hand, she approved of the doctrines of the foreign reformed churches, but thought

they had stripped religion too much of its ornaments, and made it look with an unfriendly aspect upon the sovereign power of princes. She understood not the rights of conscience in matters of religion ; and is therefore justly chargeable with persecuting principles. More sanguinary laws were made in her reign, than in any of her predecessors : her hands were stained with the blood of *papists* and *puritans* ; the former were executed for denying her supremacy, and the latter for sedition or non-conformity. Her greatest admirers blame her for plundering the church of its revenues, and for keeping several sees vacant many years together for the sake of their profits ; as the bishoprics of *Ely*, *Oxford*, and others ; which last was without a bishop for 22 years. The Queen was devout at prayers, yet seldom or never heard sermons except in *Lent* ; and would often say, that two or three preachers in a county were sufficient. She had high notions of the sovereign authority of princes, and of her own absolute *supremacy* in church affairs : And being of opinion that methods of severity were lawful to bring her subjects to an outward *uniformity*, she countenanced all the engines of persecution, as *spiritual courts*, *high commission*, and *star-chamber*, and stretched her prerogative to support them beyond the laws, and against the sense of the nation.\* However, notwithstanding all these blemishes, Queen *Elizabeth* stands upon record as a wise and politic princess, for delivering the kingdom from the difficulties in which it was involved at her accession ; for preserving the protestant reformation against the potent attempts of the *pope*, the *emperor*, and the King of *Spain* abroad, and the Queen of *Scots* and her popish subjects at home ; and for advancing the renown of the *English* nation beyond any of her predecessors. Her majesty held the balance of *Europe*, and was in high esteem with all foreign princes, the greatest part of her reign ; and though her protestant subjects were divided about church affairs, they all discovered a high veneration for her royal person and government ; on which accounts she was the glory of the age in which she lived, and will be the admiration of posterity.

\* Fuller's Worthies, b. ii. p. 313.

CONSIDERING the complexion of that series of events, through which Mr. Neal's history conducts the reader, he must be allowed to have drawn the character of Queen *Elizabeth* with great fairness and candor. A later ecclesiastical historian, a learned writer of our establishment, has described the leading features of her reign and principles in stronger and bolder terms of reprobation. With Mr. *Neal*, he has allowed her the merit of "being  
' a wise and politic princess, for delivering the kingdom  
' from the difficulties in which it was involved at her accession, for preserving the protestant reformation against  
' the potent enemies which attempted to destroy it, and for  
' advancing the renown of the *English* nation beyond any  
' of her predecessors:" yet he taxes her with many flagrant instances of weakness and misrule; in which her ministers had no share, and which they had neither power nor interest enough to prevent. Having enumerated these, to them he observes must be added "the severity with which  
' she treated her protestant subjects by her high commission court, against law, against liberty, and against the  
' rights of human nature. If these are not (says he) flagrant instances of weakness and misrule to which her ministers never encouraged, but oftentimes dissuaded her as far  
' as they durst, and which were not owing to sudden starts of passion, but to her own tyrannical disposition, then all  
' arbitrary power may be defended as just and lawful.—  
' The passion of *Elizabeth* was to preserve her crown and her prerogative: and every measure which she herself directed, or approved when projected by her ministers, was  
' subservient to these two purposes." To this account "we  
' are to place all the measures, which she directed and she alone, against the disturbers of the uniformity which was  
' established. To her alone it was owing at first, and not to her bishops, that no concession or indulgence was  
' granted to tender consciences. She understood her prerogative, which was as dear to her as her crown and life; but she understood nothing of the rights of conscience in  
' matters of religion; and like the absurd king her father, she would have no opinion in religion acknowledged at  
' least, but her own. She restored the reformation, it is

‘ true, and I believe, restored it upon principle : She was,  
 ‘ likewise, at the head of the protestant religion abroad, in  
 ‘ assisting those who professed it in France, and the *Neth-*  
 ‘ *erlands*, as well as *Scotland*, and it was her interest to  
 ‘ do so ; but where her interest called upon her to neglect  
 ‘ the reformed religion, she did it without scruple. She  
 ‘ differed from her sister in this, that she would not part  
 ‘ with her supremacy upon any terms : and, as she had much  
 ‘ greater abilities for governing, so she applied herself more  
 ‘ to promote the strength and glory of her dominion, than  
 ‘ *Mary* did : but she had as much of the bigot and tyrant  
 ‘ in her as her sister, though the object of that bigotry was  
 ‘ prerogative and not religion.”\*

If facts have any meaning and force, those which we have now reviewed abundantly confirm this representation of the spirit and principles of Queen *Elizabeth*. Yet a celebrated modern writer† has resolved her conduct to her puritan subjects into “her good taste, which gave her a sense of order and decorum, and her sound judgment, which taught her to abhor innovations.” What ! Can the severest acts of oppression and cruelty, can a series of arbitrary and unfeeling outrages committed against the property, lives, and rights of men, take shelter under the sanction of good taste and a sound judgment ? “Nature and religion reclaim.” “If,” says an accurate and judicious writer, “it be once laid down as a maxim, that a sound judgment will teach a monarch to abhor innovations, and if his power be but little subject to control, one does not know to what lengths it might proceed, so as to be exerted not only in matters of church government: but likewise, perhaps, against those who would introduce ‘enlarged’ or rather libertine ‘sentiments’ about religion. Such persons, I doubt, would soon give up the wisdom and equity of this maxim concerning innovations, if they were in danger of having the concluding section of the 35th of *Elizabeth*, cap. 1, put in execution against them.”‡

\* Warner’s Ecclesiastical History of England, vol. ii. p. 474, 5.

† Mr. Hume.

‡ Letters on Mr. Hume’s History of Great-Britain, printed at Edinburgh, 1756, p. 226.

Another writer has thrown the blame of the separation from the church of *England*, and of the evils of which it was productive, on the puritans. “It was more owing to the weakness and want of judgment in the puritans, who could think such things were sinful about which the scriptures were wholly silent, and who desired a great majority to give way to the humor of a few, than to the superstition and want of temper in the Queen and the archbishop, who could press such indifferent rites with that severity, before the minds of men had time to be reconciled to them.”† To this representation it may be replied, Was it any thing unreasonable, that the few should desire the majority not to oppress and bind their consciences in matters about which, it was allowed, the scriptures were silent, and of course where Christ had left them free? Or could it be deemed weakness and want of judgment, that they requested only to be permitted to stand fast in this liberty? Need a protestant divine be reminded, that to add to the religion of Christ is sinful : and to enforce these additions, and by severe penalties, is to exercise a forbidden jurisdiction in his church? Can it be deemed weakness and want of judgment to see this criminality, and to resist this yoke? But if to scruple the use of the habits indicated weakness and want of judgment, yet a conscientious adherence to the dictates of their own minds, the integrity which would not allow them to adopt habits or ceremonies that they thought, or suspected to be sinful, should not be reproached, but applauded. An apostle would on such an occasion have said, that “whatever is not of faith is sin;” and “Happy is he that condemneth not himself in that thing which he alloweth.” Why should the rejection, or even an hesitation about the use of habits, which had no divine authority, but a popish original, and by the mystical signification affixed to them led to superstition, be resolved into weakness and want of judgment? It argued rather a true discernment, a just estimate of things, and a comprehensive view of the tendency and progress of superstition, when once admitted.

The weakness, I should conceive, laid on the other side:

† Warner’s Ecclesiastical History, vol. ii. p. 431.

where these things were held in such high account, and deemed of such essential importance, as to be the ground of the severest laws to enforce the use of them. The cruelty of the imposition aside, the very imposition itself was folly. For a mighty prince, a convocation of the clergy; a bench of bishops; and the legislature of the nation, to give all their attention to support the reputation of the wearing of a hood and a surplice: to employ all the earnestness of their minds, the weight of their character, and the dignity of their rank, about such little things, this is a ridiculous transaction: it betrays the thoughts and passions of a child. But when to this impotence of judgment oppression and tyranny are added, our indignation is raised!

It is an argument of the rationality and good sense of the general principles, by which the puritans professed to be governed, that "these very principles," as a late writer observes, "were the same which rightly influenced the conduct of the reformers in other instances; for example, in their removing the altars out of the churches, and setting up tables in the place of them.† Namely, That the retaining altars would serve only to nourish in the people's minds the superstitious opinion of a propitiatory mass, and would administer an occasion of offence and division." A like argument in relation to the ancient habits was argued by bishop *Hooper*, so early as the year 1550:§ and it was thought of weight in 1562 by one half of the house of convocation.\*

The conduct of the puritans, it appears from hence, was wisely adapted to the times in which they lived: in which the habits had a tendency and influence that rendered the contest about them far from being such a frivolous affair, as many are now disposed to consider it. For then a mystical signification was affixed to them by the church of *Rome*, and there was a prevailing notion of their necessity and efficacy in the administration of the clergy. It is also evident, that they gave the Queen and her courtiers a handle to establish and exercise a despotic power: they were

† See our author, p. 408 of this volume. § See the same, p. 162.

\* Letters on Mr. Hume's History, p. 212, 213.

the instruments by which the court of high commission endeavored to rivet on the people the chains of tyranny. The opposition of the puritans, therefore, may be vindicated on the largest principles. It was a bold and vigorous stand against arbitrary power, which justly calls for resistance in its first outset and its most trivial demands, if men would not give it room to place its foot and erect its banner. It is a pertinent and very sensible remark of a great author: “that our ancestors, the old puritans, had the same merit in opposing the imposition of the surplice, that *Hampden* had in opposing the levying of ship-money. In neither case, was the thing itself objected to, so much as the authority that enjoined it, and the danger of the precedent. And it appears to us, that the man, who is as tenacious of his religious as he is of his civil liberty, will oppose them both with equal firmness.”§

The reign of Queen *Elizabeth* affords many instances of the connexion between civil and religious liberty: and furnishes striking documents of her disposition and endeavors to violate both. In this view the behavior of the puritans was eventually attended with the most important effects.—Mr. *Hume*, who treats their principles as frivolous and their conduct as ridiculous, has bestowed on them, at the same time, the highest eulogium his pen could well dictate. “So absolute,” says he, “was the authority of the crown, that the precious spark of liberty had been kindled, and was preserved, by the puritans alone; and it was to this sect that the *English* owe the whole freedom of their constitution.”†

While it is not asserted, that all the puritans acted upon such enlarged views of things; while it is granted, that “the notions” of numbers, probably of the majority, of them, concerning “the civil and religious rights of mankind, were dark and confused;” yet it should be allowed that some of them, for instance *Fox* the martyrologist, acted upon liberal principles: And all of them felt the oppression of the day, so as, by their own experience of

§ Dr. Priestley’s View of the principles and conduct of the Protestant Dissenters. Page 66.

† Hume’s History of England. vol. v. p. 189, 8vo. ed. 1763.



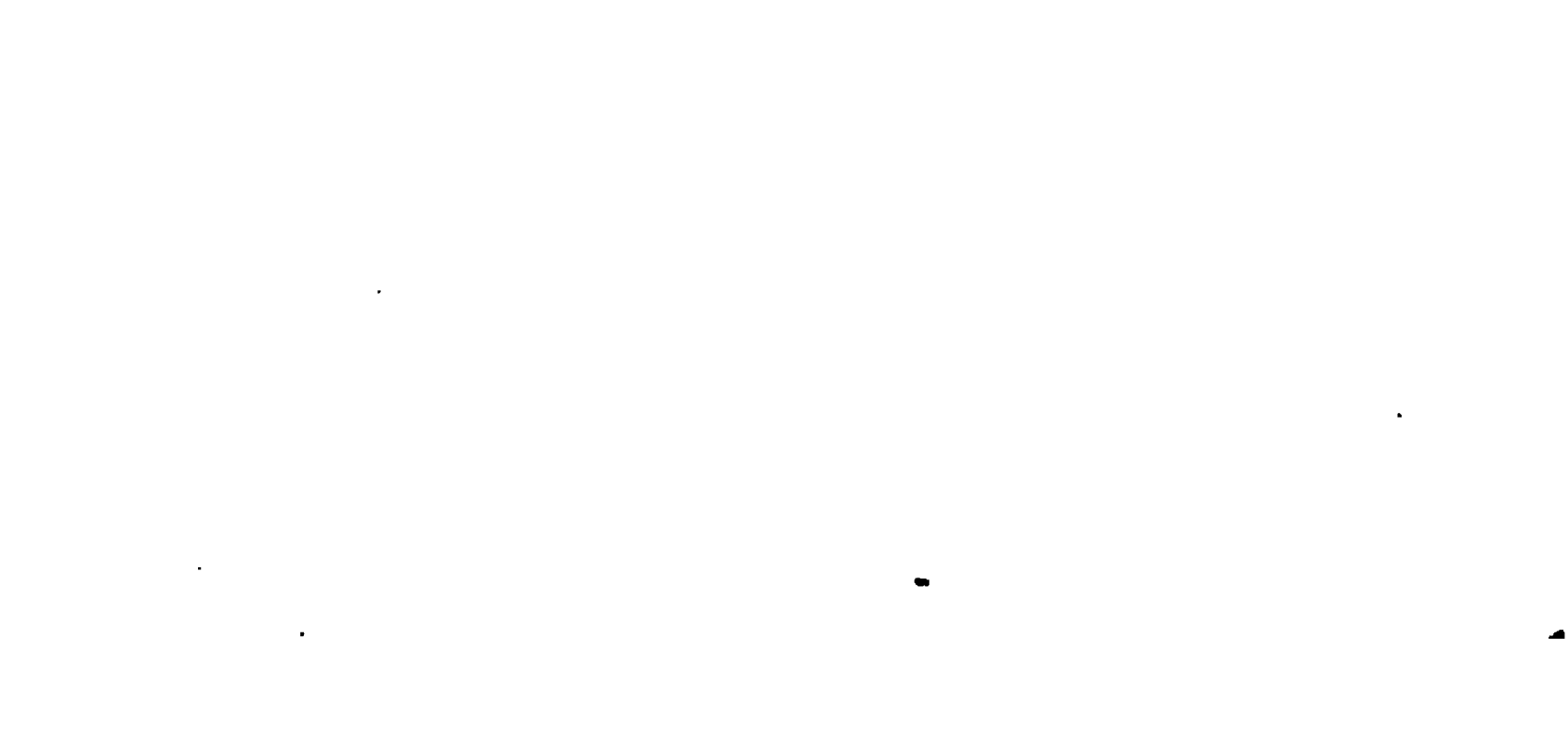
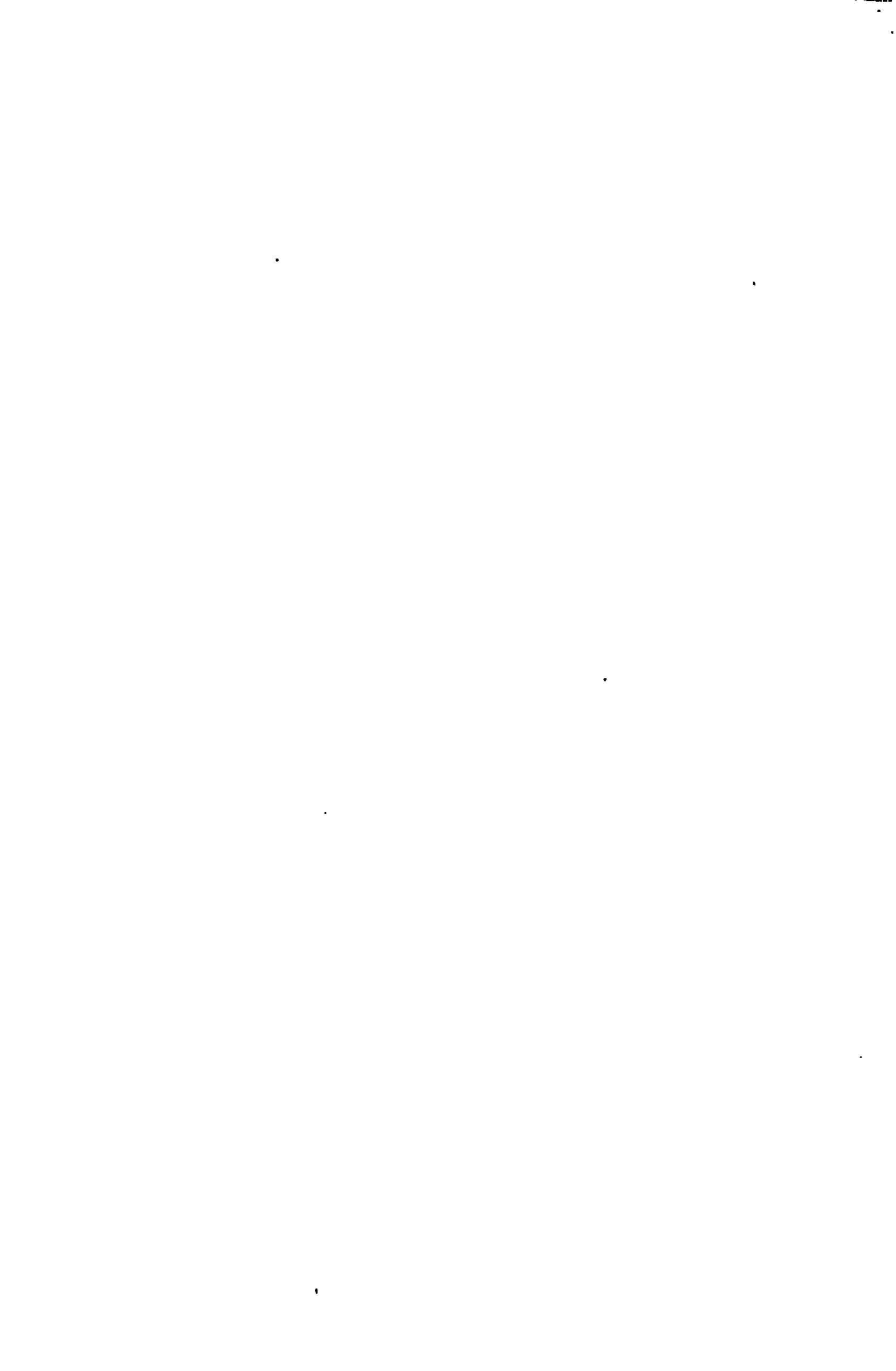
its iniquity and evils, to be instigated to oppose them ; though they did not apply the principles, which were thus generated in the mind, to their full extent.

The charge brought against the puritans, for satirical pamphlets, libels, and abusive language, was in some instances well founded. But it by no means, justly, laid against the whole party. “The moderate puritans publicly disowned the libels for which they were accused, yet they were brought before the *Star-chamber*. The determinations of this court were not according to any statute law of the land, but according to the Queen’s will and pleasure : yet they were as binding upon the subject as an act of parliament, which the whole nation exclaimed against, as a mark of the vilest slavery.”\*

Such oppression, such violent outrages against the security, the conscience and the lives of men, were sufficient to irritate their minds, and to provoke them to reviling and abusive language. Much allowance should be made for men, who were galled and inflamed by severe sufferings. But, independently of this consideration, we should judge of the strain and spirit of *their* writings, not by the more polite manners and liberal spirit of the present age, but by the times in which they lived ; when on all subjects, a coarse and rough, and even abusive style was common from authors of learning and rank. Bishop *Aylmer*, in a sermon at court, speaking of the fair sex, said ; “Women are of two sorts, Some of them are wiser, better learned, discreet, and more constant, than a number of men ; but another and a worse sort of them, and the MOST PART, are fond, foolish, wanton flibbergibs, tattlers, triflers, wavering, witless, without counsel, feeble, careless, rash, proud, dainty, nice, tale-bearers, eves-droppers, rumour-raisers, evil-tongued, worse-minded, and in every wise doltified with the dregs of the devil’s dunghill.”† If a bishop, when preaching before the Queen, could clothe his sentiments in such words, on a subject where this age would study peculiar politeness of style ; can we wonder that reviling lan-

\* Warner’s Ecclesiastical History, vol. ii. p. 463.

† British Biography, vol. iii. p. 239.







3 2044 052 777 68

Neal, Daniel  
The history of the  
Puritans.

BX  
9333  
.N4  
1816  
v.1  
cop.2

